



PEERLESS MARTIAL GOD

BOOK 01

Jing Wu Hen

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Peerless Martial God

(绝世武神)

by

Jing Wu Hen

(净无痕)

Synopsis

Lin Feng tried to be the diligent and hard-working good guy. He studied hard, did his best to make his family proud and not get into trouble, but when he saw a girl being taken advantage of, he had to intervene. He had been tricked, sentenced to 10 years in jail and framed for a crime he never committed, all was lost. If his life was over he would take those who ruined his life with him...

Suddenly he opens his eyes again. He is not dead, but alive in the body of the Lin Feng of a different world. This Lin Feng had been killed as trash of cultivation. This world where the strong had no regard for human life and would kill freely if they had the strength. Called 'trash' and thrown away, with vengeance in his heart he will rise to new heights opposing the will of heaven and earth.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Alice, Not Sane, Pan Pan @ [Totally Insane Translation](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1: Spirit Awakening

Martial arts. It decides your fate as well as your life and death. The weak is humiliated while the strong looks down on the world.

Martial Spirit. The innate talent of the people in the continent is considered as the warrior's soul. It can be said that the achievements of a warrior is closely linked to their martial spirit.

There are numerous types of martial spirit. Nature spirits such as fire, ice, hurricanes, lighting, etc. Weapon spirits such as knives, guns, swords and halberd. Beast spirits such as the white tiger, the crazy rhinoceros, the violent ape and the dragon snake. In addition there are also many powerful soul spirits such as the immortal spirit.

The martial spirit, it will evolve and increases its strength with its master's cultivation.

The city of Yangzhou, Lin family mansion

Lin Feng opened his eyes and stared at the ancient and unrefined room. In this strange yet familiar room, his eyes revealed a hint of bitter frustration.

“To think that I survived!” Lin Feng whispered in his heart. At that moment, his bitter smile vanished and a hint of a smile appears on the corner of his mouth.

That's right. He was originally a senior student from Hua Xia Jiang Nan School. However, due to a car accident, Lin Feng crossed over to another world and ended up possessing a junior that shares his name.

Lin Feng felt somewhat depressed but it was not due to the fact that he crossed over to another world. On Earth, he was an orphan and was single-handedly bought up by his grandfather. One day, after seeing Lin Feng's college admission notice, his grandfather finally felt relieved and died due to overworking. He left Lin Feng enough money in his bank to pay for his college. This amount of money can be considered a fortune in the village. And for his grandfather to save up this last bit of inheritance for Lin Feng, he neglected his health.

Lin Feng studied very hard in college and would always get best scholarship. He wanted to rely on his own effort to change his fate, to fulfill his grandfather's wish. But Lin Feng gradually understood that no matter how hard he work and how much effort he put in, it means nothing in this era where your parent's influence plays an important role.

During his senior year internship, a cocktail party was held in one of the hotels. During the party, a wealthy second generation kid made a female student that intern with him drunk. After that, people started to silently leave. Understanding what was happening; Lin Feng went to stop him.

In the end, his four years of effort came to naught. He was expelled from school on the grounds of indecent assault on his female schoolmate. In fact, the evidence was irrefutable as the

female identified him personally.

His kind-hearted actions bite him in the end. He was sued by the female he helped as well as the wealthy kid. With both witnesses and evidences there, Lin Feng who has neither money nor influence was unable to fight against the law suit. His fate at that point of time was already sealed. Sentenced to jail for eight to ten years, he was completely derailed from society.

When he saw the wealthy kid and the female schoolmate happily hugging each other when being affectionate in an Audi car, Lin Feng jumped into a random car and with a smile, he drove into the Audi. Lin Feng vaguely remembers the two fearful yet dirty faces that contain the dirtiness of this corrupted world.

In his previous life, Lin Feng no longer has any lingering worries. Therefore, he was not depressed due to the fact that he crossed over to another world. He was depressed due to the fact that he seemed to have possessed the body of a trashy young master with a trashy spirit.

This Young Master Lin that possesses the same name as him was originally an outer sect disciple of Yun Hai. In the Yun Hai Sect, he was frequently bullied by his own cousin, beaten nearly to death and finally kicked out of the sect's doors. It was due to the fact that the young master was half dead did Lin Feng managed to seize the opportunity to cross over and possess his body.

“Since I managed to gain a new life, I will never let the tragedy repeat itself” Lin Feng said while he lay on his bed and clenched his fists. To the young master soul that was reluctant to completely

disperse, Lin Feng said “Do not worry. From now on, you are me and I am you. I will no longer let myself be bullied.”

Having fused with majority of the original “Lin Feng” soul, Lin Feng was very clear on what kind of world he is currently in. The strong is respected. As long as you have sufficient strength, all power and influence would have to bow down in front of you and this includes even the supreme imperial authority.

And to those who seek to walk the Martial Arts path, not only do they need to have talent above others but they would also need to have a strong heart as well as incomparably tenacious will. The former young master “Lin Feng” was somewhat weak but the him now is different. The current Lin Feng barely escaped death and crossed over to a different world. In addition to the pain and suffering he went through, his will is no doubt much tougher than the young master “Lin Feng”.

It was as if the soul felt Lin Feng’s strong will, it finally started to slowly weakened and at last the two souls fused together perfectly.

“Hong!” The moment the soul fused together, Lin Feng felt the soul tremor and the stun knocked him unconscious.

Time passes and Lin Feng finally opened his eyes again. His brow wrinkled slightly and he carefully felt the throbbing of his soul.

Sitting up, Lin Feng moved his conscious. Immediately, a particular atmosphere spread. At this moment, Lin Feng felt that he was wrapped in shadow.

“Did you hear? Lin Feng that trash is still not awake. I bet that he is near death”

“Ha, a trash like him is better off the sooner he dies. He throws the face of the Lin family.”

Their talk in the distance had travelled to Lin Feng yet he was not angry. Instead, he showed a strange look. The voices apparently transferred from a long distance away yet the him now could hear everything clearly. Not only that, he was able to hear all the noises within several hundred meters.

Moreover, Lin Feng discovered that his vision became even better and he became even more sensitive to his surroundings. In addition, he suddenly understood the previously misty and unclear marital arts path.

Moving his conscious once again, a small snake spirit appeared behind Lin Feng. Its small body curled up, this snake was the one that people laugh at to be a trash spirit. As the snake's species is unknown, he was unable to increase his ability.

“Twin Spirit!”

At this moment, Lin Feng was not worried about the snake spirit. Instead, he had a stunned look on his face. Slowly, a hint of smile appeared on his face. That's right. The black mist spirit was a newly awakened spirit. Even though he does not know what type of spirit the shadow is, but with the snake spirit, he possesses two

spirits.

A person that was born with two spirits is also known as twin spirit. In fact, in the mainland, people who can cultivate two spirits are known as geniuses. The trash that everyone looked down on at this moment had twin spirit.

“Let’s call you the dark spirit for now.” Lin Feng showed a faint smile. To be able to have twin spirit must be due to his fused soul. Having two souls being combined into one, having two spirits is not surprising. As for this spirit’s ability, at this moment it would seem that it is able to enhance his physical fitness.

Closing his eyes, Lin Feng began to meditate. Slowly, the world’s essence started flowing into Lin Feng’s limbs and bones while nourishing the body and martial spirits.

Two hours later, Lin Feng stopped meditating and started to emit a milky foul air from his nose. Right after that, he felt that his whole body became fresh and he felt carefree as even the soreness of his body disappeared.

“So this is the cultivation of a warrior, fascinating.” Lin Feng looked at his fist and with just a little strength, a crackling sound full of energy sounded out.

The speed of his practice seems to be faster as compared to his memories. Lin Feng walked out of his room and in front of him was a huge courtyard. In the courtyard, wooden stakes and stone pillars are there for him to practice.

Arriving in front of the stone pillars, Lin Feng used the martial technique “Nine Heavy Waves”. The wind started whistling and pierced the air. It was as if space was being twisted by waves after waves.

“Ha!”

At this point of time, Lin Feng shouted. He straightened his waist and abdomen and sent out a meteor-like punch onto the stone pillar, creating a loud thunder sound. The stone pillar instantly exploded into piles of dusts and scattered onto the ground.

Moreover, the air pressure continued on even after shattering the stone pillars. The air pressure produced several loud sounds and caused the air to move forward like waves. This air pressure created cracks at another stone pillar two meters away.

“This punch should have over 6000jin strength.” Lin Feng was very satisfied with its effect. Right now, his power has been restored to the peak and his Qi has reached the fifth layer. Even the martial technique “Nine Heavy Waves” that he trained in has turned even stronger. Previously he could only achieve five heavy waves but now he had actually broke through to having six heavy waves. It was due to his breakthrough that he was able to use his Qi and send out 6000jin of strength.

“Seems like the dark spirit not only enhanced my vision and hearing but also my speed and comprehension” Lin Fen smiled. He being called trash was not only due to his snake spirit but also due

to his poor comprehension ability. The talented at his age would have already reach the sixth Qi layer or higher. Yet, he was only at the fifth layer. In addition, his comprehension ability was also lower as compared to the others. Even when he practiced only one martial technique, he was stuck at the fifth heavy wave, causing him to be ridiculed.

But now, the cultivation problems he faced seemed to varnish with the appearance of the dark spirit.

Being able to enhance the overall martial arts quality of a person, it seems that the dark spirit is no ordinary spirit.

Chapter 2: Continuous Breakthrough

“Xiao Feng.” The voice came from the middle-aged man standing in the courtyard. This person with a strong body and disposition looked somewhat similar to Lin Feng.

“Father” he was indeed the head of the Lin Clan and he is also Lin Feng’s father. Due to the soul fusion, Lin Feng currently possesses both the thoughts and feelings of the previous Lin Feng. Thus, he felt natural calling that person, father.

“Xiao Feng, you’re....ok!” Lin Hai’s face quivered. Lin Feng was sent back to the Lin Clan with his life hanging by a piece of thread and all this while he had been in a comatose state. Lin Hai had already lost all hope and started to help Lin Feng prepare his funeral. But at this moment, he was surprised to see that his son alive. How could he not be delighted?

“Yes, Father. I have completely recovered“. Lin Feng smiled when he saw how happy Lin Hai was. This gave him a very warm feeling. When his grandfather died in his previous life, he had to face the coldness of human nature alone and had never enjoyed this kind of warm feeling before.

“Good, Good.” Lin Hai heavily patted Lin Feng’s shoulder. A glint of light flashed past his eyes as he looked at the stone pillar that was turned into dust. His own brothers has been eyeing and waiting for him to fall so that they could snatch the Family’s Head seat. Those bastards must be feeling rather disappointed now that Lin Feng had recovered so soon.

It was at this moment did Lin Hai suddenly emit bursts of cold chills, causing Lin Feng to feel that his body had frozen.

“Father is indeed a strong fighter in the soul layer. Just by sending out his aura, he would be able to freeze the people below his strength.” Lin Feng said in his heart. In the path of Martial Arts, the first layer would be Qi. Only by slowly directing the essence of heaven and earth into one’s body, refining ** (Original text by author...淬炼**) and training your spirit would one be able to form Qi. Thereafter, one would have stepped into the Soul layer. In the Soul layer, one can finally practice the martial arts laws. The mastery of the laws means that one will be stronger than anyone and with just one step, a man can be killed. And Lin Hai was one of the experts in the Soul layer.

“Xiao Feng. Who did this?” Lin Hai’s face was gloomy. When Lin Feng was sent back, he was already half dead. This proved that the opponent had indeed wanted Lin Feng’s life. And it was the truth. The opponent did wanted “Lin Feng’s” life. (TN: “Lin Feng” in this case is the original young master that died)

“Father, please let your child handle this matter by himself.” Lin Feng did not tell Lin Hai that he was wounded by his third uncle’s son, Lin Heng. In the Lin’s Family, his third uncle and eldest uncle acts in collaboration and is always coveting the family’s head seat. In fact, in terms of their strength and influence, it is not much weaker when compared with Lin Hai. Adding on to the fact that Lin Heng’s natural talent is rather good and he is one of the outstanding students of Yun Hai Sect, this was why Lin Heng dared to wound Lin Feng lawlessly.

This hatred, Lin Feng has to pay it back himself. The way of the martial arts does not allow any regrets or it would eventually become a barrier to a warrior's training.

Lin Hai looked somewhat surprised at his son and at this moment, he saw that Lin Feng's attitude has changed and his eyes was firm and resolute. He no longer showed and give off the feeling that he was weak and dispirited.

It would seem like this incident was a blessing in disguise. Lin Hai was pleased in his heart and nodded his head. "Go with me to the family meeting tomorrow. I would like to see how they would kick me off my position."

Night time, in the Lin Family's purple bamboo forest

Lin Feng was sitting cross-legged on the ground and behind him was a cluster of black shadows. This shadow that has almost completely blended into the darkness was indeed the dark spirit.

While training, Lin Feng discovered that when he uses his dark spirit, his practice speed is more than five times slower. Therefore, he had to push himself and ignore the additional mental fatigue that accumulated when using his dark spirit during his training. Since God had given him a second chance, he must naturally live well. In this continent, only the strong is respected and admired by people and can do anything they want.

Wrapped around Lin Feng was a faint milky light that shined brightly in the darkness. This light only appears when the essences

of heaven and earth have condensed to a certain extent.

The talented when practising would have a faster rate of heaven and earth's essences to gathering around their body and at this moment, Lin Feng was in that state.

Right now, Lin Feng was breathing steadily and looked peaceful and calm. The heaven and earth essences are flowing through his body and dissolved in his blood vessels, strengthening his bones and physique.

After a long time, the light flashed and Lin Feng's body suddenly became like a black hole and in an instant, he swallowed the entire milky white heaven and earth essence into his body.

Opening his eyes, a fleeting light flashed across his eyes. Lin Feng stood up and a hint of a smile appeared. He had broken through in one night to the next layer. At this moment, he has reached the sixth Qi layer.

However, Lin Feng was not satisfied. From his memories, he knew that the nine Qi layers was only the starting point of martial arts. The real martial arts experts are able to fly in the sky and travel beyond the highest heaven. How carefree and happy would it be? In his previous life, that would have been seen as a God.

Thinking about it, Lin Feng started to sway his fist and a whistling sound came forth. A momentary burst of wave energy caused the surrounding bamboo to explode.

Qi is separated into nine layers. With every increase of one layer, his strength is increased by a thousand jin. Right now, he is in the sixth Qi layer and possesses the strength of 6000jin. And if he uses the martial technique “Nine heavy waves” which he has trained till the sixth wave, he would be able to send out a force of 6500jin. However, it was still not enough to Lin Feng. If he was able to practise till the seventh wave, with one fierce wave after another bursting out, at that point he would be able to send out a force of 7000jin which would be equivalent to the pure strength of a warrior in the seventh Qi layer.

Under the ferocious force of over 6000 jin, the fragile purple bamboo exploded endlessly. The entire space became ocean-like and the howls of the fist and its shadow were the only thing left.

It was at this point of time, did one of the bamboos not explode but instead, rebounded back. When Lin Feng saw that, the speed of his punching slowed down.

“The Nine Heavy Waves technique was created based on the ocean’s waves. Every wave would be stronger than the previous wave and it is domineering. However, not matter how dominating it is, it would also have a gentle side. It was only when toughness and gentleness combine together would it become unprecedented.”

Enlightened, Lin Feng’s fist was no longer constantly dominating. But instead, it was now occasionally tough yet occasionally gentle.

“He”

Lin Feng shouted while sending out a punch.

“Hong, Hong, Hong....”

Sounds of explosion busted out. Six booms, seven booms.....
eight booms

The purple bamboos touched by the qi waves were all completely turned into dust.

“Eight waves, strong..” Lin Feng withdraws his fist and took a deep breath as he looked at the now empty space in front of him. Having gained comprehension of the “Nine Heavy Waves” technique, he was able to breakthrough two stages and reached the eighth wave. It must be known that martial techniques become more and more difficult to train in as it reaches the later stages. For people in the fifth Qi layer, it would be easy for them to comprehend up to the fifth wave. However, people in the eighth Qi layer might not necessarily gain the comprehension to the eight waves. But Lin Feng had done it.

“Now that I should possess the strength of 7500jin and as long as I fully comprehend the notion of combining both toughness and gentleness together, that would be when the “Nine Heavy Waves” technique is completed.” Lin Feng felt pleased in his heart. Martial techniques would become increasingly difficult to practice in the later stages but the power of the techniques would be several times stronger. The him now possesses the strength of 7500jin. Even if he faced a warrior in the seventh Qi layer, he would still be able to

put up a fight.

The Lin Feng in the past was looked down on by others as he was not even able to win against a normal fifth Qi layer warrior. But the Lin Feng now, although he had only arrived in this world for a day, he had improved and now possesses the might of a seventh Qi Layer warrior.

Chapter 3: Overbearing Violence

Early in the morning, the Lin Family appeared especially lively. This was due to the family meeting that was occurring soon and everyone is heading towards the field in the middle of the mansion.

“Did you hear? This time, not only did eldest uncle come, but third uncle came as well. Looks like this time they are all aiming for the family head seat.”

“He He, although the patriarch is strong, however that trash of a son might have already died. He was even sent back personally by people of the Yun Hai Sect, totally disgracing the face of the Lin Family. In addition, eldest uncle is always displeased with the patriarch. He would surely use this chance to launch an attack. Who knows, the family head seat might change its owner today.”

Throughout the journey, everyone in the Lin Family was whispering non-stop. The crowd knows that today's family meeting would surely be extraordinary.

Lin Feng and Lin Hai are currently making their way to the field as well. Seeing that Lin Feng is safe and sound, hints of colors flashes past countless people's eyes. Some of them were even thinking how is this trash not dead yet. But under the might of Lin Hai, majority of them did not dare to speak their mind.

“This trash sure is lucky to still be alive” A shrill voice sounded out suddenly. This made majority of the people there raise their

head and they saw a passerby with an extraordinary aura walk towards them.

The one that spoke was a youth. He is the son of Lin Hao Ran who is the third uncle of the Lin Family. Both him, Lin Yun and Lin Feng are at the same age of fifteen. However, Lin Yun is at the sixth Qi layer.

“So it was Lin Yun. No wonder he dared to say that.” When everyone saw third uncle, Lin Hao Ran and eldest uncle, Lin Ba Dao, walking together, they all knew that both of them came with ill intentions.

“Say that again.” A cold glint flashed past Lin Hai’s eyes while he stared at Lin Yun. This caused a flash of fear to flutter across Lin Yun’s face and he dared not look at Lin Hai directly.

“Second brother, you’re getting more and more outrageous as the family head. To think that the older generation is bullying the younger generation.” Lin Ba Dao said in a mocking and cold tone.

“Ha. I, Lin Hai, am still the family head. To think that Lin Yun is so uneducated, how improper is that” Lin Hai responded indifferently.

“Second brother is so imposing. But I’ll like to see how much long you can act like this as the family head.” Lin Hao Ran said in a harsh tone “Your trash of a son was kicked out of Yun Hai Sect and had to be carried back home. He had completely thrown away the face of the Lin family. How could people not gossip about it?”

“How much longer can I stay imposing? Lin Hao Ran, are you trying to say that I may soon lose my seat as the family head? Do you think you can get this seat? Are you even qualified?” Lin Hai took one step forward and a cold chill started emitting from his body. Lin Yun could only run and hide behind Lin Hao Ran as he felt his body turn ice-cold.

“Whether am I qualified or not, only the elders can have the final say. When did it become your turn, Lin Hai.” Lin Hao Ran’s face darkens. He did not expect Lin Hai to be so overbearing today and to be so unlike his usual self.

“So you admitted it. I, Lin Hai am still currently the family head. For your son to curse my son to die in front of me, what sort of punishment does he deserve?”

Lin Hai did not back off and the cold air became even heavier. The surrounding air’s temperature continued decreasing and white frost were starting to form.

“The family head is no doubt the family head. He gives off of aura of dignity. To think that he would be the one launching an attack on third uncle first.” The crowd looked over and they all held a hint of respect and admiration for Lin Hai in their heart. They had thought that Lin Hai would passively deal with the attacks launch by third uncle and eldest uncle today.

“Lin Hai, do you think that I am afraid of you.” Lin Hao Ran came prepare. After saying that, a powerful heat wave surged out

and fought head on with the chill.

“Father possesses the ice spirit and therefore, he mainly practices in ice techniques. However, Lin Hao Ran possesses the fire spirit and so he practices mainly in fire techniques. Water is the bane of fire. No matter how hard Lin Hao Ran fights, he would not be able to win against my father. The main lead this time is clearly not him.”

Lin Feng who was standing at the side gazed towards Lin Ba Dao to see him revealing a hint of sneer at the corner of his mouth before saying, “Second brother, the family meeting is starting soon. Could it be that you as the head of the family deem that the elders are not even worth your attention?”

In the Lin Family, the elders hold the highest authority. They exist only to appoint the next family head. Therefore, Lin Ba Dao had used the power of the elders’ presence to pressure Lin Hai and make him take a step back.

“Tsk.” Lin Hai gave a look of disdain toward Lin Hao Ran and withdrew his Qi before leaving together with Lin Feng.

Lin Hao Ran was naturally aware of the disdain look given by Lin Hai and cold chill flashed past his eyes. This time, your trash of a son was lucky to still be alive. But next time, he would not be so lucky.

Lin Hao Ran’s oldest son, Lin Heng Nai was an outstanding disciple of Yun Hai Outer Sect and it would only be a matter of

time before he gets promoted to be an inner court disciple. Even if he is just an inner court junior, as the son's status grows, so does the father's. At that point of time, his position in the family would naturally go up as well. It would be to the point where a mere family head would not be able to reach.

On the other hand, Lin Ba Dao's daughter is even more talented. She had already joined the inner court of the Hao Yue Sect and her future is bright and limitless. Within the three brothers, only Lin Hai's son possesses poor talent and is known as a trash. This was what Lin Ba Dao and Lin Hao Ran is relying on. Right now the elders have a much better impression of them and this is something Lin Hai can't influence.

Four to five hundred people of the Lin Family had gathered in the field and in the middle of the field, there was a green stone platform. At this moment, the decision makers of the Lin Family are on it.

"Elders, a few days ago, it was an honor for the people of the Yun Hai Sect to have come to our house. However, it was to actually send back to us a half dead trash, completely throwing away the face of our family. Therefore, I suggest disowning Lin Feng from the family. He does not have the qualifications to be a part of the Lin Family.

Lin Hao Ran stood up and respectfully faced the elders while directly launching his attack.

"You're actually so blunt to go straight to the point. But, I the family head have yet to say anything. When did it become your

turn to talk? Go back to your position.” Lin Hai knows very clearly about the goal of Lin Hao Ran. He would like to see how the other party is going to expel his son out of the family and seize the position of the family head.

“Second brother, what you said is not right. Although you might be the family head, but third brother is also considered a member of the family. He was just thinking about the family. Your trash of a son had really completely thrown away the face of our family and should be expelled.” Lin Ba Dao overbearing voice resounded and directly attacked Lin Hai.

“My own son, I will discipline him myself. How is it related to the clansmen and it is certainly not up to you. Lin Ba Dao, I know that you have been eyeing my seat. How about this? Today, you and I would have a duel. If you win, I will leave the family with my son. However, if you lose... you better stop farting.”

Lin Hai stood up and walked directly to the middle of the platform. Strong Qi started emitting out towards Lin Ba Dao. Even if you do not want to fight, you have to fight.

Lin Feng looked at his father with a changed attitude. Aggressiveness that can scare people, only the strong will be respected. Only the strong have the right to speak. He also wanted to make the other party shut up with his own strength.

“I only fear that you are inadequate.” Anger surged inside Lin Ba Dao when he heard Lin Hai saying that his words are farts. He walked towards the platform and stood opposite Lin Hai.

All the elders remained silent. In fact, they were happy that this situation occurred. If Lin Hai could not even win against Lin Ba Dao, along with the fact that he has a trash for a son, the family head seat would naturally move today.

“I would like to see based on what can you be so haughty.” Lin Ba Dao sneered only to see Lin Hai ignoring him. Cold chills started surrounding the stage. Hundreds of people in the audience could feel the piercing chill seeping into their body and bones at the same time.

This is the power of a spirit. Lin Hai’s spirit is the ice spirit. Once released, the surrounding would completely change as it gets eroded by the ice.

“Great distance ice-bound” Lin Ba Dao had just wanted to release his own spirit. But when he heard Lin Hai’s voice, the sound of a click travelled outwards with Lin Hai as the center instantly. Cold chill covered the entire stage and spread to its surrounding. The entire platform was covered in snow white ice and at that moment, Lin Ba Dao had become frozen in ice and turned into an ice man.

“Boom!” an explosion sounded and the ice cracked. Lin Ba Dao flew out of the platform and blood spouted out of his mouth before he fell heavily onto the ground.

All the elders stood up and were shocked with the scene in front of their eyes. Lin Ba Dao had unexpectedly collapsed with only one blow.

“Great distance ice-bound, Lin Hai’s ice-bound technique had actually reached the eighth stage. No wonder he is so strong.” The great elder eyes flashed. Lin Hai possesses the ice spirit, coupled with the powerful ice-bound technique, he had frozen Lin Ba Dao instantaneously and strike a deadly hit in one breath. If his reaction speed had been half a beat slower, I’m afraid this duel would not be over so soon.

The people of the Lin Family were all dazed. This was the first time they saw such a domineering Lin Hai. He was even more domineering as compared to Lin Da Bao.

Lin Da Bao spouted out another mouthful of blood and looked at Lin Hai with a cloudy look. However, Lin Hai did not care. He could guess that Lin Feng’s injury was undoubtedly related to his two brothers. Since they wanted to kill his son, there was no need for him, Lin Hai to take into account their brotherhood.

“Elders, please continue with the family meeting.” Lin Hai paid his respect to the elders before returning to his seat as if nothing had happened.

“He, He. Lin Hai, as the family head, your cultivation had improved and you have set a good example. I believe that the people of the Lin family will work even harder. The purpose of this meeting had been reached. Everyone is free to go.” Great elder gave a small smile. To continue the family meeting now would have no meaning at all.

“Great elder, if that’s the case, I will retire first.” Lin Hai paid his respect to the great elder and stood up with Lin Feng.

“Lin Hai, I would like to see how much long you can protect this trash.” Said Lin Hao Ran coldly as his goal had not been reached.

“That’s right. Trash, the disgrace of my Lin Family.” Lin Yun echoed. However, as he saw Lin Hai’s eyes sweep past him, he quickly shut his mouth.

“Xiao Feng, Let’s go.” Lin Hai did not want to bother with them. However, Lin Feng did not go. Instead, he turned around and started walking towards Lin Yun. This scene made the people of the Lin family confused as they did not know what Lin Feng is doing.

Lin Hai was also looking at his son in surprise, only to see Lin Feng walking in front of Lin Yun before saying: “Lin Yun, you keep blabbering that I am trash. I would like to ask you, if one day you find out that you’re worse than me, how humiliated would you be?”

“You’re dreaming. How could you, this trash be compared to me?” Lin Yun did not expect Lin Feng, a trash to say those words to him and could not help but give off a mocking sound.

Lin Feng eyes flashed and he chuckled before indifferently saying: “Lin Yun, I, Lin Feng, challenge you to a duel.”

Chapter 4: Wielding A Sword

When Lin Feng finished speaking, the whole field had quietened down.

Lin Feng took the initiative to issue a challenge to Lin Yun?

Even Lin Hai was stunned and looked at his son in surprise. The elders on top of the platform who were preparing to leave, sat back down and looked at Lin Feng with great interest.

Lin Hao Ran gave a cold smile yet his heart at this moment was suppressing his anger. He did not expect that the trash would take the initiative to fight his son.

“Lin Yun, accept the challenge.” Lin Hao Ran’s gaze held an intense look as his eyes fell upon Lin Yun.

Lin Yun looked at Lin Feng and felt insulted. In the family, his talent could only be considered ordinary. It was only in front of Lin Feng could find his pride and raise his head high up. Thus, every time he saw Lin Feng, he was more than happy to taunt him a few times. But right now, it was exactly this trash of the young generation that actually dared to challenge him, causing his face to darken.

“I will stop if you can receive three of my moves.” Lin Yun said while walking out. He plans to defeat Lin Feng with the most brutal methods so as to let him understand how much of a trash he is.

“If you can receive one of my punches, it will be considered as my defeat.” Lin Feng shook his head and said indifferently. The indifferent tone sounded as if Lin Yun would not be able to receive even one of Lin Feng’s punches and this caused his complexion to turn gloomy instantly.

The crowd was stunned and could only look at Lin Feng speechlessly. This fellow must have gone mad. To think he would actually say something so boastful.

“No matter how beautiful the words said by the trash are, he is still a trash. Using the advantage of the words, is something only a trash like you would do.” Lin Yun sneered.

Lin Feng laughed. He’s using the advantages of words? He had only said a few words.

“Receive my punch” Lin Feng is unwilling to waste any more time with idle talk. After his voice faded, he moved his body forward, raised his fist and immediately brandished it towards Lin Yun.

“One punch?” Lin Yun eyes flashed cruelly and he did not evade that punch. Instead, he raised his own fist. He wanted to let Lin Feng know the huge disparity between their skill levels.

The air started vibrating and a tyrannical wave appeared on Lin Feng’s fist, produced a fluttering sound. However, the crowd could only see heavy waves moving towards Lin Yun before passing

through him tyrannically.

Martial Technique, Nine Heavy Waves!

Lin Yun's complexion changed suddenly as he felt how strong the force of oppression is. But it was too late to withdraw now. Both fists clashed and Lin Yun felt the aggressive waves travel through his fist and past his body forcefully. Each wave was stronger than the previous one and it was never-ending.

“Pu!”

With a groan, Lin Yun's body flew out. Everyone was dumbfounded. This scene was exactly the same as the fight between Lin Hai and Lin Ba Dao previously. Lin Yun, without the slightest resistance was sent flying with only a single punch.

Lin Hao Ran stood up and stared dumbly at Lin Yun who was lying on the ground.

“How could, how could this be possible...” Lin Yun was as shocked as Lin Hao Ran and was unable to accept the cruel reality.

When the crowd heard Lin Yun's words, they remembered what Lin Feng had said previously. “You keep blabbering that I am a trash. I would like to ask you, if one day you find out that you're worse than me, how humiliated would you be?” The present scene had without doubt proved the proud words said by the youth.

“This is the trash young master of the Lin Family?” Looking at Lin Feng, everyone in the audience knew that to be able to send Lin Yun flying with one punch, the punch must have at least 6000jin in strength.

“You keep blabbering that I am a trash. Now that you can’t even receive one of my punches, where does that leave you?” Lin Feng said ironically and looked at Lin Yun with a vicious look in his eyes.

“And you. You’re a senior yet you keep saying the word trash all the time. Now, your son has been defeated by me with just one punch. You’re always saying that I am a piece of trash, now won’t you have to say that your son is a piece of trash as well.”

Raising his head, Lin Feng looked over to Lin Hao Ran and said.

“You’re only at the sixth Qi layer. Does this insignificant strength allow you to be so arrogant here?” Lin Hao Ran’s face turned very ugly and rebuked him.

“I’m not being arrogant here. I am just returning what your son and you have been giving to me.” Lin Feng is unwilling to say anything more. He turned to leave and said: “If you shame others, other people will also shame you!”

“If you shame others, other people will also shame you!” Lin Hai whispered softly and lights flashed past his smiling eyes. His own son had really changed. To think he is actually able to say such philosophical words.

Lin Feng returned to his room in the courtyard and began practicing again. Although he had conquered and passed the fifth Qi layer, it was not enough for him to stand up tall. Lin Heng, who had beaten him up and threw him out of the sect doors, is naturally more talented as compared to Lin Yun. And he was currently in the eighth Qi layer.

In addition, there are also Lin Ba Dao's children. Their talent can be said to be several times higher as compared to Lin Yun. Especially Lin Ba Dao's daughter, Lin Qian. It has been said that she had already reached the ninth Qi layer.

In three more months, the annual meeting would be held. At that time, everyone in the Lin Family, even those who are training in the sects would come back. If he does not increase his cultivation rapidly, it would be him that would be shamed the next time.

Cultivation is endless. Time passes the fastest when a warrior is practicing. To a warrior who is able to absorb the heaven and earth essences, not eating or drinking for ten days is not a problem. The world's vitality is no doubt the purest essence.

Ten days had passed and Lin Feng finally stepped out of his room. He slowly exhaled a long breath. In this ten days period, he had reached the boundaries of the sixth Qi layer and would be able to reach the seventh Qi layer very soon.

Quickening his pace, Lin Feng walked toward his father's, Lin Hai's room.

“Xiao Feng, isn’t it ok to practice at home. Why must you return back to the sect?” Lin Hai was worried when he heard Lin Feng said that he wanted to return to the sect. Lin Hai still bears a grudge in regards to the previous incident and is unable to let it go.

“Father, some things are inevitable. If I hide at home to practice, father will always be sheltering me. How would I be able to grow and become a strong martial arts warrior?” Lin Feng’s eyes showed a strong determination. The sect’s strength is much greater compared to the Lin Family’s. There are strong martial techniques as well as intense competition in the sect. It is only in there would he be able to grow even faster.

Seeing the stubbornness in Lin Feng’s eyes, Lin Hai sighed in his heart. His son has really grown up. It is true that staying at home to practice and staying under his shelter is a cowardly behaviour. It would be impossible to become a strong martial arts warrior that way. However, standing from his point of view, he is unwilling due to his parental love towards Lin Feng.

“Since you insist on returning back to the sect, as your father, I will not stop you. However, you have to pay attention to your own safety.” said Lin Hai as he nodded his head.

“Do not worry, father. I will practice hard and have them all under my foot.” Lin Feng’s speech held a strong sense of self-confidence. With his dark spirit, his cultivation speed is many times faster as compared to the average person. His comprehension ability had also become stronger. In addition, with a determined heart, he had reasons to believe that he would not be

worse off as compared to those so-called “geniuses”.

Lin Feng did not bring anything much, only a horse, a bag of dry food as well as some silver.

“Father, I’m off.” Outside of Yangzhou city, Lin Feng looked at his father as he said his farewells.

“Ah. Be careful.” Lin Hai nodded.

Riding the horse, thousand snows, they disappeared from Yangzhou city.

In the endless vast land, Lin Feng was riding on horseback. Galloping between heaven and earth, a surge of pride and ambitions bloomed in his heart.

In his previous life, Lin Feng had loved martial warriors shows. A lone knight riding a horse while singing and travelling around the world with a sword. He did not expect that in this life, he would have the chance to ride on a horse and travel through the world freely.

A pot of liquor, a song of broken love, and a wild life!

One hero wielding a sword and travel the world; for pride, the world will bleed and dye the green sky!

In this life, he was fated to be extraordinary. In this life, he was destined to live imposingly!

Chapter 5: Unsheathing the sword

Ten thousand miles separated Yang Zhou City from the Yun Hai Clan, even though Li Xue could travel across a thousand miles a day, it still took Lin Feng ten days to arrive.

However, during these ten days, Lin Feng didn't waste time. In his previous life, Lin Feng had never been that warm-blooded, He had never experienced such a feeling of ardor. Unwittingly, his state of mind had improved greatly. Walking on the path of cultivation had now enabled him to reach the seventh Qi layer. "Where water flows, a canal is formed" as the saying goes. Besides, practicing had enabled him to master the Nine Heavy Waves martial arts technique to a new level.

These days, Lin Feng possessed a much more powerful physical strength than in his previous life. His actual strength was actually close to 8500 jin which was immensely powerful for the seventh Qi Layer of cultivation.

The Yun Hai Clan was located in a mountain chain called Yun Hai Hill. Yun Hai Hill wasn't really the biggest mountain in that mountain chain but it covered such a big area that it was easily visible from the distant sky. Yun Hai Hill even looked like a city when looked down upon from the heavens. It was surrounded by eight mountains which, unlike Yun Hai Hill, seemed to rise into the sky as if reaching for the heavens. The Mystical beauty of this mountain owes itself to Feng Shui, it provides a great luck and destiny.

As he moved closer.

“Halt! Come down off that horse!” said two mountain guards quite coldly while giving Lin Feng a mocking smile. These two guards were also Yun Hai Clan’s disciples.

Lin Feng looked at them in a disdainful way. Meanwhile, another disciple riding a horse rode past and continued on towards the mountain. Lin Feng pointed at him: “how come you’re not preventing him from getting in?”.

“Hmph”, one of them smiled expressing both ridicule and anger: “how can you compare yourself with the normal disciples? You almost got killed before, you piece of trash”.

So it was only a matter of power and status. Lin Feng smiled. These mountain guards, even though they belonged to the Yun Hai Clan, were only there for decoration. Their level was so weak. However, if someone wants to come in, they must pass the mountain guards. Even though their job wasn’t that important, they had the power to prevent people from getting in. Powerful disciples like the one who previously rode past didn’t have to tell them anything.

“Weak ones must be bullied and humiliated”, Lin Feng said while smiling sarcastically. He didn’t come down off the horse’s back, he just pulled on the reins. Qian Li Xue neighed and reared back.

“How dare you, you piece of trash”, yelled the two guards at the same time. Lin Feng raised his fists and punched the air creating two shock waves which struck towards the guards. The sudden

extremely powerful burst of air struck them so violently that it knocked them back.

“If do that again, you will lose everything you ever had”, Lin Feng hurtled by. Only those who were powerful had the possibility to express themselves. The two guards struggled back to their feet, while gasping and wiping the blood from the corner of their lips. They saw Lin Feng was already far away and it made their anger boil from within. A piece of trash was still more powerful than them, no wonder they were only fit to be mountain guards.

Within the Yun Hai Clan, if 15-16 year-old teenagers had reached the sixth or seventh layer on the path of cultivation, their talent was defined as average. Those who had reached the eighth layer were considered as outstanding geniuses. Everybody within the Yun Hai Clan would show them admiration. As for 15-16 year-old ones who reached the Ling Qi layer, their power would be acknowledged in the entire Xue Yue country.

Unlike these geniuses, if a 15 year-old doesn't make any progress within the Qi layers, they will be looked down by the others. Lin Feng's level was so low that the others called him “piece of trash”. He was bullied by other people and they all considered him to be worthless trash.

The fact that Lin Feng had come back to the Yun Hai Clan spread very quickly amongst the clan's disciples. Lin Feng, the piece of trash, was infamous in the Yun Hai clan. Lin Feng, while walking within the clan's territory noticed people were staring at him; all of them had different expressions on their face. He turned a deaf ear to what was happening. Moving forward within the Yun Hai

Clan, he walked over the Xing Chen Pavilion.

The Xing Chen Pavilion was a place within the Yun Hai Clan where disciples were provided with various martial cultivation techniques and martial skills. Every day, many disciples would go to the Xing Chen Pavilion to practice. That day was no exception and the Pavilion was filled with disciples.

Suddenly,

“Lin Feng”,

Lin Feng stopped walking when he heard a voice. He looked around him and shortly after noticed a teenager whose face looked quite cold.

“You’re quite resilient, it seems you haven’t died yet”. The teenager was Lin Heng. He was the culprit who tried to murder Lin Feng last time they had seen each other, Lin Hao Ran’s eldest son.

Lin Feng gave him a quick glance and smiled mockingly. Lin Heng had only reached the eighth Qi layer while Lin Feng was at the seventh Qi layer but had also mastered the Nine Heavy Waves technique, he wasn’t inferior to Lin Heng whatsoever. Lin Feng only had to learn and practice one or two more skills and he would certainly be able to defeat Lin Heng.

Lin Feng ignored Lin Heng and immediately entered the Xing Chen Pavilion. Improve his skills and strength first, and then take

his revenge.

“Next time, I will definitely kill you and send you home to your father to bury” Lin Heng said furious to see that Lin Feng was ignoring him. Lin Heng’s eyes were like piercing daggers as he stared at Lin Feng.

In front of the Xing Chen Pavilion, there was an old man sitting. That old man was starring absent minded at the horizon.

“Elder”, Lin Feng bowed to greet the old man. He was the only one there to protect the pavilion. The Xing Chen Pavilion was a very important place but the old man guarding it didn’t look like he was that important. It reminded Lin Feng of a film he watched in his previous life. It depicted an old powerful monk in a Shaolin temple who was simply cleaning the floor like a servant. Lin Feng thought that scene was particularly deep and unmeasurable, enigmatic and impossible to fully comprehend. As someone who had been granted a second life, he was able to understand the meaning of such actions.

The old man’s expression suddenly changed and he started to pay attention. He was quite surprised to see Lin Feng acknowledge him. A short moment after, he started nodding his head which expressed how pleasantly surprised he was: “seventh Qi layer, you can only choose and practice skills introduced on the first floor, at most two skills”.

“I understand”, Lin Feng replied. The Xing Chen Pavilion was divided into three floors, students of a lower level didn’t have access to the same resources as their fellow disciples of a higher

level. The latter had a card to access these higher-level resources. Thus, lower-level disciples could only access resources on the first floor.

The resources available on the first floor are all yellow-level skills and methods. However, there is a huge amount of them. It is thus possible to find skills and methods which are the most suitable for one's self. They are Yun Hai Clan's basic skills and methods. All of them are better than any of the skills which can be found within Lin's family.

What Lin Feng needed the most at the moment were skills so he started to look for books in the skill bookshelf.

“Seven-Tyrant Fist, One Tyrannical Fist – Seven lethal strikes, skill suitable for those who possess the martial spirit”.

“Hurricane blade, Transform the air itself into a weapon and launch multiple wind blades, skill suitable for people who have the air spirit”.

“Rampaging Ox, yellow level top grade martial arts skill, skill suitable for beast spirits”.

Lin Feng browsed through all these books quickly turning the pages and then putting them back into the shelf. He possessed the dark spirit. He was capable of strengthening all skills possible. His understanding ability was also quite high. Basically, there was absolutely no restriction when it came to learning new skills. He could learn and practice them all, which is one of the advantages of

having a dark spirit. However he still could not find a skill he wanted.

“Cool-breeze sword, Quick and skillful, using this skill must be done with natural grace and elegance, fits people who have the sword spirit”.

Lin Feng’s facial expression changed and he suddenly stared at this book. He was looking forward to carrying a sword and traveling around in all corners of the country helping people in need and shedding the blood of those with evil intentions. He was filled with gratitude for his second chance and a thirst for vengeance. Unable to describe his feelings, he was feeling quite happy but he still had the impression that it wasn’t exactly the skill that he needed or really wanted.

“Sword unsheathing skill, sword unsheathing is a skill which kills at lightening speed, a fast one-hit kill, suitable for people who possess a sword spirit”.

“Sword unsheathing”, Lin Feng stopped moving, it seemed that the use of that sword was different from that of other swords. Traditionally, what swordsmen liked the less was the moment of unsheathing a sword because it is a critical moment during which a certain amount of time is lost and thus delays the moment when the attack can be carried out. Nevertheless, sword unsheathing was a skill made to kill people. Unsheathing the sword had killing for its sole purpose. The most powerful moment of that skill was unsheathing the sword and striking with one movement, if you missed once, you could only consider yourself defeated.

Furthermore, sword unsheathing wasn't the same as other skills. It had only one level, one movement. Unsheathing the sword, killing people was the ultimate attainment, the highest achievement. One quick movement and the sword is showering in the blood of your enemies.

"I choose it", Lin Feng took the book "sword unsheathing" and then got ready to choose a body movement technique. After all, he had to ensure he would be able to kill in one hit at all times. If defeated, the only solution, assuming you could run fast enough, was to escape. Leaping onto roofs, vaulting over walls, was also something that could be useful but that's something everyone dreams of, right?

Lin Feng then chose another book called Moonlight Feather which was a agility technique. Anyone who could master these skills could become so powerful that nobody would see them. In fact, nobody would see anything but your shadow and their own death. Gathering the books together, Lin Feng went to the old man to check them out.

"Sword unsheathing", whispered the old man, and went on: "Young man, sword unsheathing... it's the first time that it is picked up by someone. Nonetheless, you need to know that if someone has already unsheathed their sword and you still haven't unsheathed yours, if your speed is slower than that of your opponent, the outcome is obvious, you are doomed. One can say that this skill is very powerful but it requires a high level of achievement, you must be quicker than any opponent and only then, you will be able to kill them in one hit".

“I understand”, Lin Feng knew the elder was showing kindness in making him aware of the weakness. If someone were too slow to unsheathe their sword, then killing in one hit would be impossible and that meant putting yourself in a critical and dangerous situation.

“You clearly understand the implications, then that’s a good thing. If you cannot successfully kill in one hit, Moonlight Feather is an excellent movement skill for escaping”. The old man stopped talking and checked out Lin Feng’s books. Furthermore, books borrowed from the Xing Chen Pavilion had to be returned within one month. Borrowing them for more than a month would influence other Yun Hai Clan members’ training as they would be unable to borrow them as well.

“Thank you, Elder, thank you for guiding me”, Lin Feng picked up the books and politely thanked the old man showing him gratitude.

“Un”, the old man smiled while nodding his head and handing over a flexible sword, “you can use this sword as a belt because it is very soft, this sword is of no use here anyway, you can take it and have fun”.

Before Lin Feng could say thanks,

“Don’t mention it, no need to thank me so many times. Go and train!” the old man noticed that Lin Feng wanted to thank him again and waved goodbye to him.

Lin Feng scratched his head not knowing what to say. He took a closer look at the sword.

Sword unsheathing combined with wearing the sword as a belt would enable you to attack someone by surprise and kill them in one swift motion.

Lin Feng nodded, smiled at the old man and then left.

“It’s been a long while since I’ve seen such an interesting young man” whispered the old man to himself. Immediately after that, the old man got back into his initial position staring at the horizon seemingly lost in thought.

These days, young people were concerned with training to improve their actual strength, but more and more did it impulsively while forgetting and neglecting the traditional foundations of martial skills.

Chapter 6: the arrow spirit

The Yun Hai Clan was surrounded by eight mountain peaks. Each of these mountains was connected with the other in perfect harmony. Yun Hai Clan's disciples could thus easily go to these high-altitude mountain peaks. These mountains, which made the region a blessed heaven, were filled with caves where disciples could go and concentrate on their training in peace. These mountains were extraordinarily high and covered a vast area. Going to these mountains was therefore an easy way to find peace and tranquility for cultivation.

Lin Feng was walking over a precipice decorated by overhanging rocks. He was surrounded by perilous cliffs and precipices. When looking around him, he could see a boundless sea of clouds. Such a sight would make anyone feel carefree, relaxed and joyful.

However, Lin Feng did have the heart to enjoy the sight. He had been uninterruptedly practicing the sword unsheathing skill over and over again.

“BOOM” was the sound emitted by the stones under Lin Feng's sword each time he hit them. Lin Feng's sword left a long and slender opening in the stones each time it hit.

Lin Feng had already been training for seven days. He had been training without rest which could be seen by the varying sword marks on each stone.

Sword unsheathing was a skill which required developing two

aspects: speed and power. These two were the ultimate goal of the practice. At the moment of unsheathing the sword, a strong power was also necessary. As far as the angle at which the sword had to be unsheathed is concerned, unsheathing it at irregular angles was also necessary. Indeed, pulling it out using predictable patterns could put the user at the enemy's mercy, as he could guess what the next movement would be. The sword unsheathing skill was definitely not a regular technique.

Lin Feng was dripping with sweat because he had been training every day from morning to evening. Uninterrupted practice was the only way to increase his strength. Persistently repeating the movements required a tenacious and incomparable willpower and determination. That was the only way to become stronger on the path of cultivation. Lin Feng hadn't forgotten his previous life. He couldn't forget. Although that world was filled with lofty sentiments and righteous ardor, one also had to go through hardships in that world. Being weak and lacking power could lead to getting killed. Weak and powerless, that sounded like what Lin Feng was when he almost got killed by Lin Heng.

However, Lin Feng's dark spirit was gaining in vitality every minute, like he is in a trance state. He then stopped practicing the skill for a moment and recalled his spirit back into his body.

The spirit was the cultivator's soul and it had to be cherished, unceasingly using it consumed one's vital essence too much.

Lin Feng put his sword back into its sheath. The sheath was made of a ferocious animal skin which had a sparkling gem embedded. Then, he started training again, but this time he practiced the

Moonlight Feather Agility technique.

The sun which was once high in the sky was now sinking into the horizon. Lin Feng rested for a while looking at the sea of clouds making wave-like motions. On his face was a resplendent smile.

He then unsheathed the sword and held it forward; watching the dark red light from the sunset slowly move down the sword, imagining it as blood flowing endlessly. He felt like a god looking down upon creation. This place gave him a view of the surrounding mountains and the aura he was currently emitting was one of strength with a ruthless coldness beneath. “It’s about time to find a cave to practice”. Lin Feng rested for a while, then got up and walked over to the mountains.

It wasn’t long until Lin Feng found a few caves for cultivation. They were always occupied by other people though. Then, Lin Feng arrived in a valley where a mountain stream was flowing. He decided to walk along the mountain stream when something drew his attention and made him stop walking.

“A ray of sunlight between these mountains!” Before him were two peaks. The middle of these two peaks looked like the marks he left when hitting rocks with his sword. It looked very narrow in between as if the path could only accommodate two people walking side-by-side. The path looked as narrow as the ray of sunlight.

“I wonder what there is over there!” Lin Feng thought to himself. He then moved closer with curiosity. It seemed that the mountain stream and the ray of sunlight came from the same place.

At a distant place, two disciples saw Lin Feng move towards that ray of sunlight. They couldn't help but laugh at him and criticize him: "that piece of trash is not very lucky, he doesn't seem to know that is the place where our senior sister Liu Fei trains. It is quite surprising that he dares go in there".

"Liu Fei's strength is incomparable to ours, she is much stronger than we are, much stronger than most of our fellow disciples, a true genius. Senior Sister is the only correct way of addressing a genius such as her".

While the two disciples were whispering, Lin Feng had already walked several hundred meters into the area where the ray of sunlight was coming from and finally arrived. Before his eyes opened up a wide panorama. That place was one of exceptional charm and was extremely vast. On the left was a gigantic lake out of which silk-like hot steam was evaporating. It surprisingly seemed to be a natural hot spring.

"It's such a nice place, I could have bath." Lin Feng's clothes were sticking to his skin as he had been sweating heavily. He took off his top and directly jumped into the natural hot spring.

"So comfortable!" Lin Feng was filled with happiness when he suddenly heard a noise coming from somewhere in the water. Suddenly, he saw a girl's head come out of the water. Her hair looked very soft. It was a 15-16 year-old young girl. She had arched eyebrows and a delicate oval face. She was very beautiful. In this world, female cultivators were very beautiful because they cultivated purer bodies. She was a charming natural beauty and

certainly didn't need to put make-up on.

Nonetheless, that young girl's eyes didn't make her look very amicable. Her eyes were filled with flames of anger. Liu Fei was holding her breath and practicing in the water. She was very surprised to see another Yun Hai Clan's disciple. Even more she couldn't stand seeing him without his top in the water where she practiced every day.

"I'm sorry, I didn't know someone was in here" said Lin Feng with an apologetic smile. He then got out of the water and recognized the most beautiful female fellow disciple.

Liu Fei's expression hadn't changed though and she still looked furious. Who didn't know this was Liu Fei's training place after all? Who didn't know the sunray mountain was Liu Fei's? That pervert had willingly come with the intention of seducing her.

Lin Feng really didn't know someone was there though. In his previous life, Lin Feng was a coward and had never ever come to that side of the region to train.

Even though Liu Fei was extremely beautiful, Lin Feng, who indeed did think she was alluring, really had no hidden intentions. He put on his clothes at lightning speed and started leaving.

"And where do you think you're going?" heard Lin Feng. That was Liu Fei's voice coming from behind him as he was leaving. Liu Fei had said that with a cold and detached voice. Lin Feng turned around and saw Liu Fei holding a bow and an arrow in her hands.

“Where do you think?” said Lin Feng looking at her angrily. He didn’t intend to seduce her. It was a mere misunderstanding and nothing more. Also, he had apologized already.

She didn’t reply. Liu Fei’s bewitching body adopted a battle ready position. She pulled back the arrow placed in the bow in a position ready to shoot. She was ready to let it go. She shot the arrow which made a whistling sound. The golden arrow broke the air and thrust towards Lin Feng.

“How strong”.

Lin Feng starred at the arrow as it was moving towards him. He had absolutely no hesitation and started his Nine Heavy Wave technique. Heavy wave explosions were heard while the arrow was getting closer and closer to him.

At the moment when the arrow approached so near that it was about to reach him, the arrow and the nine heavy waves collided. The arrow collapsed into the waves, hung up in the air for a few seconds before falling onto the ground.

“Do you want to kill me?!” said Lin Feng whose voice was filled with rage. That arrow had a 7000 jin power. If it had been Lin Feng’s previous life, he would have been dead already.

“Yes, so what?” said Liu Fei while pulling out another arrow. An illusory golden arrow suddenly appeared by her side.

Lin Feng was shivering out of fear. A sensation of cold spread throughout his body. The illusory arrow was facing him. The illusory arrow was a guided arrow which meant it could detect if someone was alive and automatically aim at them.

The arrow could automatically aim at breathing people. That was one of the particular characteristics and abilities of those who possessed the arrow spirit.

“Bzzeeomm”. The bowstring emitted a noise while the twinkling arrow moved towards him getting closer and closer.

“Moonlight Feather Agility”, Lin Feng jumped ten meters backwards. Lin Feng had sent another wave into which the golden arrow crashed, what looked like an explosion... but that time the wave had for sole effect to slow down the arrow. It didn't stop it. The noise coming out of the collapse was scary and made Lin Feng's heart palpitate. The arrow was going straight towards Lin Feng's forehead.

Liu Fei stood out from her Yun Hai Clan's fellow disciples and was considered to be out of the ordinary, to be an outstanding disciple. She had reached the ninth Qi layer. Using her arrow spirit, her strength could exceed 9000 jin. Thus, Lin Feng's Nine Heavy Waves was obviously not enough to stop her arrow.

Lin Feng fell down because of the energy released by the clash of the wave and the arrow. As Liu Fei's arrow spirit could control the arrow, which by the way made the arrow seem alive, she made it

turn around and continued to try and kill him.

“Ahhh” shouted Lin Feng! Suddenly, the twinkling arrow vanished in a bright white light.

“I, Lin Feng, will always remember this”.

The distant voice stupefied Liu Fei. She looked around only to see her arrow cut into two. Lin Feng had already disappeared from the place. He had left at an amazing speed.

“This is the arrow light” whispered Liu Fei...

The two disciples who had watched the scene all along saw Lin Feng escape. They couldn't help but be seized with terror. Liu Fei surprisingly hadn't killed that piece of trash.

Maybe Liu Fei was unwilling to fight and kill him.

They had seen Liu Fei's wet clothes stick to her body. They thought about how graceful her body was. She was filled with endless charm. It made them gulp with desire. The only way for them not to drool was to keep their mouth closed. The only thing they could do was to peep and enjoy such a rare scenery.

Everyone knew that Liu Fei was very powerful. Within the Yun Hai Clan, many people courted her. There were some extremely skillful disciples who courted her. The two disciples who had just been peeping at her couldn't match with these extremely skillful

disciples. If anyone learnt that they had seen Liu Fei's utterly attractive body, they would be killed in a very ugly way.

Chapter 7: Black Wind Mountain

After some time Lin Feng finally arrived in a safe place. Cold feelings filled his heart. He was thinking about how the strong controlled the world and dominated the weak. He could see from this encounter that those with power in this world have no regard for human life. Indeed, if they felt like killing, then they would just kill, provided they were strong enough.

He had had no intentions when going to the place where he saw the ray of sunlight inside a cave. He had just gone there to have a look and was going to leave as fast as he had went there. However, Liu Fei had wanted to kill him even though they were both Yun Hai Clan's disciples.

“Those who have the arrow spirit have the ability to track people and engage in a battle with them using long range attacks while keeping their distance. But in the case of a close fight, I certainly would be able to kill her in one hit.” Lin Feng thought using the sword was quite a satisfying experience. His speed was as fast as lightening and his strikes like thunder splitting the air. The arrow getting so near and then breaking into two was a sign that he hadn't been wasting his time training that much. He hadn't endured all this in vain.

Lin Feng had been practicing without interruption for seven days back then in the mountains over the precipice. Thanks to his dark spirit, he had been able to understand many things. Only at the moment when his spirit had been using too much of his vital essence, he had recalled it back into his body and had then practiced the Moonlight Feather Agility technique.

“Liu Fei” thought Ling Feng while recalling her beautiful face. He went and picked up a piece of wood and began making a fire to hang his clothes to dry, he was still soaking from the hot spring.

Not so far away from Lin Feng appeared four shadows. All of them must have been Yun Hai Clan’s disciples.

“Over there is someone, we should invite him to join us and come along. The more powerful people who join us, the better” said one of them who was wearing light green robes.

“But you don’t know just how powerful he is, right?” said a tall, imposing disciple. Nobody, however, opposed the idea.

The group of four people was composed of 3 men and 1 girl. While they were walking and approaching Lin Feng, the girl noticed Lin Feng’s topless body. She couldn’t help but blush. “Hello, can you put your clothes on?” she said to him in a shy voice.

Lin Feng looked at the young girl’s eyes. Although she wasn’t as beautiful as Liu Fei, her face was delicate and pretty. Her skin looked soft and beautiful. In her previous life, she had definitely been a beautiful girl but Lin Feng thought that girls in that world were much more beautiful than in the previous world because they walked on the path of Cultivation.

“Ok” said Lin Feng cooperatively. Lin Feng was quite an easy-going person and therefore quickly agreed. Getting along with him

was no hard task.

“So what’s the deal? What do you guys want?” asked Lin Feng while putting his clothes on.

“Alright, the situation is as such, we want to go to the Black Wind Mountain and attack some ferocious wild beasts. We’d like to invite you to come with us in which we case we would equally share precious collected items. Are you interested?” explained the young man wearing light green robes. Black Wind Mountain was located northwards of the Yun Hai Mountain in the Wild Beast forest. It was extremely vast. Some disciples conjectured that the Black Wind Mountain was much vaster than the entire Yun Hai mountain chain. When the Yun Hai Clan had chosen to settle in the Yun Hai Mountain, they had probably thought of the fact that the Black Wind Mountain was near. After all, wasn’t it a perfect place for Cultivators to challenge themselves and test their own strength and abilities? Indeed, hunting and killing ferocious wild beasts enabled them to gather useful items while training and improving their life and death experiences at the same time.

“Ok, I accept” said Lin Feng without overthinking his answer. He really wanted to go with them and get stronger, by the quickest possible route.

“Awesome! That way, we are now five people, if we run into level nine ferocious wild beasts, it won’t be a big deal.” The young girl was obviously happy that Lin Feng had agreed to join them. The strongest Cultivator of the group was a young male disciple wearing white robes, who wasn’t very talkative. He had reached the eighth Qi layer. The other three had reached the seventh Qi

layer. They, including Lin Feng, were all Yun Hai Clan's disciples. The three others had reached the seventh Qi layer, just like Lin Feng. Therefore, they had at least some talent, unlike his former self.

Ferocious wild beasts are divided into nine levels compared to the nine Qi layers. Therefore, they all hoped not to encounter a level nine ferocious wild beast, or even stronger, which would put them in a risky and dangerous situation.

“Younger brother, that guy there is my fellow disciple Han Man. The girl there is my fellow disciple Jing Yun... and the guy there is my fellow disciple Jing Feng, he is also the strongest Cultivator in our group” explained the young man in light green robes. The big and tall young man, called Han Man, and the young girl, called Jing Yun, gave a brief smile to Lin Feng. The toughest of them, the young man wearing white robes, looked at Lin Feng in an apathetic, nonchalant and indifferent way.

“My name is Lin Feng” said Lin Feng while smiling.

“Lin Feng the piece of trash” said the young man wearing white clothes known as Jing Feng. These were the first words he had said since their encounter. Lin Feng gave him a sarcastic smile. “Jing Yun, junior sister, it looks like we've been wasting our time. Dragging him around will be an absolute burden.”

The other three had obviously already heard Lin Feng's name before. There are many Yun Hai Clan's disciples and even though they may never have met Lin Feng, they have all heard his name.

Lin Feng frowned. The three others, considering the awkward situation, looked embarrassed.

“Lin Feng, younger brother, Jing Feng is a talented man of high abilities. He has reached the eighth Qi layer on the way of Cultivation. It is hard for him to put his arrogance aside. Don’t lower yourself to his level. Act as if you hadn’t heard him, just ignore his remark. We are here because we want to get together.” The tall and young man, called Han Man, comforted Lin Feng, against all expectations. He spoke honestly without being afraid of revealing his feelings.

“Exactly, my senior fellow is right!” said both Qing Yi and Jing Yun approving their fellow disciple’s words. The young man wearing white clothes, Jing Feng, eventually groaned yet said nothing.

Lin Feng saw the three others were sincere which comforted his feelings. He also didn’t refuse to join them. Thus, the five of them left and started walking over to the mountains. They eventually arrived at the Black Wind Mountain.

“Lin Feng, the Black Wind Mountain covers an extremely vast area. I am afraid only Yun Hai Clan’s teachers and most experienced Cultivators really know how big it is. We should always stay on the outer edges.

Lin Feng nodded. He knew from the beginning that Han Man was a man of wise words and didn’t intend to disagree with him

whatsoever.

The Black Wind Mountain's foliage was dense, filled with grass, trees, thistles and thorns. Its trees were very thick and dense which allowed for adequate places to hide. It was also a small heaven for ferocious wild beasts.

"Level five breeze wolf, catch him!" said Han Man suddenly. A pair of shiny eyes could be seen inside a shrub.

Qing Yi pulled out his sword from his back. His sword had the color of the moon. It looked like silver mercury was flowing out of it onto the ground.

"Tshhhh!" a light sound was emitted by the Qing Yi's sword as he stroke the breeze wolf's head. He had killed it in one hit.

"breeze wolf... killed in a wonderful way, as expected." Said Han Man while laughing cheerfully. Han Man went to help Qing Yi to pick up useful items the level five ferocious wild beast contained.

"Level five ferocious wild beast... that's all." Said the white robed and arrogant, Jing Feng, in a disdainful and apathetic tone.

Lin Feng shook his head when he heard these words. He has only reached the eighth Qi layer... Although he was more than an ordinary Cultivator which did make him talented, he didn't count as a genius of an extraordinary level. Being arrogant and considering everything and everyone as worthless and inferior

didn't suit his limited success.

They gathered the items and continued walking. Every once in a while, they would meet a ferocious wild beast but all of them hadn't exceeded level seven so they were all quite easy to dispose of.

"Haha, the bag is getting heavier and heavier. We already have 30-40 items. The harvest is not too bad." Said the tall and sturdy Han Man, who was in charge of carrying the bag. He couldn't help but smile as the weight of the bag increased.

"But we already walked a few dozen kilometers inside the Black Wind Mountain. We may encounter stronger and stronger ferocious wild animals. We should be careful. If it gets too difficult, we should retreat" reminded Qing Yi.

"I understand" replied Han Ma while staring into the distance.

"Level eight ferocious wild beast, it is a brutal ape" whispered Han Man while looking in the front. The beast that appeared had a colossal body. Brutal apes are known to be extremely violent and famous for having a matchless strength that could rip apart a tiger. It is one of the strongest beasts on the edges of the forest.

"Jing Feng, I'll stay by your side" Jing Yun said to Jing Feng. A level eight ferocious wild beast couldn't hurt Jing Feng. He was much stronger than them in comparison.

“Hehe, Jing Yun, why are you worried? It seems that there’s someone enjoying the fruits of our work. He hasn’t been battling at all. Does he really intend to keep relying on us without moving a single finger?” said Jing Feng harshly while glancing wickedly at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng laughed sarcastically. He intended to rely on them without doing anything? He hadn’t fought yet because Han Man and Qing Yi had always taken the initiative to go to the front battle. They had always been the quickest to jump head first into battle. In case of real danger, would he watch with folded arms, without being affected and not lifting one finger? In the case they would meet a level eight ferocious wild beast, Jing Feng wanted to let Lin Feng fight it. After all, in Jing Feng’s eyes, Lin Feng was nothing but a piece of trash. A piece of trash couldn’t fight a level eight beast which meant the final outcome would be his death.

“Jing Feng, what do you mean? Except for you, none of us is able to fight a level eight ferocious wild beast. If you let Lin Feng fight one of them, isn’t the same as killing him?!” said Qing Yi who was obviously not happy to hear what Jing Feng had just said.

“Not doing anything and sharing our items with us, isn’t it cheap? If he died, wouldn’t we have more for ourselves?” said Jing Feng in a disdainful tone.

“Jing Feng, we came together so we should stick and progress together! Lin Feng trusts us so we must stay together!” said Han Man in a clearly bad mood.

“Huh? If you want to protect him, that’s fine but I don’t want to

take care of that piece of trash for free” said Jing Feng still in a cold and detached voice. At that moment, the brutal ape was already coming towards them.

“I will try” said Lin Feng a few steps away from the level eight ferocious wild beast. That beast’s strength was equivalent to that of a Cultivator who’d reached the eighth Qi layer. Lin Feng wanted to challenge himself and see who really was the strongest.

“You can’t! If you fight a level eight ferocious wild beast, you will die!” said Jing Yun very worried “Jing Feng, you’re too pathetic!”

Hearing these words, Jing Feng’s face became really angry. He looked at Jing Yun’s lithe and graceful body in a vicious manner, “if you were not a beautiful girl, I would have already disciplined you”.

“I’m coming to help you” said Han Man while putting down the bag full of items. He then went to Lin Feng’s side.

“Count me in as well,” said Qing Yi doing the same as Han Man.

“And me as well, are the three of us able to defeat that ferocious wild beast?” said Jing Yun silently praying in her head.

“You are overestimating yourselves and your abilities” said Jin Feng behind them while laughing in an arrogant way. The level eight brutal ape is a very aggressive and extraordinary strong beast. A few Cultivators who have reached the seventh Qi layer

cannot defeat such a monster.

Lin Feng glanced at those who had joined him and felt had a warm feeling deep in his heart. He warmly smiled at them.

scratching his nose to express his lack of confidence, Lin Feng said: “perhaps, I can’t fight this ferocious wild beast... only perhaps.”

Chapter 8: Hell Wolf

Lin Feng's words made Jing Yun stupefied the two others, they glanced at Lin Feng with astonishment. Immediately after that, they saw Lin Feng dash forward without hesitation.

“Lin Feng, this is not the right situation to show off your abilities”, Jing Yun said worryingly. Even though they had never seen Lin Feng in a fight, they all knew he was well known for being a piece of trash. Even if these days, Lin Feng had been exerting himself to train really hard, his level was at most the same as theirs, but he wanted to see if his strength matched that of a level eight brutal ape, how could that be possible?

It was too late, he had already dashed forward before anyone could stop him. The brutal ape saw that he actually had the audacity and impertinence to move forward to attack. It stamped furiously on the ground with its thick muscular legs making the ground vibrate under its steps, as its colossal body was speedily advancing towards Lin Feng. The brutal ape had vicious eyes as it charged forward gaining more speed. It looked like a mountain of thick furred muscle was trying to charge Lin Feng, creating earthquakes in its path.

It seemed that Lin Feng didn't know how strong the level eight demonic beast was which made Jing Yun's heart jump with fright. Jing Yun was so frightened that she could barely breathe. The beast was brazenly rushing towards Lin Feng.

Jing Yun had the feeling that Lin Feng was going to be trampled and crushed beneath the ape's thick muscular legs. She was so

scared that she closed her eyes, unable to watch the horrifying scene.

“BOOM!”. A titanic shockwave trembled throughout the air. Jing Yun, whose eyes were closed clearly felt the entire space shake and vibrate. Then, she heard the brutal ape roar in a violent rage.

When she opened her eyes, she just saw the brutal ape lying on its back three meters away. Lin Feng had silently moved back to her side, looking miraculously unharmed, it seemed it had been no problem at all.

“How is that possible?” Jing Yun couldn’t believe her eyes, Lin Feng hadn’t suffered the slightest injury during the collision with the brutal ape. She looked at Qing Yi and Han Man only to see that their eyes were as wide open and filled with astonishment just like her. They had seen with their own eyes that Lin Feng had repelled the brutal ape with ease. That scene had shocked them to the core.

However, that was a level eight monster, without a basic power of 8000 jin, it would have been impossible to defeat the brutal ape, let alone defeat it with seemingly no effort.

Behind, Jing Feng was also stunned, stumped for words. The piece of trash had repelled a brutal ape? Unbelievable!

“Level eight Brutal Ape... it should have high quality leather and plenty of thick meat” whispered Lin Feng. These days, he had reached the seventh Qi layer and his practice had solid foundations. Added to that, he had mastered the Nine Heavy

Waves technique which allowed him the strength of 8500 jin. Besides, the essence of the Nine Heavy Waves technique was determined by the accumulation of powerful shock waves combining to produce an explosion of power many times greater than the original waves. Therefore the waves, at the moment when they hit the brutal ape, must have reached an explosive power close to 9000 jin. At that moment though, the brutal ape stood back up, letting out a bloodcurdling roar and sending itself into a frenzy.

Lin Feng dashed forward, closer to the roaring brutal ape. He started using his Nine Heavy Waves again and thrust his arm out emitting a loud “BOOM!”. The brutal ape’s body was colossal making it impossible to avoid the attack in time. Thus, it had no choice but take the attack head on and resist as much damage as possible.

“Let me test my skills on you.” Said Lin Feng while calmly walking towards the brutal ape. Suddenly his left fist thrust forward, violent waves began to combine and rush up his arm and out of his fist. “BOOM!”

“CRACK!”

A violent cracking sound like the snapping of twigs quickly followed.

Jing Yun and the others were all astonished at the scene. brutal ape? At that moment, Lin Feng was even more brutal and beast like than the brutal ape. Unceasingly punching using his technique Nine Heavy Waves, showing no signs of stopping. The vibrations

in the air were sweeping over several hundred miles. Layer upon layer of insanely oppressive waves were sweeping over the area which demonstrated to everyone exactly how powerful he was.

“He’s really making full use of the Nine Heavy Waves technique! He’s using it in such a skillful way! The power is on a completely different level! He has brought his technique to the point of perfection, which many are not capable of reaching in this lifetime.” Qing Yi definitely didn’t think Lin Feng could be called a piece of trash.

“The air is still full of Lin Feng’s power, the waves are not stopping. I’ve heard that understanding how to use and control Nine Heavy Waves to higher levels is extremely difficult. Lin Feng’s natural talent is amazing” Said Jing Yun looking lost in thought.

“Monstrous” said Han Man scratching his face and looking gloomy.

“Bzzzzz” the shaking feeling stopped and the area became calm again. Lin Feng turned around and looked at the three others: “you guys come pick up the precious items, I am too exhausted.”

“Oh” said Han Man realizing the brutal ape was already a beaten corpse. His lip was trembling with excitement at the precious materials. Taking all of the precious items from the brutal ape’s body required great strength. Its skin was extremely thick. Even though it was dead, it was extremely difficult to split its skin open. Lin Feng must have transformed into something not of this world considering how he had violently slaughtered the brutal ape.

“Haha, Lin Feng, you’re monstrously skillful. Let’s just hope we do not come across level nine ferocious wild beasts though, we might not be able to stop them” Han Man said while laughing cheerfully. He then put the items in the bag and put it on his back.

Lin Feng laughed and said: “let’s keep moving forward, perhaps we’ll come across some more level eight ferocious wild beasts.”

“That was just a stroke of luck. That beast couldn’t strike back” said a sarcastic voice coming from behind them. They then saw Jing Feng walk past and walk ahead.

“Jing Feng, you...” Jing Yun and the two others looked furious. That guy really had a spiteful mouth. Twisting the story like that.

The group continued to walk. While Jing Feng was walking in the front and was expecting ferocious wild beasts to come out allowing him to demonstrate his superior skills, but no living thing would approach, there were no signs of life in any direction. Jing Feng was furious.

“It seems like something is wrong here” Lin Feng said. That part of the forest, compared to other parts, was exaggeratedly calm and quiet.

“Something is wrong indeed” Qing Yi and the two others, who had been walking quite fast, started to slow down and noticed Jing Feng, who was walking ahead, was coming back closer to them.

Everyone was looking at Jing Feng and suddenly a Hell Wolf appeared in front of him. The wolf had a hideous twisted face. It looked like a demon.

Seeing the face of a Hell Wolf was so unbearable that Jing Yun covered her mouth with both hands. She started shaking out of pure fear.

“The hell wolf is a level nine ferocious wild beast. Within the group of ordinary beasts, he is by far the cruelest one. It likes to eat people slowly one bite after the other without immediately killing them which makes your death a long and excruciating one” Said Qing Yi with a trembling voice. It seemed that they had just run into the one monster that every Cultivator feared the most when coming to the Black Wind Mountain: the hell wolf. Not only was the hell wolf extremely cruel but it was also so quick that it was near impossible to escape from it.

“Piece of trash, we’re fighting this one together. You use your Nine Heavy Waves to distract him, while I look for every opportunity to kill him” said Jing Feng while stepping back towards the others. His voice was deep and forceful. He was obviously talking to Lin Feng.

“Piece of trash? You want me to come distract him so that you can find an opportunity to escape with your tail between your legs?”

Lin Feng said with a grin: “You attempted to throw me to my

death, you thought I was just going to trust you?”

“You have no choice, otherwise everyone will die” said Jing Feng boiling with rage, while continuing to move backwards.

“I don’t think that way though. It seems like you haven’t fought yet. You want to live off us without moving a single finger. I am not willing to feed a piece of trash for free though” said Lin Feng, his grin getting bigger. Lin Feng had thrown Jing Feng’s own words back in his face.

While talking, Lin Feng glanced at the others who were standing by him to make them retreat to a safe distance.

Jing Yun and the two others retreated without a second thought. The hell wolf they were facing would only kill them if they confronted him. Besides, Jing Feng’s recent behavior had bitterly disappointed them. Free from affectation, they were not going to rush ahead and help.

“Alright” said Jing Feng while looking at them in anger. A sharp slice of air was suddenly formed by a bright and splendid sharp sword which appeared behind Jing Feng’s body.

“Sword spirit.”

Lin Feng was astounded. No wonder that guy was so arrogant. Amongst all the spirits that existed, the sword spirit was one of the strongest and most powerful spirits. Those who possessed the

sword spirit could carry out powerful sword attacks and kill in one hit.

Because the sword spirit was a powerful one, many Cultivators who didn't possess the sword spirit practiced hard to develop their sword skills. For example, Qing Yi who possessed a wind spirit was extremely quick which enabled him to be skillful and agile at using a sword.

The long sword was unsheathed and such a dazzling gleam shone that it blinded everyone.

The hell wolf roared and suddenly threw himself towards the others. Its sharp claws refracted tiny rays of light.

The sword, which looked like a rainbow, and the cold sharp claws of the hell wolf collided emitting a thunderous sharp metallic sound.

"Its claws are quite sharp!" Thought Lin Feng to himself. The hell wolf was, as expected, not an ordinary beast. The sharp claws of the hell wolf and the sword had collided with each other. The hell wolf was so powerful that its strength had thrown Jing Feng ten meters backwards. A big crater appeared where they clashed. Jing Feng had obviously endured an exceptionally powerful attack.

As the hell wolf's claws were about to touch the ground, it had already jumped again not allowing Jing Feng chance to relax. It moved fast as a lightning.

Jing Feng moved his sword, letting neither wind nor rain pass through to him in a pattern that looked similar to a spider web. He then stepped back and found out that the hell wolf had eventually disappeared from his sight.

Above!

Jing Feng was absolutely horrified. He had absolutely no hesitation, he threw his long sword high in the air and rapidly moved back.

“Bastard!” Cursed Jing Yun. Jing Feng simply couldn’t win against the hell wolf, so he threw his sword and escaped without caring about the others.

“If I die, you will die too.” Jing Feng’s facial expression was hideous. He went towards them.

“Fuck off!” Lin Feng said and used his Nine Heavy Waves and thrust his fist towards Jing Feng.

“You...” Lin Feng’s waves were so powerful that Jing Feng got thrown back. Immediately after that Jing Feng gave a bloodcurdling scream. The hell wolf’s claws were deep into his back, blood splashed and he fell down onto the ground.

“You want to die?!” Said Lin Feng whose facial expression was ice-cold. If you abandoned others, they’d abandon you. In Lin Feng’s case, if you attacked him, he’d strike back.

“Owww wooooo!” The hell wolf was howling. He let loose wild shrieks and howls. Its claws were still on Jing Feng’s body on the ground. It was not hurrying to kill Jing Feng. The hell wolf’s cold eyes were looking at Lin Feng which gave everyone the chills.

“What’s to be done? The wolf is hurting him but not killing him because it likes to kill its prey slowly. It likes to make its prey suffer to an extreme extent” said Qing Yi while looking at Jing Feng seeing that he was unable to fight it anymore. It gave Qing Yi a dreadful sensation.

“What is the hell wolf’s weakness?” Asked Lin Feng suddenly

Qing Yi looked at Lin Feng in a surprised way.

“The hell wolf is a very quick attacker, its attacks are strong and powerful. It can’t protect itself very well. Its neck is especially vulnerable, but it can use its sharp claws to protect itself. If you want to reach its neck, you must deal with its claws first” said Qing Yi while his forehead was dripping with sweat. Lin Feng’s Nine Heavy Waves could cover a large area and had an insanely strong power. Nine Heavy Waves wasn’t a quick attack, for him to avoid the hell wolf’s claws and reach its neck seemed like an impossible task.

They were trapped. If they tried to escape the hell wolf would catch them with ease, they could only stay and watch as they one by one were tortured to death. Lin Feng to everyone’s surprise took a step forward accidentally while still in thought. The hell

wolf's ears pricked and it was now coldly glaring at the group, its razor sharp claws dripping blood....

Chapter 9: Throat Slitting Sword

“Arghh!” Lin Feng had noticed his mistake while stepping forwards.

He had just made a made a small step. It scared Jing Yun gulped as the fear welled up in her throat. What did Lin Feng intend to do? The hell wolf was the second cruelest beast after the soul spirit beast. Even some of the most skilled Cultivators who reached the ninth Qi layer would have no other choice but to run and escape from a hell wolf.

Without taking the time to tell them what he was about to do, Lin Feng had started running towards the hell wolf, gaining more and more speed with each step.

Seeing what was happening, Jing Yun was overcome with fear, the others were also terrified beyond belief.

“Aahhh woooooo!” The hell wolf started howling in surprise when it saw Lin Feng was running directly towards him. The hell wolf’s demon like face looked hideous. Its eyes were gleaming with an extremely cold light. The sight would chill even experienced warriors.

The hell wolf, whose claws were still slowly piercing in and out of Jing Feng’s body, jumped in the air with a blood-curdling howl. Its body slowly turned black and a brilliant white light began glowing over its body, covering its whole black body in a white radiance.

“Lin Feng! Come back!” Shouted Jing Yun but it was already too late. Lin Feng started using his Moonlight Feather Agility and his speed sharply increased to reach the highest speed possible.

Qing Yi and Han Man were so frightened that they were frozen stiff. Their hearts were beating so fast that it seemed like time had stopped for a moment. They did not have any time to realize what was happening before the fight had already started.

An amazingly bright meteor-like streak suddenly appeared in the air in front of the wolf. When the light vanished, it seemed like time had stopped. Lin Feng had stopped moving, all signs of life were gone. The hell wolf landed triumphantly with a growl.

Silence...

Jing Yun's hands were covering her mouth. She looked on at the scene terrified. Lin Feng was actually dead...

It was suddenly so quiet. “Grrr-aawoo...”. The hell wolf fell down on its side with shock filling its eyes. On its neck was a mark, which looked like an extremely thin red silk thread out of which was flowing a small endless stream of blood.

“The hell wolf died!” Said Han Man and Qing Yi while looking at the scene before them, gasping with astonishment.

“Lin Feng, how do you feel?” Asked Jing Yun, whose voice was

febrile, while looking at Lin Feng who was still standing on its feet but no longer moving, not even a sign of breathe could be seen.

Jing Yun's voice dropped in intensity. Qing Yi and Han Man were also very nervous to see Lin Feng like that. They had seldom been that nervous.

Finally, Lin Feng moved. He slowly turned around. His eyes were sparkling and he was grinning wholeheartedly.

"I'm fine" said Lin Feng spreading his arms out in a stretching motion. He remembered the instant he had attacked. Sword unsheathing, it had looked a silver firefly streaking across the sky. It was lightening fast with such unbelievable power. One of the prerequisites of the sword unsheathing skill was, of course, to be faster than the opponent.

"Pheww!" Jing Yun let out a sigh of relief. They could finally relax again. They had the feeling that they were back to themselves, the same as when they originally met Lin Feng in the mountains.

Instead of talking, they were looking at Lin Feng as if he was a monster.

"Why are you looking at me like that?" Said Lin Feng embarrassed while scratching his face. The way they were looking at him made him feel like he had forgotten to put on clothes, it was unnerving.

“Metamorphosis!” Han Man, whose teeth were clenched, said only that one word. Lin Feng was quite puzzled by the fact that Ying Jun and Qing Yi were solemnly nodding showing that they felt the same as Han Man.

“Lin Feng... you have a sword spirit...” Qing Yi obviously knew that the light which streaked through the air a moment ago had been caused by a sword. Only a sword could have been that quick.

“You’re misunderstanding, I just learned a sword skill” nodded Lin Feng. Only those who had the sword spirit and a powerful sword could master sword skills.

“I’m misunderstanding? How could it be that you don’t have a sword spirit?” Asked Qing Yi showing obvious suspicion.

“I really don’t have a sword spirit” said Lin Feng shaking his head. Qing Yi breathed in a mouthful of cold air. How could someone who didn’t have a sword spirit use a sword at the speed of lightning? Lin Feng’s skills were terrifying. For example his Nine Heavy Waves technique, he could already master that technique at the highest possible level of achievement.

“I am suspecting you are able to practice and use skills belonging to all categories. Am I right?” Asked Qing Yi forcing a timid smile while shaking his head. He hadn’t asked what Lin Feng’s spirit was though. After all, there were some people whose spirits were so strong and powerful that it enabled them to use skills belonging to different categories. Those kind of people would not share the true identity of their spirits. Besides, Lin Feng hadn’t even used his spirit so far. Therefore, it made it difficult for Qing Yi to guess

what Lin Feng's spirit was.

Lin Feng was just smiling. At that moment, it indeed seemed like Lin Feng was able to learn and practice any kind of skill. Besides, it also seemed that he had a strong learning ability.

“A level nine ferocious wild beast... This time we're collecting lots of precious items” said Han Man with a smile on his face. He took out his dagger and started carving up the precious materials from the body of the beast while talking: “Lin Feng, you killed that hell wolf on your own. If you hadn't been here, then we'd be dead by now. These materials are yours and only yours.”

“Jing Yun, Qing Yi, you have no objection to that, right?”

Qing Yi and Jing Yun smiled and agreed, if Lin Feng hadn't been there, they would have died a cruel and horrifying death.

“I don't agree. Everything we picked up from the beasts until now should be divided equally among the four of us” said Lin Feng shaking his head. When the others thought he was a weak Cultivator, they made him walk behind them. Even though the entire reward could be his for killing the hell wolf on his own, Lin Feng wasn't the kind of person who saw profit and forgot morality.

They all saw Lin Feng had determination in his eyes and nodded one after the other and said: “alright”.

“You guys seem like you've forgotten about me” said a weak

voice. It was Jing Feng, who else could it be?

Jing Feng had been attacked by the hell wolf and his back had been shredded into pieces. The hell wolf had trampled him and crushed his bones. At that moment, Jing Feng was unable to get back on his feet and was looking up at Lin Feng and the others from his pitiful state on the ground.

“Damn it! Get lost!” Said Han Man extremely aggressively cursing at Jing Feng. Not only had that bastard let them fight against the brutal ape alone, even though it was extremely dangerous, but he was also the one who had led the hell wolf towards them and had forced them to deal with it even though they could have died.

“Let’s go. He can put his life in the hands of the gods” said Jing Yun who was furious.

As the four of them were about to leave, they heard Jing Feng say in a ghastly tone: “you guys shouldn’t forget that my older brother knows that we came to the Black Wind Mountain together. If I die and that you get out of here alive, what is my brother going to think?”

Han Man and the others stopped walking and turned around looking at Jing Feng with hesitation.

“The best solution is for you to bring me back and share the precious items with me. Otherwise, you will die.”

“What’s going on?” Asked Lin Feng. That guy was half-dead yet still insane enough to arrogantly threaten them.

“His brother, Jing Hao, is one of the best disciples, currently sixth on the rankings. He’s an extremely powerful Cultivator who has reached the ninth Qi layer. He also has a sword spirit. He’s extremely strong” explained Qing Yi to Lin Feng who immediately understood.

Lin Feng started walking and went towards Jing Feng with an ice-cold smile on his face.

“Trash, help me get up” said Jing Feng ordering Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was stupefied and with something like a smile yet not a smile on his face said to Jing Feng: “I really admire your courage.”

Lin Feng’s voice dropped. He unsheathed his soft sword. Lin Feng was emitting a cold blood chilling glare.

“What are you going to do?” Asked Jing Feng feeling oppressed from head to foot, a feeling a chill run down his spine.

“Lin Feng!” shouted Qing Yi. Jing Hao was an amazing disciple, the sixth best Cultivator of the clan. He was extremely strong. Even though Lin Feng was extremely strong as well, his level was still low after all. Qing Yi didn’t think that Lin Feng could offend Jing Hao.

Lin Feng looked at Qing Yi and the two others and asked them: “in view of his behavior, do you think that if we rescue him, he will just let us off?”

The groups faces all instantly froze. Cold sweat was flowing down their back. Indeed, Jing Feng’s expression was obviously revealing that if they rescued him, he was most likely planning something sinister.

“We have never offended him. He thinks he is always in the right. Then, he’ll make false charges against us again. That will be our end. Not only has he not mended his attitude, but he also ordered us to save him. On top of that, he also wants us to equally share all our items with him. Do you still want to save such a person?”

Lin Feng patiently explained these things to them. Even though they were all precocious, they were all only 15-16 after all. Lin Feng who had gone through a lot, in his previous and current life, had more experience.

The three others all nodded to what Lin Feng had said. They were indeed scared that if they brought Jing Feng back, Jing Hao would seek revenge for Jing Feng.

Lin Feng turned around, looked at Jing Feng and saw that he was, at last, frightened.

“I swear that if you bring me back, I will not seek revenge, and also I will not ask you to share any of the gathered items” said Jing

Feng while crawling pathetically on the floor.

“It’s too late.” Lin Feng unsheathed his sword which flashed in a dazzling gleam and cut off Jing Feng’s throat. When your life is at stake, who would trust your words? If only Jing Feng had seen his errors earlier, he may have received mercy.

Lin Feng was looking at Jing Feng, his eyes were open, but no life could be seen, they just stared at Lin Feng in shock. Lin Feng’s heart was pounding. Of course, on such a journey, blood and corpses were hardly avoidable things, but he was still inexperienced.

“If Jing Hao comes and looks for you, tell him the truth, tell him that I’m the one who killed Jing Feng” said Lin Feng looking indifferent while smiling. Lin Feng was not scared of Jing Hao just because he had reached the ninth Qi Layer.

Chapter 10: Life or Death arena

Looking at Lin Feng as if he was an unreachable hero, Han Man grinned: “we’re like brothers. You killed Jing Feng. We would not have had the conviction to act. We will all share the responsibility for it. People may call me many things, but no one has ever called me a coward.”

He had easily grasped the real reason why Lin Feng had killed Jing Feng. He had done everything with his own hands as he didn’t want to get them involved in any future trouble. Han Man felt true admiration for Lin Feng. Lin Feng’s heart was true and his kind actions made his pure intentions easily seen through.

“Exactly, if there are consequences then we can share the burden together. Besides, Yun Hai sect’s disciples are not permitted to kill each other, so we are safe within the sect. Even if Jing Hao was suspicious that we had killed Jing Feng, he could not retaliate ” Qing Yi determined.

“Do not forget about me, I am also with Lin Feng until the end” said Jing Yun blushing. Her smile was particularly beautiful at this moment.

“Alright” said Lin Feng happy to have made such good friends. Qing Yi was right, even though the Yun Hai sect didn’t mind things happening outside of the sect, they had still imposed strict restrictions within the sect in order to stop anyone causing any problems.

Lin Feng crouched down and started searching Jing Feng's body looking for the things he had been carrying. He took out a book: it was a skill book.

“Roaring Thunder: Sword Skill.”

Lin Feng opened the skill book while whispering the name of the skill. Roaring Thunder was a yellow level skill. If the skill was mastered to perfection, each hit would look like a lightning strike followed by an explosive roar of thunder. The roar would travel in the trajectory of the sword with tremendous destructive power.

“Roaring Thunder is a sword skill from the Xing Chen Pavilion. Jing Feng's two brothers had recommended this to practice. It is a powerful skill but is particularly hard to learn and master to the point where you can always make roars of thunder appear.”

“I also practiced that skill but I failed to grasp its concept. My power when using it is limited” explained Qing Yi. Qing Yi was training to become a sword Cultivator, therefore he had read many of the sword skill books previously.

Lin Feng simply nodded. He had only been practicing three skills: Nine Heavy Waves as both an offensive and a defensive technique, the indispensable movement technique Moonlight Feather Agility and Sword Unsheathing which enabled him to swiftly strike with monstrous killing power. If he practiced Roaring Thunder, he could combine it harmoniously with Nine Heavy Waves and at the same time achieve a new power which could possibly overcome the Sword Unsheathing skill.

“Are we going back now?” Jing Yun asked Lin Feng. These days, they all considered Lin Feng as the leader of the group.

“Since we’re already here, why hurry back? Wouldn’t it be better to look for more ferocious beasts to hunt?” said Lin Feng who didn’t want to go back to the sect early. In the Black Wind Mountain, he could get battle experience and practice the Roaring Thunder skill at the same time. Wasn’t it much better this way?

The others didn’t have anything to fear by staying. Lin Feng was there with them, provided they didn’t run into extremely strong ferocious beasts, they wouldn’t be in any danger especially now that Lin Feng had shown his true power. There was no need to hurry back to the sect.

“If we could get some profound pills in exchange for the materials we have collected, that’d be good” said Jing Yun looking forward to harvesting more ferocious beasts. A profound pill was a pill which helped improve a Cultivators’ training and enabled them to reach higher Qi layers. It was an extremely useful item for Cultivators. However, it required killing lots of ferocious beasts in order to get a single profound pill. Items which were tradable for a profound pill could only be found in higher level ferocious beasts making it extremely dangerous.

Lin Feng’s eyes were shining. He remembered how useful a single profound pill could be to lower level disciples. Even though he was able to defeat level eight ferocious beasts with little effort, he was still at the seventh Qi layer which was still only an average level within the disciples. If he could reach the next Qi layer, he maybe

wouldn't have to rely on the Sword Unsheathing skill anymore and would be able to defeat a Cultivator who had already reached the ninth Qi layer.

Five days later, in the middle of the thick and dense forest, powerful roars were heard from Lin Feng's sword. Small explosive sounds were crackling in the air all around. The sounds produced by the sword still made Jing Yun jump from fright.

“BOOM, BOOM.....” Trees were splintering and bursting apart from contact with the thunderous roars. Lin Feng was using his sword so gracefully and elegantly that it seemed like the sword was dancing in the air. You would not be able to tell from a glance that his sword held such a terrifying power.

“Being able to use the Roaring Thunder skill like this after five days, he really is a monster” said Qing Yi while making a wry smile and observing from a safe distance. He had also practiced sword skills and had already practiced the Roaring Thunder Sword skill. He knew how difficult it was to use. Lin Feng had been practicing for five days and every single hit produced a loud explosive sound. That was an astonishing achievement. Qing Yi's heart was feeling heavy watching this.

“Don't compare yourself with Lin Feng. He is using a clouded leopard as part of his training...” said Han Man with both hands crossed over his chest while looking at the fight between Lin Feng and the clouded leopard. What made Lin Feng so terrifying is that he could have killed the ferocious beast at any time, but instead was using it for training. He was so quick at using the sword that it seemed like an invisible wall appeared in front of him, blocking

anything which approached. Even if the clouded leopard was extremely quick, there was no way it could match Lin Feng's speed.

“HAAAA!” shouted Lin Feng cheerfully while stabbing the clouded leopard in the head causing its head to rumble then violently explode into pieces.

Lin Feng sheathed his sword with a smile. He was extremely satisfied with the Roaring Thunder skill. The skill had reached a level now where it made the roaring sound with each strike. If Lin Feng managed to perfectly master the skill, it would be even stronger than Nine Heavy Waves. Its biggest advantage was that it was an attack of pure oppressive force.

Lin Feng's face looked delicate and his facial features gave a handsome yet gentle feeling. In comparison with what he looked like in his previous life, he looked more refined.

Han Man started picking up the precious items from the corpse of the leopard while mumbling that his original intention was to come to improve his own skills, hunt and kill some ferocious beasts, but now he was just collecting the precious items Lin Feng had left behind. He was not unhappy though as he was benefitting a lot from watching Lin Feng fight against level seven and eight ferocious beasts.

“Han Man, how many profound pills can we get in exchange of the materials we collected from the beasts?” Lin Feng asked.

“Thirteen at least.” Said Han Man whose eyes were filled with excitement. They hadn’t imagined that they would collect so many items. That was all thanks to Lin Feng. If Lin Feng hadn’t been there, then it would have been difficult to kill level seven ferocious beasts.

“Very good, we can each have 3 profound pills. We can exchange the other materials for useful items or weapon. Now, we can go back to the sect and enjoy our hard work.”

Profound pellets were a very efficient way to increase a person’s power on the path of Cultivation. Pills were most effective the first three times, after each pill the Qi within the body would begin to show resistance. The first pill would cause the body to overflow with Qi and the probability to reach the next Qi layer would be extremely high. Each following pill the effect would greatly decrease and after the third the pill effects would be minimal.

“Three profound pills.” Han Man and the others were all extremely happy. There were many pills to chose from and they would have the opportunity to cultivate to the eighth Qi layer with the help of pills. Within the Yun Hai sect, the lowest Cultivators are at the fifth Qi layer. Disciples who had reached the seventh Qi layer were also considered average. Only those who had reached the eighth Qi layer received the full benefits from the sect.

During those days with Lin Feng they had started to understand his personality and how he acted. He was determined on his path of Cultivation and had an incredible god-like aura which radiated from him at all times.

“Let’s go back” said Lin Feng.

The first thing they did after returning to the sect was go and exchange their precious items for twelve profound pills which each of them were given three. Lin Feng also exchanged some extra materials for a long sword. Han Man got himself a new axe. Qing Yi exchanged items for two earth profound pills which would strengthen one’s basics on the foundation of Cultivation. Qing Yi was finally aware that the foundation of his Cultivation was not strong enough.

What Jing Yun exchanged with her items somewhat surprised Lin Feng: beauty pills. These profound pills were used to make a woman more attractive and beautiful. If an evil woman used beauty pills, they would not have a great effect as it would reflect the nature of their Qi essence. Jing Yun however was a very pure and innocent girl and it would have an increased effect on her beauty. Lin Feng didn’t understand why she had chosen beauty pills as she was already incredibly beautiful to him.

“Why are you looking at me that way?” Jing Yun asked Lin Feng who could not stop staring at her. She couldn’t help but blush and look away.

“Nothing, it’s just that you’re already very beautiful. I do not feel you should change in any way” Said Lin Feng who suddenly looked very embarrassed before starting to laugh awkwardly. Since Jing Yun had chosen the beauty pill, who was he to intervene.

“Lin Feng, do you plan to go back?” Han Man asked Lin Feng. He was thinking that if they had the opportunity, Lin Feng and he

could go back to Black Wind Mountain together and collect even more materials.

“Let’s practice and improve our skills first. I think being at the seventh Qi layer is still too low within the sect” said Lin Feng. It was indeed only enough to be considered average by others.

“Indeed, we all need to improve our skills as Cultivators. Lin Feng, considering your current strength, you can go anywhere to practice. I don’t think anyone would stop you” Said Han Man shaking his head. He then recommended a distant place where there was an immense canyon. It was Yun Han sect’s most famous place: Stormy Gorge.

The Yun Hai sect was surrounded by eight extremely high mountain peaks. In the middle of the Yun Hai sect’s mountain peaks was the Stormy Gorge which had a deepest point of a few hundred meters. It covered extremely vast area and was divided into several areas like an underground city. The gorge was vast and many different landscapes could be seen within. If you entered it, maybe you’d end up in the middle of a forest or possibly a desert oasis.

Provided they didn’t enter the gorge looking for people to fight, no matter what their level, the Yun Hai sect would encourage its disciples to go and gather near death experiences. Only the strongest of disciples would enter the Stormy Gorge. Being weak and still entering would just lead to certain death.

Therefore Yun Hai sect’s disciples who hadn’t at least reached the eighth Qi layer wouldn’t dare go to the Stormy Gorge.

Besides, there was another place deep inside the Stormy Gorge called the Life or Death arena. Provided a disciple voluntarily set a foot into the Life or Death arena, they could fight to the death over a grudge and if they accidentally got killed, the Yun Hai sect would not get involved. While direct killing was not allowed here, once beaten within an inch of their life it was near impossible to return safely. Some people would even secretly kill wounded disciples as they attempted to return to the sect. If you had enough power, you could even publicly kill another disciple and the sect would turn a blind eye.

The people who would enter the Life or Death arena had their family members or best friends killed and were unable to live without getting revenge.

“Of course I will go” said Lin Feng looking towards the area where the Stormy Gorge was located. Observing a crowd of people on the horizon heading towards the gorge, his expression changed greatly as he remembered the past.

If it had been when Lin Feng had only reached the fifth Qi layer and people still could call him a piece of trash, he would have had no choice but to watch the fighting in the Stormy Gorge from a distance while avoiding all other disciples.

This is of course how he was tricked.

Chapter 11: Revenge

Three days after returning, Lin Feng was sitting in his room meditating. He could sense the vital Qi of heaven and earth much more clearly. A thin mist had appeared in the air of his room emanating a faint multicolored glow.

Floating near Lin Feng's body was the illusory dark spirit and it seemed to be absorbing the essence of the universe and combining itself with the universe's power. If Lin Feng had been able to see his spirit then he would have noticed that his dark spirit had become more defined and was taking on the shape of a human figure.

At that moment, the vital Qi of heaven and earth surrounding Lin Feng suddenly penetrated and flooded his whole body rushing towards his dantian. His eyes opened completely shocked at what had occurred because an abnormal essence had penetrated into him and was circulating within his body. The vital Qi which had invaded his body had caused him to break through to the eighth Qi layer.

"I ate the three Profound Pills and finally reached the eighth Qi layer." Lin Feng thought to himself with a smile. He was initially at the seventh Qi layer but was not close to reaching an advancement anytime soon. There was still a large distance to cover on the path of Cultivation to reach the eighth Qi layer. Three Profound Pills was the price for him to reach the next level, but it was worth it.

"Now if I battled with a Cultivator of the ninth Qi layer, I should

be able to come up with a way to defeat them.” When he was still at the seventh Qi layer, his Nine Heavy Waves had the energy of 8500 jin and Roaring Thunder could reach a destructive energy of 9000 jin. However against Cultivators who had reached the ninth Qi layer he would have had no chance and could at most delay his own death. Now he could confidently engage in a battle with them knowing if he didn’t win he could at least escape to fight again another day.

With a deep breath and after patting down his robe, Lin Feng left his room. It was a beautiful autumn day and the sun was shining brightly above him. He had a pleasant feeling of warmth all around.

“Lowly trash, you finally made up your mind to die and crawled out from under your rock.”

Lin Feng’s good mood was ruined by the voice he heard.

“Lin Heng.” Lin Feng said while looking to his side. He saw Lin Heng ten meters away from him with arms folded, arrogantly showing Lin Feng his back without fear.

As a rule, Yun Hai sect’s disciples were not allowed to force their way into other disciples’ rooms. Many disciples preferred to cultivate in their room and being disturbed by others could have serious consequences on their cultivation. Therefore Lin Heng hadn’t dared break the sect’s rules to disturb Lin Feng in his room and he had been waiting outside for two days.

Turning around, Lin Heng stared coldly at Lin Feng. Lin Heng's eyes revealed his murderous intentions. It had been three days since Lin Heng had received a letter from his parents in which they said that Lin Feng, the piece of trash had injured his little brother Lin Yun. They also said he had humiliated and insulted his father and little brother during the meeting of elders. Lin Heng had been planning a way to once again trick Lin Feng.

“Piece of trash, I heard that nearly dying gave you a small boost in strength. With your little power would you dare come to the Stormy Gorge and help me settle my grudge by killing you?” said Lin Heng in a mocking tone.

Lin Fen's face was calm but inside he had a cold smile on his face. Last time he had been tricked by Lin Heng into going to the Stormy Gorge, he had been beaten to the brink of death. He hadn't killed him though because the Yun Hai sect had a rule which stipulated fellow disciples who entered the Life or Death arena were not allowed to directly kill each other. Many disciples would leave opponents with only an inch of life remaining. Many would die on their way to receive medical treatment and the lucky ones would not die but be maimed for life.

He had already killed the Lin Feng of this world using that method. At that time Lin Feng was nothing but trash who was only at the fifth Qi layer, compared to Lin Heng who had reached the eighth Qi layer, who would have cared even if he outright killed the trash?

The strong were the ones who dictated the rules here. The strong killed the weak, this was the law of this world. Any rule could be

broken with enough strength, but the law of the world remained the same.

“My time for revenge has come so quickly, this must be fate” thought Lin Feng while smiling indifferently. Lin Heng had killed Lin Feng’s in the past. Lin Feng was going to avenge his previous self.

Lin Feng started walking towards the Life or Death arena.

“Trash, Coward, you don’t dare?” said Lin Heng sarcastically seeing that Lin Feng was ignoring him.

“Didn’t you say we’re going to the Stormy Gorge?” said Lin Feng apathetically leaving Lin Heng stupefied. A small and cruel smile appeared on Lin Heng’s mouth. A piece of trash was always just a piece of trash. He barely survived with his luck and is stupid enough to fight me again? This time he would not give Lin Feng even a small chance to survive. Even though he wasn’t going to kill Lin Feng in the Stormy Gorge, he would wait for him to come out injured and kill him in secret before he could receive medical treatment.

In order to go to the Stormy Gorge, one had to travel down numerous steep cliffs. At the entrance to Stormy Gorge were Iron chains hanging down the cliff face. If a Cultivator was not strong enough to jump down then he would use the chains to climb down.

Considering Lin Feng’s abilities he was able to jump down the cliff but he wasn’t going to show his skills because if Lin Heng saw,

Lin Heng would notice how strong Lin Feng was and would run away like a scared dog. He did not want to miss this rare opportunity and grabbed the iron chains to climb down.

“Trash will always be trash. You still need help to enter the Stormy Gorge.” said Lin Heng with a mocking smile. Lin Heng looked down and jumped, soaring through the air like a roc. His movement skills made him so light that it seemed he could fly. As he was about to land, with a flip he smashed his feet deep into the earth beneath and came to an immediate halt.

“Incredible, who was that?” said the people who had just seen Lin Heng land. They couldn’t help but gasp in admiration.

“I know him, it’s Lin Heng who has reached the eighth Qi layer. He’s extremely strong” said another disciple.

Cultivators’ vision and sense of hearing would become extremely developed as they transformed with each new level. Those disciples could see Lin Heng even though they were a hundred meters above the gorge looking in.

They had finally arrived at the Life or Death arena. There was no grass or trees, only a sand covered landscape with large rocks piercing the surface of the sand like small mountains. Some Yun Hai sect’s disciples were passing by and couldn’t help but stop and watch when they saw Lin Heng and Lin Feng. They wanted to see a fight which could be the end of another cultivator.

“Hehe, I really wouldn’t have thought that a piece of trash like

you would dare come. Last time you nearly died, but today I will make sure you return in a coffin.” said Lin Heng while laughing. His laugh was flippant and impudent. Lin Heng wanted to come to the Stormy Gorge and kill Lin Feng, but he never thought Lin Feng would agree a second time.

“You can always try if you have the ability” said Lin Feng who felt saying anymore would be wasted breath.

“A piece of trash like you dares say some insane things just because you defeated my little brother Lin Yun. I will show you today that a Cultivator who has reached the eighth Qi layer has a strength which makes him capable of anything. Lin Feng, you are the same piece of trash as before.”

Lin Heng was moving towards Lin Feng while shouting these words. He tried to give Lin Feng a simple punch to the face. One punch would be enough to finish this battle, the beating would come after.

Lin Feng lifted his hand to stop the punch with his palm.

Lin Heng couldn't help but laugh coldly. That piece of trash had suddenly used the palm of his hand to stop his punch. Was that even possible?

“Let me break your hand!” A brilliant white light from Lin Heng's hand and was pouring out of Lin Heng's fist. He wanted to use his fist to crush Lin Feng's palm beyond repair.

“Dream on!” said Lin Feng calmly. A shockingly powerful strength came out of his palm. At that moment Lin Heng had the impression he was standing before an ocean of boundless powerful waves. The waves were overwhelmingly oppressive and violent. Not only had Lin Heng lost all his strength and arrogance, but at the same time the waves were crashing down onto his arms. His right hand had already started to swell and turn purple from the pressure.

“How is that possible?” said Lin Heng confused. He had the feeling that his hand was being crushed by a powerful invisible force. His entire body was being crushed and the extreme power of the waves was still increasing. He needed to escape quickly.

“You think you can run with your tail between your legs?” Lin Feng’s face was ice-cold. The palm of his hand closely pressed against Lin Heng’s fist. He was following Lin Heng not allowing even the slightest increase in distance between them.

“CRACK”

A loud spine chilling sound could be heard all around. Lin Heng felt an incomparable pain in his entire arm as if his bones were cracking and would explode at any moment. He wanted to pull his arm away but he couldn’t, he wanted to run away but he couldn’t, Lin Feng was overpowering him in both strength and speed. The gap between them was so great, this was simply a slaughter.

They were so close to each other that Lin Heng could see every detail of Lin Feng’s face clearly. Lin Feng eyes were cold and a wicked grin was painted across his face. Lin Heng suddenly felt his

knees go weak with fear, was Lin Feng only toying with him?

When had that piece of trash surpassed him? Lin Heng just wanted to give up and run away.

“How should finish I this?” said Lin Feng while laughing a bone chilling laugh. Lin Feng’s Nine Heavy Waves technique was crashing out violently, and Lin Heng was being crushed by the waves of which the power reached 9500 jin. It felt like his entire arm was being crushed by a giant python.

“CRUNCH”

Blood sprayed out of his mouth as he hit the floor. A violent pain spread throughout his forearm and he could not bear such unimaginable pain. His bones had cracked and the muscles were torn beyond repair.

“You’re my uncle’s third son... you’re my cousin... but your side of the family and Lin Ba Dao act secretly together to carry out such despicable deeds. You know nothing of love and affection, insulting and humiliating me over and over again. You even came here to murder me a second time. You are pitiless and heartless so don’t blame me for being merciless and cruel.”

Lin Feng was looking at Lin Heng on the ground as he said these very cold words. If someone wanted take Lin Feng’s life, his philosophy would be “a tooth for a tooth” no matter who the person was.

“No. I am your cousin, please spare me.” Lin Heng could feel Lin Feng’s ruthlessness all over his body. At that moment he could clearly feel the killing intent directed towards him. Lin Heng was terrified.

“When you tried to kill me, did we stop being cousins? “. Lin Feng said sharply then bombarded Lin Heng’s dantian with the Nine Heavy Waves technique. Suddenly Lin Heng gave a blood-curdling screech as his face became pale.

“I have crippled your cultivation. Now you can live your life being called ‘trash’, like you always did to me.”

Lin Feng said coldly then turned around and left. Not far away some Cultivators who had reached the eighth Qi layer saw how ruthless Lin Feng had been in that battle. Lin Feng did not approach them, but they each hid away to avoid conflict. If they angered Lin Feng would he also cripple their cultivation? They did not wish to find out, as a life with crippled cultivation was a life filled with suffering and agony.

“Lin Feng you dared to cripple my cultivation. You will not get away with this” said Lin Heng maliciously while burning with rage. He was furious as he had become a piece of trash himself. He hated Lin Feng’s father from the bottom of his heart. He regretted the whole situation but he didn’t want to wait for his revenge. He would immediately seek help from his cousin, a girl called Lin Qian who had already reached the Ling Qi layer and her spirit had awoken. In the Hao Yue sect, she had already been recognized as a powerful disciple. Lin Qian knew that Lin Feng’s father had hurt her father Lin Ba Dao during their last meeting. Lin Qian had

already prepared to come to the Yun Hai sect to kill Lin Feng herself.

What a pity that he had tried to kill Lin Feng himself. Lin Heng hated everything. He hated himself for having failed and he hated the future he would have with a crippled cultivation.

He would make sure Lin Feng suffered a fate much worse than his own.

Chapter 12: Lin Feng's spirit

In the city of Yangzhou was the Lin's family house. Lin Hai was sitting alone in one of the rooms longingly staring at a portrait on the wall.

It was the portrait of an extremely beautiful woman. Her eyes were a deep blue like a calm ocean. Shockingly there was a ferocious beast which was wrapped around her shoulders. It looked like a snake but that was not the impression it would give, it held its head high looking down at everything as if an ancient god looking down at the insignificant creatures below. Its eyes from this portrait alone would burn deeply into your soul and leave a lasting impression.

“Meng He it looks like little Lin Feng has finally become an adult. I see more of you inside him every day and he even inherited your spirit. Maybe he doesn't know what this spirit means but by the time his spirit awakens, He will see how great a gift his mother has given him”

“The day will come when that useless snake spirit will shake the world. Our son was never trash, he always had the potential for true greatness hidden inside of him”.

Lin Hai standing in front of the portrait murmured to himself with an expression full of love and also a strange sadness.

“They all think that I have lost my memory, but I could never forget you in my lifetime. When Lin Feng's spirit awakens, I will

tell him everything. Soon he will enter the empire and follow his destined path.”

Lin Hai's eyes showed a strong emotion welling up inside him. He once had doubts that his son would ever be able to awaken the spirit. His son was not ordinary and now he could finally see him unlocking the potential which lay hidden inside his body. Lin Hai was convinced Lin Feng's spirit would awaken shortly.

.....

Lin Feng naturally didn't know the secret hidden by his parents. He had no memories of his mother. Lin Hai had never told Lin Feng anything about his snake spirit.

Lin Feng had crippled Lin Heng's cultivation which made him feel relieved as if a weight in his heart had been lifted. It meant that the last of old Lin Feng's regrets before his death had vanished. He had finally gotten his revenge.

Lin Feng wasn't going to leave immediately when he could practice and gain some more experience in the Stormy Gorge. Every person that came into the Stormy Gorge did it with the sole purpose of fighting to become stronger. Even if he didn't take the initiative to go and provoke others, he was convinced others would come to fight him.

“It's you” said a cold and detached voice. Lin Feng looked around looking for the voice and saw a beautiful female body; every curve seemed to be imprinted in his memories. Even though he couldn't

see the face, the silhouette was enchanting.

Lin Feng had some doubts as the girl was wearing a mask to hide her identity. He didn't know many people in the Yun Hai sect. He knew Han Man, Qing Yi as well as Jing Yun. That person obviously couldn't be any of them, could it be someone he knew as the old Lin Feng? Lin Feng was confused.

“Last time we met you ran away at such speed that even I couldn't follow. Shall we test how good your escape skills are now we are out in the open with nowhere to run?” said the girl in front of him laughing coldly. The girl took an arrow from her quiver and grabbed the bow which was strapped on her back. Lin Feng immediately knew why he had recognized her. He remembered everything, she was Liu Fei, the girl from the hot spring in the mountains. Lin Feng firmly remembered her name because Liu Fei's arrow filled with killing intent had nearly ended his life on their last encounter.

She was not going to give him a chance to escape, she knew he was hiding his power before so she immediately used her spirit. Lin Feng could feel that her spirit was targeting him and he was slowly being locked as its target.

“The bow is the weapon of choice for long range fighters however the bow has no ability in close quarters combat. If I close the distance between us it will be harder for her weapon to show its true potential.” thought Lin Feng. He had absolutely no hesitation and dashed towards Liu Fei with a shocking speed.

“You really want to face me in close combat?” said Liu Fei

laughing sarcastically. She pulled the arrow and in an instant it shot from the bow. The arrow created an incredible pressure accompanied with a hissing sound. The bowstring was still shaking with a buzzing sound.

“Clangggg!” Lin Feng unsheathed the sword from his back.

Nine Heavy Waves! Roaring Thunder!” Nine Heavy Waves was pouring out from Lin Feng’s left hand and shooting outwards. The power of the arrow weakened with each wave that it collided with. Then as the combined power of Nine Heavy Waves and Roaring Thunder struck, the arrow lifelessly cracked in two and fell onto the ground.

“Moonlight Feather Agility!”

His body didn’t stop for even a fraction of a second. He kept moving closer while using his Nine Heavy Waves technique to disrupt the air around him. His Moonlight Feather Agility technique was extremely smooth as if he had already used it a million times before.

Liu Fei did not only have a beautiful face but she also had a powerful combat strength. She was the eighth on the list of disciple rankings.

She knew Lin Feng wanted to close the distance so she had jumped back immediately after having shot her arrow. She was an expert at fighting with a bow and she had clearly learnt some excellent movement skills. By the time Lin Feng had broken the

first arrow into two, her hand was already charging her bow with tremendous amounts of Qi, but this time... with three arrows knocked in place.

“Goodbye.” Said Lin Feng who was running at an incredible speed. He then suddenly changed destination and jumped towards a small grove of trees. Liu Fei’s movement technique was extremely profound. Lin Feng’s technique however was only a hair better than Liu Fei’s technique. Even though he could get close it required time, during this short time it was enough for Liu Fei to shoot a few arrows. She had just attempted to shoot three arrows at once and with three arrows shot from her bow, Lin Feng could feel the immediate threat to his life.

Which is why the moment Lin Feng saw that she was putting three arrows into her bow, he had quickly changed his plan and decided to escape from sight. That was the best way to hinder Liu Fei’s fighting strategy. Also when fighting on an open area the distance between them was vast however in this grove of trees she would need a line of sight to target him. Liu Fei using her arrow spirit was definitely able to bring out her maximum fighting potential on an open plain.

“Looks like I have underestimated the power of a Cultivator who has reached the ninth Qi layer, it’s not that easy to fight against and win” Lin Feng thought feeling gloomy. He hadn’t known that Liu Fei had reached the ninth Qi layer which was the highest Qi layer before advancement. She was already able to control her arrow spirit and her bow harmoniously using her Qi. Her long-range power was a nightmarish. His previous thoughts of fighting with ninth Qi layer disciples and easily winning were immediately extinguished.

But Lin Feng didn't get discouraged. He was convinced that if he managed to make Liu Fei enter the grove of trees then the victory would be his.

"Humph!" laughed Liu Fei ironically behind him. She started pulling on the bowstring which emitted a powerful pressure as it was pulled back farther and farther.

An intense and dreadful sensation spread throughout his body. Lin Feng understood Liu Fei was about to shoot and his body was warning him of the danger. Lin Feng held his sword tightly in his hand. He needed only two breaths to reach the grove of trees and he would be safe.

"Where are you running!" said Liu Fei in a slightly panicked tone.

A sword had suddenly come into vision which shocked Lin Feng. He could sense that he was in great danger. He was dashing forward with all his strength when suddenly he stopped and then jumped back.

"BOOM!" broken earth flew all around. There was an explosion in front of Lin Feng and an extremely deep sword mark had appeared leaving a crater in the ground. If Lin Feng had continued to walk towards the grove and been even a second late then that sword would have cut Lin Feng's body apart.

Lin Feng's expression changed as he saw a man in the grove that was wearing white robes and holding a long sword in his hand. A

moment ago it had been his sword which had created the mark in the ground.

“Liu Fei, how has that bug offended you? Do you want me to help you kill this bug?” the disciple standing in the grove was disdainfully looking at Lin Feng and appeared to be someone who thought very highly of themselves. In his eyes, Lin Feng was an ant and he would kill him without hesitation, Liu Fei just had to nod and give him the signal to act. He would kill Lin Feng immediately if she asked him to do so. Even if the sect prohibited killing fellow disciples directly, there would be no reason for them to punish him because he had a high status above those bugs making him untouchable.

“One of the sect’s Elite disciples” Lin Feng saw the badge on the man’s clothes. Lin Feng was trembling with fear and felt like time itself had frozen. If Liu Fei asked him to attack Lin Feng then he would do it. Lin Feng would need to dodge at his highest speed or he would be beheaded immediately.

“Yu Hao, Stop interfering with other peoples business.” Liu Fei said but she hadn’t shot her arrow. It is not that she was showing mercy to Lin Feng or had forgiven him, it was only because Yu Hao was courting her but she had absolutely no interest in him. So she hadn’t asked him for help, because she didn’t want to owe anything to Yu Hao and using this moment to kill Lin Feng would indebt her to Yu Hao.

She recalled her spirit back into her body and put her bow back onto her back. She said to Lin Feng: “Consider yourself lucky this time, next time the best thing you can do is not to run into me,

otherwise you will not be as lucky as today.”

When she finished talking, she turned around and walked into the distance.

“Liu Fei, why do you always leave immediately?” said Yu Hao shaking his head then immediately shot into the distance, not even giving a look at Lin Feng.

“BOOM!” another explosion sound rung out in front of Lin Feng and a very deep sword mark was left in the ground.

“Consider yourself a lucky bug, next time I see you provoking Liu Fei, I will have to crush you” said Yu Hao whose voice came from a distant place.

Lin Feng was still standing in the same place, not moving in the slightest. Even though the sword had caused an explosion of power in front of him, he for some reason was not scared.

Liu Fei thought she was extremely strong and because Lin Feng dared to come into the hot spring where she trains to provoke her, she wanted to kill him. Yu Hao was an elite disciple and his strength was extremely powerful. He had no reason or malice towards Lin Feng, but was also about to kill him without speaking a word to him. Lin Feng had been in this world for a short time but Lin Feng had understood and learnt from experience in what it meant to be strong: to be respected; to be ruthless.

“Yu Hao, when I reach the Ling Qi layer, you will look into this bug’s eyes as I take the sword from your hand and then drive it into your heart.”

Lin Feng saw the extremely deep marks left by the sword in the ground and a ray of light flashed through his mind, right after he turned around and left the place. He was convinced that someday his hard work and innate gifts would make him strong enough to take his revenge and he believed that day would not be far away.

Chapter 13: Battle in the Life or Death Arena

(Part 1)

Lin Feng didn't continue his training in the Stormy Gorge. Instead he decided to leave the gorge and was once again standing at the top of the cliff looking down upon the gorge.

Looking down into the gorge he could see it was a boundless canyon as far as the eye could see. There were thousands of people inside training. It was a place filled with endless battles and cultivation. That was the Yun Hai sect's culture which bred the strongest cultivators. Here you would be beaten to within an inch of life and forced to climb back to the sect with your broken body. Only the strong will thrive here and the weak will be the fertilizer for the strong to grow.

Lin Feng walked around the canyon outside the Stormy Gorge and to his surprise came across some of his friends. He was happy to see Han Man and Jing Yun again so quickly.

"Lin Feng" shouted Jing Yun. She couldn't hold in her excitement meeting Lin Feng again.

"Jing Yun, how is it possible that you are even more beautiful than the last time I saw you" said Lin Feng complimenting her while smiling sheepishly.

In comparison with a few days before, Jing Yun really had become even more beautiful and pure. Lin Feng knew it was because of the beauty pills, but he never would have thought it

would have such a great effect.

Jing Yun blushed when she heard Lin Feng and couldn't help but look away. She said in a soft voice: "Why are you bringing that up?"

"Haha, Lin Feng you have to be less bold, Jing Yun is still very shy." said Han Man straightforward as always. "Lin Feng, we were initially getting prepared to come and look for you and never thought we would bump into you so soon".

"Come look for me? why? what's going on?" asked Lin Feng.

"Lin Feng, did you reach the eighth Qi layer when you ate your share of Profound Pills?" Han Man was looking forward to seeing Lin Feng as he had killed a Hell Wolf when he was still at the seventh Qi layer, he was surely going to be even more shockingly powerful after having reached the eighth Qi Layer.

"Yes, I had a breakthrough recently. How about you guys?" said Lin Feng while smiling.

"If an ignorant fool like me could reach the eighth Qi Layer so quickly, obviously a monstrous talent like you would have." said Han Man while grinning: "Jing Yun hasn't reached it yet as she needs some more time before she can advance to the next level. Qing Yi hasn't come out yet either but he should be at the bottleneck for advancement."

Lin Feng nodded. Even though Han Man had a carefree behavior, he cultivated a little bit more efficiently than Jing Yun and Qing Yi so it was normal for him to be the first one to reach the eighth Qi layer.

“Han Man, you still haven’t told me why you were looking for me.”

Han Man scratched his head and felt slightly embarrassed which left Lin Feng speechless.

“Lin Feng, I have also reached the eighth Qi layer. I want to go to the Stormy Gorge and test my strength but I may get massacred by cruel Cultivators. I wanted to ask you to accompany me and only if we encounter a strong and merciless disciple will you need to get involved. I am a guy who can endure a beating or two.”

Han Man was grinning while asking Lin Feng for his help. Lin Feng directly understood what Han Man meant and would only need to get involved if a life was on the line. He of course wouldn’t refuse the request of such a good friend.

“When do you want to go?”

“Tomorrow we can head out. I want to prepare some masks first.” Han Man saw that Lin Feng didn’t hesitate at all when he gave his answer. He felt even more admiration for Lin Feng as he was a true friend. Not only was this guy abnormally strong but he also had no arrogance at all. He didn’t argue about anything and always kept things fair between them. He was the one who had

killed almost all the ferocious beasts back in the Black Wind Mountain, yet he had insisted to share the items equally with everyone involved.

“No problem. Just give me a shout when you’re ready to go” said Lin Feng straightforwardly.

People who enter the gorge all chose to wear a mask which Lin Feng originally did not know. The reason many chose to enter was in order to fight other disciples. Losing was a disgrace and winning could cause a blood feud. Wearing a mask was a way to overcome all of these issues.

“I also want to come, Lin Feng can stay by my side at all times and protect me. I know I will be safe with him by my side” said Jing Yun in a charming yet innocent voice. Lin Feng was stupefied. Both Han Man and Lin Feng were staring at Jing Yun wide eyed. Was this really the shy girl from before?

“Why are you two looking at me like that?” said Jing Yun glancing at them and stamping softly on the ground.

“It’s nothing, don’t worry” said Lin Feng smiling and continuing as if nothing had happened.

Lin Feng and Han Man thought it was strange to see her so bold while still acting like a cute and innocent child. Han Man was looking at Jing Yun confused at the change he had seen. He had been really dumbfounded to hear Jing Yun say she wanted Lin Feng to protect her. How fearless was she to be so direct.

“Alright you can come with us too. We should be discreet and not go looking for trouble.” said Lin Feng quickly analyzing the situation before agreeing. There were many extremely talented Cultivators down in the gorge and to some extent it was frequented by Elite disciples. Elite disciples were all relatively proud and aloof. They would refrain from attacking ordinary disciples without being provoked. So with Lin Feng’s help, they were convinced that they could go down in the gorge without getting into too much trouble. Elite disciples could kill other disciples without repercussions from the sect. They had the power to do as they pleased.

Lin Feng had the bad luck of accidentally coming across both a ranked disciple who wanted to hunt him down and a pompous Elite disciple. His luck really was terrible.

After having all the details confirmed they all departed in different directions. Lin Feng went back to his room and continued to cultivate without stopping to sleep. Seeing how weak he was compared to others, had strengthened his willpower and he felt a flame ignite in his body as if it was screaming for him to be the strongest.

The morning after Han Man had come to pick up Lin Feng and they both immediately left to go and meet Jing Yun.

The Yun Hai sect was extremely large. The ordinary disciples’ rooms covered several districts and this area was the size of a small town.

Lin Feng and Han Man arrived to the place where they had agreed to meet with Jing Yun. They saw that Jing Yun's face was pale and worried. There was a young boy standing in front of her talking with an evil look on his face.

"Jing Yun, what's the matter?" Lin Feng asked while approaching at an increased speed.

"Get lost, you piece of trash! Can't you see that I'm talking to Jing Yun? What makes you think you have the right to interrupt me?" said the young boy to Lin Feng while narrowing his eyes. He knew Lin Feng in the past and would often join in bullying him.

"Lin Feng, you are finally here!" said Jing Yun to Lin Feng smiling at him and ignoring the young disciple's remark.

"Shall we go?" said Lin Feng mockingly while not even looking at the young boy. Han Man, Lin Feng and Jing Yun all turned to leave without even glancing back at the young disciple.

"Wait, wait, Han Man, Jing Yun" said the young boy while grabbing Jing Yun's sleeve to stop her from leaving.

"Get lost. Can't you see we have something to do? What makes you think you have the right to interrupt me?" Lin Feng said, throwing the young disciples words back at him while knocking his hand away from Jing Yun.

Powerful waves shot from Lin Feng's palm directly towards the

young disciple. The power contained in this small action had caused the young boy who was at the seventh Qi layer to crash into the floor several meters away and spit out a mouthful of fresh blood. He looked at Lin Feng gasping with astonishment.

“Get lost, you piece of trash!” said Lin Feng which shocked as it was a slap in the face. Lin Feng didn’t stop in the slightest and continued to walk away. When had the piece of trash, Lin Feng, become so fierce?

“That disciple sure acts rashly, Jing Yun, who is he?” asked Han Man to Jing Yun.

Jing Yun’s face got tense when she heard the question. She looked at Lin Feng and Han Man and said: “He was saying that he saw the beheaded body of Jing Feng in the Black Wind Mountain and it was clear that it had been done by a sword technique. Jing Feng’s big brother, Jing Hao is now searching for those who were with Jing Feng. He had come to threaten me with this information.”

Han Man was stupefied. No wonder Jing Yun had lost all color from her face.

“If he comes, then he comes. Let fate take its course and do not worry about the small problems.” said Lin Feng who was remarkably calm.

“Considering that he is not an Elite disciple within the sect, he would not dare attack us while within the sect’s territory. We have

to be a little bit more careful in the Stormy Gorge to avoid unnecessary conflicts.” said Han Man while nodding in agreement with Lin Feng.

It did not take long for the group of three to arrive at the Stormy Gorge. Lin Feng had arrived in much less time than when he was hiding his power, he was actually shocked at his own speed.

Inside the Gorge they had spotted a Fortress made of solid compact earth. That earth fortress was covering a huge area. It looked like dozens of ordinary people could live in there with ample room. Even though it was made of earth there was no doubt that it was completely sturdy. It looked like even a strong raging storm would cause no damage to this fortress. In the Stormy Gorge it was common for a disciple to create a dwelling, but this one was unique.

Han Man touched the fortress. There was no dust from deterioration and no sticky feeling from the earth absorbing the rain. They really had no idea how such a fortress had been built.

At that moment a silhouette emerged from the earth fortress. It was a person who was also wearing a mask and was cautiously exiting his dwelling. The person glanced at Lin Feng and the two others momentarily then in a panic left at full speed which stupefied everyone present.

Lin Feng and the others understood what had happened. They all looked at each other and smiled. People in the Stormy Gorge were not weak and had all reached the seventh or eighth Qi layer as a minimum, some had reached levels even higher. There were many

different skills practiced by thousands of disciples in this gorge and it would be common to find previously un-encountered skills. Under those circumstances, who would not retreat when encountering a group of three people who suddenly approached?

Did those three people come together with cruel intentions towards the disciple who was alone? This kind of thing was not rare in the Stormy Gorge.

“It looks like we have to separate or we will scare many people away.” said Lin Feng while smiling and moving away. The most important thing was for Han Man to gain experience in combat. Lin Feng just had to stay back and make sure there were no unexpected dangers.

TL Notes:

Due to the confusion of life or death stage, I have now changed it to life or death ARENA.

So you have a better understanding. This is within a canyon and inside the canyon is a large rocky raised area surrounded by nothing but sand (life or death arena). When on the rocky terrain you are inside the arena which is where there are rules for fighting and it is considered a duel like situation. You can beat an opponent within an inch of their life and they die shortly after, as long as it was inside the arena you have not broken any rules as long as you did not directly land the final blow. Outside of this arena, you can attack someone and fight unfairly but they must not die under any circumstance. Only Elite disciples can kill as they please because they have the strength to do so. Some disciples will use

connections or secret methods to kill people regardless of the rules, but without the strength to back it up these killings would all be in secret.

I hope this clears some things up. I want to try and give as much information as possible without spoilers.

Chapter 14: Battle in the Life or Death Arena (Part 2)

Jing Yun continued to stay close to Lin Feng's side. She was only at the seventh Qi layer and was too weak for her to be left alone. The seventh Qi layer was the lowest level in the Stormy Gorge so that wasn't adequate for her to go out and battle other disciples.

Han Man understood Lin Feng's intentions by leaving him alone. If Lin Feng was constantly at his side protecting him then he wouldn't be able to fight and gain experience at all. It was crucial for him to rely on his own strength from this point onward.

Walking alone in the Stormy Gorge did not require much time before someone approached him. He could see the person's eyes through the mask which revealed a clear intention to fight.

There was no time for an exchange of words. The disciple immediately charged into Han Man while raising his fist emanating a powerful Qi.

"How unlucky, Han Man has run into a Cultivator of the ninth Qi layer." said Lin Feng while smiling and observing from a distance. Han Man had already guessed his opponent's level from the powerful Qi that he was releasing from his fist. He had no time to worry about the difference in strength; he concentrated the Qi of his entire body into his fist and then released all the strength he had in one strike while giving a loud and powerful shout.

The power of this punch had made Han Man step back a few

meters while his opponent hadn't moved a single inch. It was as if his fist had struck against an iron wall and it was obvious from a single exchange which of them was stronger.

“Eighth Qi layer... You're so weak. I thought I could gain some experience. How disappointing, I'm leaving.” said the opponent in an apathetic tone. He then turned around and started leaving.

He had lost interest in Han Man. Many Cultivators found joy and pleasure in being cruel and merciless. However those who were serious towards the path of Cultivation found no pleasure in acting cruel without provocation and would be more focused towards strengthening themselves. Those disciples found satisfaction in fighting opponents of a similar level and to some degree fighting opponents even stronger than themselves would help them gain insight. This was a way for them to really challenge themselves and unlock their potential while getting much needed battle experience.

“Wait, wait!” Han Man shouted.

He had come to the Stormy Gorge for the first time today, how could he accept being defeated that quickly? He immediately released the power of his spirit. A yellowish brown light started floating around his entire body as if he was in symbiosis with the Earth beneath his feet and his Qi energy began to grow in strength.

“Earth spirit” said the opponent showing a sudden interest and right after said: “Your spirit is not bad, let me see if you can take my three profound punches.”

After the opponent finished his sentence, he took a single leap and appeared in front of Han Man.

“BOOM”

The yellowish brown color which was surrounding Han Man suddenly emitted an extremely radiant light as dust filled the air around them. Han Man was propelled six steps backwards while blood started oozing from the corner of his mouth.

Seeing the opponent ready to leave once again.

“Come back” said Han Man while wiping the blood from the corner of his mouth. His bravery could reach the heavens as he continued to stand firm, his fighting spirit was soaring. The yellowish brown light surrounding his body was shining brighter and brighter as if he was draining all the power from the very land itself.

“KABOOM”

Han Man was propelled eight steps backwards while his opponent was propelled three steps backwards.

“Delightful!” said his opponent. His fist started glowing with a white light and then he warned Han Man: “Be careful, I’m going to use one of my strongest skills on this punch.”

“Alright” replied Han Man while starting to charge towards his opponent. Each of his steps was making the ground violently shake, like a powerful war horse galloping at full speed towards battle.

“Use the strength that you have borrowed from the Earth” shouted Lin Feng while watching from a distance, completely captivated by the battle. He wouldn’t have thought that Han Man would understand how to use his spirit in such a unique way. Combining the power of his Earth Spirit and the earth beneath his feet could greatly increase his strength.

“BOOM!” their two fists collided. A cloud of dust shot in all directions from the shock wave between Han Man and his opponent, making it impossible to see what had happened. When the cloud of dust had vanished, Han Man was sitting on the ground meditating.

“You unexpectedly understood what that other disciple said. Well done.” said his opponent while smiling and getting up from the ground. He also had blood coming from the corner of his mouth. He hadn’t expected Han Man’s last attack to be so powerful. He had been slightly injured but it was worth it for him. He had gained valuable insights thanks to this fight.

He didn’t spend more time with Han Man and immediately vanished into the distance.

“What an interesting guy” said Lin Feng while moving towards Han Man. He felt a degree of respect for the disciple Han Man had just battled with. “He was an honorable fellow.”

Lin Feng and Jing Yun obviously knew that Han Man had learnt more about his spirit and gained an insight into his cultivation path. They didn't want to disturb him so they sat next to him and waited for him to finish gaining his insight.

That fight had enlightened Han Man. What had just happened was a rare moment of divine enlightenment. It wouldn't be surprising if Han Man's strength started increasing at lightning speeds once he fully understood his new insight. Lin Feng and Jing Yun admired him. He had entered the Stormy Gorge and had a flash of realization right after his first battle.

A short while after, Han Man's body suddenly started emitting a strong Qi stupefying Lin Feng and Jing Yun who looked at each other gasping with astonishment.

"The strength is so powerful and unique that it gives a deep and oppressing feeling. Is this really the power of enlightenment?" thought Lin Feng.

The path of Cultivation was a vast and there were many different routes to take within cultivation. Lin Feng had only just started walking on the path of Cultivation. He couldn't imagine how powerful some Cultivators were and he knew that these strong cultivators could destroy mountains or crush entire cities in their way with ease.

It's said that Cultivators upon reaching the level of immortals can fly into the heavens and penetrate into the depths of the Earth.

These cultivators would have an unlimited lifespan and could move at speeds faster than light. Lin Feng could only envy, as such power could only be imagined by someone like him who had never experienced it. He wondered if he would ever be able to fly into the heavens and look down upon the world.

While Lin Feng was lost thought, someone in the distance was coming towards them at incredible speed. When he saw Han Man who had just made a huge step on the path of Cultivation, he laughed mockingly.

“Wake up” said an ear-splitting voice making the atmosphere vibrate and shocking Lin Feng and the others into awareness.

“Waah” shouted Han Man, who spat out a mouthful of blood and started breathing heavily.

His eyes turned red in anger as he was staring at the distant silhouette. He had the feeling he was beginning to understand the concept of his new strength but when he heard the voice it had interrupted his breakthrough. Besides, the deafening voice had shaken his defenseless body so much that he was spitting out blood.

“How insolent” said Lin Feng with eyes filled with killing intent. He was staring at the silhouette in the horizon. That person had intentionally addressed Han Man and interrupted his flash of enlightenment causing damage to Han Man’s body.

Han Man walked towards the silhouette and asked furiously:

“Why did you interrupt me?!”

“No reason, I just did it for fun.” The person was not wearing a mask and had a teasing smile on their face. None of them had seen this disciple before or heard of someone so mischievous.

“You did this for fun?!” said Han Man while walking forwards, rage spreading throughout his body. He understood how rare the flash of enlightenment was but that person had voluntarily interrupted him in that very important moment and on top of that, he had injured him.

“Hehe you want to fight? But it’s not so fun to fight here in the gorge, if you want to have your revenge, why don’t you come to the Life or Death Arena?” asked the young person in a disdainful tone showing hatred for Han Man.

“Alright.” replied Han Man without hesitation trying to control his extreme anger.

“I’ll be waiting for you” said the young person while leaving in the direction of the Life or Death arena.

“”Han Man, it is hard to determine his strength in comparison with yours and going to the Life or Death Arena is very dangerous.” Lin Feng warned Han Man.

“I’m able to determine his strength with just a glance. He is the same as me: eighth Qi layer.” replied Han Man which surprised Lin

Feng. Was Han Man able to sense other people's Cultivation level?

"I don't know what's going on but I'm also able to sense Jing Yun's Cultivation level as well as yours. It's maybe one of the effects of the flash of realization I just had. Maybe I could explain if I was not interrupted." Han Man's explanation didn't convince Lin Feng. Han Man started walking towards the Life or Death Arena while clenching his fists.

"Let's go." Lin Feng was really skeptical. Jing Yun and Lin Feng followed Han Man putting their trust in their friend's words. If Han Man's flash of realization really enabled him to sense other people's Cultivation level and the opponent was really a Cultivator of the eighth Qi layer then there shouldn't be a great danger if they are evenly matched.

The Life or Death Arena was located in a canyon at the middle of the Stormy Gorge. There were ten seats for viewing above the rocky terrain on the boundary of the arena, but as the area was extremely vast, many would gather around and watch the battles from a distance.

Two silhouettes entered the Life or Death Arena which promptly drew the attention of the cultivators in the area. In a flash, many people were rushing over to watch the fight.

Even though the amount of people who come into the gorge was huge, there are very few people who ever enter the arena. After all inside the Life or Death Arena you had to risk your life. If you didn't hate someone with all your heart then why take those risks? Most people who would go into the arena would do it to fight

against an opponent of similar strength which made the battles interesting to watch.

Therefore when Han Man and his opponent came to the Life or Death Arena, the amount of people surrounding the area was enormous. In the Stormy Gorge there were some people who watched this area waiting for a bloody battle and would spread the news to fellow disciples at incredible speed.

“We all come to the Life or Death Arena to settle our grudges. My goal is not to settle any grudge, because today your fate has already been decided by someone else.” said the young boy to Han Man while a creepy smile covered his face: “Han Man, remember the name of the one who is going to take your life, my name is: Jiang Huai”

Lin Feng standing on the sand dunes outside the arena felt a shiver run down his spine. When he heard what Jiang Huai said, he knew something was wrong. How did he know that it was Han Man behind the mask?

“You know me?” said Han Man furious.

“Hehe.” a sinister smile crept over Jiang Huai’s face. A burning energy suddenly started emerging from his body accompanied by blazing flames. At the same time an illusory flame appeared on his back: A fire spirit.

“He is indeed a Cultivator of the eighth Qi layer” said Lin Feng feeling the energy coming down from the Arena.

Han Man's earth spirit similarly started to burst out. He started running forwards. Even though he wasn't running very fast, the energy and the strength released by his body made every footstep send small quakes through the floor.

"Flame Detonation" a powerful wave filled with flames shot towards Han Man. When Jiang Huai saw that Han Man had abruptly stopped and taken a posture which made him look like an unmovable mountain, Jiang Huai shouted: "I will smash this mountain before me! Ha ha ha".

Their two fists collided and both Han Man and Jiang Huai suddenly stopped moving, exactly where they had just collided. Neither of them overpowering their opponent.

Jiang Huai frowned and stopped laughing. He hadn't expected Han Man to be that strong. A malicious grin appeared on his face and he thrust out with his left fist but Han Man easily blocked it with his palm. Suddenly he threw a white dust from his right hand directly into Han Man's eyes. He carried this dust to blind enemies stronger than him.

"Die!" said Jiang Huai while throwing a punch at Han Man's chest.

"Damn! How shameless." cursed Lin Feng who then saw shadowy figures moving towards the life or death arena

"In the Life or Death arena people sometimes lose their life. Do

not worry it will be your turn soon Jing Yun” said the shadow in a chilling tone. Jing Yun was terrified when she saw his face.

“Jing Hao.”

She shouted loudly. She saw the other disciple behind Jing Hao, it was the young disciple who had been injured by Lin Feng earlier that day and now everything had been made clear. This was all a trap to begin with.

Chapter 15: Battle in the Life or Death Arena (Part 3)

“BOOM!” “Ha ha ha”

Jiang Huai circled around and attacked the defenseless Han Man from behind. He didn't intend to let him get even the smallest chance to rest. He punched Han Man repeatedly as the powder had blinded him. The sound of Han Man's bones cracking and a loud spine chilling shriek filled the air. However this was drowned out by the laughing of Jiang Huai who was taking joy in every last moment of Han Man's suffering.

“That guy really is shameless. He must have planned to use that powder from the start. How despicable!” There were more and more people gathering around the Life or Death arena. Some of them were talking to other disciples all had their eyes fixated on the fight.

“In The Life or Death Arena there is no rules on fighting fairly, you can resort to whichever method needed to win.” said Jing Hao.

Nonetheless, Lin Feng acted as if he hadn't heard that remark and moved towards the arena, suddenly Jing Hao blocked the way, there would be no saving Han Man as his punishment was to be beaten to death in front of everyone.

“Let me pass.” Said Lin Feng.

“Eighth Qi layer and you still dare to come and challenge me. I am avenging my dead brother Jing Feng this has nothing to do with you, unless you want to get involved in my personal grudge?” threatened Jing Hao not really paying much attention Lin Feng.

“Get Involved? You do not want me, the person who killed your brother to get involved? I beheaded him as he begged for the mercy he would not have shown others. Now let Han Man come down off the stage and let me replace him. If I don’t go into the Life or Death arena willingly, how will you be able to avenge your pathetic little brother?” Lin Feng said.

Jing Hao was sixth in the disciple rankings. Lin Feng had monstrous talent but could he be compared to those in the top rankings, it was not possible. Han Man had a face filled with protest when he heard what Lin Feng had said, but his voice was too weak to protest.

“Huh?” Jing Hao’s couldn’t believe what he had heard and slowly wrath filled his eyes. He quickly shouted: “Jiang Huai, stop attacking.”

When Jiang Huai heard Jing Hao, he stopped fighting immediately and stood looking at Jing Hao waiting for his next order.

“You can come over and replace Han Man if you dare” Jing Hao said pointing at Lin Feng with murderous intentions in his eyes.

He didn’t need to speak such useless words. Lin Feng jumped into

the arena in a flash. He could see that Han Man's face was drenched with blood and his body was mangled. Bones could be seen piercing out from his skin, many fingers were not in the correct position and his breathing was heavy with a wheeze. Lin Feng wiped the blood covering Han Man's eyes as at this point he could not move his arms, he was barely breathing. This reminded Lin Feng of how he had been left here before in the same condition.

“Han Man, can you make it out of the arena alone?” Lin Feng asked Han Man.

“No problem. I am not dead. Please just go and avenge me.” said Han Man grinning, enduring the intense pain all over his body.

“Don't worry.” Lin Feng's felt a pain in his chest when he saw Han Man's smile. That guy was really stubborn, it was clear he did not have the strength to go alone.

He helped Han Man stand up and using Lin Feng as a crutch to lean upon, started moving to the edge of the arena. Lin Feng stopped upon hearing Jing Hao's voice: “Jiang Huai, you know what to do.”

“I understand, I have to kill them both.” replied Jiang Huai.

Jing Hao, who was satisfied with the answer, nodded in agreement.

“In the Life or Death Arena, you are not the ones who get to decide your own life or even your friend’s life. You want to replace him? No problem, you will die first instead of him and then he will die.” Jing Hao said carefree while watching Lin Feng who had continued moving Han Man to the edge of the arena.

“Is that so?” said Lin Feng with a grin covering his face, letting Han Man rest on the edge of the arena.

At that moment, Jiang Huai was charging towards them surrounded by a powerful fire Qi.

“Fire Bomb! Die together!” shouted Jing Huai. A ball made of flame suddenly appeared in his hand, emitting a strong scorching heat which seemed to overwhelm the very air itself.

“Get lost!” said Lin Feng while unsheathing his long sword. A roar of thunder spread throughout the entire arena. Immediately the flames were enveloped by the thunderous roars, but the sword didn’t decrease its momentum and shot towards Jiang Huai who was still running forward, leaving a small hole in his chest where the sword had pierced directly through him.

“Splash, splash...” drops of blood were falling from the wound in Jiang Huai’s chest. Lin Feng was looking at Jiang Huai with powerful killing intent.

“I’m going to die?” said Lin Feng while laughing. He thrust out his sword again. There were roars of thunder all around. Jiang Huai tried to run and avoid the attack but it was too sudden for

him to react. He was hit by the shockwave of the sword which made his body fly up into the air before heavily falling back down onto the stone floor.

Jiang Huai couldn't avoid a single hit. Every time he got to his feet he was sent flying into the air and crashed heavily onto the rocks beneath.

“Roaring Thunder skill... the thunderous roars that come from his sword... he's able to use the Roaring Thunder skill and create a thunderous roar each strike! Which genius of our sect is that?” people in the crowd couldn't hold back their excitement but they couldn't recognize Lin Feng as he was wearing a mask. If they could, many would pinch themselves to wake from the illusion.

Jing Hao was seized with horror. His faced looked hideous as he had been humiliated. Jiang Huai surprisingly couldn't fight Lin Feng, killing him seemed to be an impossible mission. Jiang Huai could only attempt to escape and run to Jing Hao, who would protect him.

Jiang Huai saw Lin Feng's long sword getting closer. He was lying on his stomach, seemingly unable to get to his feet, but he didn't stop crawling in the opposite direction of Lin Feng unconsciously. His face was filled with terror and despair.

“I'm not fighting anymore, I give up, you have won!”

“I have won?” Lin Feng looked like he had heard the best joke in the world. Jiang Huai had nearly killed Han Man. If Jiang Huai

had been strong enough then he would have killed Lin Feng and Han Man, but now he was declaring himself defeated. Admitting defeat, was that really enough after everything he had done?

“DIE!” shouted Jiang Huai suddenly. A white powder flew towards Lin Feng. Meanwhile, Jiang Huai pounced towards the edge of the arena. Luckily Lin Feng had not let his guard down even for a second.

“Jing Hao, protect me, quickly.” said Jiang Huai while dashing in Jing Hao’s direction. Lin Feng was following behind him like a shadow.

Something heavy had fallen onto the ground outside of the arena boundary with a ‘THUMP’. It was actually Jiang Huai’s body which had fallen down from the rocky arena platform onto the ground beneath but he was smiling because he had landed in front of Jing Hao and even more importantly, outside of the arena.

Jing Hao couldn’t come in the arena to intervene as fights in the Life or Death arena were duels; if he had intervened he would lose face. However after having moved to the boundary area, there was no restriction with him taking action here.

“Too bad you didn’t kill me in the Life or Death arena.” said Jiang Huai while looking mockingly at Lin Feng who was still on the edge of Life or Death arena. The Life or Death arena was a battle arena where one’s life was at stake. Jiang Huai had stepped out of the arena. If Jiang Huai was still in the Stormy Gorge, Lin Feng could still chase and secretly kill him but because Jing Hao was there, he wouldn’t act rashly.

“Is that so? When he has stepped out of the Life or Death arena, his life will no longer be in my hands but in the hands of the gods. Killing him is against the rules?””

After saying this Lin Feng created powerful waves using his Nine Heavy Waves technique and shot them in Jing Hao’s direction.

Jing Hao had a malicious smile on his face. The Nine Heavy Waves smashed into his palm not even leaving a mark.

“Roaring Thunder.”

Lin Feng threw himself towards Jing Hao brandishing his sword using his Roaring Thunder skill.

Jing Hao unsheathed his sword and replied using the same Roaring Thunder skill.

“Nine Heavy Waves, Go Die!” after finishing his Roaring Thunder skill, Lin Feng jumped into the air like a tiger and his Nine Heavy Waves shot out which didn’t completely stop Jing Hao’s Roaring Thunder but had weakened it and the Waves continued to flow like an endless ocean.

Jing Hao looked surprised as he hadn’t expected Lin Feng’s skills to be this powerful. Lin Feng would take advantage of every opening and use his Roaring Thunder skill. Each of Lin Feng’s strikes were aimed at Jing Hao’s vital points. With each shock

wave which was stopped another would follow, flooding the gorge with its shockwaves. Each time there was no other choice but for Jing Hao to step back and retreat.

By the time he had neutralized all of Lin Feng's attacks, he had realized his mistake. Lin Feng was standing next to Jiang Huai. Lin Feng's long sword was pointed towards Jiang Huai's neck.

“When combining Nine Heavy Waves and Roaring Thunder it created a powerful combination which even forced Jing Hao to step back. Even though it was only a few steps, he can still be proud of himself.”

“Jing Hao is sixth on the disciple rankings. His strength is above average. He has even perfected his Roaring Thunder skill. I would have never thought that guy would master the Roaring Thunder technique on equal terms with Brother Jing Hao and would even force him to take a step back.”

People in the crowd were discussing loudly. Lin Feng was only at the eighth Qi layer. Jing Hao was one of stronger disciples of the sect and even some disciples of the ninth Qi layer wouldn't even be able to defeat him even if they fought him together. But Lin Feng was able to make Jing Hao step back and had Jiang Huai's life in his hands. Who could have imagined this turn of events?

Hearing all the people commenting on the fight, Jing Hao couldn't stop himself from getting angry. He was very famous amongst the disciples of the sect. Because of Lin Feng he had lost face and been humiliated.

“How dare you! Go on! I dare you to kill him! I will make your life a nightmare, such a nightmare that you will want to die every day.” Jing Hao was shouting at Lin Feng who was holding his sword over Jiang Huai.

“Please let me go” begged Jiang Huai who was shaking,

“Let you go? In your dreams. You can die like a dog here.” Lin Feng’s sword flashed and slit Jiang Huai’s jugular.

The scene was incredibly shocking. Jiang Huai laid there wide eyed watching the scene of his own death. A constant stream of blood sprayed from the wound, rising in the air then falling into the sand. Blood mist was thick in the air and all around was dark red sand.

“Have Courage!” said members of the crowd pitying Lin Feng’s fate. Jing Hao had a spine chilling sensation watching the scene unfold in front of him. Lin Feng had surprisingly ignored what he had said, ignored the clan rules and directly killed Jiang Huai in such a brutal way. Lin Feng had completely disregarded Jing Hao’s warning.

No matter what, Jing Hao would never stop hunting Lin Feng, so why would he care about idol threats?

“You managed to humiliate me today and even if I cannot kill you now, I will make you suffer a fate worse than death” said Jing Hao furiously.

The entire crowd thought Lin Feng was very unlucky. He had made Jing Hao furious and had broken the clan rules. Even if Lin Feng didn't die, he was about to be tortured to the point of wanting death and that would only be the beginning. Lin Feng was a skillful disciple but against one of the top ten disciples within the ordinary disciple rankings, nobody thought he was strong enough to resist.

Jing Yun was so nervous that she could hardly breathe. Unfortunately she was a weak Cultivator and she couldn't help Lin Feng. Jing Hao could kill her in one strike from his sword.

Everyone was looking at Lin Feng. Lin Feng remained silent. He turned around slowly and jumped back into the Life or Death arena.

"What is he doing?" asked people in the crowd while looking at Lin Feng who was already back in the arena. They were all stupefied.

Lin Feng arrived in the middle of the arena; he turned around and then looked at Jing Hao. In an icy cold tone, Lin Feng said: "What are you waiting for? You're next."

At that moment a complete silence covered the gorge. Lin Feng had challenged the sixth ranking disciple in the life or death arena.

Chapter 16: The way of the world

Lin Feng was wearing a mask so nobody could recognize him, even though he wouldn't be recognized by the top disciples who populated the gorge. He had mastered the Nine Heavy Waves technique as well as the Roaring Thunder skill which proved he was a monstrous talent and would definitely draw attention.

Jing Hao was the sixth strongest disciple within the sect ranking system and was above Lin Feng in cultivation at the ninth Qi layer. Jing Hao had made his name famous by defeating three disciples who were also at the ninth Qi layer in a three-on-one battle.

Lin Feng's level of cultivation was a whole layer below Jing Hao, but everybody had seen Lin Feng force Jing Hao to retreat. He had killed Jiang Huai who was one of Jing Hao's closest followers. Jing Hao had lost face, he had allowed an unknown disciple who was only at the eighth Qi Layer to force him into retreating and even watched as his follower was killed in front of his eyes. At the moment when everyone was expecting Jing Hao to unleash his fury and force Lin Feng into a pitiful state, Lin Feng had already stepped back into the Life or Death Arena. While everyone stared disbelievingly at his action, Lin Feng wasted no time and challenged Jing Hao in the most condescending way.

"Maybe, he knows that his fate is already sealed and has chosen to die in battle" said a disciple in the crowd. Lin Feng was only at the eighth Qi layer after all and his strength was relatively low in comparison with Jing Hao.

Jing Hao felt humiliated and didn't know how such a turn of

events had come about. He had never been humiliated in such a way since he had joined the Yun Hai Sect.

“Since you are requesting to die, who better than me to kill you.” said Jing Hao full of hatred. Since he had seen Lin Feng use the Roaring Thunder skill, he knew that Lin Feng hadn’t lied to him, he definitely had the strength to kill Jing Feng.

Not only had he killed his little brother but he had also humiliated him in front of a large crowd of disciples. This could not be tolerated.

Jing Hao stepped into the arena as a strong force began to rise from his sword. Behind Jing Hao was a floating illusionary sword pointing towards the heavens. It was Jing Hao’s sword spirit.

“Jing Hao was wasting no time and immediately started using his sword spirit. He wants to show Lin Feng the gap between their powers.”

Everybody guessed what Jing Hao intended to do. He wanted to show how powerful he was compared to the commoner in front of him.

“Unsheathe your sword and I will let you have three sword strikes before I attack. Let me see what your puny strength can do with three sword strikes” said Jing Hao while holding his sword and arrogantly looking down on Lin Feng.

Lin Feng grinned. He immediately used his Moonlight Feather Agility. Like moonlight during the day, he disappeared from sight then appeared in front of Jing Hao. Many illusory swords began to form then shot from Lin Feng's hand palm directly at Jing Hao. When they arrived in front of Jing Hao, all these illusory swords combined into the tip of Lin Feng's sword and then smashed down into Jing Hao. A deafening thunderous roar spread throughout the atmosphere.

“How strong. He is really a master at using the Roaring Thunder skill”. When the crowd heard the noise, they looked at the scene horrified. The sounds emitted by his attacks sounded like lightening tearing through the air and then exploding on impact. These sounds could even scare the disciples watching from a distance.

Jing Hao's expression which was initially extremely carefree suddenly tensed. He had underestimated his opponent and could not let his guard down.

The thunderous roars made the air in the gorge start to tremble. An extremely powerful illusory sword was hovering in the air in front of Jing Hao acting as a shield.

“First attempt” said Jing Hao mockingly.

Lin Feng didn't lose his concentration. He believed in his power and ability. Countless thunderous roars exploded as Lin Feng prepared his second strike. This would be much more powerful than the first strike.

Jing Hao was still just protecting himself and not attacking. He was using his illusory sword as a shield knowing with his higher cultivation and sword spirit, he could counter any type of attack.

For his next strike Lin Feng started charging at Jing Hao, however he suddenly thrust his sword forward and loosened his grip of the hilt. The sword continued to move along its trajectory and flew through the air at Jing Hao.

“What is he doing?”

The crowd was as stupefied as to what Lin Feng had just done. Lin Feng had concentrated all his Qi into the tip of the sword then shot it towards Jing Hao. If Jing Hao accepted this attack like before, then he would damage his sword spirit with the impact. This was not an option for Jing Hao.

Jing Hao was stupefied for a second and then smiled to himself. Did Lin Feng really think this would work?

Jing Hao started to move backwards while bringing his sword upwards in an arc and with an elegant movement he had skillfully countered the force of the sword sending it flying powerlessly into the air.

After Lin Feng let go of his sword he was already charging at incredible speed towards Jing Hao. Using his Moonlight Feather Agility technique it seemed as if his feet did not touch the floor as they disappeared before anyone could clearly see them.

“Second attempt.” said Jing Hao arrogantly as he watched Lin Feng approach him at incredibly speed. He did not feel threatened, he was merely toying with Lin Feng. Lin Feng had landed in front of Jing Hao however his sword had landed on the floor behind him.

“You really want to die?” said Jing Hao while biting his tongue. Lin Feng had not stopped to collect his sword which was flying through the air. He began to strike towards Jing Hao with his fists, this way he was unable to count the third sword strike and would be humiliated by being forced to take Lin Feng’s blows without ever retaliating. All he wanted was to show Lin Feng the difference in their power, but again he would be forced to lose face because of Lin Feng.

Then Jing Hao heard Lin Feng say something which shocked him to the core: “that’s enough. I am done playing now”.

Lin Feng had stopped in front of Jing Hao with eyes filled with killing intent and suddenly a thunderous roar was heard. A bright and blinding light flashed through the air between the two figures before disappearing from sight.

Jing Hao looked stupefied and horrified at what had just happened. It seemed like he had understood what Lin Feng had meant. Jing Hao was not the predator in this fight and instead it was Lin Feng who was toying with him. Would the result have been different if he had not arrogantly given Lin Feng three strikes? Jing Hao no longer had the opportunity to regret his actions as he had already taken his last breath.

“Third attempt” Said Lin Feng as his voice filled the air surrounding the arena which was deathly silent.

Jing Hao was still stood in the middle of the arena unharmed but to everyone’s surprise, Lin Feng had simply walked past Jing Hao and picked up his sword which was previously sent flying. The whole arena was completely silent, everyone had heard it. As Lin Feng’s words echoed throughout the canyon the only other sound was of Jing Hao’s body slumping down onto the floor with blood seeping from a previous unseen wound on his neck.

Everybody was watching the scene stupefied and couldn’t believe it their eyes. Jing Hao had lost?

How had Lin Feng attacked?

“Sword unsheathing skill.” In the crowd there were many Elite disciples. They had seen the light of the sword which passed between Lin Feng and Jing Hao. Because the sword was too quick, it looked like a meteor flashing through the sky before disappearing.

Suddenly everyone started to discuss the battle they had just watched. They could not believe what they had just witnessed.

The sixth ranked disciple had been defeated by Lin Feng and the outcome of the battle had been his death.

“Who is he?”

Everyone was wondering which disciple had been so arrogant to directly kill two people in succession. How had he overcome Jing Hao who was ninth Qi layer and was one of the best disciples of the sect? Lin Feng had shown that he was the true genius and no one doubted his skill after this display. The news that someone had defeated Jing Hao was going to spread quickly within the Yun Hai Sect.

At that moment, on the top of the gorge many people were discussing the last sword strike of Lin Feng.

Not so far away from the gorge inside a bustling pavilion. A relaxed old man was staring blankly into the distance and smiling as he whispered: “That young man has already learnt how to master the Sword Unsheathing skill. He really does have incredible talent.”

The old man was the one Lin Feng had met at the Xing Chen Pavilion, who had reminded Lin Feng of an extremely powerful fictional monk from his past life. That old man would have never thought he would see the sword he gifted to an interesting young disciple appear in the Life or Death Arena. That is how he had recognized Lin Feng.

The Stormy Gorge was a place where many Yun Hai Sect disciples chose to go and practice the control of their cultivation and martial techniques within real battle. The top disciples of the sect, including many Elite disciples, were the disciples who populated the Stormy Gorge. You could see that the Yun Hai sect was an

outstanding sect from just looking at the sheer number of its disciples in the gorge who were watching the fight from the sidelines.

Except for the old man, Jing Yun and Han Man, there was only one disciple in the crowd who knew the identity of who had just killed Jing Hao. That man was called Guo Hai, the young disciple who had used Jing Feng's death as a pretext to blackmail Jing Yun. The result was that he had been beaten back by Lin Feng. Afterwards he had looked for Jing Hao and remembered what Lin Feng and the two others were wearing so he could identify the group. He had been tracking them as they went down into the gorge. This was all part of his plan as he would use Jing Hao to kill Lin Feng and Han Man then take Jing Yun as his reward.

Guo Hai had watched as Lin Feng killed Jing Hao which was utterly unexpected. He was so terrified that he secretly tried to escape knowing that he would be next.

"You want to leave now... but isn't it too early to leave now that you have been so successful with your trap?" said Lin Feng to Guo Hai in an ice-cold tone. Lin Feng had paid careful attention and had already seen that Guo Hai had been hiding behind Jing Hao and whispering in his ear.

Guo Hai stopped and had a shiver run down his spine as he felt Lin Feng's cold gaze piercing through his back.

When Guo Hai heard Lin Feng, he turned around. Guo Hai was smiling but it was a smile to hide his terror which was ugly to behold.

“You must be mistaken senior brother, I have nothing to do with the events which have happened here!” Guo Hai said in a respectful tone, pretending he did not know it was Lin Feng.

“Oh so want to lie and say that you do not know me?” said Lin Feng smiling. His face revealed clear killing intent which he made no attempt hide.

“Please remember we are in the Stormy Gorge and not in the Life or Death Arena. You cannot act rashly” said Guo Hai in a shaky and fragile voice, who could feel Lin Feng approaching with the intent to kill.

“I know.” said Lin Feng sounding indifferent.

“BOOM!”

Powerful waves suddenly crashed heavily onto Guo Hai pressing him against the ground. Guo Hai had no chance, he didn't even attempt any resistance. After Lin Feng had killed Jing Hao, would he have the strength to resist such a powerful opponent?

Lin Feng grabbed Guo Hai using only one hand and threw him directly into Life or Death Arena. Lin Feng then picked up his sword and approached Guo Hai who was struggling to stand after landing so heavily onto the rocky arena.

“Now you are in the Life or Death Arena, so there are no

problems.”

The crowd looked at Lin Feng, they were speechless in shock. How audacious could one person possibly be?

“This wasn’t my decision, I didn’t decide to step in here myself. You are violating the sect’s rules by doing this. How dare you so blatantly break the sect’s rules?” Guo Hai hadn’t expected Lin Feng to throw him into the arena. He started shaking from head to toe with fear.

A light suddenly flashed between Lin Feng and Guo Hai, sending his head flying into the air.

“Does the sect really have such rules? Then I will just have to ignore them”

Lin Feng said with a hint of anger as he finally sheathed his sword.

If the sect really had rules, would have Liu Fei dared take out her bow and try to kill him without discussion?

If the sect really had rules, would the Elite disciples really threaten him with death without being provoked?

These rules obviously do not apply to all disciples. If you are strong enough, if you master enough skills, if you have a high status within the sect, there is one rule: the rule is that there are no

rules. It was as if he was daring the elders of the sect to try and punish him for killing other disciples.

Lin Feng doesn't take pleasure in killing people. In Lin Feng's previous life, if you killed people then you would be sentenced to death. However in this world several people tried to kill him even though there was no grudge between them. It enabled Lin Feng to understand that in this world, only the strong would survive. It was a cruel world, therefore if people wanted to kill him, then he would mercilessly kill them. Anyone who attempted to take his life would lose their own no matter their family connections, status or gender; all would be cut down by his sword.

Lin Feng went back to Han Man who was sat on the edge of the arena smiling. He said to Lin Feng: "I never doubted that you would kill them"

"Rules or no rules, they were already dead." Said Lin Feng while smiling.

Chapter 17: The Precipice of Zhangu

Lin Feng and Jing Yun were in Han Man's room, they were staring at Han Man and worriedly looking at his injuries.

"These injuries are very serious." said Lin Feng while checking Han Man's injuries. Although cultivators had a higher natural healing ability than other people, his injuries were very serious. It seemed like every part of his body had been damaged from his broken bones to internal injuries inflicted on his organs. It would be impossible for him to recover without any assistance.

"No problem, my life has always been tough. I won't die so easily." said Han Man with an optimistic smile.

"What about your cultivation?" Said Lin Feng staring at him. Han Man dodged Lin Feng's glance. He couldn't look at Lin Feng's eyes. That's right, even though he wasn't going to die, his cultivation was damaged and without proper care he would eventually turn into a cripple, with less strength than even an ordinary person.

"Lin Feng, let's go to the Black Wind Mountain kill some ferocious beasts to get some items to exchange against Immortal Pills to heal Han Man." said Jing Yun. Han Man was just another disciple of the sect and there were a great number of disciples to replace him. If you were not an Elite disciple, the Sect would eventually only provide you with basic accommodation. If you had rendered a great service to the sect or if you had an extraordinary strength then they would make you join the Elite disciples. Those who showed rare capability on the path of Cultivation became

important and respected sect members. As ordinary disciples they couldn't count on the sect's help as far as Han Man was concerned, what would be the benefit for the sect to waste such precious materials to save a normal disciple?

“That wouldn't work, his injuries are too serious. Even if an ordinary pill can cure him, the side effects will be too harsh on his damaged body” said Lin Feng shaking his head.

“What should we do then? Is there another solution?” asked Jing Yun.

Lin Feng suddenly stood up, turned around and walked towards the door.

“I'm going to the Precipice of the Abyss. Wait for me. I'll be back soon.” said Lin Feng calmly.

Complete silence filled the room which Lin Feng had just left. Jing Yun shivered nervously clenching her fists.

Han Man was smiling. Even though his face looked as if he was happily smiling you could see his eyes becoming moist.

The Precipice of the Abyss...

Only a guy like Lin Feng could come up with such an idea...

Only a guy like Lin Feng would dare to go there with his cultivation...

The Precipice of the Abyss was one of the most mysterious and sacred places of the Yun Hai Sect. It was even more famous than the Life or Death Arena.

There were not many people who engaged in battles in the Life or Death Arena but every once in a while, there would be some. However there were extremely few people who went to the Precipice of the Abyss. Those who dared to go there were those who were truly seeking either enlightenment or death. Within the Yun Hai Sect many disciples heard the name of the Precipice of the Abyss, but they had never laid eyes or heard stories from what was inside. It was too dangerous to even attempt to enter and those who did, never returned to tell the story.

Everyone had heard that if you passed the test of the Precipice of the Abyss then the Sect would acknowledge you and you would receive a priceless treasure. Needless to say if you failed the test then the consequences would be disastrous.

On the top of the Yun Hai Mountain, there was a mystical cave which was very difficult to reach for ordinary disciples. That cave was the passageway to the Precipice of the Abyss.

At that moment, Lin Feng was at the entrance leading to the cave.

“I, Lin Feng of the Yun Hai Sect dare to challenge the Precipice of

the Abyss!” shouted Lin Feng in front of the entrance.

His voice penetrated into the walls of the cave and didn't stop echoing for what seemed like an eternity. After a short time a voice replied, however this voice did not echo and seemed to arrive from inside the cave instantly.

“Come in.”

“Ok.” replied Lin Feng and immediately started walking inside the cave.

The passage was dark and there would be no light to be found this deep within the cave, but it was still possible to barely make out the surroundings. On both sides of the cave there were paintings and symbols drawn on the walls. He continued walking forwards and could already see part of the cave in which there was a small light. He immediately headed towards the light.

Inside this part of the cave there was a bed made of stones, a single table and chair with a candle atop. It was a very rustic room. On the bed sat an old man wearing a black cloak. His eyes were closed and he wasn't moving at all, there were not even signs of breathing. After a long time the old man spoke.

“You want to go to the Precipice of the Abyss?” Said the old man wearing the black cloak with his eyes still closed.

“Yes, I do.” replied Lin Feng.

“And for what reason do you want to go there?”

“My friend has been injured. He has broken bones and his internal organs have been heavily injured too. I need the sect’s support to save him from becoming a cripple. I need pills which can cure him without the side-effects.” replied Lin Feng unperturbed.

The old man wearing the black cloak opened his eyes. His expression was profound as if his stare was penetrating into Lin Feng’s soul; it was as if he could see through him.

“If there was such an easy way to get pills then all disciples would attempt it, but you are only at the eighth Qi layer. Passing the exam of the Precipice of the Abyss will be extremely difficult... Release your spirit so that I can see it.”

Lin Feng nodded. A small snake appeared but as the dark spirit appeared it instantly hid itself and was undetectable.

“What! Really?” said the old man wearing the black cloak while frowning. Even though he had a broad knowledge, he had never thought that such a spirit existed. It seemed like the snake was flying in the air but it was thin and looked weak. It did not look like a ferocious beast and instead looked weaker than a house pet.

“You can go to the Precipice of the Abyss through this passage.” Said the old man pointing to one of the passage ways. In that room, there were many passageways all leading to different places all of

which required taking different exams.

“Thank you, Elder.” said Lin Feng nodding. Then he entered the passage without any hesitation or regrets.

When the elder saw Lin Feng enter the passage, he shook his head. Eighth Qi layer and his spirit was so incredibly weak. It was almost impossible for him to pass the exam in the Precipice of the Abyss. The passage the old man had just shown to Lin Feng led to the Precipice of Zhangu. That was the least dangerous exam and Lin Feng could come out at any time. However, its degree of difficulty was the highest of all exams.

(TL: 战鼓: Zhangu: chinese war drum, I decided to go with this name for easier translation)

Lin Feng had come for his friend so the elder in the black cloak didn't want Lin Feng to get injured too seriously. Therefore, he had opted to let Lin Feng enter the only place where he could forfeit and return if he thought it was too difficult.

The drums hadn't emitted a sound for a hundred years which also meant nobody had been able to pass the exam of this passageway in a hundred years.

Lin Feng entered the passageway. It was pitch black inside. There was countless hand carved stone steps leading down this passage. There was over a thousand steps to the top and at the end he could see a simple yet large square room. Lin Feng arrived at the room and saw a huge stone doorway which was the only entrance to the

room. As Lin Feng approached, these huge stone doors began to open themselves letting Lin Feng enter.

“What a mysterious place.” Whispered Lin Feng. The passage suddenly open and allowing him entry.

A pure and fresh air assailed Lin Feng’s nostrils. This room was enveloped in clouds and mist and there was a slight chill in the air. The room itself gave a dangerous yet mysterious aura.

In the room there were eight large drums. These drums looked like the war drums from his previous world which would be played during military attacks. They looked identical to the war drums of his world.

“Booom.” The large doors made of stone closed behind him. Lin Feng turned around and saw words written in big letters.

“If only one makes the sound, doesn’t that mean I have succeeded?” Lin Feng had understood the meaning behind these large letters which were carved into the back of the stone doors. He then moved to the center of the area and looked around.

He didn’t know what made these drums so mysterious. He just had to make one drum make a sound to pass the exam.

“HA!” Lin Feng dashed towards a drum while condensing the Qi in his fist and randomly punched the drum.

“Dooooonnnng” the drum made a muffled sound. Invisible sound waves were released from the clock drum which made Lin Feng step back in shock.

“Huh?” Lin Feng frowned. He dashed forward again and concentrated 5000 Jin of power in his fist then punched the drum directly.

“Dooonnnnnngggg” a strong vibration spread throughout the atmosphere. The vibrations began to combine into a powerful wave. Once all the waves had combined into one the single remaining wave was launched directly back to Lin Feng.

“Boooooom” The powerful wave crashed onto Lin Feng which knocked him into the air and sent him flying backwards.

“Cough, cough” Lin Feng fell on the ground and coughed twice. Seeing the blood come out of his mouth stupefied him.

Was that Nine Heavy Waves?

Lin Feng’s eyes stared blankly at the drum. He had just been attacked by the Nine Heavy Waves technique and that Nine Heavy Waves power was far greater than his own understanding. These drums were able to return attacks and duplicate the strength of the attacks they returned.

How intriguing. How did these drums return my attacks?

Lin Feng was sitting and thinking deeply on the current situation. The first and the second time, he had only managed to make a muffled sound like a “dooong”. The drums hadn’t emitted anything close to a genuine drum sound on either of his strikes. To make things worse, the stronger his attacks were, the stronger they came back at him. It really was a mystery which seemed impossible to solve.

“I’m doing something wrong. Since this is an ancient sect exam, there must be a way to pass the exam. It’s just that I haven’t thought about the solution yet. Moreover, the elder in the black cloak knows that I’m an eight Qi Layer cultivator and that my spirit is weak. He must have chosen the easiest exam for me. If I can’t pass the easiest exam then how would I ever gain support from the sect to help Han Man?”

Lin Feng was thinking deeply then he suddenly jumped to his feet. At that moment he had perfectly understood what he was doing wrong as well as the elder’s intentions. It wasn’t the easiest exam, it was actually the most difficult one. The old man back in the cave actually hoped that Lin Feng would come crawling back in the face of difficulties. This was a test on how stubborn he could be in his path to becoming an immortal.

“Dark spirit, come out” thought Lin Feng. Lin Feng released his dark spirit. Immediately, his vision could pierce the secrets of the world. When he used his dark spirit, all of his abilities and skills became more powerful, including his power of understanding.

His long sword emitted a metallic sound. A thunderous roar spread in throughout the atmosphere and bombarded onto a drum.

“Psshhhh”

“Booom”

A whistling sound and a thunderous roaring filled the atmosphere of the cave. The attack struck the drum but then as before the power was reversed and duplicated. The sword shook and he tried to stop the counter attack.

Lin Feng's clothes were torn apart. There was blood flowing from wounds on Lin Feng's body. This was exactly what Lin Feng had predicted. The powers of the counterattacks were exactly twice the power of his previous attacks. Even though he was trying to protect himself, it didn't work.

“I just have to improve my skills.” said Lin Feng without retreating. He used roaring thunder again, but this time to attack another of the eight drums with his full power.

Chapter 18: Emerging Power

Over the Precipice of Zhangu, a strong wind was whistling. Sword Qi could be seen shooting in every direction. An insanely strong wind could be seen on the edge of the cliff, it was a powerful whirlwind of sword Qi.

The sword Qi became thicker and more violent as you moved closer to the eight drums. Unending whistling noises as well as thunderous roars were filling the atmosphere and causing a violent wind to appear all around.

Lin Feng forgot how many times he had used his roaring thunder skill to strike at the drums. The Qi released from the sword became a transparent layer around Lin Feng's body in an attempt to protect him from any attacks. The powerful sword attacks continued bombarding the drums. Lin Feng's body was covered with wounds from head to toe. Some wounds were scratches while others were so deep you could see the bone. Anyone who could see him would think he had just fought in the most terrible of battles.

But it seemed like Lin Feng had forgotten everything, He was immersed in the infinite Qi of his sword and began unlocking its mysteries, defending himself, attacking, defending himself, attacking again...

If someone had been there looking at Lin Feng, they surely would have cried out in alarm for him to stop damaging his body. Each time he conducted an assault on a drum, he was defending himself against the counterattack. Then he would attack the drum again using Roaring Thunder. Even though the counterattacks were

twice as powerful as his own attacks, he was endlessly attacking them.

“There has been no sound yet.” The reality sobered him up. Even though it was extremely dangerous for him to do that, he understood how much he had progressed. Before when he had been practicing the Roaring Thunder skill he had thought that he had reached the highest level possible and had complete mastery of the technique. There on the Precipice of Zhangu he understood that he didn’t master the skill and had only truly understood the basics. Compared to a truly strong cultivator, his technique would be at the level of a child not long from his mother’s breast.

At the beginning he was using only half of his power to attack a single drum. Then as time progressed, he attacked two, then three, until he had begun attacking all eight drums. He was attacking all eight drums while receiving their counter attacks, each time he would receive a counter attack many times more powerful than his original attack. If he wasn’t careful then the counterattacks could destroy a limb or crush his ribs. His sword technique had grown to a much deeper understanding.

As time progressed he increased the power of his attacks and continued to train. The power of his attacks became twice as strong, then three times as strong, he continued until the power of each of his strikes was amplified in power by seven times the power of his original attacks. Every time he had thought that he had reached his limits he then would discover how to surpass that limit. He then multiplied his power by seven and attacked all eight drums at the same time. His body had become used to the pain and pressure created from constantly enduring this kind of harsh training.

Unfortunately the drums were just making the same muffled noise and didn't emit the noise which would pass the exam.

.....

There were an innumerable amount of people gathered around the Life or Death Arena.

“What happened here? The Elders are coming.” said the crowd while staring at the person in the Life or Death Arena. They felt puzzled.

“It's senior disciple Chen Xing, two months ago he became the strongest ordinary disciple, because he defeated an Elite disciple in one hit and was allowed entry into the elite disciples. What is he doing here?”

“Hehe, who cares about Chen Xing? Haven't you seen Tu Fu and fellow disciple Ling Hu are here?”

“What! You're saying that Tu Fu and Ling Hu are in the crowd?!”

The crowd was noisy and all sorts of discussions could be heard about the reason behind these events. Tu Fu was very famous in the Yun Hai Sect. He was allegedly the strongest Elite disciple. As far as Ling Hu, the Yun Hai Sect could say it didn't have a single disciple who didn't know him as he was regarded as the strongest disciple of the sect. Ling Hu He Shan had surpassed everyone's

level on the path of Cultivation within the sect, including that of some elders.

How was everyone supposed to keep calm after seeing such a strong disciple at the Life or Death Arena?

On the horizon the wind was growing uneasy. There was a legendary looking roc in the sky, spreading its wings and soaring toward that location, everyone could see that it was extremely powerful.

“It’s coming.” said the people around the Life or Death Arena while looking at the silhouette flying in the sky. They were all tense.

The speed of the legendary roc was extremely fast. In a flash it had already arrived within stormy gorge. The Yun Hai Sects crowd of disciples burst into an uproar again. They were giving shouts one after the other.

“Oh my... There are people...! Two people are riding the legendary roc. Can you see there is also a beautiful girl up there.”

People watching this scene could feel their hearts racing with excitement. The legendary roc was carrying people and there was even a very beautiful girl. What a mind blowing scene! It was too much for those lower disciple, they had already seen too many shocking things today.

“I apologize for having kept you waiting.” The bird landed in the Life or Death Arena. The speed at which it had been flowing and arrived was unconceivable. The crowd saw it clearly... that roc was a spirit. Both wings were spread wide and it looked like a real roc. The roc spirit was that of a young unknown disciple, his expression was strange... he looked extremely handsome and extremely evil at the same time.

“How young! He has such a strong roc spirit at his age? How did he become so strong?”

“Wait, wait. I heard that in the core disciples of the Hao Yue sect, there is a highly ranked disciple who has a roc spirit... it is even difficult to compare him to a human.....”

“Absolutely, that core disciple enjoys a well-deserved reputation. He has amazing Agility techniques. His spirit can also carry others on a flight with its strength.” said some elders of the sect. He was indeed the first disciple of the Hao Yue sect, his name was Chu Zhan Peng. A short while ago, the Yun Hai sect received a letter written by Chu Zhan Peng saying he wanted to enrich his knowledge and exchange pointers with an outstanding disciple of the Yun Hai sect. And besides he would immediately come in the Life or Death Arena, of course for a fight.

Chu Zhan Peng became a core disciple in the Hao Yue sect, he was extremely famous in the Xue Yue Country because of his status. He was the sixth strongest disciple of the country. Hardly would it be an exaggeration to say that no man in the entire Yun Hai Sect could match his strength. Ling Hu He Shan wasn't going to fight Chu Zhan Peng. The sect wasn't willing to challenge him.

However, if he, himself, challenged someone, the clan had no choice but to accept.

“Dear Elders, you’re flattering me. This is my female junior apprentice Lin Qian. Not long ago she had already reached the Ling Qi layer. This time I am coming because my apprentice Lin Qian heard that Yun Hai disciples are all strong and powerful, therefore she wanted to come and broaden her knowledge. I was hoping that you could help her achieve enlightenment by allowing a match of similar strength. She would learn a lot from such a battle”

Chu Zhan Peng introduced the beautiful girl who was on his side. Chu Zhan Peng still looked both handsome and evil at the same time.

Mo Xie insulted Chu Zhan Peng silently in his thoughts. Chu Zhan Peng had a certain reputation and could not be easily rejected. He had sent the letter in advance and planned some type of scheme.

“Go Chen Xing, you’re the one appointed to battle Lin Qian. Show her our sects techniques and teach her through battle.” Chen Xing had reached the Ling Qi layer two months before when he had defeated an Elite disciple. He was already at the first bottleneck of the Ling Qi layer. If he couldn’t defeat Lin Qian, no other Yun Hai Ling Qi disciple would be able to defeat her.

“Yes, Elder.” said Chen Xing while nodding. He then went in the middle of the Life or Death Arena to face Lin Qian.

“Fellow practitioner Lin Qian, let’s start” said Chen Xing while releasing his spirit. Suddenly a layer of rocks covered his body. This made him look like a huge golem monster made completely of the hardest rocks.

“This is Chen Xing’s rock spirit. Not only is this an outstanding defense ability but his attacks are also extremely powerful. He will clearly win this without needing any more skills.” said an older disciple while staring at Chen Xing with confidence.

Even though Chen Xing was covered with gigantic rocks, his speed hadn’t decreased and he could move with incredible speed like before he was covered. In the blink of an eye, he had arrived in front of Lin Qian. He lashed his fist in the direction of the thin and frail Lin Qian which made everyone feel worried for the safety of this beauty.

“Ice” whispered Lin Qian. A freezing cold air coming from her body spread began freezing the air around her. This sudden attack froze Chen Xing’s rocky hand in place which gave him the feeling he had hit an iron wall, unable to strike forward.

Then Lin Qian suddenly grasped Chen Xing’s fist using her both hands. Ice spread on Chen Xing’s arm and then violently spread until it covered his entire body.

“That ice spirit is so powerful, she really does have natural talent!” Mo Xie said. Everybody was born with a spirit, but the same spirit in different people didn’t have the same strength. The spirits strength would depend on level of cultivation, natural gifts, martial skills and many other variables which made it impossible

to become so strong without the correct foundations for cultivation.

Mo Xie was not worried about Chen Xing. After all he had a rock spirit so his defense skills were extremely high.

“Fire” whispered Lin Qian coldly. Chen Xing was suddenly covered in flames and his frozen body was trembling. His rocky body started to crack which caused him to give a blood-curdling scream. Everybody was staring in shock as his rocky body was blown to pieces.

“Ice and fire.” Mo Xie’s face suddenly changed. A universal spirit, it was probably a universal spirit.

“Lin Qian’s strength is high. I lost.” said Chen Xing looking depressed as he no longer had his body made from rocks to protect him. He went back to stand at Mo Xie’s side, The crowd burst into an uproar. He lost. He actually lost.

The Yun Hai sect had chosen an elite disciple to battle and he had been defeated. The Elders cheeks were burning, they had lost face.

Chu Zhan Peng still had that enigmatic smile on his face. He glanced at everyone: “Hehe, as expected the disciple chosen by the Yun Hai Sect is very strong, but my junior disciple chosen by the Hao Yue Sect is extremely strong as well. The people who can beat her in this continent are few.”

“I, Chu Zhan Peng wanted to find an outstanding disciple in the Yun Hai Sect to exchange pointers with Lin Qian, but I originally came because I had something to ask.”

“What request do you have?” Mo Xie said looking anxious.

“My junior apprentice has an uncle and her uncle’s son is called Lin Feng. He is truly insane. He humiliated some elders of their family and injured their clan’s disciples. He is just an arrogant ordinary disciple. I hope the Yun Hai Sect will deliver him to me. I don’t want the Yun Hai Sect to be known for having such disciples.”

Mo Xie understood everything when he heard these words. That was Chu Zhan Peng’s purpose behind all these events. Chu Zhan Peng knew that if he had directly asked to get a member of the Yun Hai Sect then the letter would have been refused as this would cause the sect to lose face. However he was very smart, he made Lin Qian defeat a Yun Hai Sect’s elite disciple and then the words he carefully chose so that the clan wouldn’t lose face by giving him Lin Feng.

Of course if Mo Xie didn’t accept Chu Zhan Peng’s request, then he wouldn’t be as friendly as he had been until that moment.

“It seems like Lin Qian means a lot to him, otherwise he wouldn’t have come to the Yun Hai Sect for such a small matter. The universal spirit was indeed a very strong one. That’s precisely what has brought him here for revenge.” Mo Xie had already made a decision and said to the others: “Go and bring Lin Feng here.”

When he heard these words, Chu Zhan Peng smiled and Lin Qian's eyes seemed to fill with killing intent.

Lin Feng couldn't know what had happened in the Stormy Gorge as he was still training on the Precipice of Zhangu.

Lin Feng was surrounded by an immense amount of sword Qi. Every hit he carried out with his sword was almost strong enough to kill him with a single strike and then it would be returned many times stronger. His dark spirit was completely released. He was using his Roaring Thunder skill without any flaws. There was a white light surrounding his body and thunderous roars were spreading throughout the atmosphere. It was a terrifying scene to anyone who could see.

Lin Feng was in a complete frenzy and used all of his strength to bombard the drums. He was completely unaware at this point the sect was searching for him, to bring him to his execution.

Chapter 19: Three hundred years

Lin Feng had completely released his dark spirit. Sweat was dripping all over his body as he struggled with every breath.

The attacks had become overwhelmingly powerful. Lin Feng was definitely an exceptional talent which could only be seen every ten thousand years. It was almost like he was wielding ten thousand swords simultaneously. The thunderous roars had consumed the entire atmosphere within the precipice.

Lin Feng was stunned at the progress he had made. He was able to predict when and how the counterattacks would strike back at him. He didn't stop attacking the drums for even a single second. If he stopped even briefly, the sword Qi from a single counterattack would crush him. Lin Feng had not anticipated this kind of situation.

“How did it become powerful?” Lin Feng had thousands of theories but could not comprehend his current situation. Lin Feng was never able to release such a powerful energy, so how could his returned energy be so much stronger. Even a Cultivator who had reached the Ling Qi layer would find it hard to release such a powerful attack.

“Since I started using the Roaring Thunder skill the energy from each attack has been accumulating and the sword Qi is getting stronger and stronger. This is how it reached such a tremendous power.” Thought Lin Feng while still dodging each and every counter attack.

The sword Qi had transformed into an unknown force... a force which seemed to be invincible.

“Even though Han Man had only reached the eighth Qi layer, it seemed like he was able to reach a perfect fusion with the Earth beneath his feet. The Earth was giving its power to him. It is precisely because he used the power of the Earth combined with his abilities that he was able to defeat Cultivators of the ninth Qi layer in the three punch match and even cause an injury to that disciple.”

Lin Feng suddenly thought about the fight between Han Man and the Cultivator of the ninth Qi layer which gave him a brilliant idea. He had initially thought that Han Man could use the Earth’s power because his spirit was an earth spirit but Lin Feng realized that this type of thinking was wrong. This power was all around us at all times and anyone could use this power as their own.

Each time he used Nine Heavy Waves to attack the drums, the drums counterattacked.

Each time he used Roaring Thunder to attack the drums, the drums counterattacked.

Lin Feng had realized that if the eight drums didn’t have the potential to attack. If Nine Heavy Waves bounced from the drums to come back at Lin Feng, it was because of the power within the attack. If Roaring Thunder bounced from the drums and came back at Lin Feng, it was because of the power of his Roaring Thunder skill.

“The power!” Lin Feng had a bright smile on his face. He suddenly changed the way he was using his sword and each of his attacks became more skillful and elegant. His sword play had become graceful and while each of his movements required unparalleled skill, when used by Lin Feng it seemed as easy as breathing.

.....

In the Stormy Gorge, in the Life or Death Arena suddenly a group of people approached from the sky.

When the crowd in the Gorge saw these people, everyone from the Yun Hai Sect looked at them with the utmost respect. However in their hearts they were all a bit nervous and stunned at the turn of events. Chu Zhan Peng was one of the eight officials of the country; However the Yun Hai Patriarch reigned supreme over everyone within his territory, even though both sects had similar status. He was the great leader of the sect which made all of the Yun Hai Sect elders anxious upon his arrival.

“Patriarch, Great Elder” Every member of the Yun Hai Sect bowed at the same time to greet the two special hosts.

“Chu Zhan Peng greets Patriarch Nan Gong and Great Elder Mo.” Said Chu Zhan Peng to the two who were calmly moving in his direction while slightly bowing with respect. He still had a strange smile on his face making him look handsome while giving away his treacherous intentions.

“Young Master Chu Zhan Peng, how have you been these days?” Nan Gong Ling looked at Chu Zhan Peng while nodding his head. Nan Gong Ling was middle aged but still had signs of youth on his face and he was surprisingly calm in front of the junior patriarch. His youth showed he had spent less time than most on the path to cultivation but still had a mature composure.

“Nan Gong Ling is the youngest Patriarch the Yun Hai Clan has ever had throughout its history. Although you are not yet as strong as my father, but if we had to fight, I would have a lot of pressure and the outcome would be unknown. Your power is extraordinary for such a young age.” Said Chu Zhan Peng looking calm. He was secretly amazed by Nan Gong Ling. Nan Gong Ling was the strongest disciple of the Yun Hai Sect in the past hundred years. He had become the Yun Hai Sect’s Patriarch when he was only forty years old. His reputation was known throughout the world of cultivation.

“My father is much stronger these days than when you had last seen him. He also told me to greet you when I left to come to the Yun Hai Sect.” Chu Zhan Peng’s father was actually the Patriarch of the Hao Yue Sect.

Nan Gong Ling nodded and said: “Mo Xie, Chu Zhan Peng came here as a guest, how can you let him stand.”

“The great Chu Zhan Peng came to the Yun Hai Sect because he wants us to deliver him one of our ordinary disciples called Lin Feng.” Mo Xie said explaining.

“Because of an ordinary disciple?” asked Nan Gong Ling frowning in irritation.

Chu Zhan Peng quickly interrupted Mo Xie and said “Patriarch Nan Gong Ling, Lin Feng is the son of this junior female apprentice’s uncle. That young man has no regard for his elders and betters. He has injured one of his male cousins. He also insulted and humiliated his uncle, the father of my female junior apprentice. Therefore, my female junior apprentice wanted to come to solve their personal grudges.”

Chu Zhan Peng was facing the great elders and the patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect, so he was careful not to sound too excessive with his words or he may not leave with his life. He wanted Nan Gong Ling to accept his request. Therefore he was using a mild and humble tone. However, Nan Gong Ling wasn’t that kind of a person and he perfectly understood what was going on.

“Mo Xie, how do you want to handle this?” Asked Nan Gong Ling.

Mo Xie didn’t immediately reply. He secretly glanced at one of the great elders who was standing next to Nan Gong Ling.

“That child, with no regard for his elders and betters is guilty. He should be expelled from the sect”.

Mo Xie was guarded in his speech. If he had directly said that he would deliver Lin Feng to Chu Zhan Peng to save face, it would definitely anger Nan Gong Ling. Lin Feng was still a Yun Hai Sect

disciple after all. How could he deliver one of his disciples to the Hao Yue Sect without question? But saying he would expel Lin Feng from the Sect implied that everything that happened after would have nothing to do with the sect anymore as Lin Feng wouldn't be a disciple any longer. How cruel could Mo Xie possibly be to this ordinary disciple his own face?

Nan Gong Ling was frowning and shaking his head. He knew exactly what Mo Xie had meant in his words. Nan Gong Ling would not willingly hand over any of his disciples.

“Patriarch, his behavior is harmful to our sect and its reputation, if he stayed in the Yun Hai Sect, it would be a disaster in the future. Mo Xie is begging that you expel that disciple for the well-being of the other disciples of the sect.” Said Mo Cang Lan; one of the great elders from the sect.

Everyone around them had perfectly understood the situation. A solution had to be found. Mo Cang Lan, as one of the Great Elders was also in charge of enforcement within the sect. His position within the hierarchy of the sect was extremely high. He was also Mo Xie's father. After what he said, it could be easily understood what the consequences for Lin Feng would be.

“Ordinary disciple.” Whispered Nan Gong Ling. He was inwardly startled but didn't show it. He didn't approve Mo Xie's decision but Mo Cang Lan was a chief figure in the sect. Nan Gong Ling couldn't make Mo Cang Lan lose face because of a simple Ordinary disciple. Abandoning Lin Feng was the only solution.

At that moment, Nan Gong Ling was about to agree.

“GOOONNNG” A deep soul piercing sound was heard and it seemed that the sound echoed through the mountains, each vibration making all those present tremble slightly. It sounded like the gods were marching to battle in the heavens and these were the war drums they played.

The whole crowd was puzzled. Where did such a loud and terrifying sound come from? They could not think what had caused the sound they had just heard. The Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect, Nan Gong Ling had chills run down his spine as a light twinkled in his eyes. That was the sound of the drums on the Precipice of Zhangu.

Mo Cang Lan was amazed. His eyes were twinkling as well. He gazed into the distance towards a certain mountain range. There was a precipice in that chain of mountains. On that overhanging cliff, there was a small room with eight drums. The drums there had not emitted a single sound in more than a hundred years.

“GOOOOONNG” Another drum sound was heard as if it was rushing down from beyond the highest heavens.

“That... That’s the second drum! Impossible!” Nan Gong Ling could not believe what he has just heard. Right after that, the smile on his face could not be removed. Only the most gifted and the strongest disciples, referred to as geniuses could make the drums emit a sound. They were looking forward to announcing that the Yun Hai Sect had an outstanding disciple, a true genius among geniuses.

Nan Gong Ling's mood wasn't good because of what had happened with Chu Zhan Peng. Being in such a situation because of a disciple while being a large sect like the Yun Hai Sect was embarrassing. But at that moment, Nan Gong Ling had forgotten these events and could not contain his excitement. It had been more than a hundred years since the beating sound of the drums had been heard. Now he had heard the beating sound of the drums twice.

"I don't know who that disciple is... Unbelievably he was able to pass the test of the Precipice of Zhangu." Said Nan Gong Ling. He was asking himself who had passed the test. He had completely forgotten that problem with Chu Zhan Peng.

"GOOOOONNNGGG" The third beating sound of the drums spread throughout the sky above the Yun Hai Sect. That time, almost everyone in the Yun Hai Sect looked at the heavens with a slight fear showing in their eyes, but some of the stronger disciples could somewhat tell the direction the sound was coming from and nothing more. The strongest disciples knew the sound they were hearing. It had been a long time since they had been so thrilled.

Nan Gong Ling was also staring at the sky. The history of the clan dated back a thousand years... and it had been three hundred years since three beating drum sounds were heard.

"Phewww..." Nan Gong Ling was breathing deeply and struggling to contain his excitement. The Patriarch of the Sect was so young and yet in his generation he would bring untold glory back to the Sect.

Chapter 20: The Unknown Force

The sound of the drums from the Precipice of Zhangu had given an unprecedented shock to the members of the Yun Hai Sect. Each time they thought the beating sound of the drums would stop, another one was heard.

When the seventh drum sound was heard, the Yun Hai Sect members quieted down. Only the pure sound made from beating the drums was remaining in the total silence that had spread across the Sect.

The entire Yun Hai Sect was still in confusion but many had the feeling of good fortune arriving on the sect. It was as if the vibrations in the air and sound coming from those drums were the only things left in the universe. It was as if the entire Yun Hai Sect and even the entire universe was enveloped by the power of those drums.

Nan Gong Ling was standing with his hands clasped behind his back. He was gazing into the distance towards the Precipice of the Abyss with an amazed look on his face. Nan Gong Ling's robes were swinging in the gentle breeze that was blowing over the area. Not a sound could be heard from him. Everyone else who was standing around him, Mo Cang Lan, Mo Xie, the Yun Hai Sect's disciples, Lin Qian and even Chu Zhan Peng were gazing into the distance. They had the feeling that on that mountain was a god beating his war drum to announce he had been born. A new God of War had descended.

Inside the cave in the mountains, the old man wearing a black

cloak had stood up and was looking at the overhanging cliff slightly surprised. He had a solemn and respectful facial expression.

The old man wearing the black cloak protected the Precipice of the Abyss, which was a sacred place for the Yun Hai Sect. Even though few people knew he existed, the Patriarch of the Sect Nan Gong Ling, when he saw this elder he would bow out of respect.

The old man had seen that Lin Feng was only at the eighth Qi layer and that his spirit was quite weak, so he had made him go through the passageway that led to the precipice with the hardest exam hoping that Lin Feng would be able to return in one piece once faced with the difficulties of the exam. He had never thought that considering the circumstances, a disciple of only eighth Qi Layer while using a weak snake spirit would be the first to successfully pass that exam.

What impressed the old man is that the beating sounds of the drums seemed to remain in the air for an extended time and the entire Yun Hai Sect was consumed in that sound. The seventh beating sound of the drums had already been heard.

In the thousand year history of the Yun Han Sect, such a miracle had never happened. Nobody had ever managed to make the drums beat so many times and on top of that the sounds were never this profound.

The old man entered the passageway towards the Precipice of Zhangu. He was walking up the flight of stairs step by step with the same respectful and solemn expression on his face as before. It

looked like he was expecting the eighth beating sound of the drums.

At that moment, the sword Qi was still filling the atmosphere completely creating an unknown force, but now it was no longer disorganized. It was following Lin Feng's hand in which he was holding his long sword. Lin Feng at that moment looked invincible.

“The force of the sword, it can be found everywhere.” Lin Feng thought while smiling. These drums were intriguingly marvelous. There had to be enough power in each attack for the drums to produce a strong enough counterattack which could then be used to produce a beating sound. This is what Lin Feng was precisely doing at that moment. He was producing more powerful attacks to increase the sword force in the atmosphere to attack the drums so that they could produce beating sounds.

“I already made the drums beat seven times. Let's make them beat one last time. That would be eight beats for eight drums. The last one has to be perfect and I'll pass the test of the Precipice of Zhangu. Then I will have to thank that Elder” Said Lin Feng. At that moment Lin Feng thought that this actually was the easiest test on Heaven Mountain within the precipice of abyss and the Elder really had been lenient with his request.

He held his long sword in his hand and the entire atmosphere was fusing with his sword and absorbing an incredible amount of energy.

“HERE COME THE DRUMS!” shouted Lin Feng. The Sword Qi

turned into a radiant light and the drums beat one last time.

“GOOOOOOONNNNNNNNNGGGG” the last drum emitted a sound which spread throughout the entire atmosphere of the Yun Hai Sect to the point that the mountains were vibrating. The vibrating sound lasted for a while. Lin Feng’s Dark spirit which was behind him vanished from sight. Triumphantly he sat down, with no power left he slumped his body across the floor.

“Now I should be able to find some pills which will cure Han Man.” Even though Lin Feng was exhausted, he had a big smile on his face.

A loud rumbling sound was suddenly heard. The large stone doors of the precipice opened. There was a silhouette to be seen inside the doorway. It was the old man wearing the black cloak who had pointed him to this trial.

Seeing that it was the old man and remembering the familiar black cloak, Lin Feng while struggling he once again rose to his feet. He then said to the old man: “Elder, did I finally pass the test? Will I be able to get the pills I need for my friend?”

The old man looked at Lin Feng who had a smile on his face while still looking completely stupefied. Immediately after that an unknown expression appeared on his face. Lin Feng wasn’t aware of what he had done but maybe he had angered this esteemed elder. He hadn’t come with the goal of achieving something unprecedented. He had just come to get some medicine for his friend who was injured and did not care about what he had achieved in the sect. Status and power meant nothing if he had no

friends to share them with.

“Of course you can.” Said the old man in the black cloak while smiling. He took out a jar full of unknown profound pills and threw it at Lin Feng saying: “There are some healing pills inside. One is enough to cure your friend completely. How you use the others is something you can decide by yourself. These pills are precious and you might need them later.”

“Thank you, esteemed Elder.” Lin Feng was surprised. According to the old man, one pill was enough to cure Han Man’s injuries. Such a pill was beyond extremely precious and valuable. The old man had given him an entire jar. Understanding the old man’s status and strength, Lin Feng knew the old man wasn’t trying to fool him but was wondering why he would go so far for such an easy test.

“You passed the exam so you deserve it. However you should remember this, don’t share the fact that you passed the exam of the Precipice of Zhangu with random people.” Explained the old man to Lin Feng. Lin Feng had only reached the eighth Qi layer and had managed to produce eight drum beats. No matter how Lin Feng had done that, his talent in the Yun Hai Sect’s entire history was never seen before. He was a real genius. The old man hoped Lin Feng wouldn’t raise the attention of any evil people before he had the chance to fully bloom.

In the Xue Yue Country including the Yun Hai Sect, there were certain people who secretly hunted and killed extremely skilled and outstanding disciples before they could gain power. It was not a rare thing for jealousy to be born of those with talent. Today the

sounds of the drums had been heard throughout the entire Sect's territory, it would probably make him the biggest target within the Sect. It would be best if he could lay low and not cause any trouble, then after a few years he would shine, otherwise his path would be a truly bloody one.

“Alright.” Lin Feng didn't clearly understand why the old man in the black cloak was saying that but he was still nodding his head.

The old man in the black cloak raised his head and looked in the distance: “Protector Bei, take him back.”

Lin Feng was stunned. There were only perilous cliffs and precipices here. One could see very far in the distance when looking around and there was clearly no one else around. Obviously the old man wouldn't be talking to the air.

“Ok, old friend, let's go back young'en.” Said a voice coming from the middle of the mountains in the distance. Lin Feng raised his head and saw someone falling down from the sky. This old man had a familiar looking face and had two gigantic wings, two dream-like snow-white wings. They looked like the wings of a crane. This was a crane spirit.

“Strong Cultivators can fly and they can even carry people through the skies. I would have never thought that the Yun Hai Sect had such Cultivators.” Lin Feng found the scene absolutely fascinating. He had the feeling a hurricane was coming and that he was unable to stand firm or move away.

Sand and small stones were flying around in the air. The crane-like silhouette landed on the overhanging cliff. Lin Feng was staring: it was him!

Lin Feng knew the person who had appeared. It was the old man of the Xing Chen Pavilion. He still looked sluggish and had a neglected appearance. He looked the same as the last time, but with a giant set of wings on his back.

“The Elder who was in charge of protecting the Xing Chen Pavilion was as expected, not even slightly ordinary.” Said Lin Feng to himself convinced.

“Young man, I will introduce you. My old friend is one of the protectors of the Yun Hai Sect. You can call him Protector Kong. I am one of the protectors of the Yun Hai Sect as well and you can call me Protector Bei.” The old man’s mood seemed to be particularly good. Protectors of the Sect have an extraordinary status in the hierarchy, to the extent that even if the Patriarch of the Sect was to see them, he would not dare be insolent.

The ones who became protectors showed extreme devotion and loyalty towards the Sect. Their abilities were far above that of other disciples. They only cared about the Sect; that was the only thing they had in their mind. How could the Protector Bei not be happy that Lin Feng had passed the test of the Precipice of Zhangu?

“Protector Bei, Protector Kong.” Lin Feng was smiling at the two old men. Two protectors of the Sect... They were probably within the strongest Cultivators of the Sect.

Protector Kong silently nodded his head. Shortly after, he went back into the cave. His body just vanished into the darkness of the passageway.

“My old friend spends his time in this cave every day. It’s common for him not to speak for days. He never did speak much so it doesn’t matter. “ Protector Bei was shaking his head. He then said to Lin Feng: “We’re leaving too.”

The crane spirit appeared briefly, its wings flapped in the air giving a hurricane-like sensation. Lin Feng only felt his body flying up in the air guided by a mysterious power. There was nothing under his feet, only the distant ground. Lin Feng had the feeling he was dreaming. In the previous world, it would have been impossible to fly up in the air like this without the assistance of technology.

However in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, extreme power and strength enabled some Cultivators to look down on the world from above.

Chapter 21: Questioning an Elder

In order not to draw other people's attention and to remain discreet, Protector Bei had decided to make Lin Feng move to another room which was also designed for Ordinary disciples, but it was situated in the forest, far away from many disciples.

Lin Feng could not wait and started heading towards Han Man. When he passed his new training room, he didn't even give it a glance and continued forward.

"Lin Feng."

Lin Feng turned around and saw a disciple who was surprisingly waiting at the door of his training room.

Lin Feng was annoyed because that room was supposed to be kept secret. It was disciple's sacred training place. Lin Feng wasn't expecting anyone, so how did they know where to look for him. The disciple had even taken the liberty to open the door and look inside. What if there were private or even secret things within that room?

"You know about the Sect's rules, you are not allowed to enter other disciple's rooms." Lin Feng said as his anger was building. He knew that disciple, his name was Hou Qing. He was ranked within the top 10 ordinary disciples of the Sect. He was also in charge of making sure that the rules of the Sect were respected by the Ordinary disciples. Lin Feng knew him because of the status he held within the Sect. Besides, he also knew Lin Feng.

In the Yun Hai Sect, Mo Cang Lan was one of the great Elders. He enjoyed a high status. He was also responsible for making sure that the rules of the Sect were being respected by everyone. In the Yun Hai Sect the people in charge of making sure that the rules of the Sect were being respected were numerous. There were some who had to watch the Ordinary disciples and others who had to watch the Elite disciples.

Hou Qing often abused the power he had as a disciple in charge of maintaining the rules of the Sect. However Lin Feng had not expected him to dare break one of the most sacred rules within the sect.

“Of course I know that rule. But such a rule doesn’t need to be applied when it comes to you, piece of trash.” Hou Qing looked sluggish. He wasn’t looking straight into Lin Feng’s eyes. In his thoughts, Lin Feng was still the piece of trash he used to be when he was at the fifth Qi layer.

“Follow me.” Said Hou Qing.

“I have no time.” Lin Feng started walking again. Han Man was still injured and was waiting for his pills. Why would he give Hou Qing face when he had better things to do with his time.

“Huh?” Hou Qing was stunned when he saw that Lin Feng was ignoring him. He was furious and his figure suddenly vanished.

A madly strong wind started blowing and a silhouette appeared

in front of Lin Feng. It was Hou Qing.

Hou Qing was very proud of his Agility Technique as he knew how strong it was, especially when he saw Lin Feng was frowning. The piece of trash was obviously shocked by such great skills.

“One of the Elders of the Sect wants to see you. Are you not going?” said Hou Qing in a mocking tone, as if Lin Feng had been making a fool of himself.

“One of the Elders wants to meet me?” said Lin Feng who was surprised. Was it because of the Life or Death Arena killing? Impossible, he had killed everyone who had known his true identity. Was it because of what had happened at the Precipice of Zhangu? Impossible, Protector Kong didn’t want that news to spread within the Sect, Protector Bei wouldn’t want that either. They definitely wouldn’t let Hou Qing know about it or send him to pick up Lin Feng. They also knew he would have business with Han Man.

One of the Elders surprisingly wanted to meet Lin Feng and there was no reason to refuse.

“Wait for me for a little while, I’ll be right back.” Said Lin Feng to Hou Qing and walked away, which left Hou Qing stunned once again. That guy had learnt that an Elder wanted to see him and he dared make one of the sect elders wait. Hou Qing was furious but he then remembered that Lin Feng was going to have to face the reality later anyway, so it was only a matter of time.

Lin Feng went to Han Man's room as quickly as he could and he gave him three pills. Han Man gladly accepted them and swallowed them immediately. Lin Feng had given him three of his priceless profound healing pills to make sure there was nothing left unhealed within his friend. He made sure to sit next to the bed waiting for his recovery.

“Lin Feng, did you go to the Precipice of the Abyss?” Jing Yun asked uncertain while looking at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng nodded. He would not lie to Han Man or to Jing Yun but when he remembered the words of the protectors; he could only nod without making a sound.

Jing Yun already knew that he had been successful when she saw Lin Feng's expression. Jing Yun somehow knew that he had gone to the Precipice of the Abyss, taken some pills and come back. She also knew that if anyone could pass the exam it would be Lin Feng.

Han Man had the sensation of waves that were flowing in his body from an unknown source. He opened his eyes and looked at Lin Feng in astonishment. He didn't say anything but he felt thankful to have such an amazing friend. He could feel countless warm waves of healing energy were flowing into his body without stopping.

“Lin Feng. Thank you” said Han Man. During the short time he spent with Lin Feng there was already no doubt about them being true friends. Han Man would always remember the name of such a friend in his heart. If the heavens ever threatened to punish Lin Feng then they would first have to punish Han Man in his place.

What a true friend! He had killed Jing Feng and wanted to bear the consequences alone, he had shared precious items with them even though he had killed the ferocious wild beasts on his own, he was also able to kill Jiang Huai and Jing Hao by himself and then he was also able to go to the Precipice of the Abyss and pass the exam only to save his friend Han Man. In this world it would be hard to find someone who would do so much for someone they had known for such a short time. Lin Feng truly valued all of his friendships and the people he would call friends.

After a short time, Han Man could feel that his body had almost completely recovered. He could feel that his body was still recovering. There was no longer any pain just the sensation of pins prickling his skin. He has shockingly recovered so fast.

Jing Yun saw how quickly Han Man was recovering and that the bruises on his face had disappeared. She was amazed at how quickly the profound healing pills affected the body and how strong they were.

“These pills are very useful, as expected from the protectors” Lin Feng thought when he saw how quickly Han Man was recovering. Lin Feng was smiling and had finally started to relax.

“Han Man since you are recovering so quickly. I can no longer stay with you as I have something I must attend.”

Before leaving Lin Feng took three pills out of the jar and gave them to Jing Yun. He said: “Jing Yun, If his injuries don’t

completely recover then you must immediately give him these three profound healing pills. I am relying on you for this task.”

“Lin Feng, don’t worry, I will do as you say.” Jing Yun took the three profound healing pills and then watched as Lin Feng left.

Lin Feng was following Hou Qing as they were going towards the Stormy Gorge and more precisely towards the Life or Death Arena. Lin Feng saw that there were many disciples gathered around the arena. He had no idea what could have happened and why they were all gathered at such a place when there were no sounds of battle.

More importantly he was wondering which Elder wanted to see him and for what reason.

“Patriarch, Elder Mo, I brought Lin Feng.” Hou Qing said respectfully taking Lin Feng to the Life or Death Arena.

“This is our Yun Hai Sect’s Patriarch Nan Gong Ling and Great Elder Mo Cang Lan.”

Lin Feng’s jaw had almost hit the ground upon those words. He didn’t expect to meet such important people and they had directly called for him. He looked around and saw Chu Zhan Peng and Lin Qian. Lin Qian looked at him with a cold smile on her face.

“What is she doing here?”

“Lin Feng, do you know the crimes you have committed?” Mo Xie asked Lin Feng with a sinister and dark look in his eyes.

“Elder, I don’t understand.” Said Lin Feng shaking his head and feeling cold sweat dripping down his back. Mo Xie was an esteemed Elder within the sect. Lin Feng felt that something really bad was about to happen.

“You don’t understand? You are a disciple and you don’t understand your elders, you hurt your brothers and sisters, insult your elders and your betters. You are the shame of the Yun Hai Sect. You are a disgrace. You are trash.” Mo Xie had made sure to embellish the charges and even made sure to humiliate him because of the agreement he had made with Chu Zhan Peng to save face. Because Lin Feng was a mere Ordinary disciple, nobody would question Chu Zhan Peng on how he had intended to dispose of him. Nobody wanted the patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect to be alarmed.

He had embellished all these accusations in front of everyone and intended to have Lin Feng expelled from the Yun Hai Sect. He had made sure to apply as much pressure as possible so a mere ordinary disciple could not rebuke his accusations.

“Disgrace, Trash, making the Yun Hai Sect lose face?” Lin Feng’s eyes looked perplex and then he looked at Lin Qian and understood what was going on. He couldn’t understand Elder Mo Xie though and why he would stand on Lin Qian’s side. Even though Lin Feng wasn’t a famous disciple, he was still a disciple of the Sect.

“Why are you not talking? You can all see how guilty he is simply

by his unwillingness to defend from these accusations?” Mo Xie said coldly looking at Lin Feng who remained silent.

“Elder, you listed many of the charges against me without evidence. I am just an ordinary disciple and apparently the words of the little people do not matter much to the almighty esteemed elders of the Yun Hai Sect. Even if I proved my innocence, I am already deemed guilty by such a wise all knowing and all seeing Elder. Do I need to say anything?”

“How impudent” shouted Mo Xie who didn’t expect such sharp words from Lin Feng. Lin Feng had indeed made a reference to how lowly ordinary disciples were treated and how the elders could accuse anyone of anything without even needing proof of their accusations.

“How dare you speak back to me! I’m one of the Elders of the Sect, My duty within the sect is to questions disciples on their crimes. Do you even realize speaking back to an Elder of the sect is a crime itself?”

“If I don’t say a word then you take it as me admitting my guilt to all of your accusations. However when I choose to speak, you accuse me of going against an elder who is performing his duties. I, Lin Feng, would like to ask such a biased Elder, who exactly are you working for? Surely the master could not have wandered far from his obedient lap dog?” shouted Lin Feng.

When he came to accuse Lin Fen, Mo Xie was already convinced of the crimes that he had committed as if he had witnessed them. Nothing could change his mind. He thought Lin Feng was guilty of

bringing shame to the sect. He treated Lin Feng like an animal. Lin Feng knew that Mo Xie would make things difficult for him no matter what he did. Not saying a word would be a crime, but arguing would be a crime as well. Why would he need to restrain his actions when he was already guilty either way?

In front of the entire crowd, all members of the Sect, Lin Feng looked down on Mo Xie and was not frightened at all.

Chapter 22: An Arm For an Arm

“That guy is really brave. He actually dares to speak back to an Elder.”

“He’s a madman who acts recklessly. It seems like he’s tired of living.”

The crowd was discussing loudly looking on with eyes filled with pity. They obviously hadn’t expected Lin Feng to be audacious enough to directly confront an Elder.

In the Continent of Nine Clouds, it was a period of great prosperity for the Sect. The Sect was so strong that it could almost call itself a nation. They could bring either peace or destruction wherever they went without anyone batting an eye. Within the Sect there was a fierce competition for power. The ranks in the hierarchy were extremely strict. First, there were the Ordinary disciples and the Elite disciples which were the seedlings within the sect. Then there were Ordinary Elders and Grand Elders. Ordinary was the lowest ranking whether it was an elder or a disciple. Each had their own parts to play within the sect and no one went against the hierarchy.

Lin Feng was an Ordinary disciple and that’s all. Between him and Mo Xie, the difference in status; within the hierarchy of the Sect was huge. If Mo Xie wanted Lin Feng to live, then he would live, if Mo Xie wanted Lin Feng to die, then he would die. This was the difference between them.

Mo Xie was shocked and embarrassed because Lin Feng had directly spoken out against him and made him look a fool.

“Hou Qing, is contradicting a Sect’s Elder a crime?” Mo Xie said as he was intensely staring at Lin Feng and not moving at all.

“Arguing against an esteemed Elder, is the highest crime and he should be expelled from the sect. He should have his cultivation crippled for offending an elder of such high regard and then have his position in the sect revoked.” Said Mo Xie.

How did Hou Qing not understand what Mo Xie meant? How could he miss such a great opportunity?

“Elder, Hou Qing thinks that Lin Feng is guilty of all crimes of which he has been accused, He should cripple his own cultivation and should be expelled from the Sect.” He said with a wry smile.

“No need, he has worked so hard to acquire such meager skills, we should pity the pitiful. Just go cut off one of his arms and then you can expel him from the Sect.” Mo Xie said in a magnanimous tone as if he was being generous to Lin Feng.

“How vicious.” Lin Feng hated him. He thought Mo Xie was unfair. It was at that moment that Mo Xie had been added to Lin Feng’s list and as long as Lin Feng lived Mo Xie’s blood would eventually spill. Lin Feng was accused of many crimes; he would be expelled from the Sect no matter what. He would instantly be given to Lin Qian as a gift. He was scared that Lin Qian and that creepy young guy wouldn’t let him live if they captured him. They

had obviously come to take his life.

In fact, it was precisely what Lin Feng had anticipated. Because they had sent an Elder after him, the situation was already hopeless. He would die if he complied, he would die if he resisted.

“On the path of Cultivation those who don’t have sufficient power and natural talent will die. The Sect is also unreliable and can no longer be trusted.” Lin Feng’s heart was like a mirror. This world, everything that had happened, the thing you could count on is your own power. This moment was also solidifying Lin Feng’s concept of this world, an Elder wanted to rip his arm off and to expel him from the Sect; based on false accusations, but that did not matter.

Lin Feng glanced at Nan Gong Ling. The patriarch of the Sect hadn’t said a word so far. He did not want to be part of what was happening and so distanced himself.

“Everything requires strength and natural talent. At the moment, I am not strong which means I need to unveil my real talent.” Lin Feng’s thoughts were quick. “If there is no solution, then I should reveal what I did at the Precipice of Zhangu”.

When he had made the drums beat, two protectors of the Sect had shown up and personally accompanied him back to the Sect. Lin Feng still had doubts as the exam he had passed was an easy one. The exam that he had passed as he initially thought wasn’t an easy one. He had fooled himself into thinking it was easy because of the Protectors kindness.

At that moment, Hou Qing was already in front of Lin Feng with evil intentions. Many people were staring at them. Even some great Elders were watching with disdain at the execution of an ordinary disciple. Hou Qing was feeling nervous and excited at the same time. That was a great opportunity for him to show his skills to the Elders.

“Piece of trash, you can cut off your arm yourself. There is a huge difference between my strength and your strength. I don’t think you’re worth fighting.” Said Hou Qing in an arrogant tone.

Lin Feng saw Hou Qing’s twinkling eyes and felt exasperated. Hou Qing didn’t have a strong personality. For one of the best Ordinary disciples, he was just a pathetic weakling.

“I would rather see how you were planning to take my arm.” Said Lin Feng while unsheathing his sword and held it firmly in front of him. He was standing calmly and didn’t attempt to move an inch from where he was originally standing. He felt like an unmovable mountain, he had no fear remaining.

“Haha, if it has to be like that, then I will show the elders how you really are worthless.” Said Hou Qing who obviously knew Lin Feng wasn’t going to cut off his own arm. A moment ago he had humiliated Lin Feng and made himself appear merciful which would have a great impact on the elders.

“Dancing Wind: Agility Technique.”

Hou Qing vanished in a flash. Dancing Wind: Agility Technique. He had mastered his agility technique to perfection. His moves were so quick it was as if he was dancing on the wind.

“Fellow disciple Hou Qing is amongst the ten best ordinary disciples. His agility techniques are outstanding for someone within the ordinary disciples. How could Lin Feng compete with him?”

“That guy can still stand and look that calm. He’s looking for death, this fight is already over.”

The crowd was looking at Hou Qing who was as quick as the wind. The crowd was loud. Hou Qing was one of the best ordinary disciples. When he was using his agility techniques, even those who were higher in rankings than him, were not able to match his speed.

When Mo Xie saw Hou Qing’s agility technique, he smiled a confident smile. It seemed like Hou Qing’s strength had increased again. He hoped Hou Qing would be able to be one of the five best Ordinary disciples of the Sect by the beginning of the following year so that Mo Xie as his teacher would also gain in reputation.

Whether Hou Qing could defeat Lin Feng or not, Mo Xie had never considered that as a plausible question. Lin Feng was merely at the eighth Qi layer. He estimated that Lin Feng would only be able to make three moves before Hou Qing took his arm, without Lin Feng being able to see his movements.

Amongst the people who were present, sadly it seemed like there was only Lin Feng who believed that he would win, everyone else was prepared to see Lin Feng's blood. He was holding his sword out with only one hand and he stood motionless like a mountain. Hou Qing was incredibly quick and did not stop dancing from side to side around Lin Feng.

At that moment, a strong whistling wind appeared and Lin Feng's robes were like a flag in the wind. His long hair was flying in all directions, yet he still remained unmoving. Suddenly, Hou Qing's silhouette vanished again.

"It's the end. Fellow disciple Hou Qing's agility techniques are just too exceptional for even elite disciples."

The battle hadn't even really started that the crowd was already coming to conclusions.

Everybody could only see that Lin Feng had closed his eyes. He was feeling calm and his robes were still being blown by the wind created from Hou Qing dancing around him. His breathing was steady and his heart was calm. Suddenly, he stopped breathing and only concentrated all of his senses on the current location of his opponent.

Lin Feng's sword suddenly moved. His sword was dancing on the wind as if copying Hou Qing's skill. He looked graceful and agile with only calmness on his face.

"AAAHHH" a loud scream was heard coming from above Lin

Feng's head. Suddenly an oppressive energy filled the atmosphere and shocked many of the onlookers.

“Too Weak”

Lin Feng only said these two words. His sword was still shining and spotless. Right after that, the entire crowd saw blood splash in all directions.

The whole crowd was gasping in shock. What they were looking at was inconceivable.

Hou Qing had been unable even retaliate against Lin Feng. He had lost. It had been an easy win for Lin Feng, he had cut off one of Hou Qing's arms in a single strike during Hou Qing's agility technique.

“How is that even possible?”

“How did Lin Feng do that?”

shouted some of the ordinary disciples. They were extremely surprised especially since many of them had heard Lin Feng's reputation and that he was called a piece of trash by many ordinary disciples. How could he have cut off one of Hou Qing's arms in one attack with such little effort?

All these ordinary disciples hadn't seen clearly how Lin Feng had attacked but the Elite disciples had all seen very clearly. Lin Feng

had been so quick using his sword that he had managed to borrow strength from the wind and cut Hou Qing's arm, to many onlookers it seemed that it was actually the wind itself which cut off the arm before the sword had even reached.

“A sword that can fuse with the wind and borrow its strength. Did the Xing Chen Pavilion have such sword skills?” asked Nan Gong Ling as it was the first time in his life that he had seen such a thing. Lin Feng's sword-play had been wonderful. It could really been defined as perfect. He hadn't used any unnecessary strength in his attack. He had followed the wind and had cut off one of Hou Qing's arms. This was Lin Feng's exact goal as if he had wanted to take Hou Qing's life, he could have done that in one hit before anyone was able to react.

Lin Feng hadn't practiced any particular skill for his sword to fuse with the wind. It was just an insight that he had gained when he was at the Precipice of Zhangu, he had realized that the sword, the sky as well as the all things within creation, all had a force which could be used. The sword had a sword force, the wind had a wind force. He had just used that wind force. He had followed the wind with his sword which had created a fusion between the sword and the wind and then cleanly sliced off his opponents arm.

“Wasn't that him using the wind force?” asked Nan Gong Ling considering that possibility. But he immediately rejected that idea because Lin Feng was only at the eighth Qi layer, how would he be able to comprehend what using the force of wind was?

A Cultivator of the Qi layer couldn't use forces from the elements. Only Cultivators who had reached the Ling Qi layer and

a few geniuses were able to use forces of the elements. If a Cultivator of the Qi layer wanted to use those forces, he could only do that using the power of his spirit. A cultivator could use forces only by using his spirit but during that fight, Lin Feng hadn't released his spirit at all.

“That piece of trash has become strong. No wonder he became insane. However as far as I'm concerned, that piece of trash is as before, still a piece of trash. That will not change today.” Thought Lin Qian who had seen Lin Feng cut off his opponent's arm in one hit and one single attempt. She was at the Ling Qi layer and her spirit was becoming stronger and stronger and was on the brink of awakening. She had an ice and fire universal spirit. That small piece of trash, Lin Feng, was no match for her.

Mo Xie looked extremely embarrassed at that moment. He had appointed Hou Qing to cut off Lin Feng's arm and hadn't thought Lin Feng would cut off one of Hou Qing's arms effortlessly in a single strike. It was as if he had been slapped in the face. Lin Feng had to die.

Lin Feng hadn't noticed everybody's face. He was looking just as calm as before. He had put his sword carefully back into his scabbard. He looked at Hou Qing who was on the ground, on his knees and didn't feel the least bit of pity. He just continued to stay unmoving as if nothing had happened.

“One of the top ten within the ordinary disciples ranking. It's clear that when you said I was not worth fighting that you were not prepared to lose your own arm.” Lin Feng was looking at Hou Qing mockingly and said: “I really don't understand why you allow

yourself to be that arrogant when you are so pathetically weak, I would be ashamed if I was your teacher.”

Chapter 23: The Terrifying Shadow

Hou Qing was using his other hand to cover the bloody wound where his arm used to be. Blood was pouring endlessly out of the wound and through his fingers to form a puddle on the floor. He looked absolutely terrified and couldn't come to grips with how he had lost his arm. The scene was so shocking that no one could believe what they had just seen.

"You, it must have been luck! If you didn't have such good luck then...." Hou Qing said while looking at Lin Feng in a sinister way. At that moment he still believed that Lin Feng hadn't beaten him and that Lin Feng's strength was hugely inferior to his. Everything that happened when he randomly swung his sword must have been luck, how could he even know where Hou Qing was? Lin Feng had just been lucky and when he was slashing the air managed to accidentally strike the arm. Hou Qing wasn't the only one to think that way, many ordinary disciples within the crowd had the same train of thought. They really couldn't believe that Lin Feng had seen Hou Qing moving at such high speeds and simply used a single strike to accurately slice off his arm.

"I do indeed have great luck." Lin Feng looked surprised for a second then smiled and replied. He had really been lucky indeed to have this opportunity to knock Hou Qing down a notch.

"Next time, I will not go easy on you and I will give you no chance to retaliate" said Hou Qing walking unsteadily. He moved away from Lin Feng and moved through the crowd of disciples. His arm had been cut cleanly off and this was not an injury he could leave without medical assistance. His wound required medical assistance as quickly as possible or he would lose his life along with

his arm. He had already lost so much blood that it was hard for him to stand.

“I hope that you will not be as foolish as to challenge me to a ‘next time’.” said Lin Feng feeling powerless and shaking his head. Hou Qing still didn’t accept the fact that he had lost and attributed Lin Feng’s victory to luck, with that kind of temperament then he would come back for revenge and end up losing his other arm.

“You dared to injure a disciple in charge of dealing out justice when the Sects rules are not respected. The Sect doesn’t mean anything to you, it’s clear in your eyes that you see us as something you can disrespect.” Mo Xie was blaming Lin Feng once again, accusing him of whatever he wished to suit his needs at the time.

While smiling, Lin Feng said to Mo Xie: “It’s easy to give a dog a bad name and then hang him. If I understand what you mean properly, you’re saying that I should have let him cut my arm and then get expelled from the Sect and on top of that I should still have the Sect in my heart. Don’t you think that your analysis in itself, is ridiculous and laughable, Elder?”

Lin Feng was provoking Elder Mo, They all wanted to cut off his arm then expel him from the Sect and on top on that they wanted him to care about giving the sect the respect it deserves. Lin Feng admired Mo Xie for being able to say such stupid things with a straight face.

“Patriarch, am I allowed to add something to what has been said already?” asked Lin Feng completely disregarding Mo Xie yet again. If there was someone who had the power to make decisions

in this situation, it was definitely Nan Gong Ling.

Nan Gong Ling had an expression on his face which showed that he couldn't help but be interested in this young disciple. He was actually very interested in Lin Feng and his actions. Lin Feng was neither overbearing nor subservient, neither arrogant nor humble. Lin Feng was completely calm and composed even though in such a seemingly disastrous position. That was exactly the temperament required to be a great Cultivator and to improve with leaps and bounds on the path of Cultivation. "You may speak." Nan Gong Ling said nodding his head.

"Patriarch, I was told to come over as an elder wanted to meet with me personally. I upon arrival immediately heard the Elder accuse me of various things, namely of being guilty of bringing shame upon the sects name and making the sect lose face. He called me the disgrace of the Sect and a piece of trash. When I try to provide an explanation to defend myself, he immediately calls me names and says I am contradicting him. Because I chose to defend my innocence he wants my arm to get cut off. I would like to ask. Isn't it Elder Mo, who made his decision based on his own personal opinion, guilty of bringing shame to the sect and causing it to lose face? As an Elder in charge of making sure that the rules are respected, isn't he supposed to represent the Sect in dealing out justice, rather than upholding his own biased injustice?"

Lin Feng's sharp and precise words had shocked the entire crowd who now really believed he had gone insane.

"Audacious." a strong Qi had surrounded Lin Feng where he stood. Mo Xie hated Lin Feng so much that he wanted to kill him

there on the spot before he could lose any more face to this young disciples words.

“I am not audacious. The Sect wants to abandon and expel me without finding the truth behind the accusations. Why not be audacious anyway? I would like to ask you Elder Mo, the crimes you accuse me of, who said I had committed them in the first place?” Lin Feng was smiling and completely calm, he wasn’t scared of confronting Mo Xie.

“You Trash! You injure your own family members, you humiliate your elders. Do you not dare admit it?” Lin Qian said in a cold tone.

“So that’s how it is... I see.” said Lin Feng smiling. “It seems that the crimes Elder Mo accused me of came from her. It was my cousin who told you all of this, correct?”

“Yes, so what?” said Mo Xie whose murderous intentions were becoming stronger and stronger in the depths of his heart. Even if Lin Qian and Chu Zhan Peng were not the ones to land the killing blow, they still wished for his death.

“Hehe, since you admit it, Elder Mo, I would like to ask you a question in the presence of the Patriarch. You listened to her side of the story in order to accuse me of various crimes, but are you an Elder of the Yun Hai Sect or an Elder of the Hao Yue Sect?”

“How dare you! Daring to humiliate me, an esteemed Elder within the sect. I will cripple your cultivation now. Clear out the

way. There is no more room for discussion.” Mo Xie had come to the end of his patience. Allowing Lin Feng to talk that way about him had caused his brilliance and reputation as an Elder to be completely ruined.

“Everybody here knows what is right and what is wrong. It’s just that I am not an Elite disciple within the sect, so I cannot defend myself. If you want to cripple my cultivation, just do it, there is no need make up groundless fabricated charges against me.” while Lin Feng said that, he didn’t stop looking at Nan Gong Ling.

If Nan Gong Ling prevented Mo Xie from attacking, Lin Feng would still be a Yun Hai Sect disciple in his heart even if he was expelled. However if Nan Gong Ling let him attack then Lin Feng would quickly tell them what had happened at the Precipice of Zhangu. Then during the confusion, Lin Feng would escape, as it could get dangerous for him and he wouldn’t want to be a Yun Hai Sect disciple anymore anyway. If the Sect didn’t want Lin Feng, why would he need the Sect? Lin Feng didn’t have the least bit of servility in the depths of his heart and bones. He would never be any mans servant as long as he lived.

Nan Gong Ling was carefully considering everything that had happened. Mo Xie was moving closer and preparing to swiftly attack Lin Feng.

Nan Gong Ling was paying attention to Lin Feng’s facial expression. He was staring at Lin Fen’s completely calm eyes with intrigue.

“His will and determination are extremely strong. He remains

absolutely calm when facing danger. Besides, his natural abilities are good. He could join the Elite disciples in a few years. He could become a very important person within the sect and one day we may require talent such as his.”

“Mo Xie is an esteemed Elder. His achievements on the path of Cultivation are not insignificant. His natural talent and hard work also plays an important role in his development. He could climb up the hierarchy in the future. Even though what is happening today is Mo Xie’s fault, he is an Elder after all and besides, he is Mo Cang Lan’s son.”

Nan Gong Ling was considering everything that had occurred and calculating his response at extremely quick speeds. He was the Patriarch of the Sect. Whatever problem there is, he must always distinguish things clearly and understand the advantages and disadvantages of doing something. If something can be of benefit to the Sect then it has to be done, if it is unfavorable for the Sect, then it shouldn’t be done. This was the simple understanding which all patriarchs followed.

He of course knew that Mo Xie had made a mistake concerning the ongoing problems. The problem was that if he stopped Mo Xie from acting, it would be the same as making him lose face. If he allowed him to attack, he would feel a great loss for the sect in his heart. Besides, he had no choice but to take into consideration Mo Cang Lan as well and couldn’t make him lose face either. After all, Mo Cang Lan had the status of Great Elder within the Sect. He had rendered heroic services to the Sect.

As a comparison, there was Lin Feng who certainly had some

potential but he truly was an insignificant figure compared to the elders.

Nan Gong Lin's hesitations made Lin Feng laugh at himself for ever believing in the sect. He laughed at his own ignorance. Even though he had defeated Hou Qing, one of the ten best Ordinary disciples, Lin Feng was still in everyone's eyes an Ordinary disciple, besides Mo Xie was an esteemed sect Elder. How could Nan Gong Ling make Mo Xie lose face because of Lin Feng? Lin Feng wasn't extremely strong so he shouldn't put himself in dangerous situations. In their minds it was Lin Feng's own fault for not being strong enough or having enough talent to be worth protecting.

"Ignorant child." Mo Xie said, as he was getting closer to Lin Feng. These words stabbed Lin Feng's eardrums. His smile revealed his murderous intentions, he wanted to kill Lin Feng. He was an Ordinary disciple, nothing more. Actually daring to oppose Mo Xie would be really reckless.

"Lin Feng is dead!" shouted disciples in the crowd. But Lin Feng could only blame his own powerlessness.

"What a pity that I can't cripple his cultivation myself." said Lin Qian while smiling coldly. It was quite an unexpected situation for Lin Qian but the result was the same, those were Lin Feng's last moments anyway.

A strong and powerful energy was paralyzing Lin Feng. The hair all over his body was erected, he was about to open his mouth, but at that moment the force oppressing him all over his body

disappeared without leaving trace.

“Huh?” Lin Feng was stunned. That was unexpected. How could that force suddenly vanish? Besides, how could it disappear that way without leaving trace?

Mo Xie wasn't far from Lin Feng but at that moment he stopped walking towards Lin Feng. Mo Xie's pupils were dilated as if he had seen something unimaginable. Furthermore, a godly strength was oppressing Mo Xie's entire body.

Many people didn't understand why Mo Xie had stopped. Nan Gong Ling as well as Mo Cang Lan were all astonished at these turn of events.

“It's...” Lin Feng was looking at Mo Xie's expression and then looked at his body. Lin Feng was as shocked as everyone else and could hardly believe what he was seeing.

“I'm not mistaken...” Lin Feng was so shocked that his eyes couldn't be more open than at that moment. On Mo Xie's body, there was a shadow which looked like a human body. Besides, that shadow was moving even though Mo Xie was like paralyzed.

It's a shadow. It really looked like exactly like a human's shadow.

The scariest thing though was that Lin Feng could only see the shadow but couldn't see to whom it belonged.

It wasn't only Lin Feng paying attention, the Patriarch as well as everyone was abnormally shocked and looking at the shadow enveloping Mo Xie's body.

"Come back, get lost you trash." said a voice which filled the entire area. Only the voice could be heard. Nobody could see who had said it, but the voice felt like it contained an immense power which shook everyone to their core.

The voice which they had heard made many people start trembling in fear, many wanted to drop to their knees. That shadow which had come out of the void had scared everyone present and their bodies were begging to escape with an almost primal instinct.

Chapter 24: A Strong Heart

Mo Xie Looked down and saw the dark shadow which was moving under his skin. It gave him an ice cold sensation which ran all the way down his spine. What sort of nightmarish thing is this to be moving under the skin of its victim? He could feel that he no longer had control of his own body.

Mo Xie could barely move his body under the power of the shadow. He could feel that there was a man facing him and that that man was using his energy to paralyze him through the shadow but he couldn't detect where he was or who he was. It was as if he didn't exist.

“That is actually him.” Said Nan Gong Ling whose eyes were twinkling. He was stunned. He couldn't believe that the one controlling the shadow was actually inside Mo Xie's body. The shadow suddenly emerged from Mo Xie's back.

“Mo Xie, come back.” shouted Mo Cang Lan. He was one of the Great Elders of the Yun Hai Sect, how could he not be scared of what he had just witnessed. He was already sixty years old and had a broad knowledge about the techniques of cultivators within the world and knew of many types of spirits. He knew about the origin of the shadow and exactly how dangerous this situation was.

“It is a shadow spirit. It's an extremely mysterious but dangerous kind of spirit. It is said that if a Cultivator has a shadow spirit and it awakens, that Cultivator would be able to penetrate into the body of others and take complete control of the bodily functions. Some powerful spirits can even stop a person from breathing while

inside them, forcing them to suffocate without being able to defend themselves. The scariest part of a shadow cultivator was the fact that once inside your body, how would you attack them without causing damage to yourself. With each attack you may cause the shadow no damage but weaken your own defenses against the shadow.

The shadow spirit could bring fear to even the most battle hardened cultivators. If the owner of a shadow spirit was evil and wanted to kill someone, it'd be very easy for them to do so. Nobody wanted to offend the owner of a shadow spirit no matter what their level of cultivation. Mo Cang Lan definitely did not want his family to offend a shadow cultivator.

Mo Xie took a few steps back while looking extremely pale. He was unable to do anything. He was so shocked by what had just happened to him, such a strong power completely consumed him.

“Greeting fellow cultivator, I don’t know who you are or how we can assist you, but we will try. What brings you to us?” Mo Cang Lan asked the shadow which was moving on the ground. He thought the person controlling the shadow was at the same place as the shadow.

“Take care of your Sect and not your own personal grudges, don’t try to see where you can take advantage of other people within the sect and the members of the Sect will be able to keep their face.” The voice echoed through the atmosphere again. With a gentle breeze, the shadow suddenly disappeared from sight completely.

“How terrifying.” Everyone in the crowd could feel their heart in

their throat; at this point it was hard for anyone to take a breath. The Aura was so oppressive and the shadow spirit was terrifying.

“Who was that man? It briefly seemed like he was talking directly to the Patriarch.” Discussions could be heard all around.

“It must be someone who is guarding the Sect’s best interests in secret. This is why he got involved because we were giving a disciple to another sect. The great Elders of the Sect surprisingly didn’t know anything about this either. It seemed like a Yun Hai Sect had a hidden dragon.”

Nan Gong Ling had a wry smile on his face. There was only one person who knew to whom the shadow belonged and it was him.

When Nan Gong Ling thought of what he had done, he felt guilty. He weighed the pros and the cons of the different possibilities and took his position within the Sect very seriously. He always tried to do everything for the benefit of the Sect but had somehow forgotten the reputation of the Sect that time. He had worried about personal gains and losses too much, without considering the sect as a whole.

“Chu Zhan Peng, let’s finish for today. Please send your father my best regards.” Said Nan Gong Ling while looking at Chu Zhan Peng.

Finish for today? Lin Qian was stunned. How could she leave and let Lin Feng off?

“Senior please...” Lin Qian said in a low voice expressing anxiety. Chu Zhan Peng then smiled and said: “Patriarch Nan Gong Ling, I came to Yun Hai Sect because I think you have many geniuses and heroic Cultivators within your sect. I really looked forward to seeing them. I don’t know who, amongst all the disciples of the Sect, wants to practice with me. We could exchange pointers and it will definitely help us both gain insights.”

Even if Chu Zhan Peng’s words sounded moderate and polite, he had no other choice but to talk that way. He wanted to provoke the Sect into fighting and losing face.

Lin Feng understood everything perfectly, it all became very clear. He understood the reason why Lin Qian and the evil looking man had come to the Yun Hai Sect.

“Junior Patriarch Chu Zhan Peng, you are famous throughout the country, everyone knows your name. Our disciples in the Yun Hai Sect would have to practice very hard to engage in a balanced battle with you. If there is an opportunity at some point for a fight, I would be pleased to inform you and you could return at that time”

“Patriarch Nan Gong Ling...”

“Do all of the Hao Yue Sect’s disciples hold their life in no regard? It seems you would like me to repeat myself?” said Nan Gong Ling in an extremely cold tone. Chu Zhan Peng still wanted to talk this matter over. Nan Gong Ling had already given him two hints that he wanted the two of them to leave. He had done his best not to make him lose face.

Maybe Chu Zhan Peng had inherent skills and abilities but he was very proud and was making the patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect lose face. The Hao Yue Sect was stronger than the Yun Hai Sect but Nan Gong Ling was older and stronger than Chu Zhan Peng. Would he really dare make the patriarch lose face within their own territory?

Chu Zhan Peng seemed extremely tense as he forced the words from his mouth and said, while smiling: “Alright, I will take my leave.”

His roc spirit flew away creating a hurricane-like wind behind. Chu Zhan Peng was holding Lin Qian as they were both riding the flying roc spirit. The hurricane-like wind created by the roc spirit was so strong that many people fell down. Everyone was confused at what had just happened.

“I, Chu Zhan Peng, will remember this.” The legendary bird flew away high in the sky. Those who had fallen down got back on their feet. Everyone in the crowd was feeling depressed. Chu Zhan Peng had belittled them and their sect.

“Lin Feng, during the annual meeting, I will kill you! Unless you plan to hide behind the Yun Hai Sect forever.” Lin Qian said.

Lin Feng looked at the flying roc. He had a cold smile deep within his heart. Did he need to hide in the Yun Hai Sect?

Nan Gong Ling looked at the crowd on the ground. He had lost face but Chu Zhan Peng was too arrogant and nobody in the Sect

could confront him openly.

“In five years, I hope there will be someone in the Yun Hai Sect who has reached the same level on the path of Cultivation as Chu Zhan Peng.” Said Nan Gong Ling. Even if Chu Zhan Peng was one of the officials within the Xue Yue Country, that didn’t justify his arrogance. The Yun Hai Sect didn’t know how powerful the other high officials of the country were, but they knew the incredibly strong cultivation of Chu Zhan Peng.

“Let’s finish for today. Everybody, go back now.” Nan Gong Ling waved and told the crowd to disperse and resume training.

Mo Xie wasn’t moving. He was looking at Lin Feng with pure hatred filling his eyes. Of course, Lin Feng would remember Elder Mo and would take his revenge.

“I said we’re done for today.” Shouted Nan Gong Ling loudly to Mo Xie who was still staring at Lin Feng. His voice made Mo Xie shiver. He then left and followed Nan Gong Ling.

“I must be careful and pay close attention to that guy from now on.” Said Lin Feng to himself. He was so weak at this moment. He had a long way to go until he’d reach Mo Xie’s level on the path of Cultivation.

Lin Feng was about to leave but then heard a voice.

“If you want people to respect you, you have no choice but to

become strong and powerful. Otherwise, you will be humiliated and even if you die, nobody will care.”

Lin Feng stopped. These were Nan Gong Ling’s words. Lin Feng had heard them and taken them to heart.

“Of course, I know.” Lin Feng said and felt a certain warmth in his heart which made him smile in his thoughts. Lin Feng was on his way to become stronger.

Lin Feng was sitting crossed-legged in the mountains, in a cave, meditating. The Qi of the heaven and earth turned into a white light which drowned into Lin Feng’s body and was strengthening his bones while making his flesh more resilient.

Cultivating and practicing. Lin Feng had been training so hard that you could clearly see his strength increasing by leaps and bounds. The Qi of heaven and earth had purified his blood and made his entire body stronger. That Qi had drowned into his body and been completely absorbed without wasting even the slightest amount. He was getting stronger with each passing moment.

Qi layer, this was the first level of cultivation. A cultivator had only the basics at that level. It only made your basic Qi a bit stronger. Becoming stronger was only possible by cultivating more than anyone else and training harder than everyone else.

Lin Feng was eager to improve his strength. He needed to become stronger than anyone. He was eager to break through to the Ling Qi layer. Only then would he be able to become an Elite disciple.

Everybody would be forced to respect his power then.

If he managed to break through to the Ling Qi layer, his spirit would awaken. With his spirits and his mastery, he would become a fearsome opponent.

Exactly like Chu Zhan Peng and Lin Qian whose spirits had awakened. Chu Zhan Peng could fly high in the sky and carry people on the back of his spirit. Lin Qian could control ice and fire by using her universal spirit.

Lin Feng trusted that if his strength and power increased, his spirit would awaken and with his spirit he could increase his strength many times.

Therefore, once Han Man recovered from his injuries completely, Lin Feng would go into closed door training within one of the eight mountains and cultivate hoping to break through to the Ling Qi layer as quickly as possible. He has understood that he would need to increase his strength or he would not be respected in this world.

Chapter 25: The Power Within The Ling Qi Layer

Ten days later, Lin Feng's Qi had become much stronger. There was a brilliant milky white aura around him as he sat meditating.

Outside his training cave there were two silhouettes in the distance who were getting closer and closer to the cave in which Lin Feng was cultivating.

“This is such a nice place. It's so peaceful and quiet. This place would be extremely beneficial to our cultivation.” Said the young man who saw the cave. He couldn't help himself but smile radiantly.

“Xue Er, should we practice here?”

“I thought you didn't want to practice.” Said the girl standing next to him who was radiating sex appeal. She was wearing a skintight red robe which looked like a gentle fire was hugging all of her curves, she was extremely attractive.

“Hehe, when I'm with the incredibly beautiful Xue Er and have such beautiful scenery around, then wouldn't it be more fun to press you between my legs rather than do something boring like training?” The young man was incredibly thin and pale, he didn't look like a Cultivator.

The girl wearing the tight red robes looked at the young man

with a hint of disdain. She didn't refuse the opportunity to train though. Cultivators required extremely large amounts of money when training because to have access to weapons and profound pills of high quality, it would require extremely large sums of money. If you were born from an ordinary family and didn't dare to go hunt and kill some ferocious wild beasts, it was impossible for you to receive the help of such treasures. The girl who was wearing the skin tight red robe could be seen with a glance to not have much talent and her family was probably commoners or of very low status. Because she wanted to improve quickly on the path of Cultivation, she stuck together with the thin young guy, no matter how unpleasant it was.

Lu Fei was eighteen years old and had reached the ninth Qi layer. He could borrow the forces from the elements and was naturally talented. His status was also secured by his brother, Lu Liang, who was an Elite disciple of the sect. Therefore the young girl, Xue Huan would have sexual relations with Lu Fei so that she could get some profound pills for training and at the same time could enjoy carnal pleasures.

When they entered the cave, they saw Lin Feng sitting in a meditative position and cultivating. They looked at each other with a confused look. They would never have thought that this cave far away from the view of others would be occupied for training.

"It seems like we have to find another place." Xue Huan said with regret.

"Find another place? Why? I can tell he is at the eighth Qi layer. I

will make him go somewhere else to train.” Said Lu Fei shaking his head.

“It’s not good to disturb others training” Said Xue Huan politely smiling.

“Chill out, that guy’s strength is low, he’s weak. Wait here, I’ll go cripple his cultivation for ruining the mood before I throw him out of here.” Said Lu Fei with an evil smile on his face. There were some strong Cultivators who would attack weak Cultivators practicing in caves for no other reason than causing them a minor irritation. It was a risky thing to do though, because if these weak Cultivators became strong, they would seek revenge, so even some cruel Cultivators didn’t dare and do it. Those who still did these types of attacks would cruelly cripple the opponent’s cultivation to stop any chances of revenge.

“Hehe” Xue Huan giggled and just nodded without saying anything. She agreed because people who went to caves were very few and a cave was really a great place to practice. Only the strong could use those benefits.

“Little boy, wake up.” Said Lu Fei in a cold mocking tone while sensing Lin Feng’s Qi.

Lin Feng opened his eyes. There was an incredibly cold killing intent which filled the cave. He had been woken up by Lu Fei and Xue Huan when they had come into the cave but he thought they would leave without bothering his training. It seemed like his thoughts were a bit too simplistic, these people’s intentions were worse than what he could imagine. He had heard them discussing

what their intentions were.

“You want to kick me out and cripple my cultivation?” asked Lin Feng coldly.

“If you heard what I said, then get moving and cripple your cultivation yourself, If you do it yourself it will be less painful.” Said Lu Fei.

“Very good.” Said Lin Feng nodding. He stood up right after and slowly walked towards Lu Fei.

“You haven’t crippled your own cultivation and you think you can just walk away?” said Lu Fei smiling coldly to Lin Feng who was about to leave.

“Did I ever say that I was planning to leave?” said Lin Feng with a teasing expression on his face. He suddenly stamped on the ground which made the entire cave shake. Right after, Lin Feng flew out of the cave at incredible speed directly at Lu Fei.

“Huh?” Lu Fei frowned. As he had suddenly seen the fist that was flying towards him.

“BOOOM!”

“Ahhhh”

Lu Fei's arm broke into pieces and was hanging loosely from his shoulder. A devilish hand appeared around his neck and lifted him off the ground.

"I want to ask you, how did you intend to cripple my cultivation?" asked Lin Feng looking at Lu Fei. His body was emitting a cold and deathly Qi. Xue Huan looked pale, she had never expected Lin Feng to be this strong.

"I'm sorry, I was wrong, I didn't know you were so strong, let me go please, I will just leave peacefully." Lu Fei grabbed Lin Feng's arm with his hand, he was trying to make Lin Feng let go of his neck. His voice was shaky and he was struggling to breathe.

"Do you think that saying you know you were wrong is enough?" Lu Fei thought he was the stronger cultivator at the beginning. He wanted to cripple Lin Feng's cultivation and then force him from the training cave so he could do immoral acts with the young girl. At that moment he knew he couldn't escape, saying that he knew he was wrong, would it really be enough? That would be too easy. If Lin Feng had indeed been weaker than Lu Fei, Lu Fei would have already crippled his cultivation.

"If you want to cripple other people's cultivation, you must take into consideration that they may be able to cripple yours as well." Said Lin Feng punching Lu Fei dantian with incredible force, which made him shoot through the air and land heavily on the ground several meters away.

Lin Feng then looked at Xue Huan standing on the other side and shouted at her: "Get lost!"

Xue Huan was shaking a little. She ran out towards Lu Fei and helped him leave the cave together with her.

“You dare to cripple my cultivation, I can only be satisfied with your death.” Shouted a voice outside of the cave. Lin Feng ignored the shouts and kept practicing.

But then, shortly after, he was interrupted again. Lu Fei and Huan Xue had come back and this time, they had brought another disciple with them.

This disciple seemed to be nineteen years old. He resembled Lu Fei a bit but his face looked like that of an eagle. He looked even more evil than Lu Fei.

“Bro, that bastard broke my arm. He also crippled my cultivation. Go and kill him for me.” Lu Fei said as his face was twisted in anger like an demon.

“Don’t worry, I will cripple his cultivation, break both his arms and legs, which will be your revenge.” Lu Lian said while staring at Lin Feng which gave him the feeling that a fierce animal was gazing at him.

“Alright.” Said Lu Fei while nodding.

Lin Feng frowned. Even though Lu Liang hadn’t shown his Qi yet, Lin Feng could feel, by looking at Lu Liang’s eyes, that he was

much stronger than Lu Fei, and even stronger than Jing Hao who was ranked sixth within the ordinary disciples.

“You dared cripple my brother’s cultivation, I will show you how terrible the consequences are.” Said Lu Lian to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng said nothing and took a few steps forward, the energy in his entire body suddenly changed and became oppressively powerful.

The entire atmosphere around them began to fill with insanely strong waves of energy. Lin Feng had used his Nine Heavy Waves which made the entire space around them vibrate. The air around them began to howl with the power emitted by these waves. Lin Feng, who was at the eighth Qi layer, could use his Nine Heavy Waves to increase the power of his strikes and they could emit strength beyond 9000 jin. It could even reach 9500 jin at times. Each of his attacks would be extremely powerful.

“You intentionally hide your skills as a cultivator to target those weaker and you even crippled my brother’s cultivation, but your strength is still not enough to fight against me.”

When Lu Liang felt Lin Feng’s power, he thought that he was actually at the ninth Qi layer. He had thought that it was due to his brother’s ignorance. His brother enjoyed that young girl’s presence and had offended a strong cultivator while he was training.

A blood curdling shout suddenly burst through the atmosphere. Lu Liang was the one that had shouted. It didn’t sound like a sound

a human could make at all. It sounded like the howl of an extremely violent ferocious beast.

Lu Liang had transformed his hand into claws and his Qi was turning into demonic Qi.

As Nine Heavy Waves touched the claw, Lin Feng immediately retreated and looked at his own hand, his skin was ripped off and there was blood. His hand in that brief encounter had become extremely painful.

“Ling Qi layer” said Lin Feng while looking at Lu Liang. Lin Feng could already carry out attacks with the strength of 9500 jin but Lu Liang could stop them. Lin Feng knew that his opponent had already surpassed the original Qi layer of strength.

“You’re finally regretting what you’ve done now, what a pity... It’s already too late.” Said Lu Liang mockingly. He didn’t deny that he had already reached the Ling Qi layer. He actually had reached this level of strength a few months before. He was extremely strong. When releasing his Qi outside of his body, he could greatly increase his power. A cultivator of the Qi layer had no chance against a Cultivator of the Ling Qi layer.

“I regret indeed. I regret that I didn’t kill Lu Fei a moment ago and spared his pathetic little life.” Lin Feng said while unsheathing his long sword from his back. He started moving extremely quickly using his Moonlight Feather Agility. It was better to fight than die while cowering.

Thunderous roars started spreading throughout the atmosphere of the mountain. Lin Feng's long sword started to glow with a radiant light and thrust towards Lu Liang, about to stab him.

Lu Liang couldn't avoid the attack. His claws like hooks immediately faced the sword and grabbed it before it could stab through his body. The collision between Lin Feng's long sword and Lu Liang's claws created an explosion of power. Lin Feng's sword was pushed slightly aside.

"Roaring Thunder!" shouted Lin Feng. His sword emitted a whistling sound and then a rumbling noise. When Lu Liang's claws touched Lin Feng's sword, Lu Liang felt a strong and violent power resembling the power of a storm.

"Whoosh" Lin Feng's long sword looked like the wind. The sound of the sword coupled with the sound of the thunderous roars was extremely terrifying to the onlookers.

"Boom."

A strong force was emitted. Lu Liang suddenly released his spirit, it was a mighty eagle spirit which fell within the category of beast spirits. The eagle spirit was an extremely violent and wild spirit. Chu Zhan Peng's roc spirit had more magnificence than the eagle spirit.

The sound of the eagle was heard. Lu Liang's claws were glowing. The light that was glowing on his claws became a single streak of light and enveloped Lin Feng's long sword in a flash.

“You cannot compete with someone of the Ling Qi layer with your level of strength.” Said Lu Liang whose eyes were twinkling. He felt threatened by Lin Feng which is why he had released his spirit.

Since Lin Feng had passed the exam of the Precipice of Zhangu, his Roaring Thunder was even stronger than previously. Even though Lin Feng was only at the eighth Qi layer, he was as strong as other Cultivators of the ninth Qi layer thanks to his skillful attacks. He had really mastered all of his skills.

But when Lu Liang released his eagle spirit, he became much stronger and could block Lin Feng’s sword attacks using the Qi from his claws.

But could someone of the Qi layer really not fight against someone of the Ling Qi layer? Lin Feng didn’t think so and he was certainly going to risk his life to find out.

Chapter 26: You Again!

Lin Feng was only at the eighth Qi layer but Lu Liang still perceived Lin Feng as a threat. Lin Feng was absolutely convinced that if he had reached the ninth Qi layer then this would be a completely balanced fight between them.

“Nine Heavy Waves.” The atmosphere filled with an oppressive aura as the waves poured from Lin Feng’s fist. The colossal shock waves surged towards Lu Liang.

“Fracturing Claws!” Lu Liang lifted up his hand, his fingers were now claws which looked like razor sharp hooks. Suddenly, a strong Qi burst forth from his body and dominated the atmosphere within the mountains. The powerful waves vanished like smoke with no resistance.

“Roaring Thunder!” Lin Feng thrust his sword towards Lu Liang. Every one of Lin Feng’s movements would disturb the atmosphere with vibrations. Even his long sword which had been carefully stopped between Lu Liang’s claws was vibrating with power. Lin Feng was becoming more of a problem over time. Lu Liang had the feeling of numbness coming from his hand, so he had no choice but to let go of Lin Feng’s sword.

But when Lu Liang let go of Lin Feng’s long sword, he thrust his claws directly towards the unsuspecting Lin Feng. Lin Feng could sense the change in power and felt the initial shockwave which made him groan with pain as he was sent flying with the power from the strike.

Lu Liang had an eagle spirit. He had a sharp and precise destructive power; this was his main strength. Physical strength was secondary to him but his attacks could still reach the strength of 10 000 jin which represented a superhuman physical strength.

Lin Feng doubted in his mind, he was not sure if he could win this fight. The difference between the eighth Qi layer and the Ling Qi layer was too big. There was a huge gap between the Qi layer and the Ling Qi layer. Fighting someone of the Ling Qi layer when at the Qi layer was a gap in power that could not be crossed with technique alone. Lin Feng really wanted to defeat Lu Liang but that was unrealistic.

“Roaring Thunder.” Lin Feng wielded his sword to strike out again. Lin Feng didn’t take the initiative to attack though.

“Woosh”

“Swish”

“Woosh”

“Swish”

Sword strikes one after the other, Lin Feng was striking repeatedly in the air around him. Endless thunderous roars could be heard from the air around him. The entire cave was full of thunderous roars as if the God of Thunder had gone on a rampage within this mountain.

In the short amount of time it took Lin Feng to deliver these multiple strikes, Lin Feng's body was surrounded by an aura of Qi which filled the air. He was enveloped in the devastating Qi from his sword looking like a bubble surrounding him.

“Defense? You still think you can defend? I will take this opportunity to show you how laughable your defense will be against attacks from an opponent at Ling Qi Layer.” Said Lu Liang while laughing. The wings of the eagle spirit started to move and the eagle threw itself in Lin Feng's direction. A powerful Qi collided into the energy bubble made completely from sword Qi.

“BOOOM!”

Lin Feng who was enveloped in the Sword Qi felt that he was sitting in a small boat which carefully floated upon a large ocean. Currently his boat was not tranquil and was being tossed back and forth from a gigantic storm which had invaded his large ocean. The opponent's Qi was bombarding the Qi bubble from every direction making it hard for the bubble to completely protect him from every strike. His body had received some damage from the strikes which had passed the Qi Bubble. However, the ocean of Qi still looked as calm and graceful as ever.

“Soaring Eagle”

Lu Liang saw that the Qi from his claws had almost no effect on Lin Feng. Lu Liang crouched down and both his hands transformed his Qi into eagles which flew up in the air then begun to soar

downwards directly towards Lin Feng inside the Qi bubble. The Qi eagles soared down into Lu Liang's claws which struck out at Lin Feng.

“BOOOM”

The shockwave from this attack caused the sword Qi around Lin Feng to shake violently. Lin Feng's body also shook a little bit before he could fully stabilize himself, The Qi bubble had stabilized again and Lin Feng returned to his motionless state.

When Lu Liang saw that he couldn't carry out any efficient attack on a Cultivator who had yet to pass into the Ling Qi Layer, he went into a frenzy of madness. His entire body turned into an eagle and he began to wildly attack in the direction of Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was enduring stronger and stronger attacks. Lu Liang's power in his wild fury was growing stronger with his fury. The entire cave was full of thunderous roars which were being emitted by the sword Qi surrounding Lin Feng. Rocks had started to fall from the cave roof then explode from the pressure which gave the impression that the cave was ready to collapse at any moment.

Lin Feng had blood dripping from the corner of his mouth. All of Lu Liang's attacks were now releasing strength no less than 12,000 jin. His attacks followed an irregular pattern as he was just striking wildly, making it hard to correctly dodge incoming attacks. Lin Feng's body was growing more and more damaged as he continued to endure the relentless attacks.

“I should finish this.”

Lin Feng's eyes were cold. He gently moved his long sword slowly through the air which released an invisible pressure. An incredible amount of sword Qi was moving from the atmosphere towards his sword. Incredibly powerful thunderous roars were being unleashed with only a slow and gentle movement of his sword.

Sword Force, The natural energy of the sword had surrounded him. This is the true power of Roaring Thunder which can annihilate anything in its path!

A truly devastating force was being emitted from Lin Feng's sword the whole atmosphere was consumed by the presence of his sword. Lu Liang was aware that an incredible power was moving closer to him, his eagle spirit was shaking and immediately began to retreat. The Sword force was so violent that the eagle spirit had retreated in a flash.

Lin Feng didn't stop moving his sword which was gathering more and more sword Qi Inside. He started using his Moonlight Feather Agility technique to approach the retreating Lu Liang. Terrifying thunderous roars were coming from Lin Feng's sword and bombarded Lu Liang.

“Soaring Eagle.” Shouted Lu Liang while his two hands unleashed Qi which once again turned into two eagles which rose into the air. The Qi combining again into his claws was incomparably powerful.

“BOOOOOOOOOM!” A terrifying explosion of power filled the cave completely. The entire cave was trembling.

“Moonlight Feather Agility!”

Lin Feng’s entire body transformed into a ray of moonlight, illuminating the entire cave. As he moved towards the exit of the cave, his sword flashed out.

“AAAAAAAHHHHHH” A horrible shriek filled the air.

“BASTARD!” shouted Lu Liang in a thundering rage, whose arms were completely drenched with blood. He had been severely injured by taking Lin Feng’s attack. If Lu Liang had not moved back at the moment of the attack, he may have lost his life.

Lu Liang would have never thought that a guy of the eighth Qi layer could fight him, injure him and on top of that... kill his own brother right in front of him.

Lu Liang hugged his brother’s dying body. His expression was savage and his face was completely twisted with grief and anger. At that moment he truly looked like a demon. There was a massive amount of blood flowing out of Lu Fei’s throat. He had already taken his last breath.

Lin Feng had managed to slit his throat during his escape from the cave. It was Lin Feng’s revenge masterpiece.

“As long as I, Lu Liang, am alive in this world, you will never have peace.” Lu Liang’s voice resonated in the cave and sounded like it came from a demon locked in hell. Xue Huan was terrified and was shivering in fear. She was leaning against the wall of the cave as she no longer had the strength to stand by herself. She had also never thought that Lin Feng’s strength would be so powerful that even Lu Liang would end up in such a miserable state.

If Lin Feng had heard Lu Liang’s shouts, he would have a sarcastic smile on his face from the result of his masterpiece. Lu Liang would chase him forever and he would never have peace. Why would he need to say such useless words. If he chased him forever then he would suffer the same fate as his brother.

Lin Feng was no longer generous enough to let a person leave with their life a second time. This was the deal he had already made clear. Yet Lu Fei still came back for revenge. He would only let Lu Fei keep his life once.

Lin Feng wasn’t the kind of person who was evil. He would never take the initiative to go and provoke others. He didn’t frequently kill other people if he didn’t need to, but if others provoked him and tried to kill him, he obviously protected himself and resisted.

Lin Feng ran for half an hour and gradually slowed down. He coughed up blood that he had been restraining since the fight. Lin Feng was also injured heavily in the fight and was actually at a larger disadvantage, if the fight continued he would have lost his life. This is why he left a distraction behind for his opponent and left while pretending to be unharmed. After all, there was a huge level difference between his opponent and him. He was only at the

eighth Qi layer and had fought against a Cultivator of the Ling Qi layer... that fight... he was proud of himself.

He took out the jar filled with profound healing pills. He took out a healing pill, put it in his mouth and swallowed it immediately. A refreshing and comfortable sensation spread throughout his body. He had the feeling that his thoughts which had become slow, suddenly became clear and quick again. He could think clearly and quickly again, he felt refreshed. In an instant, his wounds were all cured.

“What an efficient profound pill!.”

Lin Feng’s eyes revealed how pleasantly surprised he was. No wonder Protector Kong had said that one was enough to cure Han Man. Lin Feng had found it suspicious as he did not believe he could easily receive a jar of pills which were such high quality. He had given three pills at once to Han Man and he had even given three more pills to Jing Yun in case they were not enough. Where there is precaution, there is no danger, but at that moment Lin Feng understood how powerful and rare these profound pills really were.

Not only did Lin Feng have the feeling his injuries were completely recovered but he also had the feeling that his strength had once again greatly improved.

“No wonder so many Cultivators want to use profound pills, they are extremely powerful. Even healing pills have such a great benefit to cultivation.”

In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, many Cultivators concocted profound pills and fabricated weapons. The ones who could concoct profound pills and create weapons were extremely respected as they were masters amongst masters. They had a very high status in society as it was rare to find someone talented in these fields of expertise. There were people who concocted healing pills within the Yun Hai Sect as well, but because Lin Feng was only an ordinary disciple, he still hadn't had the opportunity to come into contact any of these masters.

Engaging in battles is the best way to improve on the path of Cultivation as it is not artificially created by an outside power. These profound pills were just an aid that had to be used alongside struggles within battle. Lin Feng had obviously gone through a lot of hardships on the path of Cultivation already. He now had to find another good place to practice and consolidate his knowledge from this battle. This could be the opportunity to break through to the ninth Qi layer. After breaking through to the ninth Qi layer, he would go back to Yangzhou City and attend the annual meeting with his cousin.

Lin Feng turned around and looked at the landscape. It looked surprisingly familiar.

"It was here originally." Thought Lin Feng with shiny eyes. He immediately gazed into the distance and smiled.

He could see two mountains in the distance which seemed to have been split open by a sword. These were the mountains where he had seen the sunlight passing through the mountain... but had

run into a ruthless girl there.

“I found such a nice cave to practice. I wouldn’t have thought that there were such nice places around here. I guess I will have to make it my own.” Lin Feng obviously wasn’t going to forget that that girl had tried to kill him twice. This time, he was going to see if her attacks could even reach a hair on his body.

Lin Feng walked quicker and quicker towards the mountain cave. He then arrived and entered without hesitating whatsoever.

When Lin Feng entered the cave out from which the sunlight was shining through, some people saw him and couldn’t help but be stupefied at such a spectacle. They stayed outside to watch Lin Feng be forced from within the cave. That disciple dared get into fellow disciple Liu Fei’s restricted area without permission. He really was acting recklessly. As long as he did not act foolishly when inside then he would be forced outside and beaten for his crime.

A short instant later, Lin Feng had entered into the open area inside the mountain again. He was standing in front of the hot spring. There were still many caves there. If there was nobody to disturb, those were really perfect for cultivation.

At that moment, just like last time, Liu Fei’s was under the water of the hot spring cultivating, her head was beneath the water making it only possible to see her upon inspection. Her eyes were closed and she was holding her breath to cultivate. That way of practicing was a great way to improve one’s breathing techniques. By improving her breathing technique, Liu Fei could shoot

multiple arrows in a single breath. The power of her arrows would also be stronger and more powerful.

Lin Feng did not recklessly jump in this time. He was waiting for her to resurface.

When her beautiful face appeared on the surface of the water, Liu Fei saw Lin Feng standing there. She couldn't help but be surprised. She immediately narrowed her eyes with a hint of anger. She said in an ice cold tone: "You again."

"Indeed, it's me again." Said Lin Feng with a cold tone hidden in his voice. After having fought against a Cultivator of the Ling Qi layer, he felt he had enough power to engage in a battle with Liu Fei. Even though Liu Fei one of the best Ordinary disciples, Lin Feng felt confident. After all, Lin Feng was not as strong as Jing Hao and he had defeated Jing Hao. However their fighting styles were different and he had to be careful.

Chapter 27: Self Confidence

“There are certain people in the world who are perverts, some are degenerates and there are others who are not serious about practicing the art of cultivation. The only thing they have in common is their filthy and perverted thoughts.” Thought Liu Fei as she saw that Lin Feng was looking at her while laughing.

“I need to ask, how many lives do you have to act so foolishly?” she asked with a hint of anger.

Liu Fei while talking had quickly sprung from the hot spring. Her clothes were completely soaked with water again and became skin tight, revealing all of her hidden curves. She was extremely attractive, she was as delicate as a swan. If it had been Lin Feng’s previous world then many people would be absolutely crazy about her and dedicate themselves to worshipping her.

But this was not that world, this was not the old Lin Feng. His heart wasn’t that of an ordinary person any longer. When looking at Liu Fei, he felt cold and detached, his heart was as unmoving as stone.

“I would have never thought she would confuse me for a pervert and take all of my actions as an attempt to take advantage of her.” Thought Lin Feng but he remained completely calm. If Liu Fei thought he was a pervert, he would teach her a lesson. An evil smile slowly crept onto his face as he was staring at her.

Liu Fei saw that Lin Feng’s face had perverted intentions and she

could not suppress her anger. She was already getting ready to shoot an arrow through his heart and kill him.

“You really are looking for trouble, do not blame me for being heartless.”

The sound of her arrow cut through the air with a whistling noise. Her arrow was surrounded by a sparkling light and created a small explosion when colliding with Lin Feng's Heavy Waves.

“She has gotten much stronger since the last time we met.” Thought Lin Feng. He used his Nine Heavy Waves to retaliate against her arrow. The vibrations of the waves spread throughout the atmosphere around them and the arrow immediately crashed into the ground.

Lin Feng's Nine Heavy Waves was much stronger than before and he had increased his skill with using it in battle by leaps and bounds. So it was easy for him to stop Liu Fei's arrow with his current strength. His Nine Heavy Waves had a strength far superior to 9,000 jin.

“No wonder you dared to come back. But do you really think you are strong enough to attempt perverted things with me?”

Liu Fei released her arrow spirit. It automatically targeted Lin Feng. Liu Fei took an arrow out, put it in her bow and slowly pulled her bowstring with all of her strength. The sound of the bowstring vibrating under the pressure could be heard.

“Go.”

Her arrow was much faster and contained a great deal more power than her previous arrow.

Lin Feng angrily groaned as this battle was already more difficult than he had hoped. He took a small step and used his Nine Heavy Waves on the incoming arrow. The power of the waves unleashed was terrifying.

The arrow was blocked by the waves but the arrow had pierced all the way through to his fist, leaving his hand feeling slightly numb. While the arrow had stopped his fist still contained some power which showed that his attacks contained slightly more power than the arrow.

“Huh?” Liu Fei frowned. That pervert has made huge progress in such a small period of time.

Liu Fei shot another arrow which was filled with all her killing intent.

“You think that only you can attack in a fight?” Lin Feng said while smiling coldly. Lin Feng used his Moonlight Feather Agility and approached Liu Fei at an incredible speed. The moment when the arrow was about to strike him, a flash of light appeared before the arrow and as he sheathed his sword, the arrow split into two.

Liu Fei was staring in complete shock. Lin Feng had progressed

much too fast. He cut her arrows in mid air while still approaching her at incredible speed. His movement speed and ability to cut down her arrows was simply too fast. She had not seen him unsheathe his sword and only saw the moment he had begun to sheath his sword again.

Liu Fei seemed quickly stepped back and made sure to keep the distance between her and Lin Feng. She then took out three arrows at once.

“Three arrows at once. The strength of the attack will exceed 9500 jin. Show me how you intend to block such an attack.” Said Liu Fei silently to herself. She took a deep breath and simultaneously shot the three arrows directly towards Lin Feng.

“PRRRRRRROOOOMMMMMM” Lin Feng immediately unsheathed his long sword and the sound of thunderous roars could be heard with each movement of his sword. The arrows could not even get close to Lin Feng before being completely repelled by the Qi released from his sword.

Roaring Thunder combined with his knowledge of sword Qi, Lin Feng’s sword alone was stronger than the arrows but when combined with the sword Qi within the atmosphere, he wielded such a terrifying amount of power. The sword had blocked the three arrows with just the light of his sword Qi.

“How’s that even possible?” Liu Fei’s eyes stared at the scene in shock. With her current level of strength, she could only shoot three arrows at once. That was her absolute maximum power. If she used five arrows at once then the power of her attack could

only reach 9000 jin, this was an attack which sacrificed the power of each arrow to increase the number of arrows for use in a group fight. In a one on one battle it could only display slightly less power than shooting the three arrows at once.

But Lin Feng could break three arrows before they were able to get close.

She looked at Lin Feng and suddenly a smile appeared on her face. She made sure to keep the distance between them the same as when the battle first started. Liu Fei suddenly shot three arrows towards Lin Feng again.

The result was exactly the same as the first time she used this attack. Lin Feng broke the arrows in one hit using his sword Qi which was still glowing in the air around his sword.

Before she even had time to attack again, Lin Feng's sword was approaching Liu Fei's throat and she had got lost in her own thoughts. She remembered when Lin Feng appeared in here for the first time, when he could hardly withstand a single arrow from her. The second time she had met him in the Stormy Gorge, it seemed like he had made more progress with his strength and had even wanted to kill her. This time was the third time, however this time it was her who could not even take a single attack from Lin Feng.

“How is this possible? How could he progress at such speed?”

Liu Fei felt satisfied with her own training speed and thought she

was extremely talents compared to others around her. She constantly improved her skills and cultivation on a daily basis. The power of Lin Feng's attack was just too powerful, she could not even defend herself against it. Then suddenly his sword stopped right before piercing the delicate skin on her throat.

Lin Feng had a smile on his face and he gave the impression he was looking at something worthless which could be used and thrown away. When Liu Fei saw his face, her whole body froze from head to toe with fear.

“What do you intend to do to me?”

Liu Fei stared at Lin Feng and bit her down on her soft lips. She could only endure her fate.

Lin Feng glanced at Liu Fei who was soaking wet. Her body was tightly hugged by her wet robes and her curves were captivating. She could send any man into a frenzy of desire... Lin Feng let out a deep sigh filled with emotion. This girl was extraordinarily beautiful but she was too violent and her heart was merciless.

Lin Feng looked longingly at the curves of Liu Fei's attractive body and let out a groan.

Then with a smile of indifference as if he way toying with her, he said: “Don't think too highly of yourself! I'm not interested in someone like you at all. Get lost, I am going to train”

Lin Feng stopped talking and started to sheathe his sword. Without even glancing back he headed towards one of the caves to train. He had wanted to kill her but the look on her face showed that she had truly believed with all of her heart that Lin Feng had always held perverted intentions. He could not justify killing her over the misunderstanding when they met. Next time however he would not be so generous.

Liu Fei was stunned as she watched Lin Feng. She bit her pink lips so hard that her lips had started to bleed.

Liu Fei was sixteen years old and had reached the ninth Qi layer. She could use her bow very skillfully and combined with her arrow spirit, her attacks were extremely powerful. Within the Yun Hai Sect, there were no ordinary disciples who dared fight with her. She had strong natural abilities and was extremely skillful with her techniques.

Additionally, she had a very beautiful face. Everyone in the Yun Hai Sect was aware of her, to the extent that of the people who were seeking her affection, elite disciples were amongst the lowest in ranking. Therefore, she had thought that Lin Feng was a pervert like many others that she had come across in the past because of her beauty. Why else would he strip down and then jump into the hot spring where she was training? She then realized that the whole time she had been giving herself airs.

On that day, not only had Lin Feng humiliated her in a contest of strength but he had also hurt her ego and self respect.

“Don’t think too highly of yourself!” Lin Feng’s cold, disdainful

and detached words had profoundly hurt her feelings.

“Next time, I will show him.” Thought Liu Fei. However, she didn’t leave. She jumped into the hot spring again and started to practice her breathing techniques under water. This was the best place to improve her shooting abilities and develop the power of her arrow spirit in the quickest possible time.

Lin Feng went into a huge cave.

In this cave which went deep into the mountain, there was a stone bed and a clean set of robes. Liu Fei had obviously been practicing here.

“That woman really had chosen a nice place to train.” Lin Feng was satisfied with the cave. In the Yun Hai Sect’s history the new disciples would use the training grounds of the previous eras. These caves had been made by the ancestors of the sect. Their children and grandchildren had used these caves and they were still being used. They belonged to every member of the Yun Hai Sect. The caves belonged to nobody, only with enough strength could you secure a training location. In some cases people would steal valuable items or materials from the cave. This showed how amazing these training areas were for disciples.

Lin Feng sat on the stone bed and released his dark spirit. If someone came in, Lin Feng could immediately sense their presence and hide his spirit.

Lin Feng entered into a state of meditation. The Qi of the Heaven

and Earth had begun to invade his body from the atmosphere around him. Lin Feng immediately started to practice intensely.

A short time passed.

The Qi of heaven and earth became restless and begun to form a whirlpool. A radiant white light appeared and penetrated into Lin Feng's dantian.

When Lin Feng opened his eyes, he had a remarkable light in his eyes and was grinning from ear to ear.

“I have broken through to the ninth Qi layer. Now there should be no one I have left to fear beneath the Ling Qi layer.”

When Lin Feng was at the eighth Qi layer, he could already fight against someone of the Ling Qi layer but in his battle he had been severely injured and if he had not escaped after the clash from their power, he would have most likely lost his life. Cultivators who had reached the Ling Qi layer had an incredible strength and many of them had already awakened their spirits which made them incredibly strong. Lu Liang, the cultivator he had fought on the other day, who was at the Ling Qi layer, had an eagle spirit. Even though his eagle spirit was extremely violent and powerful, it was still not a fully awakened spirit. Amongst the disciples who had reached the Ling Qi layer, he was still pitifully weak compared to others.

Even though everybody had the opportunity to see their spirit awaken, not everyone was able to make it awaken. Some would

have great difficulty attempting to awaken their spirit. Lin Feng was aware of that.

“I don’t know how much time I have left, but I should have a breakthrough before the annual meeting.” Lin Feng didn’t continue his cultivation instead he stood up and left the cave. He saw Liu Fei in the hot spring and she looked as angered by his presence there as she did when they first met.

Liu Fei was staring at Lin Feng. She had the feeling that he had changed since their battle over the hot spring, but she was incapable of spotting exactly how he had changed.

“How many days was I cultivating?” Lin Feng asked without taking notice of Liu Fei’s facial expression.

“Twenty days.” Replied Liu Fei coldly.

“That long?” Lin Feng frowned. He would have never thought that he had been meditating for such a long time.

“Exactly what breakthrough did you have in those twenty days?” shouted Liu Fei who couldn’t bear not knowing any longer.

“I just broke through to the ninth Qi layer.” Replied Lin Feng. Immediately after, he vanished in a flash.

Lin Feng suddenly rushed out from the mountains and begun heading to the annual meeting in a hurry. There wasn’t much time

until the annual meeting. It was about time to go back to Yangzhou city.

Liu Fei was stupefied. She could not describe the feeling she was having at this exact moment, but she felt powerless.

When Lin Feng was still at the eighth Qi layer, he could easily defeat her. Before she had thought that she was a talented genius. Then Lin Feng had entered her life and shattered her self confidence completely. He did not want her beauty and had far surpassed her talent. What was left for her to have confidence in?

Chapter 28: The Whistle Wind Restaurant

The end of the year was approaching and Yangzhou City was bustling with activity. Numerous disciples would return home from their various sects and visit their family members.

At the end of the year, all the cities and villages of the country had a grand annual meeting. In The world of cultivators these annual meetings were about showcasing talent and gaining recognition within their family.

In Yangzhou city, larger Clan's would all have an internal annual meeting with only members of their clan. During the annual meeting, the older generations within the clan would check the progress of disciples of the younger generations. Once in a while, in the entire city of Yangzhou, some powerful clans would also organize meetings between themselves and other clans, during which they would check which clan had the greatest future potential and the strongest fighting force.

At the Whistle Wind Restaurant, There was a group of young disciples, they were all people from the great Clan's of Yagzhou City. Many outstanding disciples had gathered there to drink wine and discuss about the upcoming annual meetings.

“I heard that Lin Qian's spirit was close to awakening after she had broken through to the Ling Qi layer and because of this she was selected as a Hao Yue Sect elite disciple. Lin Yu, do you think all of this is really true?” asked a young disciple who was holding a feather fan. Everybody was looking at Lin Yu with questioning gazes.

“All of this is obviously true. When she reached the Ling Qi layer, Lin Qian saw her strength increase drastically. For our ceremony, I think that the Lin Clan will be able to showcase extraordinary talents.”

Lin Yu had a smile on his face. His father was Lin Feng's uncle and also aiming for the seat as head of the clan, so Lin Yu's status within the family was obviously adequate enough to declare his opinions on behalf of the Lin Clan.

“Hahaha. She just broke through to the Ling Qi layer, that's not an achievement. In my family, Gu Yan already broke through that layer over six months ago. The Lin Clans members obviously do not engage in enough battles, they clearly prefer to cultivate within the safety of their sects.” said the young man wearing a yellow jacket who was sitting in front of Lin Yu. In Yangzhou City, the Gu Clan and the Lin Clan were always hostile with each other. How could he acknowledge anyone within the Lin Clan?

“The time at which one broke through to the Ling Qi layer is insignificant. In my family, Wen Jiang has already reached the second Ling Qi layer. Except for the daughter of the city master, Na La Feng, who can compete with such strength?”

The Wen Clan also didn't give the impression that this generation of disciples would be weak.

The young man holding the feather fan didn't forget to offer his opinion, his clan had very strong ties within the city government,

he couldn't help but have a teasing smile on his face: "Wen Jiang already broke through to the second Ling Qi layer. What a gifted cultivator, what an amazing talent."

"You invited me here to listen to these stupid and pointless discussions?" said a voice in the background, it was cold and detached which caused everyone to stop talking. It was a young girl who was extremely pretty, but she gave off an icy aura.

"Of course not. I invited everyone to come to tell you some news. This year, on the second day of the annual meeting, apart from my clan and members from The Three Great Clan's of Yangzhou, other outstanding people can also join. Qiu Lan, you should be able to understand what this means?"

Na Lan Hai smiled warmly. Everybody had understood. In the past, the city of Yangzhou also had an annual meeting but it was limited to the offspring from the four strongest Clans. They wouldn't have thought that this time, they would allow other people to join. It seemed like they wanted to solicit the participation of other young people within the city who might be full of potential. They could use this to recruit young talents early.

It is said that Qiu Lan is an orphan but her reputation in Yangzhou City was already well established. It was due to her incredibly beautiful appearance as well as to her cold temperament and of course, her natural talent.

Qiu Lan nodded her head. She also felt like finding out what kind of abilities the offspring from the four strongest Clan's were capable of.

“Hehe, now the upcoming ceremony is certainly going to be wonderful. I heard that the piece of trash of the Lin Clan has progressed in his training and that he even injured Lin Yun as well. I think that the piece of trash will be coming to join the annual meeting as well.” said the young man from the Gu family, with a bright smile on his face. He could feel the excitement welling up inside him.

“Gu Song, what do you mean? My Lin Clan has a lot of outstanding disciples coming to join our meeting, why would we need a piece of trash to join?” replied Lin Yu who obviously understood to whom they were referring. If he wanted Lin Feng to join the annual meeting then it was obviously to make fun of the Lin Clan, he wanted to ridicule the younger generations of his Clan.

“Hehe, you’re calling a member of your own family a piece of trash... that doesn’t seem appropriate.” replied Gu Song with a smile.

“A piece of trash is a piece of trash. Why wouldn’t it be appropriate? Besides, I, who is also a member of the main family by blood, sooner or later I will definitely...” Lin Yu didn’t have time to finish his sentence as something had stopped him. He simply groaned and didn’t continue to talk.

Right at that moment, the piece of trash they were talking about was riding Qian Li Xue and was about to enter Yangzhou City.

After having been traveling for ten days, one could barely see travel fatigue on Lin Feng's face. Sitting on Qian Li Xue was exhausting but Lin Feng's facial expression was particularly radiant and didn't reveal the least bit of sluggishness.

Compared to the last time that Lin Feng was in Yangzhou City, his appearance was much sturdier and he looked many times stronger than before. His facial expression was hardened and he looked more like that of a man who knew what he wanted from life.

With his sword sheathed neatly on his back, his silver shining belt around his waist and riding triumphantly atop Qian Li Xue, Lin Feng drew the attention of many people. In view of his attire as well as his gentle yet vigorous appearance, he was probably a disciple belonging to one of the powerful Clan's within the city, who practiced cultivation within a large sect but had come back to participate in the annual meeting.

"Keep going." said Lin Feng. Qian Li Xue had slowed down and stopped galloping when it reached Yangzhou City.

"EEEyah"

Lin Feng passed by a restaurant and a voice came from the top of the building. Even though the sound of the voice had been slight, Lin Feng's sense of hearing was extremely sharp. Lin Feng raised his head and just saw someone looking at him.

"Hehe, who is it down there...? Could that be the young master of

the Lin Clan? It's really a coincidence for you to appear at such a time."

The young man was looking down at Lin Feng mockingly. A short instant later, many faces appeared at the window of the top floor. Amongst them, there was a gloomy face which seemed familiar.

"Lin Yu." Thought Lin Feng. Lin Yu was his cousin and held a high status within the Lin Clan, but he had only reached the eighth Qi layer. He wasn't talented compared to others within the clan, so he used the fact that his bloodline was tied to the main family to elevate his status amongst others.

"Hmph..." Lin Yu had no respect for Lin Feng at all. He frowned in anger. He hadn't expected to run into Lin Feng there. The others would use Lin Feng to ridicule his Lin Family even further.

"Lin Feng, we are a few disciples gathering here before the annual meeting. Since we have crossed paths, please come upstairs and sit with us." As expected, Gu Song immediately invited Lin Feng to join them, obviously not with the best of intentions.

"Lin Feng, you travelled over such a long distance, go home first and have a rest." said Lin Yu who was clearly not willing to see Lin Feng come and join them.

Lin Feng was smiling sarcastically in his heart. His status was still young master within the Lin Clan. Lin Feng saw that Lin Yu had not shown even a small amount of politeness to him. Not only did

Lin Yu not show him the least bit of politeness but on the contrary had spoke to him in a disrespectful way. Anything that Lin Feng did, Lin Yu contracted it.

“Whatever I do, I see it on your face that you’re not satisfied.” Lin Feng thought. He then looked at Gu Song and said: ” Alright, I will come upstairs.”

“Wait, wait.” Lin Yu’s voice became colder and he then added: “ Lin Feng, you shouldn’t come to this place. Honestly, you should just run along home.”

“How dare you.” shouted Lin Feng looking straight into Lin Yu’s eyes and then added in an ice cold tone: “What status do you think that you hold within the clan, which gives you the nerve to dare talk to me like this?”

Lin Feng wasn’t the coward and the weakling he was before. His father held an extremely high status within the clan, he was the head of the Lin Clan. Lin Yu had therefore no right to put himself higher in the hierarchy of the family than Lin Feng. If Lin Feng wasn’t a strong cultivator, other people would still think they could bully him when his father was not present.

When Lin Yu heard Lin Feng talk to him like that, he boiled with anger. He obviously hadn’t expected that Lin Feng would have changed so much. This response was completely unreasonable for such a weakling. Lin Yu’s face had turned red with anger. He had no idea how to reply to Lin Feng. Lin Feng’s status within the clan was higher than his own, he was the young head of family. Even though Lin Yu was his cousin, he still didn’t have the right to act

arrogantly towards Lin Feng, even if Lin Feng had openly embarrassed him.

“Hehe, that’s the attitude that Lin Feng has as the young family head of the Lin Clan.” said Gu Song hoping to see them quarrel, making Lin Yu even more furious.

At that moment, Lin Feng had already come down from his horse and handed the reins to the owner of the restaurant. Immediately after that, he went up to the third floor and headed to the private room the other disciples were in.

Eight people were sitting at the table, all of them were young disciples from powerful Clan’s.

When they saw Lin Feng enter, nobody said a word. Everyone had their respective seat and they sat there quietly sipping on their wine. They all ignored Lin Feng. Even Gu Song, who had invited Lin Feng to come up a moment ago, remained silent and was grinning.

“Hmph, the piece of trash is making a fool of himself. Even as the young master of the Gu clan. What status do you even have to make fun of my clan?” said Lin Yu who didn’t even look at Lin Feng as if he was talking to himself.

“The son of the family head, this is my status. You may have forgotten, Lin Yu, but that piece of trash is the son of the head of the Lin Clan.” reminded Gu Song. He enjoyed assisting to that kind of situation the most, seeing the Lin Clan lose face.

Lin Feng smiled. Everybody was looking at Gu Song. Lin Feng made a few steps forwards to Gu Song.

“May I sit?”

“What makes you think that you can sit here?” said Wen Shan impolitely. In Yangzhou City, there were four powerful Clan’s. The family which belonged to the master of the city was the strongest one. There was ongoing hostility between the other three great clans, there was an especially large amount of tension between the Gu Clan and the Lin Clan. The Gu Clan wouldn’t miss an opportunity to attack the Lin Clan. The Wen clan obviously also wouldn’t miss an opportunity to do so.

“Oh, what exactly do you mean?” Lin Feng didn’t look at Wen Shan, and only asked Gu Song.

“You don’t understand? You Piece of trash, nothing gives you the right to sit with us.” said Gu Song to Lin Feng in a disdainful way. Lin Feng really had no idea how low his status was compared to these disciples.

“Ah I understand, you’re making fun of me right?” Lin Feng said while not losing his temper. He was as calm as before.

“Whatever, get lost.” Gu Song shouted angrily. He had expected Lin Feng would cower and retreat allowing him to humiliate the Lin Clan.

Chapter 29: Teasing

Lin Feng had a cold smile on his face. He reached towards the table, grabbed a cup of wine, inclined the cup and slowly poured it over Gu Song's head.

Everybody stopped talking looked stupefied. They obviously would have never thought that Lin Feng would dare to retaliate to such humiliation and they especially never thought he would actually pour wine over Gu Song's head.

The entire crowd was shocked and continued watching the scene with interest, especially Lin Yu who had a resplendent smile on his face. Not only was he able to see Gu Song lose face but he was also going to be able to see that piece of trash get crushed by Gu Song. That wonderful scene was taking place right before his eyes, how could he not be happy?

Gu Song clearly hadn't expected such a thing from Lin Feng either. He had his eyes closed because some alcohol had gone into his eye which caused a small stinging pain. He then wiped the wine from his face using his bare hand.

He then opened his eyes which began to narrow with anger. His eyes had become so narrow that he looked like a deadly viper.

"That piece of trash has run out of luck today. He will not die but I will make him wish he was dead." Everybody saw Gu Song's ice cold expression. It seemed like there would be more hostility between the Lin Clan and the Gu Clan in the future.

“You dared to pour wine over my head?!” said Gu Song whose eyes were slightly red. The tone of his voice was low, he had said it calmly, but that had made it even more frightening. Gu Song was furious.

“Did you not see it was me because your eyes were closed? Quick, someone fetch me another cup of wine.” said Lin Feng while gesturing for more wine.

“I honestly don’t understand. Where does a piece of trash like you find the courage to do such a thing? Have you even considered the consequences of what you did? Or have you maybe stupidly thought that Lin Yu would stand up to protect you?” said Gu Song in a tone which was trying to ridicule both Lin Feng and Lin Yu.

Lin Feng didn’t reply right away. Instead, he grabbed a bottle of wine which was still on the table, opened it and then lifted it above Gu Song’s head. Gu Song stood there shocked as the wine continued to pour over him, not only soaking his face but soaking his whole body with wine.

“I also don’t understand why you use the term “piece of trash” that much. Are you trying to scare me? Or is it to cover up that terrible feeling which you have deep inside, because you are so insignificant? Are you hesitating now? Does the bastard of the Gu Clan have no courage? It makes us wonder whether that is inherited from his common blood or from that of the Gu Clan.”

Gu Song was the son of the head of the Gu Clan and one of the

maids. He was undoubtedly a young master but of a lesser rank in the hierarchy of the Clan. That was Gu Song's deepest regret, the simple mention of this had given him the sensation of a knot in his heart. He also utterly detested other people mentioning it to his face. Lin Feng's words had clearly touched on a very sensitive subject.

"You want to die..." As expected, Gu Song's expression changed and he looked even more evil. He was boiling over with fury and his killing intent could not be hidden.

Gu Song, without hesitation thrust out his fist in an attempt to strike Lin Feng, his fist whistled through the air at an incredible speed.

Everyone who was sitting at the table was trembling with fear at the speed and power of such a punch. Gu Song was truly enraged. That punch was aimed at smashing Lin Feng's head with enough power to rip it from his neck. He had attacked with the intention to behead Lin Feng with his bare hands.

Lin Yu, unlike the others, could not help but smile even more, the smile on his face was remarkably large. He had really hoped from the bottom of his heart, that Lin Feng would die a painful death from Gu Song's strike.

But things didn't happen the way that he had wished. Gu Song's punch stopped halfway between him and Lin Feng. Of course, it wasn't Gu Song showing mercy. It was because the palm of a hand had stopped his punch completely. This hand had stopped the punch completely and in one motion closed, grabbing hold of Gu

Song's fist. It seemed the palm of that hand had easily stopped Gu Song's punch, there were no signs of damage and it actually looked rather effortless. Gu Song's face turned red and he was unable to move his fist away from the palm. It was Lin Feng who had reached out and stopped the punch as naturally as breathing. There were no signs of struggle on his face and he was still very relaxed and calm.

"Huh?" everybody was in a state of shock. How was such a thing even possible? How could Lin Feng block such a powerful attack so easily? Besides, Lin Feng's facial expression hadn't changed at all while Gu Song was clearly struggling to remove his fist from the grasp of Lin Feng.

"Actually, I don't understand either. You are just another worthless bastard from the Gu Clan and you think you have the right to tease me. You call me a piece of trash... what status do you hold?"

"CRUNCH"

Gu Song gave a horrible shriek. A sharp pain invaded his fist. The pain made his face look hideously distorted. Lin Feng had crushed the fist with his hand strength alone.

"Get lost. I have decided to let you leave with your life" said Lin Feng while waving his hand which was holding Gu Song's Fist. Right after, Gu Song was thrown out of the window on the top floor. Everybody heard the sound of Gu Song's body landing heavily onto the ground outside followed by painful moans.

Everybody at the table was completely stunned. Gu Song was at the eighth Qi layer and he had, in the blink of an eye, been injured and then thrown out of the window by that piece of trash. What had just happened?

“Pheww...” everyone let out a deep sigh. Is this really the piece of trash of the Lin Clan?

Lin Feng had a quick glance at everyone. Immediately after, he looked at Lin Yu. Seeing that Lin Feng was calmly looking at him, Lin Yu could not help but be completely terrified. That’s right, Lin Yu had just called Lin Feng a piece of trash and yet standing before him was a terrifying monster which was hard for him to recognize as Lin Feng.

It seemed like Lin Feng had gone through a complete transformation. He had turned into a ferocious beast which was hiding in human form. Lin Feng used to be completely different. Lin Feng was known for being timid and weak. But at that moment, Lin Feng looked like a powerful and unmoving beast. His temperament was wild and powerful. Was this really the piece of trash he knew?

“What was the name which you just called me?” Lin Feng asked Lin Yu.

Lin Yu’s lips slightly moved but there was no sound which could escape his throat. He actually didn’t know what to answer. He was so terrified of the person stood in front of him.

“A piece of trash?” Lin Feng said smiling coldly. Right after, Lin Yu sensed a cold wind and a sharp sound echoed through the air. Suddenly his face felt like it was burning from the pressure given by the wind. It was extremely painful.

Lin Feng had given him a slap across the face.

“You...” Lin Yu covered his face. His facial muscles were all on fire. Lin Feng had surprisingly given him a slap in the face while in the presence of everyone else... but when Lin Yu saw that Lin Feng was still staring at him as calmly as before, he swallowed down the things he wanted to say and did not make another sound.

“Next time you want to say something, watch your words. Remember what status you hold and what status I hold.” Lin Feng said in a cold tone. After that, he stopped paying attention to Lin Yu and ignored him. He passed behind Lin Yu and went over to Wen Shan.

“What do you intend to do?” asked Wen Shan while remaining his vigilance and looking worryingly at Lin Feng. That guy was able to throw Gu Song out of the window, He was not only strong but also daring.

“Are you scared?” asked Lin Feng in a teasing way.

“I...”

Wen Shan wanted to open his mouth but stopped before saying anything. Suddenly, an ice cold killing intent emerged from Lin Feng's body which made Wen Shan's scalp go numb. He swallowed his fear and looked down at the ground. Just like Lin Yu a moment ago, his face turned red and was unable to find the courage to retaliate.

“...am the Piece of trash.”

The ice cold killing intent which had emerged out of Lin Feng's body had vanished. Lin Feng then turned around and headed back outside. Nobody even dared give him a glance.

“Arghh...” Wen Shan groaned from his embarrassment. He was holding his glass of wine so firmly that it shattered in his hand. Even though Lin Feng hadn't touched him, the way Lin Feng had forced him to cower, had made him feel incredibly ashamed and humiliated at himself. He had thought Lin Feng had no right to sit with them but during the confrontation with Lin Feng, he hadn't dared move a single finger to the extent that Lin Feng hadn't even needed to touch him once. His cup of wine along with his self respect were both now shattered into pieces .

At that moment, Lin Yu's state of mind wasn't any better than that of Wen Shan. He even could still feel Lin Feng's hand mark on his face. Why did he feel so low? As Lin Feng was standing in front of him, he had made him lose the courage to even resist a slap to the face.

Everyone else sitting at the table remained silent. They all wanted to humiliate that piece of trash of the Lin Clan. They

hadn't expected he would be able to humiliate them like that. These young cultivators claimed to be the best juniors in Yangzhou City... One had been injured and thrown out of the window by Lin Feng, the other had been slapped in the face and the other one had been so scared that he had called himself trash. Did Lin Feng really not have the right to sit with them?

Qiu Lan's eyes were shining. She was the strongest cultivator of the group. She had already reached the Ling Qi layer. As Lin Feng was still standing there, she could clearly feel that Lin Feng had a certain natural aura which made people feel ashamed of their inferiority.

As far as Lin Feng was concerned, he hadn't thought at all that his appearance in the restaurant on that day would have made all these people think so much about him. He just didn't want to get humiliated, insulted and called a piece of trash any longer. That group of disciples from the powerful clans were used to setting themselves above the masses. Lin Feng couldn't bear looking at their ugly and repulsive faces so he had taught them a lesson in humility.

Qian Li Xue slowly trotted past the Whistle Wind Restaurant, Gu Song was watching Lin Feng's silhouette leaving unhurriedly in the distance. His face clearly revealed that he planned to get his revenge on the trash of the Lin Clan by any means necessary.

Chapter 30: The Annual Meeting

When Qian Li Xue entered the territory of the Lin Clan, it attracted the attention of a large majority of the Lin Clan members.

“Lin Feng has come back. I wonder what Cultivation level he has reached now?”

“Hehe. He came back but there’s only possibility: he will lose face for his father and himself at the annual meeting. The sons and daughters of the upper members within the clan are all incredibly powerful now. Even though Lin Feng has reached the seventh Qi layer, he is still very weak.”

“Yes, indeed. That piece of trash could defeat Lin Yun but who was Lin Yun compared to the talented practitioners within the Lin Clan. If I were him, I would hide away in his Sect and never come out.”

Many of the clan members were making these remarks quietly in private as they did not want to offend the Head of the Clan. The great majority of clan members were secretly sneering at Lin Feng. Even if Lin Feng had the status of young head of clan, he was still a piece of trash.

At that moment, Lin Feng had already arrived within the head residential quarters, it was not very big, but it was sturdy and clean. This is where only his father and He were permitted to live.

“Father.” said Lin Feng when he arrived in Lin Hai’s room. He saw that his father sitting down and seemed to be painting.

“Little Feng, you came back.” Lin Hai said while raising his head. He put the picture he was painting to the side and warmly smiled at Lin Feng.

“Yes, the annual meeting will take place in seven days. I came back to join the meeting with the rest of the disciples sent to other sects.” Lin Feng briefly looked at the painting his father had put to the side. In his memories from the previous Lin Feng he knew that Lin Hai liked the sense of tranquility. It seemed related to his passion of painting. He did not like to be disturbed when he was painting. However, Lin Feng had never seen any of Lin Hai’s paintings.

“Little Feng, you shouldn’t join the annual meeting. Let them go and agitate each other alone.” Lin Hai said while shaking his head.

“Father, why is that?”

“Hehe, this year’s annual meeting, they all can’t wait to see us lose face, I don’t care about them but you better be careful, little Feng.” said Lin Hai while heaving a heavy sigh. The Lin Clan had been changing in the recent days and it was no longer calm and peaceful. His two brothers, a few cousins and even a few elders had already started establishing a plan in order to make him abdicate his spot as head of the clan.

“Don’t worry, father. I will be fine.” said Lin Feng while shaking

his head. He had already broken through to the ninth Qi layer, even if some strong people wanted to confront him during the annual meeting to make him lose face, Lin Feng would be able to return the favor. He has no one to fear below the Ling Qi Layer.

“Huh?” Lin Hai was surprised by his son’s reaction and was staring deep into Lin Feng’s eyes. He couldn’t help but smile when he noticed how self confident Lin Feng was.

“Haha, if my son wants to go, then he will go. We will go to the annual meeting and they will see that making me abdicate is no easy task.”

“But, Little Feng, you really have to be careful during the annual meeting. I heard that Lin Qian has already reached the Ling Qi layer. She will not appreciate that her father lost face during the meeting of elders”

“It’s not a rumor. She has already broken through to the Ling Qi layer. But I do not plan to let her easily try and harm me.” said Lin Feng whose eyes were emanating a cold killing intent. Lin Qian had gone to the Yun Hai Sect because she wanted to kill him. Before leaving the Yun Hai Sect, she had also threatened him that if they meet again at the annual meeting then she would kill him. He was going to see how Lin Qian was planning to act against him during the event.

“Father, I am going to practice first. Come and collect me on the day of the annual meeting.” said Lin Feng while leaving. Even though Lin Feng wasn’t weak, Lin Qian had an ice and fire universal spirit which wasn’t easy to deal with. It was better for

him to gain as much strength as possible in the short time he had. Even a small amount might save his life.

At that moment, outside of the residential quarters of the Lin Clan, a colt was galloping, there was a hurricane full of flames around its body. Lin Qian was riding on the back of a Fire Colt. She was wearing a fiery red set of robes which matched her colt and made her look like she was an extremely wealthy noble. Her magnificent posture at that moment would have made anyone unable to utter a single bad word against her. She was like a queen who was looking down at the lowly masses with disdain.

“Your Grace.” the entrance guard said to her respectfully. They all respected her much more than they respected Lin Feng. They didn’t even dare look at Lin Qian. Her temperament made them feel unworthy. They knew that she would eventually hold a great position within the clan.

Lin Qian did not glance sideways and immediately entered into the residential area of the Lin Clan. She looked extremely arrogant as if she truly believed she was royalty. She was followed closely by two people wearing the robes of the Hao Yue Sect and they quickly followed her into Lin Clan quarters.

“Her Grace really doesn’t look the same as before. She is much more beautiful than I remember and she also looks even more elegant. Her Grace, Lin Qian has no equal within the Lin Clan.” said one of the entrance guards as he watched her walk into the Lin Clan Quarters.

“Of course, she has broken through to the Ling Qi layer. She

extremely strong and beautiful... and Her Grace, Lin Qian is only sixteen years old. She has a bright future opening up to her. She is far better than that piece of trash who calls himself the young master. Her friends also all look extremely strong. They must be the elite of the Yue Hao Sect.” said the other guard. In their eyes, Lin Feng and Lin Qian had absolutely nothing in common, they were incomparable. One was in the Hao Yue Sect and had a status that was on the same level as royalty, the other had a lower status than the dirt beneath their shoes. There were no doubts in their mind, Lin Feng had no choice but to look up at her like a lowly peasant for all of his life.

Lin Qian and two Hao Yue Sect’s disciples arrived to the residential quarters in the blink of an eye, the speed at which they had moved left storm of wind behind them. People were much more agitated than when Lin Feng had arrived. All the clan members began to gather around their future leader like flies. Some clan members and even some elders were already heading towards the garden of the house where Lin Ba Dao lived to give him their respects. A bright future was awaiting Lin Qian, full of opportunities, which wasn’t the case of all the members of the Lin Clan.

That’s why many people in the Lin Clan were willing to help Lin Ba Dao to climb in the hierarchy of the clan. That way, Lin Qian would obtain more power. She would be the glory of the clan. All these people helping Lin Ba Dao would obviously also gain favor from his daughter in the future. With her future prospects, they could only humble themselves in front of Lin Ba Dao.

In comparison with the residential quarter where Lin Qian lived, Lin Feng’s area of residence looked desolate and abandoned.

Nonetheless, Lin Qian hadn't forgotten the promise she had made Lin Feng. She glanced in the direction where Lin Feng lived with killing intent in her eyes, her gaze was as sharp as a sword.

"This time, I will make sure to take good care of you." Lin Qian said while glaring at Lin Feng with a ruthless smile.

Two days later, Lin Ba Dao's eldest son, Lin Hong, also returned to the clan. Lin Hong was studying in a mountain village called Xue Ying. Xue Ying Mountain Village was not a Sect but their strength was not the least bit inferior to that of a large Sect. It had an extremely good reputation in the Xue Yue Country. Besides, the Xue Ying Mountain Village only accepted cultivators who possessed snow and ice spirits.

Lin Hong had also greatly improved his cultivation since the last time by leaps and bounds. He had broken through to the ninth Qi layer. One more little step would enable him to break through to the Ling Qi layer. The entire Lin Clan was thrilled to have such great talents within the younger generations. It seemed like the entire future of the clan was under the complete domination of Lin Ba Dao.

Apart from Lin Hong, a myriad of other members of the younger generations were coming back, belonging to different branches within the clan. The annual meeting was drawing closer and closer.

Lin Ba Dao's house had a constant stream of visitor and his courtyard was as visited as a marketplace, it seemed like he had already become the head of the Lin Clan. To the extent that there

was absolutely nobody around the house of the real head of the clan, Lin Hai. It was extremely desolate around his residence. No one had bothered to come and pay him respect like they had done for Lin Ba Dao.

Finally, the annual meeting was about to start. Everybody belonging to the Lin Clan was extremely excited. They were wondering what level the juniors of the clan had reached during their practice away from the clan. The disciples would be judged into groups of weak, average and strong. Many were wondering where their sons and daughters would fit within the clan rankings, all secretly hoping that their descendants would be within the strongest rankings, securing them a great future within the clan. They were also wondering if some new geniuses were going to reveal their talents and distinguish themselves within the younger generations. During the event, all the results are announced publicly.

The annual meeting was one of the most celebrated and joyous days within any clan as it showed the future prospects of the clan. A great amount of talent in the younger generation would provide the clan more prestige and glory in the future.

Three months ago, some people had wanted Lin Hai to abdicate but Lin Hai was so strong that it was frightening and intimidating. But during the annual meeting, they would have more courage than at any other moment of the year. Lin Qian would prove that the future of the clan is with Lin Ba Dao. Some Lin Clan members also had friends from other clans who had come to witness the events.

Lin Feng came out of his room while stretching his arms. He took a deep breath and took the time to appreciate the sun in the sky.

Lin Feng hadn't thought that this day was any different from the previous days before it. The status of the head of the clan. Lin Feng didn't care, what he was looking for was the highest peak on the path of cultivation. Only the strongest could demand the attention of others. The Head of the clan was just a fabricated name. If someone was strong and powerful enough, then nobody could oppose him. Who would dare to disobey?

Lin Feng still knew that his father also didn't care about such things either. Lin Hai wasn't too attracted by power and influence. Otherwise, he wouldn't be that calm and serene after such events. If the Lin Clan didn't organize major events, he would almost never show his face and appear in public. Only by him appearing in public would the others have the ability to criticize him and try to force him to abdicate.

"Little Feng, you are already finished practicing." said Lin Hai approaching towards Lin Feng. He had come intending to wake him up from his meditation.

"Yes" said Lin Feng while nodding.

"Let's go."

They left together towards the annual meeting.

The number of people within the annual meeting of the Lin Clan was huge. Everybody had already arrived much earlier and they were all excitedly waiting for the upcoming events. When Lin Feng and Lin Hai arrived at the annual meeting, many people stared at them. Every person had a different expression, however the majorities were expressions of mocking or disdain.

“It’s Lin Feng.”

Many people were looking at Lin Feng with cold expressions. Some of the faces that could be distinguished from the others were that of Lin Heng whose cultivation had been crippled by Lin Feng, as well as Lin Yun, Lin Qian, Lin Yu and of course, there was also Lin Feng’s third uncle Lin Hao Ran. Lin Hao Ran’s two sons were Lin Yun who had been humiliated by Lin Feng and Lin Heng whose Cultivation had been crippled by Lin Feng. All in all, it was easy to say who hated Lin Feng the most in the Lin Clan.

Lin Hao Ran even hid Lin Heng away and made him stay out of sight so he would not lose face. He didn’t want anyone to know what had happened between Lin Heng and Lin Feng. Also, he didn’t want to see Lin Feng’s father proud that the plan to cripple Lin Feng has backfired and destroyed Lin Hao Ran’s standing within the clan.

Chapter 31: Let The Fun Begin!

Lin Hai and Lin Feng were moving towards the host who was standing on the large stage. On a platform to the side with a raised seating area sat Lin Ba Dao, Lin Zhen, Lin Hao Ran and Lin Qian. They were sitting upright with their heads held high, setting themselves high above the others as if they were the masters of the Lin family.

When the clan elder Lin Zhen saw that Lin Hai and Lin Feng were approaching, he stood up and said in a clear loud voice: “you have finally arrived, we are thus ready to start the annual meeting.”

When Lin Hai heard Lin Zhen, he stopped walking and stared at him. Everybody then stared at Lin Hai stupefied wondering what was wrong with him.

“Lin Hai, what’s wrong, what are you doing?” asked Lin Zhen seeing that Lin Hai had stopped walking.

“Hmmm, Lin Ba Dao, I would like to ask you, who’s the current head of the Lin Clan?” asked Lin Hai in an icy tone.

Lin Ba Dao was stunned but he pretended to be calm as he replied: “You, Lin Hai, of course.”

“Then, I have another question for you, isn’t the annual meeting of the Lin Clan of paramount importance?”

continued Lin Hai looking straight into Lin Zhen's eyes.

“Of course, it is. Every year, the annual meeting of our clan is the most important event of the year.”

“Very good, then I have another question, who is charge of managing that major event?”

Lin Zhen's face started to look desperate when hearing all of Lin Hai's questions. He obviously knew what Lin Hai meant with all those questions.

“The Clan Head is in charge.”

“Since I have a clear understanding now that everything is handled by the Clan Head, Lin Zhen, I would like to ask you, what on earth do you think you are doing up there?... I am still the head of our Lin Clan, correct?” Lin Hai's tone was extremely harsh.

Lin Zhen and Lin Ba Dao had been acting hand in hand with each other to try and force Lin Hai to abdicate. It was not a secret and had been going on for such a long time that almost everybody knew about it. Lin Zhen was becoming more and more impertinent. Today he even announced the beginning of the event without waiting for Lin Hai to be seated.

“Hehe, uncle, you came a bit too late. The esteemed elder is just doing what he's supposed to do, is it wrong for him to carry out his duties? Uncle shows no understanding.” Lin Qian said in a neutral

tone.

“SHUT UP!” shouted Lin Hai who had released his temper. “You dare to interrupt the head of the family while he’s talking? Lin Ba Dao, take good care of your daughter... what kind of terrible education has she received until now?”

Lin Qian had a ugly face which was twisted in anger. She insulted Lin Hai deep in her heart. That guy hasn’t been the clan head for a long time and he is already starting to lose his temper?

“She’s at least much stronger than your son, that piece of trash is the one who should be educated.” Lin Ba Dao said while staring Lin Feng in the eyes and smiling coldly. Everyone in the Lin clan had complimented Lin Qian for her achievements, how could Lin Hai dare to insult her?

“Watch your words. A very small clan head of the Lin Family, in the eyes of my Sect, is a tiny individual with no power.” said a girl of the Hao Yue Sect who was standing next to Lin Qian while smiling coldly. That girl was wearing magnificent robes. She had a very unkind look on her face, much like Lin Qian. She was an elite disciple of the Hao Yue Sect. She had a low opinion of the Lin Clan and did not believe it was worth giving them face.

“You’re saying that your Yue Hao Sect is really extraordinary, then why are you sitting equally with Lin clan members? It seems that my father, the only head of the Lin Clan, never actually invited you to join us. You seem to be a really shameless person, I see that the Yue Hao Sect is extraordinarily shameless.” said Lin Feng who had remained silent until now. He couldn’t bear it

anymore so he decided to open his mouth. Who could compete with him when it came to wits? He had the experience of two lifetimes. In that world, language had a profound meaning.

“You...” the facial expression of the mean girl suddenly changed but she immediately smiled coldly after and said: “The piece of trash of the Yun Hai Sect also dares to open his big mouth.”

“Whether or not I am a piece of trash is not the problem at the moment. I, at least, have honor and a sense of integrity, not like a certain person, coming to someone’s clan and insulting the head of their clan. Are all the Hao Yue Sect’s disciples like this? How extraordinary indeed.”

Lin Feng was being incredibly sarcastic. Everybody’s face immediately changed.

“You animal, you dare insult and humiliate the Hao Yue Sect.” said a Lin clan elder who had stood up. He was furious.

“This is truly hilarious, she is in the middle of the Lin Clan and stands before you all and insults the head of the Lin Clan and there’s immediately someone standing up to defend her. I would like to ask you, Seventh Elder, are you a member of the Lin Clan or a whipped dog of the Hao Yue Sect?”

Lin Feng’s words were sharp and incisive like a sword cutting deep into the Elders pride. Lin Feng had been firm when saying these words and questioned the integrity of the elder.

“My son is correct. I also want to ask you a question, Seventh Elder, is your family name also Lin?” asked Lin Hai continuing Lin Feng’s argumentation. Lin Hai was extremely surprised at that moment too. Not only had his son made huge progress on the path of cultivation but his way of speaking had also become extremely eloquent. Lin Feng’s words had become as flowing as blood.

“Alright, I made a mistake, you are indeed the head of the clan. The annual meeting is of paramount importance. It cannot be delayed. So please come up and manage it as a head of Lin Clan.” said Lin Zhen who had received Lin Ba Dao’s approbation. They had found a compromise. Actually, they wanted to see how long Lin Hai and Lin Feng could be that aggressive.

“Hum.” Lin Hai wiped his sleeves then walked over to the platform and then sat amongst them.

“How long are you still going to be so proud? You dare to insult the elite disciples of my sect. Lin Hai, I want you to pay attention to the fate of that piece of trash you call a son.” Lin Qian thought to herself.

“Let the annual meeting begin.” Lin Hai looked at the stages which were created for practice battles between clan members. The Lin Clan was composed of over five hundred people. Around eighteen of them were young people of the youngest generation of the clan but there were about seventy young people who belonged to the golden age of talent within the Lin Clan. Unfortunately, there were some clan members who were unpredictable and would try to harm his son. The Lin Clan was not a single entity and there were smaller factions attempting to increase their power. If Lin

Hai had abdicated, that would have been a mistake and would have driven the clan into chaos.

Lin Hai had bitter feelings. Why did he need to have all these worries about the Lin Clan and its future?

“Father, don’t worry. I will not let anyone do me any harm.” Thought Lin Hai who was feeling guilty. He remembered what his father had said to him on his deathbed. Unfortunately, he hadn’t been able to apply it.

The annual meeting was actually a big test for all the juniors of the Lin Clan to see how much they had progressed and to see what the future prospects of the Lin Clan looked like.

There was also some fighting involved in the annual meeting to test the strength of the junior generation.

The Second Elder of the Clan went on the fighting stage and said in a clear and loud voice: “The first round of the annual meeting will be as such: it’s a free for all, everyone comes on the fighting stage and the last thirty-two members left can continue to the next round.”

The Second Elder of the Lin Clan stepped down from the stage and the junior disciples of the Lin Clan all went on to the fighting stage.

Lin Feng nodded while looking at his father, Lin Hai. He also

stepped on the stage.

“I don’t know if Lin Qian will be focused on me from the very start.” Thought Lin Feng who was standing on the stage with complete concentration on his surroundings.

Seventy three young disciples had arrived on the stage. Everyone was extremely vigilant, especially the weaker ones. They were easy targets for the others to quickly reduce the numbers.

Lin Qian was still standing there unmoving on the stage. Many other disciples were giving up and leaving the stage. They didn’t dare provoke others who were stronger than themselves. The goal of the first round was to eliminate the weakest ones. The strong ones rarely really attacked at that stage except for if they were looking for trouble. Lin Qian was without a doubt one of the strongest disciples on the stage. Most of the disciples on the stage couldn’t compete with her.

As far as Lin Feng was concerned, he quickly noticed that many people were staring at him. Many people had twinkling eyes when looking at Lin Feng as if they were looking at a pile of gold with greed in their eyes. They all considered him an easy target.

Some battles had already started on the stage. A young clan member who was wielding a spear was rushing towards Lin Feng. Everyone near him started to surround him. Lin Feng obviously knew they were not worth his time.

“Get lost, get down off the stage. If you stay here then we will

force you to lose face.” said Lin Wu with an expression revealing how much he despised Lin Feng. He was the son of the Seventh Elder, with whom Lin Feng had argued and humiliated.

Lin Wu was at the seventh Qi layer six month ago when they had last met, with his ongoing training, he had probably reached the eighth Qi layer already. His strength was similar to that of Lin Yu.

“He’s mine.” said an ice cold voice, sending shivers down the spines of many clan members. Lin Feng then saw Lin Qian wearing her red robes looking as arrogant as ever.

“It’s all the same to me.” Lin Wu was obviously not going to argue with Lin Qian and opened the way for her.

Lin Qian walked over to Lin Feng and said: “Don’t worry, nobody will touch you during the first round. You will successfully move forward to the next rounds. If you were to be knocked out this early, there would be no fun at all.”

“Huh?” Lin Feng said stupefied. He wouldn’t have expected Lin Qian to protect him and prevent him from getting knocked out of the competition so early. That was amusing but not losing so early... what could he have against that? Of course Lin Feng understood, if Lin Qian hadn’t been protecting him, he could have lost during the first round due to the sheer numbers he was facing.

However, in the Life or Death Arena of the Yun Hai Sect, Lin Feng had defeated a cultivator of the ninth Qi layer in one hit.

“What is Lin Qian doing, why is she taking care of that piece of trash and protecting him?” said Lin Zhen who was ready to watch Lin Feng make a fool of himself but instead saw Lin Qian protect him. He couldn’t help but ask Lin Ba Dao about the turn of events.

“Don’t you think that seeing such a piece of trash making it to the second round is a really funny joke? Besides, the second round is composed of several small fights, everyone has to fight a few times. In this kind of situation do you think that a piece of trash will be able to return unharmed when the time comes for the numerous fights of the second round? We just have to wait for the second round, which is where the real fun will begin.”

“Hehe, how could I not think about that? This will be an entertaining event indeed.” Lin Zhen was delighted by the explanation. He could already imagine Lin Feng getting completely crippled in one hit during the second round.

Chapter 32: The First Blow

Half an hour later, the first round which consisted of eliminating the weakest clan members had finally come to a conclusion. Only thirty two clan members were still on the stage. The ones who had been eliminated were mostly at the fifth or sixth Qi layer and were not very strong compared to the talented disciples within the clan. There were also some clan members who had reached the seventh Qi layer but who had run out of luck during the fights and been eliminated. Others had been attacked by multiple opponents and were knocked off stage using their numbers.

There were also some who had not moved a single finger at all during the first round: Lin Qian as well as her older brother Lin Hong, Lin Wu, Lin Yu and Lin Feng.

“Hehe, that guy is really lucky. Lin Qian surprisingly helped him move forward to the next round.”

“I wonder why Lin Qian helped him get to the second round.”

Lin Feng was the subject of all sorts of comments. Of course, many of these comments, regarding why he was able to move onto the second round, were inaccurate. He could have easily dealt with all the disciples outside the stage and would only have been eliminated with bad luck.

In the contest of the second round there were four groups of eight fighters. All had to wait for their turn to fight. Every single fighter of a group had to fight the seven others of his group. The

two best fighters of one group would be able to move onto the third round.

First, the groups had to be formed and then they would be announced by the Second Elder. Lin Qian was put in the first group.

“Lin Feng, Lin Yan, Lin Tao, Lin Yue, Lin Ran, Lin Li, Lin Cai Zhu, Lin Yu, you’re all in the fourth group.”

When he heard the names of the ones that were in the fourth group, the Third Elder laughed: “All the weakest ones are in the fourth group. Considering Lin Yu’s strength, there should be absolutely no problem.”

“Lin Yu should dominate all the others in the fourth group by far.” Said Lin Ba Dao politely.

“Haha, you bet. If Lin Yu had to battle with Lin Qian, he would take the initiative to give up.” Said the Third Elder who had agreed with Lin Ba Dao’s words.

“Do you know what rank Lin Feng will hold within the fourth group?” whispered the Third Elder while unconsciously looking at Lin Hai.

The gigantic battle stage for the second round was divided into four different stages. Dividing the larger stage into four smaller stages was a way for all the participants to engage in battles at the

same time and progress onto the next round together.

“First group: Lin Qian versus Lin Han; second group: Lin Hong versus Lin Lei; third group: Lin Wu versus Lin Xiao; fourth group: Lin Feng versus Lin Yan.”

People in the crowd had longing in their eyes when they heard who was fighting the first fight within the first group. Everyone was only paying attention to that stage. It seemed like the Second Elder had voluntarily arranged the battle that way.

All the first group fighters were quite well known. There was nothing to say about Lin Qian and her brother Lin Hong. Lin Wu was also a famous figure amongst the disciples of the younger generation. Even though Lin Feng was weak, everyone knew who he was in the crowd. That is the reason why Lin Feng was chosen and not Lin Yu.

The eight fighters were in their respective areas of the large stage. The fighters who attracted the most attention from the crowd were Lin Qian and Lin Feng. They were curious to see how strong Lin Qian was. They were also curious to see what Qi layer was reached by Lin Feng, the Lin Clans piece of trash.

“I give up.” Said Lin Han of the first group quite straightforwardly, which disappointed a lot of people in the crowd. Nonetheless, many of them were able to understand Lin Han. Honestly, who would have the guts to go up and fight with Lin Qian?

“First group: Lin Qian wins.” Announced the Second Elder.

As the first fight of the first group didn't take place, everyone's attention then focused on the battle of the fourth group.

Lin Feng versus Lin Yan.

“I am unwilling to humiliate myself and my sword fighting against him, I give up.” Said Lin Yan who had reached the seventh Qi layer and who had a sword spirit. The crowd saw that Lin Yan, who had reached the seventh Qi layer, was looking at his opponent in a very arrogant way.

“Fourth group, Lin Yan wins.”

The second elder announced the result of the fight of the fourth group.

“What?!” Lin Feng was stunned. Lin Yan won by saying he gave up?!

But Lin Yan seemed to think it was as it should be by right and left the arena calm and unperturbed.

“Why are you still up there on the stage?” asked the Second Elder to Lin Feng who wasn't moving at all.

“Have I given up?” asked Lin Feng.

The Second Elder frowned. That guy was really unable to tell good from bad. Eliminating him directly was a way to help him, not to make a fool out of himself.

“Giving up, not giving up, it’s all the same. Hurry up and come down of the battle stage.”

“Since I haven’t given up, what gives you the right to declare Lin Yan as the winner?” asked Lin Feng ignoring what the Second Elder had just said.

“I am the Second Elder and I am one of those in charge of leading the annual meeting.”

“Hehe, it seems like nobody is attaching importance to me, the head of the clan.” Said Lin Hai calmly. He remained calm while containing his rage. “Second Elder, in the presence of every Lin Clan member currently present here, you are violating the rules of the annual meeting by immediately declaring Lin Yan’s victory. What gives you the right to do so?”

“Clan Head, that battle doesn’t need to take place, we all know the result already. I am helping you not to lose face by acting that way. There is no need to take it to heart.”

“Helping me not to lose face? You are intentionally trying to make me make a fool out of myself. Now, you can come down, the Sixth Elder is now in charge of leading the battles.”

“I don’t agree.” Said Lin Ba Dao.

“I don’t agree either, the Second Elder’s position is justified.” Said Lin Hao Ran and Lin Zhen together.

“Do you intend to force my hand?” said Lin Hai glancing at all of them, including others who were not directly blood related to the Lin family.

“So what if I want to do it this way?” said Lin Hai smiling coldly.

“Clan Head, The Second Elder hasn’t made any mistake. You have no right to deprive him of his right as an organizer of the annual meeting. If you insist on having it your own way, you are just using public office to avenge private wrongs. You are just scaring everyone who is a member of the Lin Clan using your status as clan head.” Said Lin Hao Ran with a smile on his face.

Lin Hai smiled coldly and said in a low voice: “I know what you guys want to do. You are just finding pretexts though, so I am using pretexts as well.”

The ones to whom Lin Hai was referring pretended to look confused as if they didn’t know what Lin Hai meant.

They only saw Lin Hai turn around and begin addressing the crowd of Lin Clan members: “My son Lin Feng and Lin Yan will fight. Lin Feng hasn’t given up. None of them has given up yet. By

declaring Lin Yan the winner, I think that it proves that he despises the traditions of the Lin Clan. Besides, there are some people here who think that I am abusing my power to retaliate against personal enemies; that is why I am now giving an explanation to every single one of you. If Lin Feng does lose indeed, it will prove that I was wrong, and I will abdicate from my position as a Clan Head.”

The crowd burst into an uproar when they heard Lin Hai’s words. Lin Feng was only at the sixth Qi layer three months ago. He was maybe only at the seventh Qi layer at that moment. How was he supposed to fight against Lin Yan? Wasn’t he giving the others an opportunity by acting so recklessly in regards to his son?

Lin Ba Dao’s eyes were sparkling with delight. He hadn’t expected that Lin Hai would say these things to the crowd. Wasn’t it like finding another excuse to take over the position as Clan Head?

“But if Lin Feng wins, it will prove that the Second Elder really despises the traditions of the Lin Clan and I will severely punish him.” Lin Hai’s tone gradually changed to a much colder tone. Everybody was starting to feel a chill within the air. Lin Hai was gambling with his position as a Clan Head at stake.

“I agree.” Lin Ba Dao immediately said. He had a calm expression on his face. How was Lin Feng supposed to win against Lin Yan?

“I also agree.” Said Lin Zhen.

“Alright, what about you, Second Elder?” Lin Hai said looking at him straight in the eyes.

The second elder was secretly insulting him in his heart. Even if Lin Feng won, it had nothing to do with the issues going on with Lin Ba Dao and Lin Zhen. These two scoundrels had obviously agreed because they couldn't miss the opportunity to remove Lin Hai. That decision just made the Second Elder feel like they had not considered his position. He shook his head and replied: “I Agree.”

“What a shame.” Lin Hao Ran was cursing in a low voice. Lin Feng had been able to cripple the Cultivation of his son, Lin Heng. Lin Feng was at least at the eighth Qi layer. Lin Yan would lose without doubts. He wanted to prevent them from doing it that way but Lin Ba Dao and Lin Zhen had replied too quickly. At this moment he was feeling as bad as the Second Elder.

“Lin Yan, get on the battle stage. Go and fight Lin Feng.” Said the Second Elder cold and detached while glancing at Lin Hai. Lin Hai was going to have to surrender his position as the Clan Head.

Lin Yan got back on the battle stage. Sneering at Lin Feng, he said: “The piece of trash will also lose face. On top of that, you are getting your father involved in the situation. However, I, Lin Yan, will play a role in who will become the new Head of Clan, not bad!”

“If you use your sword the same way that you use your words, I would recommend stepping back down.”

“Die!” said Lin Yan while unsheathing his sword and throwing himself towards Lin Feng.

“Shadow Sword”

“Get lost!” said Lin Feng calmly without raising his voice. He jumped to the side. The Qi of Lin Yan’s sword immediately vanished. Right after, a fist appeared in the gap left by Lin Yan’s sword and shot directly towards his chest, sending him flying through the air and off of the stage.

His long sword landed on the stage. Lin Yan was lying on the ground beneath and looked utterly confused by what had happened. He had been defeated.... How had he been defeated?

“Your sword, your speed, your accuracy, your reaction speed... You have absolutely no skill in battle. Your fighting style is full of flaws. You are a humiliation and a disgrace for both the sword you carry and the Lin Clan name. You are a piece of trash.” Lin Feng kicked Lin Yan’s sword and sent it flying towards Lin Yan.

Not only was Lin Yan extremely confused but the whole crowd was also utterly speechless at what had happened. It was the same as three months before when Lin Feng had defeated Lin Yun. Lin Feng had only needed one hit. He had looked so relaxed and it had seemed like an extremely easy victory for him.

Everybody was looking at Lin Feng. Lin Feng was self confident and even a bit arrogant at that moment. The piece of trash had completely changed to the extent that he was able to defeat Lin

Yan, who was at the seventh Qi layer, in one hit.

“How is that possible? How could something like this happen?” asked the Second Elder whose body was trembling with fear. He could feel an ice cold glare consuming him from head to toe. The Head of the Clan, Lin Hai, was slowly walking towards him with eyes filled with killing intent.

Chapter 33: The Final Eight (Part 1)

“What do you want?” asked the Second Elder whose voice was trembling as he watched Lin Hai approach.

The crowd had been astonished by Lin Feng’s performance. At that moment the crowd had just noticed that Lin Hai was already on the battle stage and was approaching the second elder.

“What do I want? You haven’t forgotten our deal of a moment ago, right? Lin Hai said smiling coldly.

“Brother please listen, The Second Elder... no.... Lin Ye is a member of our clan after all... He has always worked hard and performed a valuable service for the clan. Please forgive him this time.” Lin Ba Dao said loudly as he quickly tried to block Lin Hai’s path.

“Forgive him? Lin Ba Dao, don’t you think you’re ridiculous? A moment ago, you had all taken advantage of my son and you were completely indifferent. Did you ever ask yourself, how much I, Lin Hai, as head of the clan, have done for the benefit of the Lin clan? Are you saying that you intend to go back on your promise in front of everyone and leave that kind of impression on the young members of the clan?”

Lin Hai’s was extremely strict with his rebuke which made Lin Ba Dao embarrassed to have said anything in the first place. The entire chain of events could speak for itself. He wanted to go back on his words but had no argument as to justify his actions. If he

went back on his words now then he would surely lose face.

“Now, move out of my way. I would like to announce that Lin Ye, Second Elder, is no longer in charge of his functions. In addition, I’m going to teach him a lesson.” Said Lin Hai while moving past Lin Ba Dao.

“If you think things will go that smoothly then you underestimate me.” Said Lin Ye while quickly turning to flee.

“Whoosh”

“Whoosh.”

Lin Hai flicked both of his sleeves lightly which caused the atmosphere to violently vibrate and become icy cold. This was followed by a groan from Lin Ye. He was trying to escape but his body had become completely stiff and he could no longer move an inch. His bones were cold and brittle to the touch. His whole body was covered in a layer of ice and his skin felt like it was burning from the cold.

“BOOOM!”

The ice covering his body shattered causing a terrifying impact. Lin Ye’s entire body was still freezing over and the ice was penetrating deep into his body. Blood was flowing out from the corner of his mouth but the warm sensation only lasted a moment before that blood would freeze solid. He collapsed onto the ground,

unable to keep himself standing. His body looked like it had shrunk as he curled into a ball and rolled on the ground. He was shaking all over and all he could do was try and keep himself as warm as possible. Only his malicious looking eyes were still staring at Lin Hai. With each movement, layers of his skin which had frozen solid were breaking apart causing unbearable pain.

Lin Ye wasn't a weak cultivator. He couldn't be defeated that easily by most of the clan members, but he didn't dare fight against Lin Hai. Lin Hai was like an unmovable mountain, he was unable to tell how strong Lin Hai was exactly, but fighting him was courting death.

Many people watched the scene like statues, unmoving with mouths wide open in shock. They hadn't expected that Lin Hai would be so powerful and even use his powers in cruel ways. It was clear that Lin Ye had enraged the head of the clan and was being punished for it. It was also a clear warning, by showing just how easily he could deal with an elder of the clan, he was warning those who plotted against him that they would be risking their lives. After all, the Second Elder was Lin Ba Dao's assistant.

"Now, let's continue with the annual meeting, I assign the Sixth Elder to take over from where Lin Ye failed. If you cannot follow clan rules or want to refuse then tell me now." Said Lin Hai while rolling up his sleeve which made him look incredibly imposing.

Lin Feng was looking at his father full of admiration, he was smiling from ear to ear. His father was so strong and in this world only the strong deserved respect. Lin Hai didn't usually give such displays of his strength, this was not because he was not strong

enough but rather he did not enjoy needless displays of strength.

Nobody dared to call into question what Lin Hai had done to an elder of the clan. Even though Lin Ba Dao and Lin Zhen were furious, they just had to contain their anger and stay silent.

The battles continued. Lin Feng was the strongest of the fourth group. Only Lin Yu was at the eighth Qi layer, all the others were at the seventh Qi layer. Six battles later, nobody had been able to take a single blow from the piece of trash, Lin Feng. There was only Lin Yu and Lin Feng left to fight within the fourth group.

As far as the other groups were concerned, in the first group, Lin Qian hadn't fought a single battle, all her opponents had given up before even attempting to fight. In the second and the third group, Lin Hong as well as Lin Wu were undefeated. They had won all their battles as expected. There was another disciple who stood out and his name was Lin Hen. Nobody had expected him to be that strong as there was not much known about his strength previously. He had won all of his battles, but unfortunately he had to fight Lin Wu next. Many clan members thought it would be a good experience to humble him.

Finally the rankings were already in place and soon the third round would begin. The last battles of the third and fourth group were taking place. However the top eight clan members had already been decided.

“Third group: Lin Wu versus Lin Hen. Fourth group: Lin Feng versus Lin Yu.” Announced the Sixth Elder. Everybody looked very interested again. These four cultivators were all undefeated in

their previous matches. They wanted to see how long Lin Hen would last against Lin Wu. The majority of the crowd was focused on watching to see if Lin Feng would be able to defeat Lin Yu who had already reached the eighth Qi layer.

The crowd erupted in cheers for the upcoming fights. Lin Hen was fighting with Lin Wu who was one of the best junior cultivators of the Lin Clan. This would surely be a great battle to watch.

They had been shocked by Lin Feng but they didn't expect much from him as he was previously only sixth Qi Layer. He could have only reached the seventh Qi layer at most or maybe had just broken through to the eighth Qi layer. How was he supposed to be win against Lin Yu who was already at the peak of the eighth Qi layer? Many members of the clan still had trouble removing the previous association of Lin Feng being useless and a piece of trash. So many assumed he would surrender his next fight.

The four practitioners stepped onto the arena. Lin Hen was pretty straight forward, he cupped his hands before his chest as a sign of respect and said: "We have already qualified for the third round, we do not need to fight unnecessary battles with other clan members."

"Even though we already qualify for the next round, I, Lin Wu, always welcome a fight. I want to show everyone who the strongest of our group is." Said Lin Wu while shaking his head in refusal.

"I Surrender." Said Lin Hen while smiling and completely

ignoring Lin Wu's wishes to fight.

"Lin Wu wins." Said the Sixth Elder with a wry smile. It was his son that had just given up...

"Coward." Lin Wu said insulting Lin Hen, then turned around and left. On stage there was only Lin Feng and Lin Yu left.

"Hehe, finally. Lin Yu will fight that piece of trash. I hope that Lin Yu can teach him a good lesson." Said Lin Ba Dao in an ice cold tone. He had thought that Lin Feng would get crippled during the second round but he hadn't expected that Lin Feng had actually become so strong in such a short period. He was no longer weak, like many had thought. He hadn't lost a single battle so far in the fourth group and had not even used more than a single strike.

"Don't worry, Lin Yu is a true member of the Lin Clan, he will definitely show that piece of trash what it means to be strong." Said the Third Elder confidently. He was very confident about his son's abilities and skills. It would be difficult for Lin Yu to finish amongst the top three at the end of the annual meeting but he was hopeful that his son would finish amongst the top five within the younger generation.

"Let's watch and enjoy the show." Said Lin Ba Dao while nodding.

Lin Yu's confident expression had vanished but he still tried to keep his head calm. He couldn't forget that moment when Lin Feng had slapped him. He hated Lin Feng bitterly for that but at

the same time, he was also terrified of the monster that stood before him. That piece of trash that was also the clan's young master, had changed into a mysterious beast. Gu Song wasn't weak but had been injured and thrown out of the window by Lin Feng. Lin Yan could use his sword with great skill but when he battled with Lin Feng, his sword had looked like a toy in the hands of a child. Lin Yu didn't have even have a small amount of self confidence in beating Lin Feng.

He could feel the pressure created by the entire audience staring at him, Lin Yu could not help but gulp with the amazing pressure he was under. He really was stuck between a rock and a hard place. Everybody was waiting for him to teach Lin Feng a lesson, including his own father but did he even have the power to do such a thing?

"Since we're already qualified for the next round, do we really need to fight?" asked Lin Yu in a very soft voice.

Lin Feng had a fake smile on his face and kept glaring at Lin Yu yet remained silent.

"Bastard." Thought Lin Yu. He then took a deep breath and said: "I give up."

"Huh?"

The Third Elder as well as the crowd were all stupefied when they heard Lin Yu.

“Did he just give up...?”

At the moment when everyone couldn't wait to see Lin Feng be taught a lesson, Lin Yu surprisingly acted the same way as Lin Hen and chose not to battle.

“What's going on?” Lin Ba Dao asked looking extremely puzzled.

“Maybe Lin Yu wants to humiliate him during the finals.” Guessed the Third Elder without being convinced of his own words.

The second round finished. The top clan members were Lin Qian, Lin Hong, Lin Feng, Lin Yu, Lin Wu, Lin Hen, Lin Ying as well as Lin Li.

The third round was also the finals. It consisted of one-on-one battles.

Lin Ying and Lin Li were staring at Lin Feng with longing eyes. They were praying to fight against Lin Feng, they had no grudge with Lin Feng, they had only wanted to guarantee a spot in the top four.

“First battle: Lin Qian versus Lin Ying.” Said the Sixth Elder. Lin Ying's face turned white in a second. That was the unluckiest situation he could be in. He was assigned to fight the strongest of all the young clan members.

“Lin Qian, even though I probably will not be able to touch you even once, I still wish to fight. I hope that you can show me how great the distance between us is.”

She had no other choice but to fight against Lin Qian. That was going to be her last battle. Everybody was aware that she was definitely going to lose, but she would not surrender her pride.

“I will.” Replied Lin Qian cold and detached to the extent that she even looked somewhat arrogant.

“Let’s Begin!” shouted Lin Ying advancing towards Lin Qian. She didn’t even release her spirit. She was going to lose in any case, but this was a matter of the Lin Clans pride. She only wanted to see how strong Lin Qian was so she could aim to one day be as strong as her.

“Ice.” Shouted Lin Qian. Lin Ying’s hand hadn’t even touched Lin Qian yet but her hand was already feeling extremely heavy as if it weighed one thousand jin and the speed had dropped drastically.

In an instant, Lin Qian’s tiny hand was already on Lin Ying, whose body was already covered with a layer of frost.

“You lose.” Lin Qian shook her hand and Lin Ying immediately collapsed onto the ground. Lin Ying was shaking on the ground from the cold. She looked similar to the Second Elder a moment ago, but much less pitiful.

“How strong! So that what a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer is capable of. What a power! Good thing that I don’t have to fight against Lin Qian.” Said the others who felt lucky they didn’t have to fight against Lin Qian.

“First battle: Lin Qian wins. Second battle: Lin Hong versus Lin Yu.” Announced the Sixth elder.

“I give up.” Said Lin Yu making a wry smile. He was obviously not going to fight against Lin Hong. He hadn’t thought he would successively give up twice. He was eliminated.

“Second battle: Lin Hong wins. Third battle: Lin Feng versus Lin Li.”

“Pheww, awesome.” Lin Li had a big smile on his face. Lin Li was at the peak of the eighth Qi layer. He thought all the others would be quite hard to defeat but Lin Feng should be an easy win.

Chapter 34: The Final Eight (Part 2)

“It seems like today is my lucky day.” Said Lin Li while getting onto the battle stage and facing Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was completely expressionless. When he saw Lin Li’s resplendent smile, he thought: “Lucky Day, eh?” Lin Li was maybe going to think differently a short instant later.

Lin Feng did seem to be very lucky to most of the clan members watching the annual meeting. During the first round, Lin Qian had helped him to move into the next round. During the second round, the strongest of the group, Lin Yu, had given up and shown him mercy. It had been so easy for him that he did not even have the chance to show his full strength and many believed he had recently broke into the eighth Qi Layer. And even during the third round, he was still extremely lucky, his first fight was against the weakest of all the remaining participants: Lin Li. He would still not have the chance to show his strength.

“Maybe the Sixth Elder had arranged things that way.” Thought Lin Feng.

“You can attack first, okay? Let’s have a good fight” said Lin Li as if he had already won the fight and was selecting his next opponent.

“Alright.” Said Lin Feng while nodding.

“Moonlight Feather Agility, Nine Heavy Waves.” Shouted Lin

Feng. As Lin Feng arrived right next to Lin Li, Lin Li was still smiling.

The shock waves within the air caused a huge pressure to consume the atmosphere. Terrifying wave upon terrifying wave was vibrating through the air around Lin Feng's fist. Lin Li's smile was still on his face but at the same time he looked terrified, he had planned to withstand the attack and then win by showing overwhelming strength but now he was terrified of his opponent. Wasn't it too late to take his words back?

“BOOOM!!”

“You Lose.”

Lin Li's body flew away. His smile was almost rigid on his face and that looked really embarrassing. One punch, one punch was all it had taken to eliminate him. He no longer believed he was lucky.

“It seems like nobody has put Lin Feng in their eyes. How strong is he?” thought Lin Li.

Only Lin Feng knew how powerful his attacks could become. It seemed like his nine heavy waves were in perfect fusion with the entire universe surrounding them, they even seemed to borrow the power of the atmosphere as it was consumed by the vibrations. His waves gave the impression of being in the middle of a vast and boundless ocean which nobody could escape. There was no choice but to be swallowed by the powerful waves.

The most terrifying thing was that Lin Feng hadn't received a single injury in any of his fights. Lin Feng's effortlessly dodged all incoming attacks and dealt with his opponent with a single blow. There was not even a speck of dust on his robes, he was untouchable.

"Piece of trash.....Is this what we call a true genius?" Lin Li didn't have the least bit of hate or resentment in his eyes. He was staring at Lin Feng with respect and even a hint of remaining fear. He knew that Lin Feng had shown him mercy and was terrified by the outcome if he had not received mercy.

"Lin Feng wins." Declared the Sixth Elder. The crowd deeply sighed.

"It had to be a trick. Lin Li was at the eighth Qi layer. This must have been something which was previously arranged. He is truly cunning"

"What Qi Layer is Lin Feng even at?"

The entire crowd suddenly had the impression that the piece of trash they were looking at had completely transformed and become something mysterious. He had either become extremely sly and cunning or held the strength of eighth Qi Layer. No matter which it was, he had gained the curiosity and respect of many clan members.

"He took him by surprise with a sneak attack. That piece of trash is the same piece of trash as before. He's just a coward." Said Lin

Wu in an extremely disdainful tone when he heard all the comments of the crowd.

“That’s right. It must be that way. Lin Feng could only win with a sneak attack because Lin Li was unprepared. Otherwise, how could he have thrown Lin Li from the stage that easily?” said some clan members in support of Lin Wu

They thought that they had understood what had happened from Lin Wu’s words and some people had even started insulting Lin Feng.

But Lin Feng ignored the comments as this was nothing he had not heard previously, however now he would make them all pay. All those who had humiliated him would be punished. A piece of trash? Took him by surprise? Everyone will be disappointed.

Fourth battle: Lin Wu versus Lin Hen.

While looking at them on the battle stage, Lin Feng’s eyes showed curiosity. During the last round, Lin Wu and Lin Hen were in the same group but during the last fight of their group, Lin Hen had refused to fight and surrendered. But this round, Lin Hen and Lin Wu were opponents again, could it be that the Sixth Elder had done this on purpose?

“We have already made it this far, we do not need to fight unnecessary battles with other clan members. Do we even need to fight?” said Lin Wu jokingly while looking at Lin Hen. Lin Hen was just a coward scared to fight, nothing more.

“There is no need.” Replied Lin Hen while shaking his head and smiling.

“Such a coward.”

“He is making the Lin Clan lose face.”

Many people started to insult him. Lin Hen had already qualified before when he gave up so that was excusable, but giving up now was really unforgivable. That was a disgrace to the Lin Clan.

“Coward. If you’re not fighting then get lost! Get down off the battle stage.” Said Lin Wu who was really angry to hear him give up again.

Lin Hen was looking at Lin Wu and suddenly had a strange expression on his face. He didn’t get down off the battle stage, instead, he moved forwards to Lin Wu.

“I will just count down from three to one, if you don’t get off my stage before the time is up, then do not blame me for being merciless.” Said Lin Hen.

Killing intent could be seen on his face. Suddenly a powerful chaotic energy surrounded his body and crashed down onto Lin Wu.

“Three.” Counted Lin Hen.

At that moment, Lin Wu’s entire body was trembling, he looked like he was frozen with fear. Sweat was beading from his forehead and his face could show his fatigue. He was staring at Lin Hen with eyes filled with shock.

“How is that even possible? How did you possibly?!” Lin Wu was going insane: “How can you have the strength of a cultivator who has reached the Ling Qi Layer?!”

Lin Wu wasn’t the only one who was stupefied. Everyone else in the crowd was stupefied. Ling Qi layer. He has just used the power belonging to cultivators of the Ling Qi layer. That quiet and introverted Lin Hen had been hiding his power this whole time. Everyone was shocked at how this young man had hidden such a great power.

Ling Qi layer... apart from Lin Qian, amongst the juniors, it seemed like there was only Lin Hen who had broken through to the Ling Qi layer... and it seemed like Lin Qian was the most outstanding of all the young disciples.

The Sixth Elder was beaming with satisfaction. He had a huge smile on his face. Lin Hen had been secretly cultivating and hiding his abilities. As long as he didn’t show his abilities, it was very difficult for others to tell that he had reached the Ling Qi layer. Which showed how careful he had been to hide his power.

“He is good at hiding his real power.” Lin Ba Dao thought while

looking at the Sixth Elder. But suddenly he realized there was still hope.

“You better adapt to the circumstances.” Said Lin Ba Dao looking at the Sixth Elder with a cold smile. Once the annual meeting was over, he would again attempt to become the Head of the Clan. Lin Ba Dao couldn’t understand why the previous head on his deathbed, had passed his power to Lin Hai and not to him. Lin Hai was seldom in the Clan when he was young, he would often travel and hide from the clan his destination. Lin Ba Dao was a pillar of the Clan and had dedicated his life to it.

Becoming the Head of the Clan had always been Lin Ba Dao’s dream and because he continued to fail at his attempts, there was a knot in his heart.

“Two.” Lin Hen’s energy was becoming stronger and stronger. It was oppressing Lin Wu so much that he could hardly breathe. He had never felt such a horrible pressure and he regretted his previous arrogance.

Everybody believed that Lin Wu was at the eighth Qi layer but he had actually broken through to the ninth Qi layer not long before. He had thought that he would amaze everyone at this year’s annual meeting but his dream hadn’t come to reality. He had not been given the chance to show anything exceptional to the audience. Lin Hen was threatening him at that moment and telling him to leave while he still could, otherwise he would have to bear the consequences.

“Before you insult and humiliate other people, you better think

twice. I am not willing to fight against you for the sake of the clan. It is not because I am less powerful than you. I despise you and if it were not for the blood we share, I would kill you where you stand” Said Lin Hen. He seemed like a completely different person. The power of the chaotic energy was still increasing and Lin Heng was about to make his final count.

“—“

“I give up.” Said Lin Wu who felt that he was about to be crushed by the force of the chaotic energy. Then he turned around and left the battle stage without looking back.

“Lin Hen is so strong!” said the crowd as if they were worshiping him. Breaking through to the Ling Qi layer is the dream of every young Cultivator. Reaching it before the age of twenty gave even more chances to break through to even higher layers later such as the Xuan Qi layer or even the extremely powerful Sky Qi layer.

“Very interesting.” Said Lin Feng who was laughing. Lin Hen had broken through to the Ling Qi layer... The Sixth Elder had probably voluntarily arranged the battles like he did to promote his own son’s fame. Lin Hen had given up during the second round so he really wanted to see Lin Hen fight Lin Wu during the third round. He was happy that Lin Wu had been taught a lesson in front of such a large crowd. He even surrendered like a coward, which he was calling Lin Hen previously.

“Piece of trash, what gives you the right to laugh at me? You’re the disgrace of the clan.” Lin Wu’s expression was hideous when he saw Lin Feng’s smile. He couldn’t help but shout at him

extremely loudly, to the extent that his shout resonated in the entire fighting arena.

When people heard that Lin Wu was shouting at Lin Feng, they couldn't help but burst into laughter.

Especially Lin Ba Dao who said: "Lin Wu had lost against Lin Hen who had reached the Ling Qi layer so he hadn't lost face at all, but I wouldn't have thought that a piece of trash would dare laugh at him. He really shameless, he's truly a disgrace."

When Lin Zhen heard these few words, he directly felt much better and said in a cold tone: "That piece of trash is overestimating his capabilities."

Lin Hai who wasn't far from them had an extremely cold expression and was repressing the urge to kill them on the spot.

Lin Feng was stupefied. He clearly hadn't thought that Lin Wu had anything to be angry about, he had just been unlucky to have provoked the wrong person with his arrogance. Why would he then try to bully him?

"What are you looking at, piece of trash? Instead of hiding behind your daddy, wouldn't you prefer fighting against me?" Lin Wu was so furious that there was no space in his heart to contain his wrath so he used Lin Feng to release all his anger.

"It's the first time that I see such a ridiculous and laughable

person. You just got humiliated because of your own arrogance so you are attempting to bully me. Pathetic.”

Lin Feng shook his head and then moved towards Lin Wu.

“I will just count down from three to one, if you do not leave my sight, then do not blame me for being merciless”

Lin Feng had used almost the same words as Lin Hen. The entire area suddenly turned silent. Only Lin Feng’s voice could be heard.

Chapter 35: To The Death! - Lin Feng Vs Lin Qian

Everyone watching felt confused by Lin Feng's actions, Lin Hen had already broken through to the Ling Qi layer so it was normal for him to threaten Lin Wu.

But Lin Feng was doing the same now and was telling Lin Wu to get out of his sight. The previous shame and humiliation had already made Lin Wu enraged. He had been humiliated by Lin Hen and hadn't felt anger but the fact that that piece of trash dared to humiliate him was unbearable. He felt like a knife was stabbing his heart and his anger could be seen on his bright red face.

"Do you want to die?" Lin Wu was releasing clear killing intent and his gaze was like a wild beast.

At that moment an extremely strong force surrounded Lin Wu and came crashing down onto him, even though it wasn't as strong as Lin Hen's chaotic energy, Lin Wu once again felt fear fill his heart. He had once again been surrounded by an oppressive force that was crushing down onto his whole body.

"Three." Lin Feng started the countdown in a low voice. The power of the force which was crushing Lin Wu's body was growing stronger and stronger over time. Lin Wu was almost suffocating from the energy filling the atmosphere. All his feelings, wrath, shame, resentment suddenly all vanished. The only feeling he had left was fear and self preservation.

He was at the ninth Qi layer and the piece of trash which was facing him was using energy strong enough to suppress him. Was he also Ling Qi Layer?

Everybody was confused, they only saw that Lin Wu was suddenly panicked and gasping for breath. Lin Feng was walking slowly and calmly towards Lin Wu which gave everyone the impression that time had stopped. Even if the crowd could sense the Qi contained within the force which was released by Lin Feng, it was in perfect harmony with the elements.

Lin Feng looked like a completely different person in the eyes of the Lin Clan members. Lin Feng seemed to be in perfect balance with the elements and forces between heaven and earth.

“Two.” Said Lin Feng while taking another step forward. Even if he wasn’t shouting, his words felt like a hammer stroking Lin Wu’s chest. Lin Wu’s heart was pounding. He could only think of ways to flee this current situation. However he could barely move.

The force had become much stronger than the initial pressure. Lin Wu was still feeling extremely oppressed and at the same time was trying to escape backwards. It didn’t even look like a battle was happening. It looked ridiculous, his confidence had disappeared even though Lin Feng had only taken two steps forward.

“What’s going on? Lin Wu is trying to escape?” whispered members who were watching the events.

“I really think that Lin Feng has unlocked his hidden talent, can he really be called trash anymore? It’s almost as if he has unsheathed a sword and is cutting down the pride of anyone who was trying to obstruct his way.”

“There is one last word left.” Said Lin Feng while smiling at Lin Wu but it seemed like Lin Feng was making fun of Lin Wu. Lin Wu, was a true coward in every sense of the word, when faced with the pressure stronger than his own, he never even attempted to fight.

Lin Wu had a spear in his hand which fell down onto the ground. He looked very weak and fragile. Lin Hen hadn’t needed to humiliate him that much, he knew himself that his strength wasn’t sufficient to fight back against the Ling Qi Layer. Lin Feng’s force though had completely destroyed his self confidence and humiliated him much worse than Lin Hen. He had the feeling that he was never truly strong and the strength he had was just a fantasy created by his arrogance when bullying the weak. That kind of humiliation was truly scary and would take root deep inside the subconscious, making any advancements in the path of cultivation much more difficult.

“I give up.” Said Lin Wu while biting his lips. He seemed to gain a small insight into the world. He used to regard himself as infallible, he believed he was extremely powerful and because of that he was extremely arrogant. He couldn’t bear thinking about how he used to be.

“Give up?” said Lin Feng while smiling. “I said to get out of my sight. Since I can still see you, I will give you one last chance to get out of my sight by crawling on your belly like the worm you are.”

He was humiliating him over and over again. Could the anger that he felt be satisfied with only words?

If Lin Wu had been able to defeat Lin Feng, Lin Feng would have been humiliated and endlessly bullied. Lin Wu would have never let him off so easily... but when Lin Wu found out that he couldn't defeat Lin Feng then he would just give up, were these words really enough? What about the horrible things he had said before? Could they be forgotten that easily?

It was obviously impossible. Lin Feng wasn't a sage, he was just an ordinary young man, an ordinary young man with feelings such as hate, love, courage and revenge.

"I give up. Isn't it enough? You really want me to crawl away?" Lin Wu was furious and had started yelling again.

"Is giving up enough to make us even? You call me a piece of trash, the disgrace of the Lin Clan... how should I punish you for your insults. Do you think it's enough? You got humiliated by him and then take it out on me. Do you think it's enough?" said Lin Feng while smiling coldly. "Now you realize that you cannot compete with me and only say a few words and you think it's enough. Are you looking to die today?"

Lin Wu was extremely scared.

"It seems like time has come." Lin Feng had a smile on his face. "I will give you one last chance. If you do not get out of my sight, you

will bear the consequences of your actions.”

While saying this, Lin Feng kept moving forwards. Lin Wu groaned and immediately laid down on the ground. He looked extremely ashamed and weak.

Lin Feng had an aura which was filled with killing intent which left Lin Wu extremely frightened. Regardless of his feelings of shame and resentment, Lin Feng’s killing intent scared him back to reality. He has never felt such a murderous intent before, it was truly terrifying.

“I’ll get out of your sight.” Said Lin Wu while forcing a smile. His smile was filled with regret and shame. He crawled on the ground away from Lin Feng.

“Piece of trash. Disgrace of the Clan.”

“That piece of trash is the same piece of trash as before.”

While crawling on the ground, Lin Wu remembered all the horrible names and insults he had given Lin Feng. He knew that he was acting like a fool. He was at the ninth Qi layer, he was an outstanding disciple and one of the clans future stars, why had he ended up being so petty?

Everybody in the crowd was looking at Lin Wu crawling on the ground. They couldn’t believe their eyes. They only thought that Lin Feng was insane, suddenly demanding Lin Wu to crawl on the

ground and get out of his sight. They wouldn't have thought that he had meant it or that Lin Wu would actually do it.

“Lin Wu.” Said Lin Zhen. He was shaking. How did such an event come to pass? His son should have the same prideful expression on his face that he always had, he should be the pride of the Clan, a true genius who is just a little weaker than Lin Qian... but in such a short time, Lin Wu had been humiliated twice, to the extent that the second time, he was crawling on the ground like a worm.

“Bastard.” Lin Zhen was furious. He wanted to kill Lin Feng on the spot.

“Uugh.”

Lin Hai lazily sighed when he saw that Lin Zhen was furious. It seemed like the entire space was growing colder, ready to punish Lin Zhen for any actions he made.

“Calm down.” Lin Ba Dao had noticed that Lin Zhen was furious and apathetically added: “Don't worry, that piece of trash will not be arrogant for much longer.”

Lin Zhen was still as furious as before. He stared at Lin Hai and then sat down. He knew that he could not do as he pleased as long as Lin Hai was there.

“Lin Feng wins.” Said the Sixth Elder while staring at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng wasn't like the great majority of the junior members of the Lin Clan. He hadn't inherited a fire or ice spirit, instead he had inherited a small snake spirit. But that small snake spirit wasn't like a normal beast spirit. Nobody knew what use it had, it didn't seem to be that strong or powerful. Because they could not sense its power and did not know the uses of such a spirit, it was deemed a trash spirit. That is why Lin Feng was called a piece of trash by everyone. He was regarded as a disgrace.

Lin Feng also practiced at an extremely slow pace on the path of cultivation which made him even more infamous within the clan. Everybody despised him. But that piece of trash had defeated Lin Yan and had made Lin Wu, who considered himself above ordinary members of the clan, crawl on the ground like a worm. Was he still the piece of trash he used to be? Was his spirit really useless?

“When the father is a dragon, the son can never be a snake.” Thought the Sixth Elder. He then said “Have a rest for half an hour and then we'll continue with the upcoming battles.”

“Elder, we four are not tired, we don't need to rest. Let's continue now, please.” Said Lin Qian in a nonchalant way. Even if she was extremely arrogant towards the other members of the Lin Clan, she was slightly more polite recently. Elders of the Lin Clan didn't mind her being arrogant but Chu Zhan Peng did not like her arrogance, she was being taught to not be arrogant to those who are stronger than her.

“My sister is right, let's continue now.” Added Lin Hong. Both brother and sister had reached the semifinals. This day was a wonderful one for Lin Ba Dao and his standing within the clan.

This would make his attempt to become clan head go very smoothly.

The Sixth Elder looked at Lin Feng: “What is your opinion?”

Regarding his son, Lin Hen, he already knew his opinion. Which only left Lin Feng.

“No problem, we can continue.” Said Lin Feng while nodding. Until that moment, he hadn’t really used his power anyway.

“If you’re all alright with it, then let’s continue right now.” Declared the Sixth Elder. “The semifinals will be as such: Lin Feng versus Lin Hong and Lin Qian versus Lin Hen. Lin Feng and Lin Hong, you can start first.”

“The Sixth Elder unexpectedly made Lin Hen fight against Lin Qian. He must really expect a lot from him.”

“Lin Hen is at the same level as Lin Qian, they have both broken through to the Ling Qi layer. Lin Hong is also extremely strong but couldn’t compete with them. As far as Lin Feng is concerned, it’s also impossible for him to defeat Lin Hen. Only Lin Qian could compete with him. The Sixth Elder probably thinks like that and that’s why he arranged the battles that way. The way the battles are arranged is not important anyway, what is important is strength.”

Everybody was making all sorts of comments on the matchups.

But at that time, Lin Ba Dao stood up and said in a clear loud voice: “Sixth Elder, would you allow me to say a few words?”

“Alright.” Said the Sixth Elder while nodding.

“These four juniors are at the highest ranks of this year’s annual meeting, they represent the new generation of our Lin Clan and its future prospects. I think that forfeiting should be declared invalid. Only fighting until one of them can no longer continue, they should fight like true warriors of the Lin Clan until the end. That way, they will be forced to fully exploit their potential and perhaps even gain insight towards their path of cultivation.” Said Lin Ba Dao with assurance while looking at Lin Hai every once in a while as if he was trying to provoke him.

“How cruel. It seems like he really wants Lin Hong to cripple Lin Feng.” Said some members of the crowd. They had all understood Lin Ba Dao’s thoughts. They could tell that he had nothing but cruel intentions.

“Clan Head, what do you think about my proposal?” Lin Ba Dao asked Lin Hai who had the feeling that Lin Ba Dao was constantly positioning his knife behind Lin Hai’s back with the words “Clan Head”. He was smiling at Lin Hai. If Lin Hai didn’t accept, Lin Feng would lose face. If he did accept and Lin Feng lost, that would ruin the reputation of his family. Lin Ba Dao had seized this opportunity to destroy his competition.

Chapter 36: Easy Battle?

Lin Hai looked embarrassed. Lin Feng had already shown more strength than expected. He felt gratified but Lin Ba Dao's proposal was insane. Even if Lin Feng managed to defeat Lin Hong, what would happen during the final? Lin Ba Dao wanted to see Lin Feng die by the hands of one of his children.

“What's going on? The Head of my Clan cannot show some courage and resolution. Allow our juniors to show what they are capable of in a real battle.” Lin Ba Dao said when he saw that Lin Hai was hesitant and not replying.

“Father, hurry up and accept.” Said Lin Feng

Lin Feng couldn't help but shiver a little bit. Lin Feng's family had never done wrong to Lin Ba Dao's family and had never considered them as enemies, they even considered them as close relatives but Lin Ba Dao's family was constantly trying to manipulate Lin Hai and would constantly make attempts on Lin Feng's life. Since they wanted to do things in such a way, Lin Feng's would have to return the favor.

Lin Hai looked at Lin Ba Dao's expression. He looked extremely confident. Lin Hai just said one word: “Alright.”

“Alright, Lin Hai definitely deserves to be the Head of the Clan. He's brave. Since the Clan Head has agreed, let's get started! Sixth Elder, allow Lin Qian and Lin Hen to fight first, please.” Lin Ba Dao looked high-spirited and vigorous. He was feeling very satisfied.

Since Lin Hai had accepted, everyone just had to wait and see.

“Ok.” Said the Sixth Elder while nodding.

“You should give up. You cannot defeat me.” Said Lin Qian while getting on the fighting stage. She was dusting off her red robes which remained untouched, she looked insufferably arrogant.

“Even if I cannot defeat you, we still have to fight to determine the results.” Lin Hen said preparing to start fighting. He released his fire spirit and the atmosphere became unbelievably hot. Heat roared from the stage and the whole crowd could feel warmth on their faces.

“Your spirit has also awakened, not bad. What a pity though that it’s only a fire spirit. It isn’t worth much. You still won’t have a chance when fighting against me.” Said Lin Qian in a cold and detached tone. On the path of Cultivation, one of the major steps was to reach the Ling Qi layer and then to have one’s spirit awaken. Some people’s spirit became much stronger when it awoke and where as some spirits did not vary much from others and were just average strength.

After being awakened, Lin Qian’s universal ice and fire spirit had become infinitely stronger. Her control over the elements of ice and fire had reached new heights.

Her universal ice and fire spirit appeared behind her back. The clear ice was covered in flames. The raging flames were covering the ice and the fire seemed to be emitting frost at the same time.

The atmosphere was sometimes extremely hot, sometimes extremely cold, it was an extremely strange feeling for the crowd who continued to feel the altering temperatures.

“I had heard that Lin Qian’s universal ice and fire spirit was about to awaken. It wasn’t only a rumor. It really is an awakened spirit. She really is the genius of the Lin Clan. Lin Feng, that piece of trash, is not even worthy of her attention.”

“Exactly. No wonder so many of the elders support her. Besides, the universal ice and fire spirit is a high class spirit. She can practice fire as well as ice techniques. Which can also greatly improve her agility techniques, by combining knowledge of fire and ice based techniques and using them simultaneously. She will definitely become a powerful practitioner.”

When Lin Ba Dao heard these clan members whisper about his daughter, he couldn’t help but have a huge smile on his face. All the elders next to him were also smiling.

“Everlasting Snow!”

Lin Qian had said in an apathetic tone. The ground turned into ice. A white fog was rising in all directions and formed clouds which emanated an icy aura.

Ice has a restraining effect on fire, therefore Lin Qian had used an ice skill to counter Lin Hen.

“Scorching Magma.” Shouted Lin Hen. He opened his hand and there was a blazing hot fireball in his palm.

“Ice Spike.” Said Lin Qian contented and not scared at all. Ice collapsed into Lin Hen’s hand and in an instant, his hand was enclosed within a layer of ice.

“Ignite.” Said Lin Hen while coughing because of the ice within the air which hurt his lungs. The ice turned into vapor which froze the air making it hard to breathe. Lin Hen’s hand was extreme painful, he couldn’t tell exactly where the pain was but he had the feeling his head was going to explode.

“BOOOM!”

A sudden explosion and Lin Hen was sent flying backwards. The center of his palm was burned black. The flesh and blood of his hand was in terrible shape.

“Lin Hen.” Said the Sixth Elder with worry.

“I’m alright.” Said Lin Hen while biting his lip. He was shivering and his jaw could not stop moving, one could hear the sound of his clacking teeth. He was enduring a strong and violent pain. The pain in his hand was agonizing as the ice was trying to freeze the wound causing even greater pain.

“We will have a rematch in the future.” Said Lin Hen while staring at Lin Qian. He then turned around and left. It made his

father sigh. Even though Lin Hen wasn't really naturally talented, he was extremely determined and stubborn. He wanted to become a man of overwhelming power. Even if he did not have talent, he would work harder than anyone else to become strong.

“You will never be able to defeat me, give up on trying.” Said Lin Qian arrogant as always. She was going to be so strong in the future that nobody in the Lin Clan would be able to compete with her. If no one could touch her now, how would they in the future when she grew stronger with her spirit.

“Universal fire and ice spirit... She is able to use two elements of antagonistic power in the blink of an eye. Her potential will continue to increase.” Lin Hai was frowning. The stronger Lin Qian was, the more dangerous it became for Lin Feng.

“It's your turn.” Said Lin Qian while smiling coldly at Lin Feng and then came down off the battle stage.

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at the clear and boundless sky and the sun.

Lin Feng was walking slowly towards the battle stage and then stepped onto it. Lin Hong was already waiting for him there.

“I've been waiting for this opportunity for a long time.” Said Lin Hong while looking at Lin Feng.

“I know.” Said Lin Feng while nodding.

“You never had a single hope for victory. You are going to fight me now but even if you had fought against Lin Qian, it would have been the same, there was never any chance for you to come out of the unscathed.”

Lin Feng just laughed. Lin Hong had so much self confidence that surrounded him like an aura. Lin Feng, in his eyes, had no value.

“What are you laughing at?” asked Lin Hong. “Do you think that because you won against Lin Wu, you can compete with me? If you believe we are the same then you are still too immature and overestimate your abilities.”

“Just go ahead and say that you are unmatched beneath the heavens. Say that I will never see such an amazing talent such as yourself in the next ten thousand years. ” said Lin Feng in a teasing tone.

Lin Feng hadn't even fought against Lin Wu and had managed to make him crawl on the ground like a worm. Lin Hong who hadn't broken through to the Ling Qi layer yet and thought he could be that self confident.

Obviously, Lin Hong was furious at those words.

“Alright, I understand. I will just have to kill you.” Lin Hong said with an evil look. Behind him appeared an ice and snow spirit and a freezing cold Qi surrounded his body.

“Ling Qi layer. Lin Hong had also broken through to the Ling Qi layer. He was also hiding it.” Shouted members of the audience

“No wonder that their father plays a dominant role in the Lin Clan. His son and daughter are both geniuses which are only seen every thousand years. They have both broken through to the Ling Qi layer. This is incredible for our clan’s future prospects. I think the clan definitely needs to change its Head of Clan now.” Many people were getting very agitated thinking that Lin Ba Dao should become the Head of the Clan. They thought it would mean the rise of the clan into new heights of fame and glory. They thought the clan would become the strongest in Yangzhou City under the control of Lin Ba Dao.

“For this year’s annual meeting, I will end up on the battle stage with my sister. You are just a pitiful appetizer before the real fight. You will be crippled with a single strike, your father will step down as Clan Head, he will need the spare time to care for his crippled son.” Said Lin Hong revealing his true vile nature.

An ice cold Qi had invaded the entire atmosphere. The Xue Ying Mountain Village only accepted cultivators who possessed an ice and snow spirit. Ice and snow skills, agility techniques, abilities were all extremely powerful. Lin Hong was studying all of these skills at the Xue Ying Mountain Village. His body was diffusing an extremely cold air and it was clear that he wasn’t the least bit weak. He was as strong or maybe even stronger than Lin Qian.

Very quickly, Lin Feng’s body was covered with a white layer of frost and snow. They hadn’t even properly started the battle but

Lin Feng was already affected by his opponent.

“Roaring Thunder.” Lin Feng took the initiative to strike the first blow. Thunderous roars filled the atmosphere which stupefied everyone. When they saw the sword which was emitted radiant rays of light, they could tell that Lin Feng was also hiding exceptional power. Nonetheless, everyone still only had eyes for Lin Qian, Lin Hen and Lin Hong because they had all broken through to the Ling Qi layer.

Lin Feng’s sword thrust towards Lin Hong.

Lin Hong wasn’t taking it seriously. He just sluggishly raised his palm and an ice-cold Qi emerged. Lin Feng’s long sword was covered with frost and snow as it was deflected.

“Roaring Thunder.” Lin Feng’s movements were quick and agile. His sword, while shaking from the vibrations of the attack, also shook off the frost and snow that was covering it and once again thrust towards Lin Hong.

“Hmph.” Lin Hong was smiling coldly. Lin Hong’s palm shot towards Lin Feng’s sword. An extremely strong ice Qi arose which made the point of Lin Feng’s sword vibrate. A strong energy was starting to fill the atmosphere.

“The Ling Qi layer... Cultivators who have reached it are strong. Strong Qi, agile, physical strength... They’re really much stronger than Cultivators of the Qi layer.” Lin Feng sensed an extremely strong power going through his sword. He felt gloomy in his heart

but his face never changed from his relaxed smile.

“Nine Heavy Waves.” Lin Feng pulled his sword back and instantly strong shock waves ran down his arm and shot out from his hand, aimed directly at Lin Hong's chest.

“Huh?” Lin Hong frowned. He would have never thought that Lin Feng was able to use two different skills using both his hands at the same time. That was an extremely difficult thing to achieve but the way Lin Feng did it was completely flawless.

“Piss off.” Shouted Lin Hong. Even though he had broken through to the Ling Qi layer, he wasn't dominating the battle at all, against all of his expectations. Ice and snow started whirling together in the air as if they were dancing. The waves suddenly came to a halt and could not move forward.

Lin Feng did not stop and repeatedly thrust his sword towards Lin Hong.

Lin Feng's sword was whistling through the air and thunderous roars were still increasing within the atmosphere. Lin Feng was standing on his feet as firmly as a mountain without taking a step backwards. His sword looked like a ferocious dragon which called forth a violent thunderstorm.

“Wow.” Said Lin Hai in a low voice. This is Lin Feng's true power. Movement, skills, techniques were all far above expectations: quick, agile, skillful.

Lin Hong was forced to move back with an ugly expression on his face. Even though he had only made a step back, he was a Cultivator of the Ling Qi layer and he was wildly arrogant and presumptuous. He even said that Lin Feng wouldn't be able to withstand a single blow. Yet each sword attack seemed quicker than the last and Lin Feng had forced him to step back. Obviously, his face was not as bright as when he believed he could defeat Lin Feng in a single strike. He was being humiliated by someone who has not reached Ling Qi Layer.

He could no longer contain his fury at the humiliation he had suffered.

Chapter 37: Lin Hai's Fury

“I am going to kill you!” Lin Hong shouted. “Frozen Shadows!”

The atmosphere became deathly silent and as the temperature started to drop drastically, the ground was starting to freeze solid. An unusual snow started to fall from the sky, shadow snowflakes, they completely surrounded the arena and some even started to whirl around Lin Hong creating what looked like a shield of snow. The temperature continued to drop lower and lower until everything within sight had started to freeze over.

“If you want to kill me, you first need to have the skills to do it.” Said Lin Feng as snow continued to fall heavily onto him, his eyebrows were frosty which made them look white but his eyes were like black holes which consumed all life from the atmosphere around him. He stood in place unmoving and as calm as ever.

He took a step forward and the whole stage began to shake, not only the stage but the earth beneath began to tremble violently. The energy contained within Lin Feng's Qi had not weakened within this world of snow, but it had also become much stronger than ever before.

Increasing the energy within his Qi led to increased strength, Lin Feng was determined to finish Lin Hong off quickly by using all of his power. He started to absorb the force contained within the ice and snow then concentrated all of the force into his fist and the tip of his sword. He was not only using the force from the snow and ice within the area but was also borrowing force from heaven and earth. The force which he had absorbed to this point was on a

terrifying level.

Lin Feng concentrated force into his left fist while his right arm would thrust out and create earth-shattering thunderous roars in the direction of Lin Hong.

The power of his Roaring Thunder was growing more and more terrifying with each thrust of his sword. His attacks had started to look like real lightning bolts bursting through the air. It seemed like the entire snow filled atmosphere was getting cut into pieces by the power of thunder and lightning.

Lin Hong's pupils shrunk in shock. Lin Feng's sword was even more powerful now than just a moment before. The snow atmosphere created was intended to weaken his attack power, not increase it. Not only were his attacks growing stronger but they also emanated a strong force. It seemed like the force of all the elements were becoming sword force which consumed the snow, adding to its power.

Lin Hong raised both his hands up in the air, Lin Hong wasn't underestimating Lin Feng's power any longer. He started using a strong Qi of ice and snow, which began to fill the air before disappearing into Lin Feng's sword. Lin Hong could not believe his eyes, his power was being absorbed and converted into the opponents attack power.

"Anything that stands in the way of a Sword Master will be annihilated! There is no power which can dominate the sword!" Said Lin Feng. He made another step and his sword started radiating light. The power contained within the tip of this sword

looked more powerful than anything within heaven and earth.

Lin Feng began walking towards Lin Hong. With each step a thunderous roar filled the air as his sword thrust against the snow between him and Lin Hong.

Lin Hong stepped back, and then stepped back again. He was unconsciously retreating as his body could sense the danger.

Lin Hong looked like he had just seen a ghost. His face was incredibly pale.

At that moment, the entire crowd was absolutely amazed at what they could see. Lin Feng was continuing to advance while Lin Hong retreated.

“How is this even possible?”

“How could Lin Feng be so strong?”

“Lin Hong has broken through to the Ling Qi layer! Yet he continues to retreat from Lin Feng’s sword.”

The crowd did not know how to explain the fact that Lin Feng was so unbelievably strong. The difference between the Qi layer and the Ling Qi layer wasn’t small, it was a huge gap which required a cultivator to be extremely talented to overcome the difference in power, and to do it at such a young age required a true genius. How could Lin Feng, the trash of the Lin Clan, have

become a genius in such a short time?

Lin Ba Dao was even more astonished. His face had become extremely twisted and ugly. His killing intent towards Lin Feng had grown even stronger.

Lin Hai looked amazed, he had a big smile on his face and a proud look in his eyes. No wonder Lin Feng had so much confidence. He was so strong when using a sword, it seemed like Lin Feng had hidden his true strength his entire life.

“It seems like Little Feng has never released his spirit. If his spirit awakens, what kind of spectacle would it be?” thought Lin Hai. His thoughts were racing. He felt endlessly gratified. It seemed like he was witnessing the abrupt rise of his son. It seemed like his son wasn’t a piece of trash actually, but rather a legend in the making.

Lin Hai glanced at Lin Ba Dao in a teasing way.

“ARGHHHH” Lin Hong was going insane. He was shouting like a madman while trying to create another snow based barrier.

“Why are you shouting?” asked Lin Feng while smiling coldly. The Qi of the sword was rolling in the atmosphere creating strong gusts of wind which conquered anything that came into their path. Lin Hong had no chance to win any longer. Every attack he used would only strengthen the force contained within Lin Feng’s sword.

“Whoosh”

Lin Feng’s sword made a whistling sound. The Qi of Lin Hong’s snow shield was destroyed by Lin Feng’s sword again. This time however, Lin Hong wasn’t able to withstand the full attack. His clothes were ripping into pieces and blood was dripping down his body. The sword had not struck him but the Qi from the attack had caused him to end up in such a sorry state.

Lin Hong could feel a chill running down his spine as his body grew cold. It was the first time that his own Qi had made him feel cold, so cold that it was chilling him to the bone. Even more shocking the Qi which injured him was his own. Not only was he injured but his life was now at stake. Lin Feng’s sword had no mercy contained within. If there was a single opportunity, Lin Feng... would kill him.

That’s right, at that moment, Lin Hong became aware of how dangerous the situation had become for him. Until now, he had thought that he would be able to attack Lin Feng without retaliation, able to take Lin Feng’s life but he had never thought that the situation would be the exact opposite.

Lin Hong hated himself for not practicing his agility techniques. He could not see a way for him to retreat from this situation. All of Lin Feng’s attacks were flawless. He was in complete fusion his sword Qi.

“BOOOM!”

A strong wind destroyed the snow filled atmosphere. Lin Feng had started to move and the atmosphere itself was twisting and exploding. It looked like the apocalypse and the only thing left standing within was a single sword.

“This looks dangerous.” Lin Ba Dao looked glum and shouted: “You animal, you are clearly stronger, don’t you dare...!”

“Shut up! Lin Ba Dao, have you forgotten that you are the one who suggested this situation? Now that Lin Hong is not able to defeat Lin Feng, you want to intervene?” said Lin Hai preventing Lin Ba Dao from getting involved. He moved and seemed to disappear, he was instantly in front of Lin Ba Dao. He no longer had any mercy left for Lin Ba Dao, he had given up hope. Even if Lin Hai still had friendly feelings for Lin Ba Dao from the past, Lin Ba Dao bore a bitter hatred for him and his son. Considering Lin Ba Dao wanted to take Lin Feng’s life, Lin Hai could only be just as ruthless.

“AAAHHHHH”

Lin Hong gave a horrible shriek making Lin Ba Dao’s face change drastically. “Out of my way!” He shouted as he tried to move past Lin Hai.

“Don’t imagine you can act as you wish with such little power.” Lin Hai released his spirit, it seemed like the universe had frozen and time had stopped. Lin Ba Dao had frozen over where he stood.

“I am not in the mood anymore, since you and your direct family

constantly tries to take my life. You should just die here.” Lin Feng was gazing at Lin Hong who was covering his wounds trying to prevent the blood from spilling onto the stage. Lin Feng looked completely heartless at this moment. He watched Lin Hong with a cold smile on his face.

Lin Feng looked like he was deciding whether to chop him in half horizontally or vertically.

“Don’t you dare!” shouted a fragile voice. It was Lin Qian. Her Ice and fire spirit burst out of her body. Lin Feng had the sensation he was burning and freezing at the same time. Lin Qian was quickly approaching him.

“Get lost!” Lin Feng turned around. He thrust out his sword and unleashed all of the contained force and an endless amount of Qi.

“BOOOM!!”

The ice and fire filling the atmosphere dispersed in an instant.

“Die.” shouted a cold voice from behind him, before Lin Feng could turn around a sword had already pierced his throat.

An extremely strong power was unleashed within the atmosphere and Lin Feng was sent flying backwards. Blood began to spray endlessly from his throat as he flew through the air.

“You have no integrity and no morals.” Lin Hai shouted in a long

and mournful cry. While Lin Hai was preventing Lin Ba Dao from getting involved, Lin Zhen rushed to the stage and used the opportunity to cut Lin Feng's jugular.

“Ice Age!” Lin Hai had gone into a rage. The entire atmosphere froze, Lin Zhen had a gloomy face as he sensed an incomparably strong ice Qi strike him in the face. Everyone in the crowd had been frozen into place.

“Help me!” shouted Lin Zhen

It was already too late. Lin Hai's palm was already in front of him and then smashed down into his chest. His pupils were wide open while staring at Lin Hai.

“You... actuallydared to kill me...” Blood was uninterruptedly spilling out of Lin Zhen's mouth. Lin Hai didn't just attack Lin Zhen's chest but had sent his ice Qi into his body which had destroyed most of his organs. Lin Hai had already sealed Lin Zhen's fate.

” Lin Zhen, you attacked my son by surprise, I will never forgive you.” Lin Hai's tone was extremely cold. Lin Hai's hand was shaking with anger. Lin Zhen's eyes were wide open and staring at Lin Hai with hatred and resentment as he slowly died.

Everyone looked as rigid as statues. Had the Lin Zhen been killed so easily?

At that moment, the entire crowd looked at Lin Hai. Their eyes were filled with fear. Only an extraordinary strength of this level could bring terror to the hearts of everyone present. Was there really such a monster within the Lin Clan?. At that moment, Lin Ba Dao didn't dare move a finger.

Lin Hai turned around and looked at Lin Qian and said in a cold and detached tone: "A genius of the Hao Yue Sect? A genius of the Snow Shadow Mountain Village? Both of you are shameless trash."

Lin Qian bit her lips. She could see Lin Hai's murderous intentions. She didn't dare say a word. He started walking, his eyes were filled with killing intent. Everyone feared that a single sound could cause the deaths of everyone present.

He was moving towards Lin Qian because Lin Hong had lost the battle but Lin Zhen as well as Lin Qian had attacked Lin Feng by surprise. When they thought that Lin Hong would be able to defeat Lin Feng, they wanted to push the battles as far as possible without the possibility of surrender, hoping that Lin Feng would die. When they found out that nothing was happening the way they had expected, they wanted to get involved and attacked Lin Feng by surprise and cut his throat, how could Lin Hai not be furious?

"What do you intend to do?" Lin Qian asked staring at Lin Hai.

"Exterminate you all." Said Lin Hai with a clear voice. At that moment, nothing could calm his anger.

Chapter 38: The Honorable Elder

“Would you dare to kill me?” Lin Qian asked whose face looked completely frozen.

“Why wouldn’t I?” replied Lin Hai grinning with the same killing intent filling his eyes.

“Lin Hai, do you know what you are doing?” shouted Lin Ba Dao and some other elders who were in panic.

“Lin Hai, you bastard! Who do you think it is that you are threatening?”

“Don’t talk nonsense to me. Today, I will kill anyone who gets in my way.” Lin Hai said while his eyes looked over the crowd. His gaze pierced like daggers.

Lin Hai looked at the elders miserable expressions, narrowed his eyes and suddenly a distant voice was heard.

“Is that so?”

Somewhere in the territory of the Lin Clan, a vast and powerful force with an incredible Qi burst out. Immediately after, the crowd noticed a human silhouette about a kilometer away. The figure flew at an incredible speed, moving over the crowd and landing on the fighting stage.

It was an old man. His eyebrows were as black as ink, he looked extremely mysterious. His frame was sturdy and he was as tall as Lin Hai. He looked extremely similar to Lin Ba Dao.

“Honorable Elder.” whispered Lin Hai and then immediately smiled but it looked like a sorrowful smile. It was his uncle: Lin Rui.

Lin Rui is usually always practicing cultivation within the Lin Clan territory. Each time there was a problem, whether it was important or not, the Head of the Clan and the Elders dealt with them. Lin Rui would almost never break his training and come to meet with the clan.

“Honorable Elder.” everybody was stupefied at the display of power he had just shown. Flying through the sky like he was walking in a quiet and peaceful courtyard, it required incredibly strong agility techniques and a high level of cultivation.

Lin Feng was lying on the floor powerless as blood still poured from his throat, he quickly swallowed a few profound healing pills. His wound had begun to heal, but he had lost so much blood that he could only lay there while the pill healed him. While looking up at Lin Rui from the ground, he remembered that he had seen him only twice. The Honorable Elder almost never came out.

“Honorable Elder, Lin Hai, the Clan of the Head, attaches no importance to the Lin Clan. He groundlessly killed the Seventh Elder”

“Right now, he also wants to kill an unprecedented genius of the Lin Clan, Lin Qian. He even threatened all of the elders and clan members present.”

“Honorable Elder, please punish Lin Hai for all of his crimes.” said the elders, as if Lin Hai was at the origin of all the problems within the clan.

Lin Hai Could only laugh at his situation.

“Lin Hai, what are you laughing at?” asked Lin Rui in an apathetic tone.

“I’m laughing because they are really shameless. Initially, wasn’t the Honorable Elder supposed to support the clan from the background and not get involved with the clan, unless the clan was in danger?” Said Lin Hai sarcastically.

“How impudent and presumptuous. How dare you talk to me like this?” Lin Rui said in an ice cold tone and anger filled his eyes.

“Uncle, I am the Head of the Lin Clan. Even if you have the status of an Honorable Elder, it doesn’t give you the right to concern yourself with how I handle the affairs of the clan. As clan head, my decision is the final decision on these matters” said Lin Hai stubbornly. He was standing with his back straight and head held high while looking Lin Rui in the eyes.

“What nerves you have! The Honorable Elder is not just any

elder, he is also an elder of your own bloodline. You have the audacity to make no distinction between juniors and seniors. That itself counts as a crime against the clan.” Lin Ba Dao said in an attempt to incite unrest.

“A crime? I only said that I am the Head of the Clan and my decision on clan affairs are final, that’s a fact.” Lin Hai knew what the inevitable outcome of that situation was going to be. He turned around and went towards Lin Feng.

A palm filled with ice suddenly shot towards Lin Hai.

Lin Hai kept walking towards Lin Feng, ignoring the incoming attack. The palm of ice landed firmly on Lin Hai’s defenseless back. It was an extremely powerful attack, Lin Hai’s entire body was immediately covered with frost and a chill filled his body. He was completely white from head to foot and suddenly flew towards Lin Feng looking like a kite with a broken string.

“Huh?!” shouted Lin Hai surprised. He was kneeling down on the ground. He had flown over to Lin Feng and been caught mid air. He was shocked that his son was not dead and seemed unharmed when he caught him. Nonetheless, his facial expression hadn’t changed since the beginning.

“Uncle, you attacked me from behind when I was defenseless. From now on, there is no bond that exists between me and this clan and from this day forward I am cutting my blood ties with you.” Said Lin Hai with blood spilling out of his mouth. He had been attacked by surprise by Lin Rui. He could feel the cold piercing through to his bones and was slightly shivering from the

cold. If Lin Feng hadn't caught him as he flew through the air, he would have landed much farther away.

"Pfff, we are indeed blood related. You are my family, so I will not kill you. Just get lost." Lin Rui said coldly. He hadn't expected that Lin Hai wouldn't block the attack so he had attacked without hesitation. He had mixed feelings about what had just happened. Lin Qian was starting to be well known in the clan as a genius. She had a bright future before her and she would raise the clan to new levels of fame and status. If the clan rose in fame and status then Lin Rui could also gain benefits.

"The skills and abilities of that piece of trash, Lin Feng, greatly improved but a useless spirit remains a useless spirit. Lin Feng will never be able to reach the same level as someone like Lin Qian." thought Lin Rui.

"Little Feng, we're leaving." whispered Lin Hai to Lin Feng in a soft and fragile voice.

Lin Feng nodded. He was still unable to speak. In his heart he could feel nothing but hatred and regret. He looked like a ghost, he had lost so much blood that it was shocking that he was still alive.

Lin Feng was able to stand but he needed Lin Hai's support to walk. Lin Feng didn't even look back at the clan because their faces were already engraved deep into his heart.

All the members of the Lin Clan looked at him and his father leave. Many members of the clan were confused in their hearts

about what had just happened.

Lin Feng was known as a piece of trash by everyone. Yet he had such a powerful force fused with his attacks, such a terrifying Qi, such skillful sword play, he had defeated a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer and he even made Lin Wu crawl on the ground like a worm... could a piece of trash accomplish such things?

Lin Hai had killed the Lin Zhen in one strike and had threatened everyone present saying that he would kill them if they tried to get in his way, if the Honorable Elder hadn't appeared, who could have stopped him?

Unfortunately, Lin Ba Dao had his talented daughter, Lin Qian. Otherwise, Lin Hai would have stayed the Head of the Lin Clan. Regarding Lin Feng and Lin Hai, the opinion of the Lin Clan's members had changed, they deserved respect and could be proud of their actions.

“What a pity, if we had only worked together then we could rejuvenate the clan and would have no more worries.” thought the Sixth Elder while looking at the two silhouettes on the horizon. He then sighed in regret as he wasn't strong enough to change anything that had happened. He could only remain silent and accept the situation as it was.

Lin Hai was meditating in his room. A white and foggy Qi was surrounding his body and started to penetrate into him, it was healing all of his wounds and removing the ice Qi which had penetrated into his body. Not long after, he opened his eyes and a dazzling light was surrounding his body.

“Father, how are you feeling?” asked Lin Feng who was next to him.

“The injuries are almost completely healed. Little Feng, these pills are amazing. Where did you get them?” asked Lin Hai while grabbing the medicine bottle containing the profound healing pills. Immediately after taking a pill, his injuries suddenly looked much better. He had rapidly recovered from his wounds.

“It seems that if I have the opportunity, I’ll have to thank Protector Kong.” Lin Feng had a big smile on his face. He wouldn’t have thought that these pills would have such a powerful effect on his father. On that day when Han Man was injured, Lin Feng had already thought that these pills were mysterious, almost mystical. The Honorable Elder’s attack on Lin Hai would have turned Han Man into meat paste. Lin Hai’s injury was much more serious than that of Han Man. Only because Lin Hai was much stronger than Han Man, had he survived such an attack.

However, as before, the profound healing pill was able to make Lin Hai recover in no time. This showed how powerful these pills were.

“Father, one of the protectors within the Yun Hai Sect gave them to me.” replied Lin Feng.

“Oh.” Lin Hai nodded. “Little Feng, you should go back to the Yun Hai Sect. In a short time, you will probably surpass Lin Qian by leaps and bounds.”

“Surpass Lin Qian?” Lin Feng smiled in his heart. He had not even put Lin Qian’s level in his eyes. The path of cultivation was vast, how could he pursue such an insignificant thing as trying to surpass Lin Qian?

“Father, what about you? Where will you go?” Lin Feng held back his words on his current goal being much greater. He would rather find out if his father had planned to stay with him.

“I’m getting ready to go to the Imperial City.”

“The Imperial City?!” Lin Feng was stupefied. The Imperial City is without doubts the biggest, busiest, the most powerful and prosperous city in the Xue Yue Country. In the Imperial City, a small Clan like the Lin Clan could easily disappear without a trace... the Imperial Clan was unsurpassed and extremely powerful.

Actually, it was also possible to regard the Imperial Clan as a sect, as the strongest Sect of the entire Xue Yue Country.

“Don’t worry Little Feng. Even though the Imperial City is full of extraordinary Cultivators, I am not going there to cause trouble or kill people. I’m just going there because I feel like visiting. There will not be any problems if I go there. Practice more and once you are stronger, come to the Imperial City to see me.” said Lin Hai who saw that Lin Feng was frowning and worry could be seen on his face. Lin Feng immediately looked more relaxed which made Lin Hai smile.

“Alright, let’s leave.” Lin Hai said while standing up. He just picked up a few paintings and scrolls then they left together. They eventually arrived outside the city and came to a halt.

They looked at the vast and boundless horizon stretching across the sky which seemed endless. Lin Hai spat towards the city, turned around and said to Lin Feng while smiling: “Little Feng, we are not taking the same road, you leave first, ok?”

“Father, I want to stay here until you are leaving. You can leave first.” said Lin Feng while shaking his head.

Lin Hai looked at him a bit surprised, then smiled and said: “Alright, Little Feng, people are dangerous and many have evil intentions, be careful on your journey.”

When he finished talking, Lin Hai jumped on a horse and quickly disappeared into the distance. His silhouette gradually disappeared. Lin Hai had seen Lin Feng display his power during the annual meeting and was therefore feeling more relaxed. He had the feeling that Lin Feng did not need his advice anymore, but he could not stop himself from worrying as his father.

Lin Feng watched while his father’s silhouette disappeared into the horizon. He raised his head, gazed into the sky and then immediately rode Qian Li Xue back into Yangzhou City.

“How is it possible to leave things as they are? If I had defeated Lin Qian during the annual meeting, then they would never have

treated my father in such a way. I will show the Lin Clan!”

Chapter 39: Na Lan Feng

The rain was heavily flowing down. The sky was filled with rain clouds and the scent of rain filled the air.

Pedestrians on the streets were running from place to place to try and find shelter from the storm.

A young man with a stern look on his face was slowly riding a horse down the street, unbothered by the rain. He was wearing a black waterproof cape and was slowly heading towards the Whistle Wind Restaurant.

“Take good care of my horse.” said the young man to one of the restaurant staff as he handed over the reins of his horse. He then calmly walked into the Whistle Wind Restaurant.

Because of the rain, the Whistle Wind Restaurant was bustling with people and the sounds of laughter could be heard all around. The ground floor of the restaurant was so full that it was hard to move within the crowd. The restaurant was filled with all sorts of people who had come to watch and participate in the annual meetings. The sounds of drunken conversations could be heard all around, the atmosphere was dense with the discussion of rumors and events.

“Have you heard what happened? Yesterday, Lin Hai and his son, that piece of trash called Lin Feng, were expelled from the Lin Clan. The Lin Clan had finally decided to remove the trash from their doorstep.”

“Haha, I think the news is already widely spread in the entire city of Yangzhou. No need for you to tell me. Lin Ba Dao is extremely strong, news has already spread about how he defeated Lin Hai and chased him from the clan. However, not only is he very strong but his son and daughter are greatly talented, they have both already broken through to the Ling Qi layer”

“ They can be proud of themselves to reach such a level at a young age. They are much stronger than that piece of trash will ever be. They say Lin Ba Dao defeated Lin Hai and kicked him from the clan after he ruthlessly attempted to interrupt the fight between Lin Feng and Lin Hong, Lin Feng would have been killed by Lin Hong if the fight continued. How shameless can a clan head be, to attack those of the younger generation without warning!”

There were surprisingly a large amount of people commenting what had happened within the Lin Clan. Lin Feng had arrived on the first floor and was about to sit down when he heard the comments from the people discussing. He stood up and started heading back down to the ground floor of the restaurant.

“These lies which are spread about the Lin Clan... Obviously, we left because we couldn’t stand it anymore... are Lin Ba Dao and his family really such geniuses?...” Lin Feng thought sarcastically. Lin Ba Dao’s audacity seemed to have no end, he had even said that he personally defeated Lin Hai. Lin Feng was keeping calm in the face of the unexpected rumors.

“Dear guest, how may I help you?” asked a server while greeting Lin Feng.

“I would like a bottle of wine and some pickles.” Lin Feng said. In a flash, what he ordered was already on the table, the restaurant was very used to the busy atmosphere at this time of year.

“I heard that the Whistle Wind Restaurant is the place to come to hear the latest news. I wonder if someone could tell me about the annual meeting for Yangzhou City.” thought Lin Feng while pouring some wine into his glass. He raised his glass and toasted that his father was finally free from the Lin Clan, he savored every drop. The alcohol gave him a warm sensation in his stomach, the wine tonight was quite strong. It was completely different from the alcohol Lin Feng had drunk before. He was used to receiving the finer wines on the top floor of the restaurant.

At that moment, three people walked into the Whistle Wind Restaurant. There were two females and one male. Everybody in the restaurant had their eyes on the three people who had entered. The young man didn't need to speak, he just continued to fan himself with his feathered fan. They had just emerged from an extremely elegant carriage and all had a feather fan in hand. They all looked extremely confident and self assured. The two girls were both wearing green robes, one light green while the other had a tinge of blue within. Not only did they have a commanding presence but they were also extremely beautiful. The face looked delicate and their bodies were also extremely alluring.

The crowd was paying attention to one of the girls in particular.

Even though it was raining, that girl didn't have a single drop of water on her body. She was wearing a set of green robes with a

hint of blue. She looked as serene and as calm as the ocean, It looked like the color of her robes complimented each of her physical features. Every part of her body was fascinating to the eye. Her eyes were clear as water. She was extremely attractive, seduction seemed to be something engraved in her soul. The beautiful girl wearing light green robes standing next to her had lost all her splendor by standing next to such a beautiful girl.

“Na Lan Hai, you go upstairs first, I’m staying here for a moment.” said the other young girl. Her voice was pleasant to the ear.

“Alright.” replied Na Lan Hai still holding her feather fan. Immediately after, she went to the first floor. Then, the young girl wearing the light green robes glanced at the room looking for a good place to sit.

“Miss, it looks like there are no seats.” The young girl wearing light green robes looked around the room but didn’t find a place to sit, the restaurant was crowded more than usual.

“Miss, wait for a moment please.” the young girl wearing light green robes had noticed there was a young man sitting alone at his table. She started to move towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng raised his head, looked at the young girl wearing light green robes and asked: “Is there something I can help with?”

“Indeed.” said the young girl while throwing one silver coin on Lin Feng’s table and then said: “I’m giving you this silver coin in

exchange for your table.”

Lin Feng was stupefied and then slightly smiled. He also took out a silver coin and put it on the table as well.

“What is that supposed to mean?” asked the young girl while frowning.

Lin Feng raised his head and gazed directly into the young girls eyes and said: “I think you look unpleasant. Therefore, I am giving you this silver coin to go and find another table far out of my sight.”

“You Dare...” said the young girl while looking confused and angry. Right after, she said in a cold and detached tone: “How dare you, do you even know who I am?”

Lin Feng remained silent and shook his head. He continued to pour wine in his glass and drank it.

“I don’t give a damn who you are. Now run along” said Lin Feng unexpectedly in a very cold tone.

When the young girl heard Lin Feng with his impolite speech and cold tone, she could not help but be angry, she suddenly released a strong Qi from her body. Lin Feng had a stunned expression on his face. The young girl was younger than him and she had already broken through to the eighth Qi layer. No wonder that she had such an arrogant attitude.

“What? Are you scared now?” asked the young girl who had noticed Lin Feng’s expression. She had a smile of victory on her face, like a child who had just won an argument.

Lin Feng was stupefied again at her reaction but remained silent. “Lu Er, please don’t cause trouble.” said a soft and gentle voice. It was the beautiful and fascinating girl wearing the green robes with a hint of blue. She was gazing at the young girl in light green robes with disapproving eyes.

“Lu Er is always like this. Please don’t blame her.” said the beautiful girl to Lin Feng while smiling. Her words were like a pleasant spring breeze. Right after, she moved towards Lin Feng’s table and sat down with him, she looked very at ease.

Lin Feng frowned. He hadn’t heard any of them apologize for their actions, almost as if they did not have to explain themselves to him. Besides, the girl in the green and blue hadn’t even asked Lin Feng if he agreed before she sat down.

“Do I look like one of your servants? In this world there are masters and there are servants. Today, I am the master of this table and I did not give a servant like you permission to sit.” said Lin Feng in a sarcastic tone.

The beautiful girl was speechless, then she groaned in displeasure. Everywhere where she went, everybody obeyed and respected her. If she sat at the same table as someone else, that person should feel extremely honored. Most men had no chance to

even meet her eyes let alone be seated at the same table as her. On that day, she hadn't thought she would come across someone like Lin Feng who would ridicule her.

"Miss, we should teach this ignorant person a lesson." said the young girl wearing light green robes, she had become even more angry at Lin Feng's words.

"Forget it, Lu Er." said the beautiful girl while shaking her head. Then, she stood up and said: "Since he doesn't welcome us, let's just find another table." "It's just that some people lack tact. Next time, we should pay more attention and avoid these people."

While saying that, the beautiful girl had turned around and left.

"Miss Na Lan, that guy is unable to recognize you and how great you are. Your family is one of great power. Don't lower yourself to his level. I have a lot of respect for you. If you wish, you can sit here." said people in the crowd while inviting the girl to sit with them.

The beautiful young girl, didn't refuse this time, she nodded and accepted which made the person inviting her overjoyed at his luck.

"That guy is so lucky, why didn't I invite her first..?" groaned people in the crowd watching the scene. They infinitely regretted they hadn't made the first move.

"What kind of guy is that? He really must not have eyes. Miss Na

Lan wants to sit with him which is something that happens once in a lifetime... and he refuses. That was maybe the luckiest event of his life. He is a complete idiot.”

Lin Feng could hear all sorts of comments all around him. Lin Feng shook his head. Servility, arrogance, power and all the things related... People clung to rich and power people. Lin Feng only believed in mutual respect. If someone respected Lin Feng, then he'd respect them. The girl in green and blue robes and the girl in the light green robes hadn't respected Lin Feng from the beginning to the end, should he have acted in a servile way even though they hadn't showed him any respect? He would never lower himself to living on his knees.

Lin Feng had heard from the surrounding conversations the status that the girl wearing green and blue robes held. She was the only daughter of the head of the City. The beautiful and talented Na Lan Feng.

“Contrary to what one might expect, Na Lan Feng and Lin Qian actually are pretty similar. They consider everything and everyone as worms beneath them. They ignore everyone and just care about themselves. They are both very selfish individuals.” Lin Feng thought while shaking his head. Concerning Na Lan Feng, there were many rumors about her in which she sounded to be wonderful and perfect but in reality she was the opposite.

“Miss Na Lan Feng, now that you arrived, why not come upstairs for a chat? We might even invite you to join us.” said a cold voice coming from the higher levels of the restaurant. The entire crowd was stunned. Who was audacious enough to talk to her like that?

Who dared to be so rude?

“Haha, I made the young miss of the Lin Clan wait for a long time, well then, Na Lan will come and join you.” said Na Lan Feng while laughing. She immediately went upstairs.

” young miss of the Lin Clan?”

“That was Lin Qian of the Lin Clan. No wonder she dared talk to Na Lan Feng that way.”

“I heard that Lin Qian has completely transformed. There is no comparison possible between past and present. She has an amazing talent and she has an excellent reputation within the Hao Yue Sect.”

“That’s right, it must be Lin Qian. I would have never thought that the city of Yangzhou could have two amazingly beautiful young girls with such talent.”

The voice heard a moment ago was indeed Lin Qian’s voice. She had the same arrogant voice as before. Lin Feng had immediately recognized it.

Lin Feng learnt many things while listening to what people were saying in the restaurant. He also heard news of what was happening in the city. On that day, one of the most amazing junior cultivators in the restaurant was Na Lan Feng but that wasn’t all. Lin Qian had also come as well as other younger disciples of the Gu

Clan, of the Wen Clan... They were all sitting upstairs, completely unaware that Lin Feng was sat beneath them.

Chapter 40: Rumors

Lin Feng stood up and moved towards a dining table surrounded by the group talking. Their expression immediately changed when they saw him approach. After all, Lin Feng hadn't behaved in a friendly manner towards the girls who tried to join him. He had offended Na Lan Feng who was idolized by everyone.

"Is there a problem?" asked one of the guests in an unfriendly tone way while staring daggers at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng took out two silver coins and threw them on the table. He smiled and said: "May I take a seat with you?"

"You can. Of course, you can." The expression of the people on the table immediately changed. They had quickly become friendly and cheerful to have Lin Feng join them. In the Nine Clouds Continent the currencies consisted of precious stones alongside gold, silver and bronze coins. Extremely rich families had precious stones but they still needed silver and gold coins for daily expenses. Considering that a cultivator had lots of expenses, nobody would refuse silver or gold coins that were easily available. They quickly made room and prepared a chair for Lin Feng to sit and asked him: "Brother, what do you need help with?"

"Eh, it may sound a bit weird, Na Lan Feng and some other outstanding cultivators have gathered together, what are they doing exactly?" asked Lin Feng.

"Brother, this is something everybody knows. The senior

cultivators of the City are preparing for the annual meeting in Yangzhou City. Na Lan Feng invited a few people to come so that she could pass on some information to the most outstanding young clan members and explain what her clan wishes to gain from the tournament. Of course, Na Lan Feng has other things in mind...”

That person stopped talking in order to keep Lin Feng in suspense: “As everybody knows, every year, the clan in control of Yangzhou City organizes a tournament to which a myriad of young cultivators participate and engage in battles. This year is no exception. Na Lan Feng is a representative figure in the clan of the city master. She invited all these outstanding disciples to explain them a few things but also... to get information on her enemies.” Lin Feng laughed at the information. The Yangzhou City tournament was obviously no secret. He had come back to Yangzhou City precisely because the tournament was about to take place. This is why he hadn’t returned to the Yun Hai Sect and decided to stay longer in Yangzhou City.

“I heard that the meeting was going to be different from the past ones. I heard that they were going to invite outstanding disciples from clans which are not established in Yangzhou City. I don’t know if it’s true or if it is just a rumor?” Lin Feng continued to ask.

“That’s right. There is indeed such a thing. Qiu Lan is very famous in Yangzhou City. The master of the City wanted her to gather all these people for that reason. All of the outstanding disciples who want to join the Yangzhou City tournament will need to meet with Qiu Lan.”

“I understand. Thank you so much for all of the information. It

has helped me greatly.” said Lin Feng politely. He had already learnt everything he wanted to know. Lin Feng hurried to finish his alcohol and his pickles. The atmosphere of the restaurant had become too noisy for him and was giving him a headache.

“Na Lan Feng, is that the boy over there, who surprisingly dared to talk to you in a disrespectful way, we should go and cripple him.” said a voice in an evil tone which suddenly made everyone in the restaurant go silent. Right after that, everybody saw people standing on the stairs leading to the first floor. Two silhouettes were slowly moving down. It was the girl wearing light green robes who had just accompanied Na Lan Feng as well as Na Lan Hai who had just went upstairs.

“That young boy is out of luck.” The crowd couldn’t help but look at Lin Feng. They all felt sorry for the fate which was about to befall Lin Feng.

“That guy acted too recklessly. He caused unwanted trouble. I hope he can fix his mistakes. You must be careful who you offend as the world is vast and there are many hidden dragons that you cannot offend.”

Everybody in the restaurant was whispering while looking at Lin Feng. These were going to be his last moments for having offended Na Lan Feng. Asking for forgiveness wouldn’t give him any mercy.

However, Lin Feng hadn’t noticed everybody’s reaction. He had a headache and was too tired to think. He had drunk alcohol and couldn’t see other people’s faces clearly, he was actually quite drunk.

“Argh, he should die for his insults.” Na Lan Hai was grinning and his expression looked ice cold. He was slowly walking towards Lin Feng.

“You have too much self confidence, daring to act so indifferently.” said Na Lan Hai who had arrived next to Lin Feng while looking down at him. “You offended Na Lan Feng, the princess, prepare to bear the consequences.”

“Why are you wasting time with words? Just cripple his cultivation, immediately.” said the young girl in light green robes impatiently.

“Hehe, alright.” replied Na Lan Hai moving his fan. That fan made him look smart and elegant but it was also as sharp as a blade.

Lin Feng finally sobered up slightly on seeing this. He evilly glanced at Na Lan Hai. His cold expression made Na Lan Hai shiver. It was Lin Feng, indeed, it was him.

The force abruptly vanished. Na Lan Hai hadn’t expected that the one who had offended Na Lan Feng would be the person at the focus of all the rumors: Lin Feng.

Na Lan Hai obviously knew all these rumors were not true. Not so long before, he had witnessed Lin Feng’s strength with his own eyes in the Whistle Wind Restaurant. Not only was he strong but he was also ruthless and showed no mercy to those who offended

him, not caring about their background. Maybe strong and ruthless were not the right words, it was more like he was actually a monster in human form, he wasn't strong or ruthless, it was just his nature to overpower and kill weaker animals.

Na Lan Hai had also heard that Lin Feng's father had been expelled from the Lin Clan. However, he hadn't heard that it was because Lin Ba Dao was extremely strong but because it had required the Honorable Elder to stop him from exterminating the clan. He had also heard that Lin Feng made a shocking display of power and it had required an elder and two disciples of the Ling Qi Layer to stop him.

"Get lost." said Lin Feng in an ice cold tone which sent shivers down Na Lan Hai's spine. Lin Feng was exactly as he had imagined, he was terrifying. Lin Feng's words cut him like a knife and the thought of angering Lin Feng had made Na Lan Hai take a step back.

"Na Lan Hai, Are you not attacking yet?" said the young girl wearing light green robes seeing that Na Lan Hai hadn't crippled Lin Feng's cultivation yet and had instead stepped back. She couldn't help but be furious at the events. Not only did it seem that Na Lan Hai hadn't heard what she was saying but he had also turned around and said: "Let's leave, quickly!" While saying these words, he immediately started to leave.

"Is it Na Lan Feng who asked you to come?" asked Lin Feng in a cold and detached tone which made Na Lan Hai slow down in his retreat. He didn't reply. He continued to walk and pulled the young girl wearing light green robes as a sign that he wanted her to

leave as well. Lin Feng smiled inside. It was very clear to Lin Feng at that moment what had happened. Those people who thought so highly of themselves, once finding out his identity, they didn't dare attack. Even if they still looked dominant, were they still talking with the same arrogant tone as before? Lin Feng hurried to drain his cup in one gulp and stood up. He then put on his black rain cape and a straw hat then immediately left. The entire crowd had only looked at his figure as he confidently walked out unharmed.

The crowd in the Whistle Wind Restaurant looked at that strange young man. They had so many questions they wanted to ask him.

“Who is that young man who made the arrogant Na Lan Hai retreat and look scared?” asked people in the crowd. They had thought Lin Feng would die. They hadn't expected that his opponent would cower upon the sight of him. Na Lan Hai's expression when looking at Lin Feng had obviously been one of complete terror. His actions showed that he did not dare provoke that young boy.

“Na Lan Hai, what was that?” asked the girl in light green robes while furiously shaking Na Lan Hai's hand off of her.

“That was Lin Feng.” replied Na Lan Hai.

“The piece of trash of the Lin Clan?”

“Lu Er, what piece of trash of the Lin Clan? Do you believe all these lies? Do you really believe he was expelled from the Lin Clan

for being weak? According to what we know from our clan reports, Lin Feng made Lin Wu crawl down on the ground like a worm. He had almost killed Lin Hong, who has broken through to the Ling Qi layer. Lin Qian interrupted the fight and with both their powers they could not stop Lin Feng's attack. If it wasn't for an Elder who interrupted the fight, Lin Hong would have already taken his last breath."

"What? Are you saying that he was able to defeat Lin Hong who has broken through to the Ling Qi layer? How is that even possible? You must be mistaken" said the young girl.

"Everything I'm telling you is absolutely true. If you don't believe me, wait a moment, we can ask the young Miss." said Na Lan Hai with a wry smile on his face. Before seeing Lin Feng at the Whistle Wind restaurant the last time, he would have also thought that those were all fake rumors about Lin Feng, that he was only a piece of trash, the disgrace and shame of the Lin Clan. He would have thought the rumors were spread by the other clans to cause the Lin Clan to lose face. However, he had eventually found out that those rumors were voluntarily spread by some Lin Clan members who had witnessed the events. It was clear that Lin Ba Dao had spread counter rumors to achieve his own goals. Lin Hai had also been wrong about his son. He did not know that Lin Feng wasn't the same weak willed and cowardly person that he was before. Lin Feng walked out of the Whistle Wind Restaurant and jumped onto Qian Li Xue, He didn't travel very far from the restaurant. He went to an inn which was near the Whistle Wind Restaurant. He went to an inn because he couldn't go back to the Lin Clan and had nowhere else he could stay. There was no other place to stay in Yangzhou City other than an inn.

He immediately selected one of the best rooms: spacious and quiet. So that nobody would disturb him. He sat down and immediately started to meditate. He could feel a hunger within his body after suffering that near fatal wound. It was as if his body was yearning for more power and the strength to rule over all. He only needed more power and then no one could treat him the way they had treated him and his father. With their own strength, Lin Feng and Lin Hai would make their own reputation and crush those who had belittled them in the past.

One day, Lin Feng would make the Lin Clan members regret the treatment they had given him and his father at the annual meeting. Lin Feng would make the Lin Clan regret from the bottom of their hearts, he would make them wish they could change their actions. With his own strength he would have his revenge and that day, was not that far in the future.

Chapter 41: Assassins

In the room, Lin Feng was sitting on his bed while meditating peacefully. Lin Feng had released his dark spirit and was focused on absorbing the Qi which he gathered around himself. His sense of hearing when in this state was far above ordinary cultivators. If he wanted to then he could even hear what was being said back in the restaurant. This was because of his concentration and his dark spirit which was amplifying all of his senses. The Qi of heaven and earth was uninterruptedly penetrating into Lin Feng's body. A faintly discernible white light had appeared. The Qi felt like a strong wind which could turn into a typhoon at any point. It was his Qi which was growing strong to the peak of the Ninth Qi Layer.

He was waiting to overcome the bottleneck and have a surge of power once again rush into him, and then Lin Feng could break through to the Ling Qi layer. He would be able to kill those who opposed him much easier than before, with his skills and technique, he could even kill a ninth Qi layer disciple without them even noticing anything. At that moment, some shadows outside were approaching the inn, it was clear that they were headed directly towards the inn. The group immediately entered into the inn unnoticed, using an incredible agility technique, which made them look like ghosts walking through the crowd. They were all carrying a bow which was made from ox horns. The strength of these bows was extraordinary. Cultivators of the Qi layer would gain a huge amount of power from using these ox horn bows.

“He's in room number 2. It's best not to disturb him. That would be too troublesome. Let's handle this as quietly as possible” Said one of the shadows who was standing outside of the group. The shadow was holding a feathered fan in their hand. They all quickly

moved towards room number 2. No one within the inn had even noticed their presence.

A short instant after, about ten shadows had appeared in front of the door to room number 2. They were extremely agile and graceful, almost no sound could be heard from their movements. Almost nobody could hear them, the only person who was aware of them was Lin Feng who had noticed them before they had even arrived at the inn. The strength of the shadows varied from person to person and it was impossible to tell their strengths from a glance.

“shish shish shish.” The shadows had grabbed their bows off of their backs, they then with as little sound as possible knocked an arrow into the bow and drew the bowstring back.

“FIRE!!”

“Pssshhh, Pssshhh, Pssshhh.” The sounds of the arrows piercing through wood filled the air within the inn, causing many people to suddenly notice the sound. These arrows were so powerful that they broke the wooden door open completely and within the room there was a ‘thump’ followed by a rolling noise.

“Let’s go!” shouted one of them taking the lead to charge into the room and check the results of what had just happened.

When they entered the room however, there was not a soul in sight. The wooden bed of extremely high quality had been damaged by the arrows. In the bed was a human shaped figure

which was made from various materials, but there was nobody there. Two of the shadows took the initiative to move farther into the room while remaining vigilant at all times. Suddenly, a whistling sound of a sword cutting through the air could be heard followed by a terrifying thunderous roar. All that could be seen within the darkness was a set of ruthless and bloodthirsty eyes staring towards the shadows. Cold silver light flashed through the air, it was a sword. Thunderous roars echoed within the air. Two horrifying screams could be heard from inside the room. The two shadows which had initially moved deeper into the room had come back into vision. This time they were corpses rolling along the ground, back towards the group.

At the moment when these people entered into the inn, Lin Feng already knew that they were here. He originally paid them little attention and could not care for what their business was. He was in a trance like state in the middle of his practice. When he heard them arrive in front of his room, he had quickly regained his senses and understood the situation. It seemed like they were coming to kill him. Lin Feng had been hiding inside the room, away from the door as to not be hit by arrows. He had been leaning against the wall. He had chosen the wall which was a dead angle, so there was no chance of using a bow to strike him there. It was also impossible for the others to see him from outside. That was also very convenient as he could ambush the enemy from within the darkness. When Lin Feng had seen the power and strength of the arrow which had penetrated into the room, Lin Feng had considered himself very lucky to have noticed them first. If Lin Feng hadn't hidden within that dead angle, he would have been immediately shot dead by the arrows.

But while considering his good luck, Lin Feng's heart was also filled with killing intent. His body was overflowing with a

murderous aura which made him seem like an ancient mythical beast. That's why he had immediately killed two people, he could not suppress the urge to kill. It was almost as if there was a demon waiting in the shadows.

“Come, my sword has not tasted enough blood yet!” said a bloodthirsty voice from within the darkness.

Lin Feng gripped his sword tightly again and suddenly his figure had completely vanished. Two screams were heard from outside the room. Lin Feng had used his Moonlight Feather Agility to move outside and kill two of the assassins who felt safe outside. As the other assassins outside of the room looked at what had just happened with horrified expressions, Lin Feng used the opportunity to jump out of the window.

“Chase after him.” Shouted one of the assassins taking the lead while clearly angry at the situation.

Like wild beasts they jumped out of the window, each having a bloodthirsty look on their face. It was a rainy night and it was unnaturally dark as the clouds blocked even the moonlight. If cultivators didn't have such amazing sight, they would hardly be able to see the road, especially when running at full speed. However, it didn't influence Lin Feng at all. Thanks to his dark spirit, he had amazing senses which were above others at his level. His five senses were extremely sharp and acute. He was able to see the road as clearly as he did during the day. The people following him were growing closer and closer with each second. The noise of their feet stamping on the wet ground had filled the air. The group was extremely large for just one person.

“Whoosh”

The arrow flew past Lin Feng with a buzzing sound. Not far from his ear, the air itself was torn apart by the force created from the arrow. “The one who just shot that arrow has reached the ninth Qi layer. His power is comparable to that of Liu Fei. They are all far from being weak.” Lin Feng thought while a shiver ran down his spine. Liu Fei was at the ninth Qi layer and she was extremely strong. Besides, she also had an extremely strong arrow spirit. Mentioning how strong her arrows were was pointless, it was obvious to anyone who had experienced them. On top of that, those following Lin Feng had a power comparable to that of Liu Fei. They were powerful and very well trained.

Lin Feng would have never thought that some people would come to kill him in the middle of the night, why would they want to take his life?

“whoosh, whoosh”

Another two arrows flew past his head. He was less and less convinced that he would be able to keep avoiding the arrows if this continued. Not only were these people extremely strong but it also seemed that they had received intensive archery training. Their shooting accuracy was extremely high. If there was one flaw in his footwork, if he gave them one opportunity, a single arrow could kill Lin Feng.

“It won’t work this way. If I continue like this, I’ll end up

exhausted without any strength left and they will be able to finish me easily.” thought Lin Feng while avoiding another arrow. He was feeling hopeless. Actually, all these people seemed to be at the ninth Qi layer. Besides, they could use their bows to the point of perfection and they were working with each other in perfect harmony. It even seemed like they were moving in formation. Even if Lin Feng is better at using agility techniques than them, it seems impossible for him to break away from that group of assassins. Lin Feng’s feet were splashing in the wet mud and his robes had become covered in a layer of mud. It was still raining heavily like before. Lin Feng’s robes were completely soaked. Lin Feng dodged quickly to the side to avoid another arrow. He then suddenly stopped and then turned around in the blink of an eye. Revealing his messy appearance.

“Moonlight Feather Agility.”

“Die.” In a flash, not only did Lin Feng stop running away, but he also used his agility technique to go back in the direction of his pursuers. Lin Feng skillfully wielded his sword which flashed in the darkness, roaring thunder could be heard vibrating through the atmosphere and merging with the heavy rain in perfect harmony. Blood had started to flow onto the ground, the rainwater on the ground was turning red with blood . The shadows that were running towards Lin Feng had been sliced through without consideration. Five of the assassins had been beheaded by Lin Feng in one smooth strike. The remaining assassins quickly retreated 10 meters. Their careful eyes were staring at Lin Feng. They were still very vigilant. They were all young and since the beginning of the battle, Lin Feng had already killed a large number of them.

Lin Feng watched the group’s movements through the raindrops.

One of those people was wearing a black rain cape and was holding a folding fan in his hand. "Na... Lan... Hai..." Lin Feng looked at him with an ice cold glare. That folding fan, that was a fan he remembered, Na Lan Hai's fan.

He glanced at all of them, smiled coldly and said: "So many outstanding practitioners, only a few clans have such outstanding people in Yangzhou City but considering how many have come for me, is there really anyone outstanding within such a clan?"

Na Lan Hai, was calmly standing in the middle of the group when he heard these words, he couldn't help but roar furiously:

"They all say that Lin Hai's son of the Lin Clan is a piece of trash. The Lin Feng that I know is not a piece of trash, he is a real genius, able to adapt to all sorts of situations, he is also very smart and resourceful... Too bad that..."

"Too bad that.... What?" Said Lin Feng

"Too bad that you are a true genius, but nobody will ever know." Na Lan Hai said with an evil grin: "Even if you're a genius, it will be of no use once you're dead. With your death the smudge on Na Lan Feng's reputation will be gone."

"So Na Lan Feng hates me because of a minor incident, because I pointed out her mistakes? So she has sent the mighty troops of Yangzhou City to chase and kill me in secret?" Lin Feng's tone of voice was clearly mocking them. These people were all well trained. They were not ordinary cultivators. When Lin Feng

looked at them carefully again, he clearly understood that they were the troops of Yangzhou City.

There was one thing that Lin Feng didn't understand though. Na Lan Feng had been the first one to disrespect and disregard Lin Feng, that is why he had made her lose face. However was that insult worth her mobilizing the city troops to kill him? It seemed like Lin Feng hadn't anticipated that Na Lan Feng would use her status and power to have him disposed of in secret.

“Do you know how honorable and respectable Princess Na Lan is? She holds an extremely high status. Do you think that you have the right to humiliate her? Even if you die, it will not be enough of a punishment for having disrespected Princess Na Lan.” Na Lan Hai said in a loud voice with an indifferent tone, as if everything he had said was perfectly logical.

“Princess Na Lan? Honorable and respectable?” Lin Feng grinned. Even if she was the Yangzhou City head's daughter, it also didn't give her the right to be that arrogant and conceited. Lin Feng wouldn't have thought that Na Lan Feng would stoop so low as to use her father's power to settle a small and petty grudge. She saw Lin Feng as nothing but an ant, her personality was just as rotten as Lin Qian.

“You want to kill me? Shall we get started ...” Lin Feng's dark spirit appeared behind his back. In the middle of that spirit, the spirit had no Qi and made no sound, many had not even noticed that he had released his spirit. Lin Feng had to pay attention to each and every attack as each one would be lethal, a small mistake would cost him his life. Lin Feng's dark spirit seemed to look

around as if it had its own set of eyes. Lin Feng could sense everything that was surrounding him, including the ground beneath his feet. Nothing could escape from Lin Feng's senses at that moment, he could sense even the slightest of movements within the air.

“Whoosh”

An arrow flew past Lin Feng's ear, so close it had almost hit. Lin Feng wasn't really surprised and had dodged it with ease which made the one who shot the arrow look slightly shocked. In the darkness of the night, his eyes were calm and murderous, he looked like a fierce beast gazing at its prey.

Chapter 42: Darkness of the Night

Lin Feng had released his dark spirit and he was not aware of how sinister he looked at that moment. He was calm and calculating, staring with eyes filled with no emotion. The practitioner who fired the arrow was stunned at such a terrifying gaze. Lin Feng seemed calm and at the same time murderous, under such a situation how was it possible to be so calm?

Lin Feng took a step forward and used Moonlight Feather Agility. Lin Feng was instantly in front of a group of people, making them unable to use their bows at such a close distance.

The long sword as it sliced through the air made a terrible wailing noise. Lin Feng was thrusting his sword towards them and each strike was more precise than the last. With every movement he was dodging an attack and blocking another with his sword. Everyone was furious. He was not only dodging their attack calmly, but he had also killed so many of them already... now they could not use their bows, they were slowly being pushed back.

“Release your spirits and kill him.” shouted Na Lan Hai furiously but he could not help but subconsciously retreat. As Lin Feng had arrived right in front of them, he was the most terrified of all, when he looked into Lin Feng’s eyes he could see overwhelming murderous intent, but even more terrifying was how calm and composed he was. Na Lan Hai’s heart was pounding, his entire body was shaking with fear. When everyone heard Na Lan Hai, they all moved forwards and released their spirits. The night was exceptionally dark tonight but releasing that many spirits immediately lit the area with prismatic light.

An assassin with a vine spirit had managed to sneak behind Lin Feng. That spirit gave its cultivator a body that was flexible and strong. When the strength of its cultivator had become high enough, he could use his vine spirit to constrict enemies. The cultivator's body would become like a vine, it would be almost boneless and was able to change forms.

He was surrounded by vines that were spreading and extending throughout the atmosphere. It didn't seem to follow a precise trajectory, but was wild and untamed. When the cultivator saw that his hand was almost upon Lin Feng, a hideous grin appeared on his face. Immediately after, when the assassin seemed to be so proud of himself, a silver light appeared in the air and pierced him in the eye and through the back of his skull. His body was supported by the sword which simply tilted downwards and the assassin's head slid down the sword, until it was completely removed.

The sword strike was so precise, so quick and so flawless that it was scary. There was not a single ounce of wasted energy or unnecessary movement. He had killed that cultivator in a single strike, in such a terrifying way. The scariest part was that Lin Feng still remained calm as he watched the impaled head slide off his sword.

Lin Feng didn't stop and instead used this to his advantage to attack. Lin Feng's sword was streaking across the night sky like a meteor. Another stream of blood splashed in the air, another person fell down dead. As the moonlight pierced the clouds and the dark night was illuminated, it seemed like a world of blood.

These cultivators were all at the eighth and ninth Qi layers. Each time Lin Feng attacked, it was almost impossible for them to dodge a single strike as Lin Feng's speed and accuracy were beyond perfect. They could do nothing to resist such a monster.

“WHOOOM.” a heavy meteor like object was crashing through the air towards Lin Feng's head. If he allowed himself to be hit, he might not die, but he would be unable to win this fight and would be killed because of that. His life was balancing on a thin line.

“You think I will let you dodge?” At the moment when Lin Feng was attempting to dodge, a spear was piercing through the air and blocking his escape, the spear was amazingly powerful. He was being attacked from the front and the rear simultaneously. This was a strategy developed through battle and targeting Lin Feng's certain death.

“Die.”

Lin Feng shouted loudly, then he threw his long sword with incredible speed, the sword pierced through the air and finally plummeted deep into the spear wielding opponent's chest. The assassin stood there with disbelieving eyes as he looked down to see the sword piercing through his chest. He felt like it must be a nightmare, this could not possibly be reality. He had never thought that Lin Feng would dare to dispose of weapon and use it to kill one of the attackers. Lin Feng was at the ninth Qi layer and was much stronger than each of them. However, he was clearly outnumbered by a great deal. Only one of them needed to reach Lin Feng and he would be severely injured. These injuries could even cost Lin

Feng's life. Lin Feng should be vigilant and very defensive, however he had just risked his life on that last gamble. Lin Feng had thrown away his sword for the sake of killing another one of the group. It was terrifying to witness such disregard for his own life, with such a calm and calculating face.

The one with the sword deep in his chest was just staring at Lin Feng. These were his last moments and he wanted to watch how Lin Feng was going to die as the meteor crashed into his head.

“Swish” Silence filled the atmosphere. Lin Feng was holding a luminous sword. The meteor still hadn't reached its destination. Instead the cultivator with the meteor spirit, his head had been sent flying in the air, completely removed from his body. Lin Feng was using his soft sword and at this moment he was drenched in blood. “This is my fate.” his opponent closed his eyes and his body collapsed onto the ground with a loud crash. The head of the one who had been beheaded a moment before fell down from the air onto the ground. Everyone looked on, frozen as if time had just stopped. They were asking themselves who could have survived that last sword strike.

Sword Unsheathing. At the moment when the sword was unsheathed, the opponents head was sent flying. How could Cultivators of the ninth Qi layer compete with a strength and power such as that produced by the Sword Unsheathing skill?

The opponents had forgotten to attack but Lin Feng didn't forget. Flashes of light one after the other appeared as Lin Feng slashed through the air. Each light was accompanied by a stream of blood. The current scenery was a landscape of blood. Each strike with his

sword reached its target, not a single movement was wasted. Each strike was precise and deadly. At that moment, Lin Feng had forgot the meaning of mercy. Apart from being calm, as he bathed in this world of blood and took life after life, he could only feel indifferent. Na Lan Hai looked at each corpse as it fell to the ground, body after body was falling to the ground in a rain of blood. He was shaking and his mind had wanted to run but his legs were too weak. Each body represented a cultivator above the eight Qi Layer and there was now dozens of those bodies scattered on the ground. They represented the strong potential in Yangzhou City and particularly in the clan which controlled the city. At that moment, they were all lying dead on the ground and had fallen as easily as straw. They had all been killed one after the other by Lin Feng. All these people were supporters of Na Lan Hai and had contributed to his success. Lin Feng had killed so much talent belonging to his clan, it was a devastating blow.

What was it that made Lin Feng's sword so deadly? What was it in Lin Feng's eyes that scared Na Lan Hai so much? Was it because he looked so calm? It looked like Lin Feng was used to slaughtering people as if they were cattle. The whistling sound of his sword cutting through the air was getting more and more intense to the point that with each whistle it seemed like the rain had stopped making sounds. The entire atmosphere was filled with the sword Qi and there was no room for anything else. The extremely strong Qi was also getting more and more powerful with each strike.

“RUN!!” Na Lan Hai who was scared beyond belief had somehow come back into reality. Na Lan Hai had only one thought: get him and his clan as far away from that demon as possible. Without the least bit of hesitation, Na Lan Hai turned around and started running. “You want to leave now...? Don't you think it's a bit too late?” said a cold voice that seemed like the darkness itself

speaking. The sound of the sword attacking suddenly stopped. Only the sound of Lin Feng's steps on the wet ground could still be heard.

“Splash”

“Splash”

“Splash”

Na Lan Hai stopped walking and turned around. He was staring face to face with Lin Feng. His face was twisted and ugly. He was trying to smile but tears rolled down his cheeks and whimpers escaped his mouth.

“Lin Feng, you know that this has nothing to do with me. It was the young Miss who ordered us to kill you. I only acted under orders as it is my duty, nothing more.”

“I know.” Said Lin Feng while nodding which made Na Lan Hai suddenly regain hope. “That is why I must put the dog out of its misery, otherwise it will continue to be forced to do these things by its master” Immediately after, Na Lan Hai saw a bright silver light flash through the air and it was the last thing he saw. His head had been cleanly removed from his body.

When Lin Feng saw Na Lan Hai collapse, he remained expressionless. He turned around and saw the piles of corpses. There were dozens upon dozens of corpses lying on the ground.

The soil had been dyed red with the blood spilt. He did not have time to stop, instead he started walking into the distance.

“Na Lan Feng.”

A low voice echoed through the darkness of the night and it seemed like the darkness was moving.

Lin Feng didn't know how long he had been walking. He arrived in a territory under nobody's control. He sat in meditation on the ground. His body was absorbing the Qi of heaven and earth and releasing it from his body at the same time. The Qi around Lin Feng's body turned into a glowing essence. That essence surrounded his body like an aura. His dark spirit was thrashing around. Lin Feng knew that he was about to break through to the Ling Qi layer. It was said that the spirit is a part of one's soul. The soul could provide many unique abilities. While sitting on the ground, Lin Feng's eyebrows strongly shook. At that moment, Lin Feng had a very strange feeling but he was unable to describe it. It was as if something was calling out to him. At that moment, Lin Feng felt a strong pain throughout his body. He knew that the most dangerous moment had arrived.

Only those with an extremely strong determination were able to make their spirit awaken. Everybody knew that on the continent, without an extremely strong willpower and determination, the spirit could not awaken. The pain became stronger and stronger. Lin Feng felt like his soul was being torn into pieces, slice by slice, piece by piece. Lin Feng was suffering so much that he bit his lips so hard that blood began to flow.

“So painful, how can it be so painful?” Lin Feng had underestimated the moment of the spirit awakening. He would have never thought that it would be so painful. He had nearly died in the past. The pain that he had endured before was nothing in comparison with that of the spirit awakening. This pain was inhumane. It gradually stopped raining but Lin Feng did not notice. Lin Feng was still soaked but he wasn’t sure if it was because of the rain or because of the sweat. He only knew that his body was in agonizing pain.

“AHHHHH” shouted Lin Feng extremely loudly. The pain hadn’t stopped. An even stronger pain invaded his body. The soul was being torn apart even more than before. It made him wish he could die and end his suffering.

“If I am unable to endure this pain, my spirit will never awaken. I will have to continue being bullied by others like when my father and I had to leave the Lin Clan. Lin Qian or the Na Lan clan will continue to make attempts on my life. These repeated humiliations were unbearable. One person can only take so much humiliation and regret.” Lin Feng persevered and kept thinking about his Father and the humiliation he received. Nobody could stop him at that moment, nobody could prevent him from becoming stronger, not even the gods. The pain was unable to make Lin Feng lose hope and determination. It seemed like Lin Feng’s willpower was actually willing the pain away. Lin Feng also became more relaxed in his heart. His spirit should be able to awaken without any problem.

“AAAA.....AAAAAHHHHH!!” Lin Feng gave a shout with unprecedented brutality. Lin Feng was suddenly shaking from head to foot. A pain infinitely stronger than what he had

previously gone through until that moment invaded his body. It made Lin Feng close his eyes and grit his teeth. The seven apertures of Lin Feng's head, eyes, ears, nostrils and mouth were all bleeding.

“FUCK!! NOO! I cannot go like this!!!” Lin Feng cursed. Immediately after, Lin Feng collapsed lifelessly on the floor.

Chapter 43: Spirit Awakening

Lin Feng had fallen into a dream like state. In this dream state his soul had drifted from his body. His soul was floating through the endless darkness, it seemed like a world made only of darkness.

In this dark world, there was no sign of life. Lin Feng didn't know how long his soul had been trapped inside the darkness. There was only a single light within the darkness, it was a small radiant light which had fascinated him.

“What an amazing light!” The more Lin Feng approached that light, the brighter and the more gorgeous it became. He found out that the light was stretching through the infinite darkness and it was impossible to reach. The light had formed a spiral above his head and became a very familiar shape, it shaped itself as a book. It seemed like the Qi of the entire universe was within this book and had been there since the creation of the universe. This book had seemed to contain all of the information of the entire universe since the beginning of time itself. Lin Feng stared at the book as if it was a precious gift which had been given to him by the universe, his eyes were radiating a fascinated light. When Lin Feng opened the book and looked inside, he found endless words streaming through the pages. The stream of words began to flow off the page and into Lin Feng's body, it seemed like all of the information recorded within the book was being absorbed into Lin Feng's body.

“BOOM!”

A sound rang through the air, it had sounded like Lin Feng's body had exploded from the amount of information being absorbed

through his skin. Lin Feng couldn't help but powerlessly sit down on the ground. He had returned from the world of darkness and was sat down on the floor. The night was still dark and the rain was heavily pouring from the sky, it had seemed like almost no time had passed while he was inside that darkness. How could he find that magnificent book which contained such information? How could he return the sacred and magnificent light within the darkness?

“Phewww... Phewww...” Lin Feng was breathing heavily. His body was shaking from the pain, his body had long passed the limit for how much pain he could endure. However he was still alive and thanks to that pain, he had seen a world of darkness which seemed to contain the secrets of the universe.

When Lin Feng had been suffering from torture a moment before, he had really thought he was going to die from the pain of having his soul shredded. The pain was beyond any he had ever felt in this world, how could a human being endure such a pain? The pain had been so severe that he had actually collapsed and almost died.

“Do other people have to go through such a pain and agony when they try to awaken their spirit?” Lin Feng was looking at the deep into the darkness of the night. He did not understand how so many people had awakened their spirit through so much pain, he had actually believed for a moment that he had died. Even though Lin Feng didn't think that he was gifted or talented, he did have some confidence in his own will power. He could not help but think how people with less will power than himself could even endure half the pain which had struck his body. When his spirit was attempting to awaken, he was filled with three phases of endless

pain which invaded his body and shredded his soul. Each time he was stuck by the pain, it was more intense and terrifying than before. During the final phase, the pain was so terrifying that his body had actually collapsed, while his mind could endure, his body had collapsed from the pain. Thanks to his determination and infinite willpower, he had been able to endure the pain for much longer than his body should have been able. That is why he hadn't immediately collapsed and instead he had started to bleed from his ears, eyes, nose and mouth.

“Maybe, the moment when the spirit awakens is a different experience for every person. Maybe it was only like this for me because of my spirit.” While saying his thoughts out loud, Lin Feng's heart started pounding and he released his spirit. Lin Feng suddenly had an indescribable sensation. His surroundings seemed to have completely changed. Lin Feng wasn't in the same place any longer, instead he had returned to the world of darkness. This time however he could feel his surroundings and was much more aware of everything around him. He had the faint sense that he could see and hear everything around him, even though it was all in darkness. He could sense the grass as it swayed from the wind that was blowing. He could sense every raindrop as it fell heavily onto the ground. He had become extremely calm and he began to sense everything around him. He continued to move around and sense the changes. He did not know how much he had changed or how powerful his senses were at this point, but it seemed that at this moment he had become omniscient. He could sense everything in the world around him, it was all part of him.

What was even more shocking to Lin Feng was that he was able to see everything, however the eyes he was using did not look like his own eyes. They were terrifying eyes which did not look human. He could not help but tremble when looking into the eyes,

what a scary feeling they gave. "Dark... spirit." Lin Feng realized his brain was much faster than before and he could comprehend things more clearly than before. The power of his spirit was almost scary to him. It seemed like his power was as infinite as the darkness around him. His heart started pounding again. A colossal shadow had emerged from his back. The shadow itself was shaped as a spiral. On the top of the shadow, there was a magnificent and sacred looking book in suspension. The book began to open.

"Is this a spirit?" Lin Feng had a questioning look in his eyes. It seemed like that shadow was able to influence Lin Feng's spirit which he had released into the darkness. Everything seemed to be so clear. The scene looked just like in his dream: an endless darkness, and within that darkness was a bright light. The book had appeared and was floating quietly above his head. In Lin Feng's memories, a spirit which could be released twice didn't exist. It was as if that spirit had two layers which could be released. The first layer was a shadow which merged with the world itself and created the world of darkness. The second layer was a celestial book. Lin Feng had thought that his spirit had initially failed to fully awaken. But not only did it seem that it hadn't failed, but that it also had gone beyond common knowledge.

"Celestial book... A book spirit..." Lin Feng didn't know what kind of spirit he had at that moment. In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, there was an infinite amount of skills and spirits. The awakening of a spirit also constituted a considerable change. There weren't many people who could fully understand the mysteries of spirits. They only knew that there were a lot of different spirits which would all be different once awakened, depending on the person who had awakened the spirit. The book spirit was a mysterious and mystical one, Lin Feng was in awe. Its strength didn't reside in releasing attacks or protecting him during a fight.

It was inefficient in both offence and defense but those who possessed a book spirit could write down unusual things within the book. These unusual and extraordinary things could greatly influence the cultivation speed of those who possessed such a spirit.

“Oh my god...” Lin Feng sighed. Suddenly, within the dark pupils shone two radiant silver lights, it looked like the sun was shining within these dark eyes. It happened for short moment and then the silver lights disappeared. Lin Feng was thinking deeply. These small lights meant that the first page of the book had been opened. It seemed like he had been granted magical powers by the universe.

“I will call you my celestial spirit.” Lin Feng whispered. His spirit gradually dissipated and Lin Feng’s eyes became normal again. His eyes returned to normal and the terrifying darkness had left. He could see clearly and normally. He only had a strange sensation remaining on his back. He turned his head, a white colored Qi was still flowing from his body endlessly. Lin Feng could use the Qi heaven and earth as he wished, he could create a shocking power with this Qi. Lin Feng had broken through to the Ling Qi layer. After the awakening of his dark spirit which was the first layer, he was able to release the second layer of his celestial spirit. Even though his small snake spirit hadn’t been able to awaken, Lin Feng was still extremely satisfied.

Releasing the first layer of his celestial spirit would be enough to greatly increase his strength. The second layer, his book spirit, would provide him with support which would benefit him on his path of cultivation and it did not require being released for him to gain the benefits.

“First Ling Qi layer... From now on, I am unstoppable.” thought Lin Feng confidently while smiling. He could feel how terrifying the changes were within his dark spirit. The first layer of his celestial spirit was his dark spirit, but its power was terrifying. From that moment, if Lin Feng met Lin Qian, he would have no problem defeating her. Even if Lin Qian was extremely arrogant, she still had an ice and fire universal spirit, but it was nothing when compared with his dark spirit. It was still raining but the sun had started to rise on the horizon. Some rays of sunlight had started passing through the atmosphere. Lin Feng stood up and looked at his clothes which were soaked from the rain. He couldn't help but smile. Sitting outside all night had been an insane experience. Lin Feng raised his head and gazed into the distance and he thought about what had happened during the night when he had ruthlessly slaughtered dozens of cultivators back in the city. If he had been a little bit weaker, he would have died in a tragic death.

“Na Lan Clan of Yangzhou City, Na Lan Feng, you will sooner rather than later, regret what you did last night.” Lin Feng stood up and started walking.

Chapter 44: Audacious!

In Yangzhou City, on City Avenue there was a huge crowd gathered. The atmosphere was extremely lively and noisy.

“Six people, plus Qiu Lan... there is still one spot left. That’s much too scary. Each and every one of them is extremely strong. I will definitely take the final spot” said a young man in the crowd confidently.

“In your dreams... They already chose the eighth one; it’s Feng Qian. Feng Qian is at the ninth Qi layer. He’s much stronger than anyone else within the clan. A moment ago, he didn’t insist on participating but that’s just that he didn’t feel like it... He has now made his move because he was annoyed that he was not selected sooner. How could you possibly fight against Feng Qian?” Said the person standing beside him.

“Scary.” Said the young man

When the young man heard the name “Feng Qian”, his face changed in a flash. He felt extremely depressed. It seemed that this time, the Clan head wasn’t going to choose him. The Na Lan Clan had always organized an annual tournament, however this year, apart from the four biggest clans, and external clans who were not located in Yangzhou City, outstanding disciples belonging to other small clans could also participate. However, these small clans were only allowed to send eight disciples to participate in the tournament. On the same basis, the clans within the city, the Na Lan Clan, the Gu Clan, the Lin Clan and the Wen Clan were also allowed a maximum of eight disciples. These disciples were

supposed to represent the most outstanding disciples of Yangzhou City. This had made participating in the tournament a real honor and privilege which would allow outstanding disciples of all clans to show their abilities to a large number of people.

Unfortunately for some people, the Na Lan Clan as well as the other three big clans had already chosen their participants. Qiu Lan was chosen as one of the participants, because she was extremely strong. At that moment, there were already seven people which meant the clan had to choose one last disciple and this position in the tournament was most likely to be Feng Qian.

Feng Qian was wearing blue robes. He was slim and had an arrogant look on his face. At that moment, he had arms folded over his chest as he walked out of the crowd and said in a cold and detached way: "That last participant is me."

When people saw how arrogant he looked, they could not help but be filled with hatred and regret. Some of the younger generation wanted to duel with him and measure themselves against him but considering his strength, they had to be careful. It seemed like they were only going to be able to watch as members of the audience. Feng Qian looked at the several hundreds of people who were present with a look of disdain.

"So many pieces of trash. They are all cowards. No wonder they were not chosen and I'm the one who was chosen to participate." Said Feng Qian in a spiteful tone as he started to head towards the main hall. In the main hall, there were already seven people sitting in a calm state. These were precisely Qiu Lan as well as the six others who had been chosen to participate.

“That guy is really as arrogant as the rumors say.”

“They say that he is extremely cruel to all of his opponents and will even use diabolic methods to win.”

“Who would dare challenge him? The consequences of challenging him would only be disastrous.”

“He would probably cripple their Cultivation.”

Said the many people in the crowd. Even though many people hated Feng Qian, nobody dared open their mouth. Feng Qian was savage and cruel. Amongst people of the Qi layer, there were very few people who could defeat him which made him even more arrogant and prideful, he enjoyed bullying those weaker than him.

The people within the crowd had no choice but to look at him join the others in the main hall.

“Wait, wait, wait.” said a loud voice. In the quiet crowd, that voice was particularly clear and loud. The crowd was surprised for a moment and then they could see a young man approaching from the distance. This young man was wearing white robes. Even though his robes didn’t look expensive, he looked clean and pure from head to toe. He was carrying a long sword on his back. His body was looked sturdy but gentle. The crowd found him fascinating. He looked as limpid as water. He gave an aura of mystery to all those who laid eyes on him.

His clear eyes were filled with deep profound understanding. His appearance and age did not seem to match with his wisdom. When people in the crowd saw him, they were gasping with admiration and had a feeling of inferiority in his presence.

The young man who had appeared was actually Lin Feng after having had a shower and changed his clothes. After having asked around, he had quickly learnt that there was a selection for the upcoming tournament happening and he quickly hurried to the location.

Feng Qian looked at Lin Feng, his arms still folded over his chest. He looked at Lin Feng in a disdainful way while grinning and said.

“You are telling me to wait?”

“Indeed.” Said Lin Feng looking like he didn’t understand Feng Qian’s expression. He indifferently nodded.

Feng Qian was still grinning and then looked at Lin Feng as if he had compassion for him, even though Lin Feng was a few years younger than him. He then smiled and said: “Do you know the consequences for making me wait?”

Lin Feng smiled wryly and was a bit surprised. On the path of cultivation, there were many people who were talented and thought they were geniuses. It seemed like those kinds of people liked to show off their powers against those weaker than themselves, as if they were playing a role which had to appear

noble and strong. It had become clear to him that people in this world would continue to play these roles and act foolishly for the sake of appearances.

Lin Feng started walking towards Feng Qian with complete calmness on his face.

The crowd was wondering what was going on and started to watch Lin Feng. Was that guy insane? He was about sixteen years so he could have only reached the seventh or eighth Qi layer, yet he still thought he could compete with Feng Qian who belonged to one of the most powerful of the small clans in Yangzhou City and he was even considered a genius. That young guy wanted to challenge Feng Qian... but only the most talented, the most gifted and the most outstanding disciples of Yangzhou City could compete with him. How could this unknown young man possibly fit that criteria.

“It looks like you also want to enter into the main hall. I really don’t know if I should admire you for your courage, but what you’re doing is extremely foolish... however since you want to challenge me, I will cripple your cultivation for being foolish enough to think you are worthy to stand on the same level as me.” said Feng Qian clearly directing his hatred towards Lin Feng.

“Shiiing!”

The metallic sound of a sword cutting through the air filled the atmosphere and a bright light filled the space in front of Feng Qian. Immediately after, Feng Qian fell down onto the ground and began to roll around while groaning. Blood was pouring out of his

mouth. He was coughing heavily and more blood was filling his mouth. Feng Qian raised himself to the point he was kneeling on one knee. Blood was unceasingly spilling out of his mouth... drops of blood were endlessly falling onto the ground.

Lin Feng simply put his sword back into his sheathe with a 'Clink' sound.

The people within the crowd just stared at what had happened in shock. They were all trembling with excitement and fear. Lin Feng... had Lin Feng defeated Feng Qian in a single strike?

"How powerful!" said a man while shivers ran down his spine. Not only was he about sixteen years old but Feng Qian had been unable to carry out one single attack against him. Lin Feng had even shown mercy and had been gentle when using his sword, otherwise, Feng Qian would have immediately been killed.

"You really do talk crap, way too much crap. You should be more careful with your words" said Lin Feng in a cold tone while not even looking at Feng Qian who was behind him, kneeling on the floor. Then, Lin Feng continued walking towards the main hall. Feng Qian was looking at Lin Feng with disdain... and in the end Lin Feng didn't even give him another glance as he wasn't worth it. While looking at Lin Feng from behind, Feng Qian had a million thoughts at the same time.

"You really do talk crap, way too much crap. You should be more careful with your words." He continued to repeat the words that Lin Feng said to him.

The path of cultivation is full of surprises. The sky is vast and the ocean is deep, who knows exactly how vast and deep they are. The world could be flipped upside down in instances, some cultivators believed themselves lucky to be such strong geniuses only to find they are only small fish in a very large pond. To keep being lucky, to remain a strong genius, a cultivator would need to possess a strong willpower and determination towards training. A cultivator like Feng Qian of the ninth Qi layer was like a frog at the bottom of a well. He could not see how vast the world really was. Therefore, being arrogant and provoking wasn't a good behavior to adopt and Lin Feng's sword had taught him a long deserved lesson. Strength was everything in this world.

While struggling to get onto his feet, Feng Qian was looking at Lin Feng's back and was bowing. He wasn't holding awe and veneration for Lin Feng, it was rather that he felt thankful that Lin Feng had taught him that his arrogance could cost him his life and gave him a great lesson: the road of cultivation is not one in which you should provoke others. It was also not one in which you could allow yourself to be provoked without retaliation.

That event had made a lot of people feel puzzled but some people's expressions were resplendent as if they had understood what had just happened in front of them. However, Lin Feng hadn't noticed these expressions. He wasn't completely in the main hall yet when the seven others' expressions suddenly changed when they saw him approaching. Qiu Lan was particularly surprised. In the Whistle Wind Restaurant, she had seen him and obviously knew a lot about Lin Feng. She also knew everything about the problems Lin Feng had within the Lin Clan.

“I will be participating in the tournament this year.” Lin Feng said sounding relaxed yet strict while looking at Qiu Lan. He was bold and straightforward, he insisted that he had to participate.

“How audacious!” said a disciple sitting next to Qiu Lan while slapping the table, which made the wooden table crack in a loud bang. “Who do you think you are? Thinking that you can actually talk to Qiu Lan as you wish.” said the angered disciple, he was called Wu Xiao. Everybody was fantasizing about the beautiful Qiu Lan. Besides, she was extremely powerful and was at the pinnacle beyond the ninth Qi layer. Feng Qian’s power was nothing in comparison.

He had seen how Lin Feng had defeated Feng Qian in one hit and how easy it had seemed for Lin Feng. He had thus noticed how strong Lin Feng was. Therefore, at that moment, Wu Xiao’s behavior was just an empty show of strength to gain Qiu Lan’s attention and make her like him.

Lin Feng glanced at Wu Xiao and then walked towards him after which Wu Xiao immediately stood up and released a strong Qi, ready to engage in a battle.

The white and dazzling light of the sword flashed and stabbed Wu Xiao so quickly that he had had no time to react at all. He gave a horrible shriek not able to strike back.

Speed. After having broken through to the Ling Qi layer, Lin Feng’s swordplay had become incredibly quick and agile, even more so than before. Lin Feng grabbed Wu Xiao’s neck and carried him to the entrance of the main hall.

“Why would a piece of trash like you, want to participate in the tournament? How pointless.”

While saying this in a loud voice, Lin Feng kicked Wu Xiao’s body which flew out of the main hall and rolled down the steps onto the ground of the main square where the crowd was.

Chapter 45: Arriving at the arena

“Is that Wu Xiao?”

“It is, it is Wu Xiao.”

Shouts of surprise filled the air around the crowd as they watched Wu Xiao fly out of the main hall and roll down the steps.

Wu Xiao was much stronger than Feng Qian. He was quite famous in Yangzhou City, but this genius had also been defeated by that unknown young man who had entered the main hall. Being injured and publicly humiliated was the price that he paid for angering Lin Feng. Lin Feng had shown him no mercy and insulted him as he kicked him from the main hall.

“Who is that young disciple?”

“How arrogant!”

“Which clan does he belong to?”

“I have never seen him before today, where did he come from?”

Everybody who was there wanted to know who that young man was. They did not believe that there was such a genius within Yangzhou City who had escaped their attention for so long, a disciple who was this strong would have come to the attention of

the smaller clans by now. However they had absolutely no idea who this young man was, How was such a thing possible?

If everyone knew who that arrogant and domineering young man who had just entered the main hall was, they would be astonished to know that it was the piece of trash who had been expelled from the Lin Clan. According to the rumors he was expelled along with his father for being trash, his father had even attacked a junior clan member to protect Lin Feng. They would be shocked that the trash within these rumors was the powerful and domineering young man in front of their eyes. The other disciples, who were in the main hall all belonged to the smaller clans within Yangzhou City, they were all the talented and powerful members of the younger generations. The disciples who made up the eight participants were the strongest talents which the smaller clans could develop.

The day of the annual tournament had finally arrived and there was a huge commotion as the crowd watched members from the larger clans arrive in the arena. This would be a chance for them to see all of the talents which would shape the future of the city. They would not have this opportunity often.

“Look over there, seated on the southern part of the arena are the members of the Lin Clan. The one in the middle is Lin Ba Dao. It looks like the rumors are true, Lin Hai’s Cultivation was crippled by Lin Ba Dao and then his son and him were expelled from the Lin Clan.” Discussions could be heard while many people were looking at where the Lin Clan members were sitting. One could hear all sorts of comments from the crowd. There was a constant discussion and many people were paying attention to the Lin Clan because of the rumors which were circulating in Yangzhou City. It

had caused a sensation throughout the city. At that moment, the rumors were confirmed.

“That’s Lin Qian... how beautiful! But she’s a bit scary, she has already broken through to the Ling Qi layer... and she’s only sixteen years old. She’s amazing. I wish she could one day become my wife.”

“”In your dreams... oh keep it down, if people from the Lin Clan hear you, they’ll cripple your cultivation or even worse behead you.”

“Hehe, I’m just saying. Look over there, the Na Lan Clan has also arrived, that’s the head of the City and the princess Na Lan Feng.”

The crowd continued to make comments as the people arrived in the arena. At that moment, the members of the Na Lan Clan had already arrived and had taken their respective seats in the arena, close to the stage.

Na Lan Xiong was famous, tall and sturdy, he looked extremely prestigious. Only by looking at him, it was easy to guess that he had an extraordinary power.

When Na Lan Xiong saw the expressions of the people in the crowd, he smiled and then immediately said: “Today, everybody was able to come to the tournament that I organized. I, Na Lan Xiong, am extremely happy. However, if anyone dares to make trouble, I, Na Lan Xiong, will not hesitate and will deal with you in a very rude manner.”

Many people nodded. They were facing the Na Lan Clan... even if they wanted to cause trouble, they first needed the skills and abilities to do so.

“Alright, enough with my useless speech. I know that all of you haven’t come to listen to an old man like me. Let’s invite our outstanding young cultivators to come onto the battle stage, alright?” said Na Lan Xiong and then he sat down. Everybody nodded when he finished speaking. All the young and outstanding disciples were getting ready to make their appearance on the stage.

At that moment, Lin Feng was also moving forwards towards the battle stage.

Chapter 46: The Tournament Begins

The huge battle arena was composed of many fighting stages. On each of the fighting stages, eight silhouettes could be seen. The Na Lan Clan was set higher than the others and its participants were standing on the highest stage in the middle of all the others. They looked like warlords looking down with supremacy. The other participants surrounded them on their own fighting stage like the stars surrounded the moon in the night sky. There was also the major clans such as the Gu Clan, the Lin Clan, the Wen Clan. Qiu Lan had played a big role in the organization of the smaller clans. At that moment, along with the Na Lan Clan members, there was an old man sitting next to Na Lan Xiong who stood up. He was staring at the fighting stages.

“Today is our yearly tournament. The purpose of this tournament is to test the strength of the most outstanding young cultivators of Yangzhou City. Therefore, nobody should show mercy. Those who are defeated are allowed to surrender and in case someone gives up, the fight will immediately be terminated. If nobody surrenders the fight then the fight will continue unceasingly until someone collapses, or even dies.”

When the old man finished talking and the crowd burst into uproar... the fights could go on until someone died if nobody gave up... how cruel! There were some extremely proud and arrogant cultivators who attached a lot of importance to their face and prestige. Losing a battle by giving up was especially humiliating for them. Therefore, very few people were going to willingly surrender a battle. Even if they knew that they had no chance of winning, they would continue to fight to protect their honor and dignity. But that sentence made the crowd think carefully. There were no restrictions and battles could be fought to the death. If

there had been restrictions, two opponents of an equal strength who refused to give up, could be fighting endlessly which could end up in a deep and bitter hatred for the opponent.

“How wise, how brilliant!” said many people supporting the old man’s words. The old man had obviously done this as a ploy to increase the hatred between the other clans, by forcing them to watch as their talented clan members would rather die than surrender. He had done this to stop the hatred between the younger generations, but increase the hatred of the older generations. That way, those who didn’t agree wouldn’t criticize the Na Lan Clan. After all, they were the clan who was hosting the tournament and had made a perfectly reasonable rule. However, it also meant that Na Lan Clan members could be killed within the arena. The crowd knew they were going to see some people die and that the different clans of Yangzhou City would once again sow the seeds of hatred for one another. Na Lan Xiong wanted to see the other clans hate each other. Even though the three other clans knew what Na Lan Xiong had in mind, they had no choice but to agree.

Since they didn’t want to lose face and as they were considered as the best clans in the city, all they could do was tell their young disciples to strive for victory with all their strength. Besides, the old man had also said that those who wished could give up and the battle would immediately end. Therefore, that rule was double-edged and couldn’t be really contradicted as the choice was given... But who would accept having their own clan regarded as inferior to the others?

“I finished writing down the names of all those who are participating in this year’s tournament. I have also finished

organizing the battles. I don't know if anyone has any objections to my work." Said the old man while looking at the members of the three other powerful clans.

"Hehe, everything was organized by the Na Lan Clan... I, of course, agree." Said the head of the Gu Clan even though it seemed like he didn't really care.

"The previous tournaments were organized by the Na Lan Clan and were managed by them as well, this time is obviously going to be the same."

"I have no objection either." said Lin Ba Dao who was obviously not going to oppose the Na Lan Clan.

"I represent the Na Lan Clan and I would like to thank all the clan heads for their cooperation." said the old man while looking at the members of the three other clans and then declared: "The rules are as such and are applied from the very first battle: being defeated leads to elimination, winning allows you to continue."

"And now, let me announce what the battles will be. All of those who hear their names can stay on stage, the others can come down and wait. On the Na Lan's stage, Na Lan Feng will fight against Wen Xin of the Wen Clan; on the Eastern Stage, Gu Yun of the Gu Clan will fight against Lin Wu of the Lin Clan; on the Southern Stage, Lin Yu of the Lin Clan will fight against Wen Feng of the Wen Clan; on the Western stage, Na Lan Zhu of the Na Lan Clan will fight against Feng Qian; on the Northern stage, Duo Ming will fight against Gu Qing Jr. of the Gu Clan."

There were five fighting stages, so there could be only ten people fighting at once. There were forty people in total. Four rounds were enough to eliminate half of them and so that only twenty people would be left. Those who hadn't been called stepped down from the stages while those who had been called were going onto their respective stages.

“Hahaha, Wen Xin is really unlucky, having to fight Na Lan Feng as a first battle.”

Even though Wen Xin was not weak, she had no chance to win.

“I heard that Lin Wu of the Lin Clan has become quite strong. He has already reached the ninth Qi layer. It seems like he's definitely going to be the one to win the battle on Eastern Stage.”

“On the southern stage, Wen Feng should win the battle. On the Northern Stage, Feng Qian should win. Concerning the last stage, even though Duo Ming is extremely mysterious and wearing a mask, Gu Qing Jr. is almost invincible so Duo Ming is pretty unlucky there.”

The battles hadn't even started and everyone in the crowd was making predictions as if they were certain of the outcomes. After all, the crowd knew almost all these young disciples, who the majority had originated from Yangzhou City, and had a deep understanding of their strengths and weaknesses.

But on the Northern Stage, Duo Ming also attracted the crowd's

attention. He was wearing a mask, they had never heard of him and there was something fascinating which surrounded him like an aura. He carried an air of mystery. Too bad that he was going to fight Gu Qing Jr. He was already doomed and was going to lose immediately. Indeed, Gu Qing Jr. had already reached the peak of the Qi layer. There were not a lot of Cultivators of the Qi Layer who could fight against him and win. His only real opponents were mostly within the Ling Qi layer. Gu Qing Jr. was also quite famous in the region. Thus, it was impossible for Duo Ming to defeat Gu Qing Jr.

The predictions of the crowd were also quite accurate. Wen Xin didn't fight against Na Lan Feng and gave up. Even though face and prestige were extremely important, giving up when facing Na Lan Feng was nothing to be ashamed of. Fighting against Na Lan Feng definitely meant dying.

On the Eastern and Western stages, results were gradually coming out and the predictions of the crowd were correct each time. Lin Wu, Wen Feng and Feng Qian were about to defeat their opponents and move onto the next round of the tournament. Only the battle on the Northern Stage was still in progress and it had made everyone within the crowd grow speechless.

In Gu Qing Jr.'s eyes, Duo Ming didn't even exist, he regarded Duo Ming as an ant to crush beneath his boot on his path to cultivation. Gu Qing Jr. kept looking at the battles on the other stages rather than defeating his own opponent. After all, he would be able to move forward to the next round at any time he wanted, so he wanted to get familiar with the fighting styles of his following opponents.

“I will not fight against Na Lan Feng, so I hope I will not be matched with her in the upcoming battles. Lin Wu and Wen Feng will be very easy to defeat. As far as Feng Qian is concerned, it seems like his strength has greatly improved recently but I should be able to dispose of him really quickly as well. Victory will be a piece of cake if I have to fight these three...”

Gu Qing Jr. was lost in deep thought and continued to act as if the young man who was wearing the silver mask didn't exist at all while thinking about the next rounds.

Finally, Feng Qian had his hand on his opponent Na Lan Zhu's throat. Na Lan Zhu didn't want to keep fighting and surrendered the fight. Everybody's attention was on the Northern Stage.

“It finished. How quick!” said the crowd amazed. It seemed like the first round was about to come to an end.

“Gu Qing, stop wasting time.” said the head of the Gu Clan sounding indifferent yet slightly arrogant as if Gu Qing could end the battle as soon as he wished.

“Alright, I will do as the clan head requests.” replied Gu Qing Jr. Then, he looked at Lin Feng who was hiding his identity with a silver mask and said coldly:

“Get down from here yourself, you're not worth fighting.” Lin Feng touched his silver mask, one could only see his eyes and a small part of his face but it was impossible to see his facial expression.

Lin Feng had also been ignoring Gu Qing Jr. he hadn't hurried to fight and had also been observing the other battles. He didn't have to worry now either. Gu Qing Jr. was extremely arrogant and rather than fighting had told him to get off the stage. Lin Feng was already used to those cultivators who thought that they were untouchable and did not give respect to others, but demanded respect in return, those so-called geniuses.

“Did you not hear what I just said? I'm telling you to get down from here... so get lost! If you are not smart enough to get down yourself, I will immediately kill you.” Gu Qing Jr. saw that Lin Feng wasn't reacting at all and then frowned.

The talented individuals within the powerful clans despised cultivators who considered themselves as geniuses but didn't belong to a clan which held a status like the powerful clans. Without the strong support behind them, they would have to work extremely hard for minimal gains. How could a cultivator become a man of great talent if he didn't belong to a powerful clan? People like Dou Ming who didn't belong to a powerful clan would have no reputation and could be disposed of by his clan at any point. That is why Gu Qing Jr. despised such cultivators and regarded them as beneath his notice.

“I haven't changed my mind yet so seize that opportunity and get lost.” said Lin Feng in a voice full of hatred. As he spat out those words filled with hatred, it had surprised everyone in the crowd. Right after, some people grinned, could it be that that guy was insane?

Qiu Lan wasn't laughing though. She thought that Lin Feng was very mysterious, almost mystical. He seemed extremely strong compared to others within the tournament. She had seen how Lin Feng had made Wu Xiao collapse with just a single strike.

"Gu Qing Jr., I hope you are prepared to die." shouted Feng Qian who was focusing on what was going on the Northern Stage. He had come to understand that Gu Qing Jr.'s behavior would just lead to his death. After receiving a lesson from Lin Feng, he has greatly matured and come to realize his own mistake. The less respect that was given to Lin Feng, the less mercy he would show.

Gu Qing Jr.'s face at that moment had changed and he no longer looked as if he was at ease. He couldn't believe what Lin Feng had just said to him. He couldn't believe that a young man, who didn't belong to a powerful clan such as his own, would dare to talk to him that way. He was the second ranked disciple of the Gu Clan amongst all the disciples of the Qi layer. He was regarded as an extremely strong and talented disciple by all the members of the Gu Clan.

"Finish him." Gu Qing Sr said in a loud yet calm voice which made everyone shiver. Lin Feng would lose, that was obvious but Gu Qing Sr meant that he wanted Gu Qing to kill Lin Feng where he stood.

"Alright." said Gu Qing Jr. who noticed that his father, who was also the clan head, had become extremely furious. He quickly started moving at an incredible speed. He wasn't going to give Lin Feng any chance to surrender.

“Poisonous Fist!” shouted Gu Qing Jr.

His fist was emitting a whistling sound as it started breaking through the air as if he was shattering the atmosphere into pieces.

But Lin Feng remained motionless like a mountain. At the moment when the poisonous fist was about to reach him, a bright light flashed in front of his body. The sword was too fast for anyone to see what had happened.

It seemed like time had stopped and everything remained motionless. No one in the crowd had seen what had happened or why Gu Qing Jr had stopped moving. Suddenly Gu Qing Jr’s body fell heavily onto the ground as his head started to roll away from his body. The crowd stared on in complete silence.

Chapter 47: Duo Ming's Sword

The crowd was looking at Gu Qing Jr.'s dead body lying on the ground of the Northern Stage. He had been killed with a single strike which was so fast that many could only see Lin Feng sheathing his sword. Not only had the strong and powerful Gu Qing been killed in a single strike, but he had also been killed in the blink of an eye and had been given no chance to surrender.

“That sword... how fast! How skillful!” Said a man in the crowd, mouth wide open, almost drooling. They hadn't even been able to see what had happened as the movements were so fast. The crowd was unable to see what kind of sword skill had been used by this mysterious masked disciple. They only knew that it had happened with extreme speed and precision. The sword had disappeared as quickly as it had appeared.

Only someone who had practiced his skills to perfection was able to carry out such precise attacks, his sword looked like an agile shadow that avoided the gazes of the crowd. The crowd was looking at Lin Feng and thinking about the flash they had just seen. He had obviously used a sword skill during that split second and with it unleashed devastating power. He had been able to kill Gu Qing Jr. with ease.

“Amazing!” Feng Qian was looking at Lin Feng speechless. He imagined what would have happened if he had been the one fighting against Lin Feng. He would not have noticed the sword before his head was already removed from his body. Even if what had happened the previous day had changed his views and had made him more determined and respectful, even with a few more years of cultivation, he wouldn't want to face the Lin Feng before

him.

Gu Qing Sr. stood up while looking at the battle stage. His face grew red with fury and his face viciously twisted in anger. While looking at his son's headless corpse on the battle stage, he released an extremely strong Qi. Gu Qing Jr. was dead... One of the most outstanding junior disciples of the Gu Clan was dead. He hadn't been able to even react to his opponents sword. Gu Qing Sr. hated Lin Feng from the bottom of his heart.

“You dared kill him.” said Gu Qing Sr. in a voice which sounded like a thunder which made everyone's heart beat faster.

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at Gu Qing Sr. who was in a towering rage. Lin Feng's pupils were pitch black and he then said: “Are you insinuating that I should have stood here and done nothing and just let him kill me? How stupid are you?”

When Gu Qing Sr. heard these words, he remained silent. He really wanted Gu Qing Jr. to kill Lin Feng, how could he not allow Lin Feng to kill Gu Qing Jr.? In life, there are such principles as defending one's own life. Because Gu Qing Jr. was a member of the Gu Clan, he thus wanted Gu Qing Jr. to kill Lin Feng. However, Lin Feng killing Gu Qing Jr, even if it was justified, was still a crime in his eyes.

“You're very good. You will not live much longer.” said Gu Qing Sr. in an indifferent tone. He had made no attempts to conceal his killing intent. As the crowd heard these words, they felt compassion for Lin Feng. Even though he was extremely strong and had been able to kill one of the most outstanding disciples of

the Gu Clan with one strike, there was no chance that the Gu Clan would let him leave alive.

“My name is Duo Ming.” said Lin Feng while looking straight into Gu Qing Sr.’s eyes. He then went down off the stage and his voice echoed throughout the arena as he said: “If any of your Gu Clan cross paths with me, I will decorate this arena with their heads.”

“Eeh...”

The crowd was stupefied by Lin Feng’s words. It seemed like he had directly challenged the powerful Gu Clan and spat in their face. He sounded insane, too insane. He had also sounded insufferably arrogant. He was an ordinary young man and he surprisingly dared threaten the large and powerful Gu Clan, he said that he would kill any of them if they found themselves in his path. He was challenging the entire Gu Clan. He was defying all of its members.

Obviously, all of the young members of the Gu Clan who heard him burst into an uproar and cursed in rage. However, even though the words coming out of their mouths were fierce, many of them were extremely nervous. They thought that the best thing would be to never cross his path. He had killed Gu Qing Jr with a single effortless strike... In the Gu Clan, except for those of the Ling Qi layer, they feared that nobody would be able to fight against Lin Feng and return with their head. The best result would be to have Lin Feng fight the stronger members of the Gu Clan, like Gu Yan, that way, he would be able to avenge Gu Qing Jr.’s death.

They had no doubts when it came to Gu Yan's strength. He was a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer. Lin Feng would never be able to compete with him even if he was extremely strong.

"If I come across him, his death will be tragic and brutal." said Gu Yan standing amongst the other members of the Gu Clan while looking at Lin Feng with ice cold murderous intentions in his eyes. He would kill him and torture him to regain the clans face.

The first round hadn't taken a lot of time and now it had come to an end. There were twenty people left within the tournament. There would be two more fights on each stage and ten people would be remaining.

In This round, Lin Feng wasn't going against a member of the Gu Clan. He was going to fight against an amazing and outstanding member of the Na Lan Clan: Na Lan Chen.

"If you can fight, then fight, if you don't feel like fighting, then just surrender." said Na Lan Feng to Na Lan Chen, as before she was setting herself high above the others in an arrogant way while looking at the Northern Stage.

"Alright." said Na Lan Chen while nodding but he was eager to test his strength. Even though he wasn't as famous and popular as Gu Qing Jr., he was also at the ninth Qi layer, he thought that Gu Qing Jr.'s reputation was undeserved. He thought that because Gu Qing Jr. had underestimated Lin Feng, he had caused his own death to be so swift. This time, Na Lan Chen was definitely going to defeat Lin Feng and make himself famous and gain the status and respect that came with it.

Lin Feng, whose face was still under his mask, was looking at Na Lan Feng with a ice cold glare. If they could fight then fight, otherwise just surrender? What was that supposed to mean? Lin Feng hadn't forgotten what had happened on that night when the Na Lan Clan had sent their clan members to chase and kill him. All of that had happened only because he had refused to allow Na Lan Feng to sit down on his table.

"I will use all my strength in this battle. I will make you lose. I will show everyone how prestigious and powerful my clan is compared to others." said Na Lan Chen while staring at Lin Feng and getting prepared to fight.

"Alright, let's start quickly then." said Lin Feng while smiling coldly. He wanted to see how powerful and prestigious the Na Lan Clan really was.

"Divine Arm spirit."

Even though Na Lan Chen wanted to protect the Na Lan Clan reputation and make it even more famous, he still didn't dare go easy on Lin Feng. Therefore, he released his spirit. Behind him had appeared a thick and muscular arm spirit, reaching towards the sky as if it wanted to climb its way to the heavens.

"Only those who are directly blood related to the Na Lan's possess that Divine Arm spirit. How majestic!"

"It is said that the Divine Arm Spirit can give its owner the

strength of a god. How could one defeat the possessor of such a powerful spirit?”

“One punch and his opponent will be killed.”

Because he had released his Divine Arm Spirit, Na Lan Chen was extremely confident and carried out a ruthless surprise attack towards Lin Feng.

“Divine Punch!”

Na Lan Chen shouted. His punch hadn’t reached its destination yet but aura surrounding the fist was breaking through the air and shattering the atmosphere. It was clearly a elemental force.

“How powerful! So that is the strength of that Divine Arm Spirit which can only be possessed only by members of the Na Lan Clan.”

“Not only is Na Lan Chen already at the ninth Qi layer but he can already use elemental forces...”

The whole crowd was stupefied. Lin Feng was surrounded by the strong Qi contained within the punch and the air was distorting around him. The shadow of a fist had filled the entire sky.

“You want to die.” Lin Feng said. A cold silver light flashed through the air. Brilliant rays of light filled the atmosphere. With only one strike the gigantic fist shadow had completely disappeared without trace. There was only the resplendent light of

Lin Feng's sword which at this moment looked glorious.

Na Lan Chen's facial expression had changed. He didn't stop releasing punches which made him step back each time. He had prepared a chain of strikes incase his first strike had failed.

“Die.”

Lin Feng said only one word and Na Lan Chen felt like his heart had been stabbed. A overpowering light suddenly burst out from the sword, it burst through the atmosphere and then penetrated deeply into Na Lan Chen's throat. His body was sent flying backwards, his body landed heavily on the ground and his head was only attached by a small amount of flesh, there was a huge hole through his neck. His eyes were open wide and were filled with complete shock.

The Divine Arm Spirit of the Na Lan Clan's was able to accomplish great miracles.. but Lin Feng's sword was also able to accomplish great things.

“The sword strike is strong, but its user is terrifyingly strong.”

When the crowd saw Na Lan Chen's body collapse, they felt chills running down their spines and they were staring blankly at Lin Feng. As before, one strike had been enough to kill his opponent.

Na Lan Xiong, the head of the Na Lan Clan, was also seized with terror and was rigidly staring at Lin Feng.

“You are damn brave. You surprisingly dared to kill a member of the Na Lan Clan.” After a moment of hesitation, Na Lan Feng shouted those words extremely loudly and angrily towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at Na Lan Feng. Then, he smiled coldly and said: “I understand your rules now, Na Lan Clan members are allowed to kill others but others are not allowed to kill members of your clan. You’re really beyond shameless.”

“You...” Na Lan Feng said furiously and then stopped herself. She didn’t know if she should reply. “Just wait until you fight against me.” said Na Lan Feng looking glum. Her beautiful eyes were filled with killing intent.

Lin Feng ignored Na Lan Feng’s remark, immediately turned around and came down off the stage. He didn’t feel like speaking useless words to children.

“Duo Ming... he looks like a conqueror when he uses his sword.”

Everybody was looking at Lin Feng and sighed with jealousy. Only a fearless or an extremely brave person would dare to provoke Lin Feng again. Those who hadn’t been eliminated yet also looked concerned. They were all sighing and hoping that they wouldn’t have to fight against that him. That would be the best possible scenario for them. That guy was able to kill with one swift strike and when fighting against him, there was absolutely no chance to surrender the fight before he attacked.

The second round came to an end very quickly and only ten people were left. Ten people left, five stages. Another round would be enough.

“Have a quick rest and then we’ll continue with the third round.” announced the old man who had stepped on the stage.

The crowd was slightly disappointed. They couldn’t wait to watch the next battles. There were ten people left. All the clans had their main representatives in the remaining disciples. The Lin Clan still had two participants. Against all expectations, the Gu Clan only had one person left. Those who were left were the strongest within the tournament. However all eyes were fixed on the masked disciple, Lin Feng.

“This round should be amazing considering the strength of those left.”

“It is very clear how strong they are. Na Lan Feng, Lin Qian as well as Wen Jiang should be the three strongest. Then there should be Gu Yan of the Gu Clan and Qiu Lan. Then, there is Lin Hong of the Lin Clan who has already broken through to the Ling Qi layer. As far as the extremely strong yet arrogant Duo Ming, those who haven’t broken through to the Ling Qi layer shouldn’t be able to defeat him.”

“If he’s lucky, he should be ranked seventh. If he’s lucky, he should be able to move on to the next round.”

The crowd was discussing the upcoming rankings. Everybody else nodded showing that they agreed with the previous statements. These should be quite accurate predictions. If Duo Ming managed to be ranked directly after those who had reached the Ling Qi layer, that would be beyond extraordinary.

Chapter 48: A Single Strike

The break was a short one to allow the final 10 to regain their composure from the last battles. None of them had any substantial injuries from the previous fights. The old man declared the beginning of the third round. The crowd was burning with enthusiasm at the upcoming battles.

Amongst the ten people qualified for this round, six of them were at the Ling Qi layer. Duo Ming couldn't be as strong as them but was still extremely strong. There were only three people in whom the crowd wasn't very interested. Thus, most of the fights were going to be fascinating. This was going to be an entertaining show. There were some stages which strongly attracted people's attention. On one of them, two participants of the Ling Qi layer were going to fight: Qiu Lan against Lin Hong. The other battle which drew people's attention was Gu Yan against Duo Ming.

The other three battles were not that interesting. Na Lan Feng, Lin Qian as well as Wen Jiang could immediately conclude and move on to the next round. The predictions of the crowd were almost completely accurate. Those facing Na Lan Feng and Lin Qian had immediately given up. Wen Jiang had been fighting against Feng Qian. Even though Feng Qian had fought with all his strength, Wen Jiang had easily won the battle after three hits. Feng Qian had been blown off the stage with an explosive force. Wen Jiang hadn't even used all his strength to deal with Feng Qian. The difference between a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer and one of the Qi layer was too big; if they fought, the result was usually obvious.

At this moment, the crowd was currently paying attention to the

fight between Qiu Lan and Lin Hong. They were both followed with great interest by the crowd and the victor of this battle was not clear.

On the Northern Stage, Gu Yan was looking at Lin Feng with an ice cold look and killing intent had completely filled his eyes. He had a murderous look and a evil grin on his face. What a stroke of luck! He had eventually been chosen to fight against Lin Feng. If Lin Feng didn't give up, Gu Yan would kill him and avenge Gu Qing Jr.'s death. He hated Lin Feng so much that he could feel it in his bones.

“If you are too scared to fight, then hurry up and get lost. Don't make us respectable cultivators, lose face.” said Gu Yan looking at Lin Feng with a mocking gaze. Lin Feng, as usual, was standing there calm and quiet.

Then he said in a cold and detached tone: “You don't need to try and provoke me into a fight with you. Don't worry, I was never planning to run away from you.”

“Hehe.” When Gu Yan heard Lin Feng's words, he laughed demonically. He had managed to make Lin Feng angry enough to fight and had made sure he would not surrender without giving Gu Yan his revenge. He wouldn't have thought that Lin Feng would actually accept his challenge so easily.

“How ignorant. I will teach you what it means to have broken through to the Ling Qi layer. There is a huge difference between me and you.” thought Gu Yan while smiling coldly. He didn't even release his spirit because it might scare Lin Feng away and make

him surrender the fight.

Immediately after, Gu Yan started walking slowly towards Lin Feng. At that moment, about ten steps were separating Lin Feng and him when he suddenly started moving his hand. An extremely strong explosion spread through the atmosphere in Lin Feng's direction. An amazingly intense energy was blocking the sky and covering the earth to the extent it was impossible to see Lin Feng at the moment.

“You will die for having dared to provoke me and the members of my clan.” shouted Gu Yan.

A second wave of intense power was moving towards Lin Feng. Even if Lin Feng couldn't endure the first attack, he would kill Lin Feng no matter what. He wanted to kill Lin Feng more than anything. He would not allow Lin Feng to leave this arena alive. Otherwise, he, the best young disciple of the Gu Clan, would lose face and it would be a humiliation for the Gu Clan.

At the moment when his powerful attack was going to crash onto Lin Feng's body, Gu Yan was already grinning with a cruel smile and was patiently awaiting the screams of pain. However, at that moment, the same resplendent light as before radiated in the atmosphere and filled the whole sky. The energy of Gu Yan's attack started looking like it was being torn apart like paper. It was growing weaker and seemed like it was going to vanish at any moment.

“Die.” shouted Gu Yan loudly looking unaffected. He moved his hand and immediately added some force into the previous wave

that seemed like it was going to collapse. The attack that he unleashed had looked like it could topple the mountains and overturn seas. This attack was more than enough to kill an opponent who had broken through to the Ling Qi layer.

“I REFUSE.”

“BOOOM!!!!.”

The voice who which loudly said “I REFUSE” sounded calm and indifferent. A sword Qi suddenly emerged and it looked like it could pierce the heavens themselves. Gu Yan’s energy shattered into tiny pieces. His Qi had completely vanished. There was only the light of the sword which seemed to be standing above everything within the Universe.

“Ling Qi layer!” said Gu Yan looking deathly pale. How could he have not anticipated that Lin Feng could have been hiding his actual strength? He was too arrogant and conceited.

The sword looked desolate and it smelt like death. It was emanating a piercingly cold Qi which seemed to have an unstoppable destructive power. That sword user was conquering everything that laid in his path. His power couldn’t be stopped.

The sword suddenly slashed out with incredible destructive power. It felt like it was consuming everything around it.

“Not good!”” shouted Gu Qing Sr. who had turned pale with

fright. He stood up but it seemed like it was too late already. Gu Yan had been saying he would kill Lin Feng in one hit all along. His quick surprise attack hadn't even given him a small advantage. At that moment, he was unable to counterattack and was even more unable to block the sword attack.

“SWISH”

A stream of blood spilled out from Gu Yan's throat. Gu Yan, who had reached the Ling Qi layer, fell lifelessly onto the floor, his head rolling across the floor of the arena. This was also the first time that a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer had died so far during the tournament. He had died in a single strike.

At that moment, all the members of the Gu Clan stood up. They were looking at Lin Feng in despair. They were shaking with anger and fear. The sight of their clans bright future lying headless on the floor of the stage made them feel desperate.

“I WILL KILL YOU!!!” shouted Gu Qing Sr. so loudly that it hurt people's ears.

Na Lan Xiong frowned and said: “Head of the Gu Clan, how dare you? Have you forgotten that this is a tournament which was organized by the Na Lan Clan?”

Gu Qing Sr. looked at Na Lan Xiong completely shocked. He did not think anyone would stand in his way of removing an insignificant bug. He eventually groaned in dissatisfaction and sat down. However, from the way Gu Qing Sr. was looking at Lin

Feng, it was obvious that he was never going to let him off.

“What? Gu Yan died. Like the other before in a single strike?” many people who were initially watching the fight between Qiu Lan and Lin Hong were astonished. Na Lan Xiong and Gu Qing Sr. had drawn their attention when shouting. When they saw Gu Yan’s head which had been separated from his body, they turned pale.

Many people were regretting that they had missed such a wonderful battle. They hadn’t thought that the battle would turn out to be that interesting and that a young disciple of the Ling Qi layer would actually get killed, especially by an extremely strong and mysterious young man called Duo Ming.

“All of us have made an error of judgement. Duo Ming has also broken through to the Ling Qi layer.”

“He’s incredibly strong. His strength enables him to move on to the next round.”

Not only the crowd thought that but Na Lan Xiong while looking at Lin Feng’s back who was getting down off the stage had a similar thought. This young man could defeat cultivators of the Qi layer in a single strike with his sword but he could also defeat cultivators of the Ling Qi layer in one hit... He is terrifyingly strong. Nobody had realized his potential before. At that moment, the other battle had also finished and was won by Qiu Lan. She had won against Lin Hong. At that point, all those selected to continue to the next round were known. Na Lan Feng, Lin Qian, Wen Jiang, Qiu Lan and Duo Ming!

The two who did not belong to a powerful clan had won again: Qiu Lan and Duo Ming. The Gu Clan had no participant anymore and their top two disciples had been beheaded by Lin Feng.

The old man announced a short break again. "Fourth round, Lin Qian can wait, Na Lan Feng will fight against Wen Jiang and Qiu Lan will fight against Duo Ming." The crowd was really excited. The last battles were finally going to start. Na Lan Feng's strength was obviously incredible. Wen Jiang however, was even stronger than Na Lan Feng and Lin Qian as he had already broken through to the second Ling Qi layer. These battles were going to be very exciting. There was also that incredibly strong Duo Ming who had killed three people with a single strike. His battle against Qiu Lan was probably going to be the same sort of battle. Now that the strongest disciples had been decided, the battles would now take place on the main stage.

The first battle was going to be between Na Lan Feng and Wen Jiang. "Wen Jiang, you are quite strong but as before, you will not fight against me." said Na Lan Feng in an extremely arrogant way, sounding like a royalty talking down to a servant, showing disdain for everything and everyone.

"HA, I broke through to the second Ling Qi layer... you are only at the first Ling Qi layer, you should be the one giving up." Wen Jiang said contradicting her.

"What a moron!" shouted Na Lan Feng while releasing her spirit. Immediately after, her Divine Arm Spirit had appeared behind her back. The most shocking thing was that her Divine Arm Spirit

slightly differed from that of Na Lan Chen who had been killed by Lin Feng. Her Divine Arm Spirit was gold. It looked like the gold light radiating from the arm couldn't be stopped by anything.

“Only a golden Divine Arm Spirit can be regarded as a perfect Divine Arm Spirit.” Said Na Lan Xiong while smiling.

In a hundred years, Na Lan Feng was the only one to have a golden Divine Arm Spirit when her spirit was awakened.

“She definitely deserves to be called the Princess of Yangzhou City. She has a golden Divine Arm Spirit and it looks so strong and powerful.” The crowd was shivering and was moved by the Princess at the same time. Wen Jiang thought that losing was not an option and released his spirit as well. On his back appeared a Great River spirit. Great waves were unceasingly flowing with a crashing sound. That was the spirit of the Wen Clan: the Great River spirit.

“In this world, nothing can be considered bizarre, really.” sighed Lin Feng while looking at the spirits released by the fighters. An arm can become a spirit... and on top of that it can be gold. Rivers could also be spirits... The number of different spirits which existed was unimaginable. Nobody could imagine how many there were. Anything could become a spirit in this world.

Lin Feng was looking at Lin Qian. If his predictions were right, Na Lan Feng would win that battle and would then wait during the next round which would mean that after winning against Qiu Lan, he would battle against Lin Qian.

Chapter 49: Get The Hell Down!

As Lin Feng had predicted, Na Lan Feng won against Wen Jiang almost effortlessly even though he had reached a higher layer than her. This was because of her overpowering spirit.

Since the very beginning, Na Lan Feng had only used one skill: Divine Punch. But in comparison with that of Na Lan Chen, Na Lan Feng's skills were infinitely more powerful. Her force had a earth shattering power and each strike was extremely heavy. Each time Na Lan Feng carried out an attack, it made Wen Jiang step back a few meters. At some point, he had been shaking so much from receiving the strike that he could not defend and the following strike had severely injured him so he could no longer fight, he had no choice but to give up.

“Na Lan Feng is so strong. She's the Na Lan Clan's princess... It's not surprising that she's extraordinary. Nobody can compete with her.” Many people were filled with emotion when they saw how strong and beautiful Na Lan Feng was, they had the feeling that she was invincible. They were filled with admiration and worship. Not only was Na Lan Feng extremely beautiful but she was also extremely talented. Many people wished they had the same innate gifts as Na Lan Feng. They were very excited to see how she would develop and what other powers she would show in the future.

The second battle was about to begin. Lin Feng was going to fight against Qiu Lan. The crowd could no longer contain their excitement and many were cheering. Even though the battle was probably not going to be as spectacular as the one they had just watched, it should also be quite intense. Besides, they didn't know how strong Duo Ming really was and were wondering if he could

really defeat Qiu Lan. Lin Feng and Qiu Lan were looking at each other and Qiu Lan had a smile on her face. "I do not need to fight any longer in this tournament, I surrender this battle."

The crowd was astonished when they heard the word "surrender". Qiu Lan had played a role in the organization of the annual tournament, she had contributed in selecting who would join and now that she had to fight Duo Ming, she had given up...?

"Could it be that Duo Ming and Qiu Lan have already fought before and that Qiu Lan knows that she can't defeat Duo Ming?" wondered the whole crowd lost in confusion. They were trying to guess what was really going on as they really couldn't clearly understand the situation in front of their eyes.

"Alright, nothing can be done. Lets move to the next battle." said the old man indifferently.

"For the last battle, the three remaining participants will step onto the main stage. The last one remaining on stage will be the winner."

"Huh?" Lin Feng was stupefied. He had thought that the old man would make him and Lin Qian fight first and that there then would be a final battle. He wouldn't have thought that all of them would be fighting each other at the same time in a free-for-all fight. But as before, Lin Feng went back onto the main stage and walked towards the other participants: Na La Feng and Lin Qian, who had just come up onto the main stage as well.

“Phewwww... this decisive battle. Let’s try and guess who is going to win.”

“It should be Na Lan Feng. She’s extremely powerful and has a Golden Divine Arm spirit. She’s almost invincible. Lin Qian and Duo Ming shouldn’t be able to compete with her.”

“I don’t know what to think. Lin Qian hasn’t used all her strength, so it is impossible to judge. She hasn’t even released her spirit yet. Do you know even what spirit Lin Qian possesses?”

“I agree, with her Universal ice and fire spirit. She’s incredibly strong. I actually think that the one who has the biggest potential to win is Lin Qian.”

Everybody was giving their own opinion about who was going to win or lose. All of them thought that either Lin Qian or Na Lan Feng would win. Nobody thought Lin Feng had a chance to win. Even if Lin Feng was now regarded as being extremely strong, the crowd still thought that there were only two people who had a chance to win within the three remaining participants.

Two amazing yet arrogant female Cultivators from Yangzhou City: Na Lan Feng and Lin Qian. The contrast between them and the strange masked young boy was too great for anyone to attach any importance to him. The three participants were on the stage, each of them standing in one corner of the stage but Na Lan Feng was staring at Lin Qian since the beginning. Lin Qian was also continuously staring at Na Lan Feng. They were staring at each other as if they were fighting a one-on-one battle. It seemed like they had forgotten about Lin Feng. Lin Feng looked at the two girls

and smiled deep in his heart. They both wanted to kill him but at that moment, they didn't even know his real identity and were completely ignoring him.

“Na Lan Feng, you will regret what you made me go through on that night. And you, Lin Qian, you made me and my father leave the clan, you wanted to kill me and my dad... The time for revenge is slowly approaching.” thought Lin Feng. In that cold and cruel world, Lin Feng particularly appreciated and cherished the tenderness and affection that he received any hostility would also be engraved in his memories. In this world, one could only rely on themselves.

After a while, Na Lan Feng's attention was finally drawn away from Lin Qian. She had an arrogant smile on her face. “You're quite strong, if you wish, you can join my clan, the Na Lan Clan. Concerning everything that you just did, well, I could forget everything. Besides, I can also personally help you practice cultivation once in a while.” Na Lan Feng had a huge smile on her face. She unconsciously looked utterly arrogant, she didn't do it on purpose, but could not hide the arrogance which had been engraved into her soul. Concerning the thing that had happened a moment ago and that she could forgive, she was obviously talking about the fact that Lin Feng had killed Na Lan Chen.

“You... want to help me practice cultivation?” murmured Lin Feng. The girl, who thought she was the best in the world, wasn't only half arrogant, she was really completely arrogant down to the last fibre of her being, as expected.

“Indeed, I, personally, can help you practice cultivation.” said Na

Lan Feng who didn't know what Lin Feng really meant. She even thought that Lin Feng felt extremely honored. She was still smiling and said: "you have to understand that this is a once in a life opportunity. This usually never happens in the Na Lan Clan. You really are lucky." Actually, Na Lan Feng's proposition was really attractive to ordinary people, many ordinary cultivators would have dreamt of being offered such an opportunity. Besides, she, herself, was really attractive and her smile was terribly sexy. However this was not a tournament for normal people, which showed just how arrogant she actually was.

"That would be a dream if it happened to me... even if I had that dream, I would be smiling even after waking up..."

"The Princess Na Lan... personally..."

Many people in the crowd envied Lin Feng so much and were looking on with envious eyes. He was really incredibly lucky. Could the audience which was filled with ordinary people really be the judge? ... did Lin Feng even need Na Lan Feng's help to practice Cultivation? It was like she was offering him coal and saying it was a diamond.

"Hmm, should I feel extremely flattered?" asked Lin Feng in a joking and teasing tone. Because of Lin Feng's mask, Na Lan Feng was unable to see his facial expression. However, the tone of his voice had changed in comparison with before.

"Why wouldn't you feel that way?" asked Na Lan Feng now feeling indifferent with a smaller smile on her face than before. Lin Feng remained silent for a moment. She was as arrogant and

conceited as before, she was the best in the world when it came to arrogance.

“Hahahaha, Na Lan Feng, I would have never thought that you were truly so incredibly stupid. I really don’t understand what help or advice, someone as stupid as you, can give me on the path of cultivation.”

At that moment, laughter sounded from within the crowd. Then, a figure shot through the crowd, it flew like a legendary bird and immediately landed on the main stage. This person looked extremely arrogant. It was a young man who looked incredibly majestic and unreachable. His face was very thin. He radiated arrogance from head to toe.

“Bai Yuan Hao.” Na Lan Feng said while looking surprised. She narrowed her eyes as she hadn’t expected him to come.

“Indeed.” said the young man while looking at Na Lan Feng. He was looking at her with a smile on his face. “Na Lan Feng, in the Imperial City, you are an ordinary person, nothing more. I would have never thought that you called yourself a princess in Yangzhou City. You are so arrogant and top of that seem to be so incredibly satisfied with yourself. You’re such a cheap maid.”

“SHUT THE HELL UP.” Na Lan Feng shouted extremely aggressively in an ice cold tone.

“Huh? Are you getting angry because I called you a cheap maid? So it must be true that you’re convinced that you are a real

princess...” that young man didn’t even give her a glance and continued to grin.

“Well, you’re just a worthless dog as well, nothing more.” said Na Lan Feng in a cold tone trying to humiliate him.

“By telling me this, are you admitting the fact that you’re a cheap maid?” said the young man while laughing making Na Lan Feng’s go rigid with anger. She didn’t look beautiful at all at that moment.

“Shut up!” shouted Na Lan Feng flying into a rage out of humiliation. When they heard that conversation, the crowd was quite confused. The Yangzhou City’s Princess, who was so popular and whose reputation was amazing, was being called a cheap maid by a random person? That young man who had just come out was obviously a nobody talking nonsense.

“How audacious, you actually dared to come to the tournament which is organized by my clan, the Na Lan Clan and conduct yourself in such an disrespectful way. You really want to die.” said Na Lan Xion while staring at that young man furious.

“Shut up you scum.” said the young man while turning around. He then looked at Na Lan Xion looking furious and said: “You are the head of the Na Lan Clan, nothing more, and you dare boast shamelessly. Let me tell you, if I wish, I can make your entire clan disappear like fire under water.”

“Grrrrr...” Na Lan Xion was so furious and enraged that he was

going insane. He wouldn't have thought that that man would be so insolent. The crowd was extremely confused and didn't understand anything that had happened. They were wondering who that young man who had just appeared really was. He seemed to be even more arrogant than Na Lan Feng or Lin Qian. He even dared to threaten the head of the Na Lan Clan and insult him.

“Alright. Alright. I, Na Lan Xiong, would like to see how you intend to make my clan, the Na Lan Clan, disappear.” said Na Lan Xiong who was smiling and no longer looked furious. It was the first time in Yangzhou City that someone dared talk to him that way. That guy was boundlessly wild and arrogant.

“Father, can you let me, your daughter, solve that problem myself?” Na Lan Feng had suddenly asked her father that question which left Na Lan Xiong stunned. He was at that moment shaking in fear... Na Lan Feng meant that...

“Bai Yuan Hao, why are you not in the Imperial City and why did you come to Yangzhou City?”

“I came to ask for the repayment of a debt.” said Bai Yuan Hao while smiling. Immediately after, he looked at Lin Feng and said: “Alright, you, come down.”

“Huh?” Lin Feng frowned. Bai Yuan Hao was ordering him to come down as if he was Lin Feng's superior.

Lin Feng looked at Bai Yuan Hao and didn't move. Bai Yuan Hao frowned and said in an ice cold tone: “Get the hell down now, come

down off that stage immediately!”

Chapter 50: Infinitely Powerful

“What do you intend to do? Who exactly do you think you are by ordering me to come down like that?” said Lin Feng in a tone filled with disdain.

The crowd started to think that everyone was becoming even more crazier than the last person. They were so crazy, they suited each other perfectly. Lin Feng wasn't important in these people's eyes and after all, they still despised him.

He wanted to see who despised him and who he could really count on in the end. It would make things much easier for him in the future to know who his real allies and enemies are.

“What do I intend to do?” said Bai Yuan Hao with an evil smile on his face. He sneered at Lin Feng and said: “I am using you. You are my pet dog, nothing more... and you dare ask me what I intend to do?”

“Qiu Lan, there's nothing great about the people you chose to come. Even though their strength is so-so, they dare to disobey orders.” Qiu Lan made a wry smile and shook her head, then she said: “Duo Ming, you cannot fight against my bro. You should never fight against him. Get down now, ok?”

“Bro??” the crowd was stupefied. Qiu Lan suddenly called that wild and arrogant young man “bro”.

“I just came here to participate in the annual tournament, that's

all. I am under nobody's control." said Lin Feng as cold and detached before adding: "Whether I am his opponent or not, you are drawing final conclusions too early."

"Hehe, I wouldn't have thought that in such a small place as Yangzhou City, there would surprisingly be someone who would dare talk to me, Qiu Yuan Hao, that way. really audacious to the extreme."

"Qiu Lan, Qiu Yuan Hao, your family name is also Qiu?!" asked Na Lan Xiong standing and looking extremely surprised. "You guessed right, my family name is also Qiu. Qiu Lan and I were once members of the Qiu Clan in Yangzhou City. One night, you made our clan, the Qiu Clan, disappear, vanish like a fire under water." Qiu Yuan Hao's expression was ice cold and was looking at Na Lan Xiong with fury. "That year, every member of the Qiu Clan was extremely powerful, we had a great many geniuses... All had extremely strong spirits. It even became the strongest clan of Yangzhou City. Nobody would have ever thought that you, head of the Na Lan Clan, would be so scared just because the Qiu Clan had become so strong. One night, you carried out a surprise attack on the Qiu Clan, slaughtering its members and their families. You almost killed everyone and exterminated our bloodline. That debt of blood, you can't have forgotten it, right?"

The crowd was shaking in fear. Qiu Yuan Hao and Qiu Lan had belonged to the Qiu Clan in the past. In the crowd, everybody had heard about the Qiu Clan who was extremely powerful and relied on Vital Golden spirits... The Qiu Clan was like an unstoppable comet, nobody was able to defeat them and they were extremely famous. But one night, it completely disappeared from Yangzhou City without trace. Some people thought that the entire clan had

moved to another place. Some other people thought that they had been killed by an unknown enemy. But the crowd would have never thought that the Qiu Clan had been annihilated by the Na Lan Clan. They had not only slaughtered them but also destroyed the evidence extremely well.

Na Lan Xiong's heart was pounding. He was filled with rage and fury. Killing intent was making his eyes glow, He had never thought that there were survivors of the Qiu Clan.

“What? You want to silence witnesses by killing them?” said Qiu Yuan Hao with an evil smile on his face before adding: “Na Lan Xiong, I advise you not to get too excited. Your clan, the Na Lan Clan, will not continue to exist for a long time. Wait for me to come and get my revenge. Wait for me to annihilate your clan. Tomorrow or maybe the day after tomorrow, the name of your clan will not exist anymore in Yangzhou City.”

“Is that so? I would like to see how you are going to make us, the Na Lan Clan, disappear.” said Na Lan Xiong while smiling coldly.

“Father!” At that moment, Na Lan Feng said again. She was looking at her father while shaking her head which made everyone stupefied. It seemed like Qiu Yuan Hao's words were not lies. He probably had a huge force behind him to back him up. Otherwise, Na Lan Feng would not over cautious like that. She seemed to be scared of them.

“Bai Yuan Hao, I don't believe that you would ever touch me.” said Na Lan Feng in a cold tone.

“I wouldn’t dare kill you, but I definitely will dare humiliate you. Today, I came to Yangzhou in order to make my clan, the Qiu Clan, shine again, and to make people understand how filthy and evil your clan is. Your clan is disgusting. Wait and see, someday, I will come back to Yangzhou City, that will be the day when your clan disappears. Qiu Yuan sounded proud of himself and said: “Alright, you three continue your childish thing... the geniuses of Yangzhou City, haha, how ridiculous, how amusing!”

“If you have enemies, then you should get your revenge. But you shouldn’t use me as a stepping stone.” Lin Feng said while looking at Qiu Yuan Hao and then added: “Once the tournament finishes, your problems will have nothing to do with me.”

“How stupid and foolish. Who do you think you are? If I, Qiu Yuan Hao, want to kill you, then I will kill you. An insignificant doggy like you still dares to show off. Since you don’t want to close your big mouth, you should stay here forever and make this your grave.” said Qiu Yuan Hao while smiling evilly.

“An insignificant dog? You can kill me if you want to? Truly ignorant” said Lin Feng in an evil tone while shaking his head. Qiu Lan and Qiu Yuan Hao were filled with an intense and deep hatred. He could understand why and where that hatred came from. Therefore, he had showed respect to them but Qiu Yuan Hao thought he was better than everybody else and he continued to insult and trying to humiliate Lin Feng. Since it was this way, Lin Feng had no reason to try and understand him and his hatred or show compassion to him.

“Yangzhou City geniuses? Today, I want to show to everyone that you are just a bunch of trash.” said Qiu Yuan Hao in an impudent way. He then released his spirit, immediately, his entire body was covered with a magnificent golden light looking like rays of sun light. As the top of the arena was not covered, sunlight was refracting on his spirit which made it look even more majestic. The eyes of the people in the crowd were stunned by this magnificent view. His spirit was even more dazzling than Na Lan Feng’s golden Divine Arm Spirit.

“That’s a real golden spirit, how awesome!” said the crowd amazed. At that moment, Qiu Yuan Hao’s body looked like a gigantic and invulnerable mountain of gold.

“Na Lan Feng, you proclaimed yourself as genius, you are extremely arrogant because you possess a golden Divine Arm Spirit, try and have a fight against me.” Qiu Yuan Hao’s long hair was fluttering in the air. His entire body looked was majestic, coupled with the golden aura which had surrounded his body... The crowd had the feeling the feeling that he was invincible.

He stamped heavily on the main stage which made everyone shake. The entire crowd could already see how powerful he looked but being affected by his attack from such a distance had confirmed how powerful he was.

“Invincible Golden Body” Qiu Yuan Hao’s Qi was extremely powerful and made an incredibly loud noise. He then punched in the direction of Na Lan Feng and it looked like that punch was going to be fatal. Invincible Golden Body was a skill which Qiu Yuan Hao had accidentally discovered. It was one of the lowest

skills of the Xuan category. Besides, coupled with his Golden Body Spirit, it was even more powerful. The power of the attack was truly amazing. Relying on that combination of spirit and technique, Qiu Yuan Hao could kill many cultivators of a similar strength.

“Divine Punch.” When Na Lan Feng saw that Qiu Yuan Hao was about to attack, she did the same and started an attack with a loud shout. She didn’t think that her Divine Arm Spirit was going to be much weaker than the spirit of her opponent.

“BOOM, BOOM....”

Power versus power. The entire atmosphere was shaking. Between the two golden punches, a splendid Qi appeared and made a whistling sound as it cut through the air. It then turned into a violent hurricane which shot into the atmosphere.

“Let me crush you.” The brilliant golden light on Qiu Yuan Hao’s body became even more radiant. An incredible strength emerged all around his fist. Na Lan Feng groaned and was knocked back ten steps. She was now breathing heavily. She was still looking at Qiu Yuan Hao. He still had his cold and arrogant smile on his face. He was breathing normally and there wasn’t a single sign of exhaustion at all. The arrogant and prestigious girl of Yangzhou City couldn’t even withstand a single attack when facing that opponent. She was already exhausted and about to collapse.

“That Divine Punch is strong.” Divine Punch was an extremely powerful attack but Qiu Yuan Hao’s Golden Body spirit hadn’t been defeated yet. It was much stronger and incomparably more

powerful. "You dare call yourself a genius. That kind of foolishness is only possible in a small city like Yangzhou City. Only in such a miserable place, can you play that little game and make a show of authority, that's all." Then he turned and looked at Lin Feng and Lin Qian "It should be the two of you on this stage, I don't mind teaching you a lesson once, I want you to understand that you have an exaggerated opinion about yourselves. I also wanted to show all these people, these good-for-nothings what kind of people you are and yet dare call yourselves geniuses."

Qiu Yuan Hao was extremely arrogant and confident in his power. He thought that every single person in Yangzhou City was a piece of trash, a good-for-nothing. However, he had defeated Na Lan Qiu a single attack so he actually had the right to be that presumptuous and arrogant. "That young man is really an outstanding talent. He is an authentic genius and extremely powerful." The crowd was looking at Qiu Yuan Hao as if he was a deity. They thought that his strength was incredible. The person in whom the crowd had faith, miserably lost against Qiu Yuan Hao, what kind of person had such power?

In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, everybody only supported strong Cultivators. "Well, what about you? Are you not making a show of authority in Yangzhou City?" At that moment, Lin Feng had said those words as if he had spat them directly into Qiu Yuan Hao's face, which stupefied everybody in the crowd. He was really audacious, suddenly daring to humiliate Qiu Yuan Hao.

Qiu Yuan Hao looked indifferent and even had a teasing expression in his eyes. He then said: "Look at that, how brave. Once again, you've been playing the role of my little doggy. This time, I will have mercy on you, I will not kill you. However, as a

punishment for your insolence, I will make your life a living hell and destroy that rotten mouth of yours.”

“Little doggy, rotten mouth... I noticed how rich your vocabulary is. However, I think that you are the one who spends his life being a little doggy.” said Lin Feng while grinning and sneering at Qiu Yuan Hao. Even though Qiu Yuan Hao’s spirit was powerful, his strength was equivalent to that normally reached when at the first Ling Qi layer, otherwise, his punch a moment before wouldn’t have just made Na Lan Feng step back of a few steps.

“I’ll kill you!” yelled Qiu Yuan Hao. He liked to call other people names but what he hated the most was being called names by other people. His body started glowing in a golden light and he threw himself towards Lin Feng...

Chapter 51: Lin Feng's Fury

A golden palm carrying an extremely strong pressure was rushing towards Lin Feng. The crowd could already imagine Lin Feng getting blown away by that palm strike. Na Lan Feng had been defeated by a similar attack, what about Lin Feng?

“Get Lost!” said Lin Feng strictly. The light of his sword was dazzling as it filled the eyes of everyone watching. The resplendent sword light and the golden hand enhanced each other's beauty. As a result of their collision, a loud sound similar to that of a gong spread throughout the atmosphere.

Qiu Yuan Hao's golden body not only allowed him to carry out formidably strong attacks but also enabled him to greatly enhance his defense. It seemed like he was impervious to spears and swords. Thus, Lin Feng's sword was unable to hurt him.

That was precisely what Qiu Yuan Hao relied on, his defense skills. He relied on them as much as he relied on his arrogance.

“Hahaha, are you kidding me? You little doggy, you're just a piece of trash. You'll never be able to hurt me.” said Qiu Yuan Hao sneering at Lin Feng. His golden light began to once again fill the air. Lin Feng just sensed the colossal oppressing strength against his sword. That strength made his sword shake so much that he almost had it slip from his grasp.

“Really?” replied Lin Feng indifferently. If the sword was used quickly, it could never be stopped. It could overrun all

fortifications. A sword user could crush and annihilate everything in his path. Nobody could survive a sword that they did not see.

There were a myriad of weapon spirits but the sword spirit was one of the strongest and most powerful weapon spirits which existed. Even though Lin Feng didn't have a sword spirit, his knowledge when it came to swords surpassed that of a great majority of cultivators who had a sword spirit.

“Sword force.” Lin Feng whispered. His sword was dazzling. Brilliant rays of lights started to consume the atmosphere. An extremely strong Qi was concentrated in the tip of his sword and emitted a loud explosion.

“BOOOOOOOM!”

Lin Feng's sword collided with Qiu Yuan Hao's spirit again. A sound like tearing paper spread throughout the air. Qiu Yuan Hao's facial expression immediately changed. He, who was incredibly strong, had had to step back to avoid that powerful sword and could not rely only on his defenses.

When Lin Feng saw that Qiu Yuan Hao had stepped back, he put his sword on his shoulder and said while smiling coldly: “You said that I was unable to hurt you, well then, why did you just step back?”

When Qiu Yuan Hao heard those words, his face twisted in anger and while staring at Lin Feng, said: “I admit that I underestimated you but I am stronger than you. You're still a little doggy, no a

little chicken who cannot even withstand a single attack.”

“You talk a lot, but everything that leaves your mouth is crap.” Lin Feng said sounding exhausted. “If being a genius means opening one’s big mouth and stupidly judging other people, then you definitely are a real genius, a true genius, a genius unmatched beneath the heavens”

“How fearless. Duo Ming has been brave in the face of danger this whole time. He has no fear.” When the crowd saw that Lin Feng had made Qiu Yuan Hao step back, their expression was bright. They already regarded Duo Ming as someone great. They used to think that Lin Feng only had a little power, they had underestimated him... but at that moment, they really thought that he was stronger than Na Lan Feng or Lin Qian.

Na Lan Feng and Lin Qian were also watching Lin Feng and started to think very highly of him. They had thought that Lin Feng wasn’t that strong before but at that moment, they realized how ignorant they had been. Actually, Duo Ming was the person to be careful of, he was on a higher level than them both.

“Even though we can’t see his face, he’s obviously very young and he’s a real genius. He must have been gifted ever since his birth. If he could join my clan, the Na Lan Clan, that would be a great help.” said Na Lan Feng who really hoped Duo Ming would join her clan. Then, she walked towards Lin Feng and said: “Duo Ming, I admit that I underestimated you. With such strength like yours, my clan, the Na Lan Clan, will really respect you. Please join my clan and support us in the future. Then, you will be able to meet me everyday no matter what, wouldn’t that be great for you.

Please join?”

Na Lan Feng sounded arrogant and self-confident again. She had recovered from her previous emotions. Relying on her natural beauty and feminine charms, she tried to convince Lin Feng to meet her every day. Both would gain a lot from such a relationship. Besides, she was really beautiful so she was convinced that Lin Feng would not refuse her suggestion.

“Get lost.”

What nobody had expected was that Lin Feng had not only rejected Na Lan Feng’s proposition but had also brandished his sword in her direction, which made him look extremely ruthless.

Na Lan Feng’s pupils were dilated. She released her Divine Arm Spirit and started her Divine Punch and bombarded his sword.

But nothing happened, the long sword didn’t even move a millimeter. Then, a thunderous roar spread throughout the atmosphere carrying an insanely violent and explosive Qi within. It looked beyond terrifying.

Na Lan Feng’s expression suddenly changed. She quickly dodged the attack. She was extremely quick.

“BOOOM!.”

Lin Feng thrust out his left hand which was followed by a loud

explosive noise. That punch turned into a multitude of fist shadows superposing one another. Each fist shadow was stronger than the last. It looked like he had created a flood of punches.

They were moving towards Na Lan Feng at an unimaginable speed.

Na Lan Feng groaned. She was blown backwards and looked extremely fragile and weak. She slid backwards to the edge of the main fighting stage. One more step backwards and she would have fallen off.

At that moment, the crowd didn't know what was going on anymore, they were too confused. Lin Feng had astonished them too many times.

Each time Lin Feng moved, they found him amazing, but each time, they also realized they had been underestimating him. It seemed like his strength was ever increasing. It looked like they were underestimating him over and over again. Even at that moment, Lin Feng had defeated Na Lan Feng quickly and efficiently.

They remembered how they had thought that Na Lan Feng and Lin Qian were definitely going to win this fight and had never put the young man in their eyes. They were thinking that they had been ridiculous and foolish. If Qiu Yuan Hao hadn't been there, Lin Feng would have deserved to be designated as their grandfather.

The crowd were not the only ones to think that way. Na Lan Feng

and Lin Qian, but especially Na Lan Feng, thought that they were the only ones who had a chance and were ignoring Lin Feng when the three of them were on the battle stage, getting ready for the final battle. They had almost forgotten that Lin Feng was even there. They had really underestimated him. At that moment, they also realized how ridiculous they had been. They realized by underestimating him, they could have both died beneath his sword.

“You are so strong... would you please help me practice and improve my cultivation skills...?” said Lin Feng while looking at Na Lan Feng as he was blatantly humiliating her. Lin Feng was filled with indignation and anger because of that arrogant girl’s behavior but what enraged Lin Feng the most was that that girl didn’t respect people... and she wanted other people to respect her, otherwise why would she send her troops at night to attack the offenders by surprise. Lin Feng couldn’t stand the arrogant and haughty girl.

Na Lan Feng was utterly ashamed of herself when she remembered what she had said. She had the feeling she was truly foolish.

“Join your clan, meet you everyday, who do you think you are? You think you are alone at the top of the world, you think others are beneath you. What gives you the right to think that I would ever want to meet you every day?”

Lin Feng continued to talk and made Na Lan Feng understand how ridiculous she was and that she had no right to be arrogant.

Na Lan Feng had the feeling that her face was burning. She couldn't refute anything that Lin Feng had said.

At that moment, Na Lan Xiong was looking at them. He was staring at Lin Feng who was filled with anger and whose expression was ice cold. He had defeated Na Lan Feng so easily. That Duo Ming really looked like he was going to kill the arrogant Na Lan Feng, the greatest disciple of the Na Lan Clan, a real genius.

The crowd hadn't been so excited as at that moment. Lin Qian, Na Lan Feng, Duo Ming as well as Qiu Yuan Hao, all were geniuses, all were stronger than the other.

None of them had a strength which could make the crowd despise them, but some of them were so insanely strong that the crowd's blood was boiling in excitement, for example when looking at Lin Feng.

He gradually was showing more and more strength, he was gradually becoming more and more insane. So far, he hadn't been so furious and enraged as at that moment. The more ruthless he became, the more excited the crowd became. Nobody was even willing to fight against him anymore. He was really hot-blooded and merciless.

“Oh, you're still there. I have no intention to fight against you to prevent you from taking your revenge... but do you think that trying to humiliate me over and over again and thinking that you are the best person in the world makes you an amazing person?”

Lin Feng had turned around and was looking at Qiu Yuan Hao and then said in an ice cold tone: “You say that Na Lan Feng is extremely arrogant and sets herself high above everyone else... that she can act that way only because she is in a small and miserable town like Yangzhou City... what about you? Are you not acting in the same way? Genius? calling me a little doggy and a chicken... now, I would like to ask you, what makes you a genius?”

Lin Feng said that while walking. He released his spirit for the first time.

All of them seemed not to have noticed that they had all released their spirit at least once... but Lin Feng had not released his spirit the whole time.

In his eyes, the entire world became darkness. Lin Feng’s eyes became pitch black. He looked truly evil. It looked like he had two black holes instead of eyes. He looked like a demon.

Everything around him seemed to slow down. Every movement, every person and their face, every single thing... Lin Feng could see everything around him at the same time and it was crystal clear as if everything was moving in slow motion. Nothing could escape from Lin Feng’s attention. He knew what everyone was doing at any given time.

He could also hear his own heart palpitating. He could even sense his own blood circulating in his veins. He could sense every single movement that Qiu Yuan Hao was making, including his respiration.

Lin Feng was unable to speak at that moment though as if he, was an omnipotent deity, as if he was in every single moment at the same time, as if he was a gigantic pair of eyes able to observe every single thing in the universe at the same time... but eyes couldn't speak.

Through the silver mask that Lin Feng was wearing, Qiu Yuan Hao could see Lin Feng's eyes. He had begun to tremble with fear, he had never felt so much fear in his life. He couldn't realize what he was seeing. What was wrong with Lin Feng's eyes? Why did it seem like he was staring into the eyes of death itself?

At that moment, Qiu Yuan Hao was confused and terrified. He could feel the fear penetrating deep into his bones and was shivering like he was frozen. He must be having a hallucination, there was nobody in front of him.

Lin Feng was clearly standing in front of him but Qiu Yuan Hao couldn't feel his presence at all. It was just as if he was closing his eyes and couldn't see people or sense other people's presence near him. It was as if the place where Lin Feng stood was a black hole which absorbed his presence.

“BOOM!”

....

“BOOM!”

.....

“BOOM!”

.....

At that moment, the atmosphere was extremely silent. Everybody was staring at Lin Feng as if he was the only person within the universe.

Even though Lin Feng's steps made almost no sound at all, each and every one of his steps caused a terrifying sensation in their hearts, it sounded like their hearts were trying to burst from their chests. This was fear, this was terror. It was a primal instinct, everyone wanted to do only one thing....Run.

With eyes filled with fury, Lin Feng was drawing closer and closer to the frozen Qiu Yuan Hao with every step.

Chapter 52: Who Dares?!

At that moment, Lin Feng was shrouded in a mysterious aura of darkness. His steps seemed to be corresponding to some kind of special cosmic rhythm. That cosmic rhythm seemed to follow the same laws as that of elemental forces.

The sword could diffuse a strong sword force with each strike... heaven and earth would also naturally produce a force which filled the world.

When Lin Feng released his spirit, he could sense and comprehend things in a way that was shockingly advanced, he could understand the mysteries which confused cultivators who were several realms higher. Millions of thoughts were circulating in his brain at full speed. These thoughts gave Lin Feng strange perceptions and a feeling of understanding a higher realm.

“Celestial spirit, transforms me into something unknown and unbelievably strong....” thought Lin Feng very pleased but it was impossible to see it on his face. Lin Feng’s right hand reached down and begun to remove his belt.

“Huh?” the entire crowd was looking at Lin Feng’s movements and could not believe he had just removed his belt. What was he planning to do?

“It’s... it’s a sword!” Everybody’s eyes seemed even more shocked that his silver belt had become a sword. They had already seen that Lin Feng was carrying a sword on his shoulder but they hadn’t paid

attention to what was around his waist... Lin Feng seemed to be holding something which resembled a soft and flexible sword.

Lin Feng was getting nearer and nearer to Qiu Yuan Hao. At that moment, an extremely strong sword Qi was revolving around Lin Feng's body. Lin Feng's body seemed to look like the handle of a sword and the Qi which was emanating from his sword and body had formed a blade like shape in the air above him..

“Is that a spirit?” The entire crowd had a strange feeling and didn't really understand what was going on. Could it be that Lin Feng had a sword spirit? Otherwise, how could he be surrounded by such an insanely strong sword Qi?

The crowd seemed to have come to the realization that Lin Feng hadn't released his spirit at all... He hadn't needed to... he could display a strength above that of the geniuses before them, without releasing his spirit.

With each step that he took, the sword force was becoming stronger and stronger. Just by looking at the sword, everyone could tell that the killing force contained was growing with each passing moment. Even though Lin Feng was filled with murderous thoughts and his face was shockingly calm, it also seemed like he was slightly happy.

“The ten thousands things of creation possess a force, it is part of their innermost nature and the sword itself has a force... why keep using sword Qi when there is unlimited force?”

Before, Lin Feng would need to release a lot of sword Qi to use the sword force but at this moment he was not releasing his own sword Qi, but was using the Sword force and taking the Qi from the sword into his body. He could freely control the force to his will. He could now borrow force whenever he wanted. Therefore, he could unleash as much sword force in a single strike as he pleased. He was no longer limited by his own Qi.

His entire body and aura was starting to look like a sword, like an extremely sharp and ruthless sword!

Lin Feng, deep in his heart was growing happier and happier. The sword Qi in his body and the atmosphere was also becoming more and more vigorous. However at the same time, Qiu Yuan Hao was growing more and more concerned, a look of fear was covering his face.

The whole atmosphere was being consumed by the pressure of the sword force and it felt like the sword was trying to consume him and bathe in his blood. He could only panic, he could sense that Lin Feng was a threat to his life and at any moment his life could end.

Lin Feng could really tear through his Golden Body Spirit with such a terrifying sword force.

“I shouldn’t wait any longer, I should retreat.” thought Qiu Yuan Hao. His confidence had been crushed by that enormous sword Qi and terrifying sword force. Besides, Lin Feng’s force was showing no signs of decreasing, instead it was still growing stronger. He was scared to approach Lin Feng because he feared that he

wouldn't be able to come out of the encounter with all of his body parts.

Qiu Yuan Hao would have never thought that he would end up in such a situation facing a nobody in Yangzhou City. He wasn't even famous, he was an unknown. On top of that, his sister had invited him to join the annual tournament, so how could he be so strong? Lin Feng at this moment was looking at him as if he was looking at a street mutt.

Qiu Yuan Hao decided to start releasing his Qi again, he could not accept such humiliation from a nobody. His golden body was surrounded by a radiant golden light and he began releasing his colossal strength. His entire body was emanating a powerful Qi and he was even using an incredible force.

“Invincible Golden Body!”

In an extremely loud shout, Qiu Yuan Hao eventually decided to attack. He coated his fist in his indestructible aura and launched his fist towards Lin Feng.

“BOOM!”

As his fist crashed through the air, the sound of explosions filled the air as if he was shattering the atmosphere which restrained his fist.

“Die”

Lin Feng said that word in a low voice and suddenly, an incredibly powerful sword force emerged out of his body and tore the atmosphere apart, then rushed towards Qiu Yuan Hao's body .

The force of the sword made Qiu Yuan Hao's body distort. Sounds of tearing and ripping could be heard from inside his body. It sounded like his body could be torn apart at any moment.

The sword force which was unleashed was accompanied by an extremely powerful Qi. The sword flashed through the atmosphere cutting everything in its path and an extremely dazzling light filled the air.

The sword struck against Qiu Yuan Hao's chest.

“CRRRAAAACCK!”

Qiu Yuan Hao's body cracked open like an egg as his protective layer shattered into pieces. His spirit was disintegrated. Blood splashed everywhere and Qiu Yuan Hao's body was launched backwards.

It was now clear that he was weaker than Lin Feng. The strong cultivator who had come from the imperial city, same as those who had come before him, had not been able to withstand a single strike carried out by Lin Feng.

At that moment, the crowd was astonished, stunned, stupefied

and was staring blankly at Lin Feng.

How terrifyingly strong. That was pure and undeniable strength. No one was able to deny the power that he had just unleashed.

Whether it was a genius or a powerful disciple mattered not, Lin Feng had only needed a single strike to deal with them.

“Phewww.... Duo Ming is the real genius today. He was definitely the hero of the day. Nobody could compete with his strength or defy his wrath. That haughty girl actually thought she was worthy of him, but Duo Ming is someone who is favored by the gods.”

The crowd was still staring silently at Lin Feng. He definitely had gained a special esteem and respect within their hearts.

“Na Lan Feng considers herself as above the rest of the world, the strongest, the most beautiful... Surprisingly, she even wants to become a mentor for Duo Ming on the path of cultivation, that brat does not have eyes.”

“Qiu Yuan Hao is also extremely arrogant and thinks he is invincible. He humiliated and insulted Duo Ming, called him a little doggy. Now, he can't even withstand a single attack when facing Duo Ming. He is actually the little doggy. He actually thought he could be that arrogant in Duo Ming's City but he was wrong, he better learn his lesson and behave in Yangzhou City.”

“Only Duo Ming is a true genius. He has received a blessing from

the heavens and the earth. He is the most talented and the most powerful person in Yangzhou City.”

Lin Feng couldn't know what the crowd was thinking. He was looking at Qiu Yuan Hao lying on the ground. Lin Feng was expressionless. That was the price to pay for humiliating and despising others for no reason.

Lin Feng turned around and didn't look at Qiu Yuan Hao again. The black holes he was using as eyes then turned towards Lin Qian. On that day, Lin Feng was going to use Lin Qian and wipe away all his past humiliations.

“It looks like you and me are the last ones left. Let's continue.” said Lin Feng showing no emotions, which frightened Lin Qian. She did not know what he intended to do.

Her strength was very similar to that of Na Lan Feng. Qiu Yuan Hao had been able to defeat Na Lan Feng with ease.

But the strong and powerful Qiu Yuan Hao had not been able to block Lin Feng's sword which gave Lin Qian the impression that she had no chance to defeat Lin Feng at all.

“Who the hell is that guy? Surprisingly he is so strong...” Lin Qian whispered. On that day, her self confidence had been crushed.

She used to think that she was amazing because she had reached

the first Ling Qi layer. She used to think that she could defeat anyone who was before her. She was a true genius and no one else mattered. Her state of mind was the same as that of Na Lan Feng.

Then Qiu Yuan Hao had appeared from nowhere and made her understand that even though she had reached the first Ling Qi layer, there were many others who were still stronger than her and much more talented.

But at the moment when she had thought that Qiu Yuan Hao was incredibly strong, Lin Feng had cut him down with a single sword strike. This had made her feel extremely inferior.

“I think it’s useless to continue after these events.” said Lin Qian sounding cold and detached. Even though her self confidence had been crushed, she still didn’t want to show it.. She didn’t want to admit that she wanted to surrender.

Lin Feng’s pitch black eyes looked like they were smiling. Even at that point, Lin Qian was unwilling to stop acting high and mighty.

Moonlight Feather Agility. Lin Feng’s body vanished without trace.

“Lin Qian, step back!” said someone shouting extremely loudly. Lin Ba Dao was frightened and didn’t want Lin Feng to attack Lin Qian. He had been paying attention all along. When he saw Lin Feng’s move, he immediately warned Lin Qian. At the same time, his body transformed into a whirlwind breaking through the air and moving straight towards the fighting stage.

Lin Qian was also aware of the danger and she immediately released her Universal Ice and Fire spirit. Both Ice and fire was coming out of her hands and she threw herself towards Lin Feng whom had appeared in front of her.

“BOOOM!”

Lin Feng blocked the attack, the ice had melted and the fire was extinguished. Immediately after, his body shot towards Lin Qian. He would show no mercy at all, a single sword strike.

Lin Feng thrust his sword at Lin Qian.

“Let’s see if you dare!” shouted Lin Ba Dao while trying to intervene. A scorching fire was unleashed from the palm of his hand and moved to block Lin Feng’s sword.

“BOOOM!”

The fire was unimaginably powerful and had weakened the power of the sword which was about to crash into Lin Qian’s body but the force of the sword still struck her and sent her flying towards the edge of the fighting stage, she was alive but gravely injured.

“How dare you violate the rules of the annual tournament like that?” Lin Feng shouted and then added: “Because you are worthless, you need to make a spectacle of yourself and need the

help of the older generation to back you up, what a disgrace. The Lin Clan has finally shown its true colors. How shameless!!”

Na Lan Xiong remained silent. That whole tournament had deviated too much from what he had planned. Since it was this way, he felt like everything right now was meaningless. Lin Feng had injured his daughter, Na Lan Feng, could Na Lan Xiong have mercy on Lin Feng?

“How audacious. Who do you think you are, to be that arrogant?”

Lin Ba Dao saw that Na Lan Xiong remained silent, he didn’t hesitate at all and tried to slap Lin Feng’s silver mask.

Lin Feng didn’t try to avoid the attack. His silver mask directly fell down onto the ground and his real face appeared.

“It’s you...”

“It’s you...”

Lin Ba Dao and Lin Qian said these words at the same time. When they saw Lin Feng’s real face, they were stupefied. They felt like a blizzard was spreading through their veins and an icy cold chill ran down their spines.

At the same time, all the members of the Lin Clan in the crowd were stupefied when they saw Lin Feng’s real face. That insanely

strong and powerful young man surprisingly is a member of the Lin Clan... or actually a former member of the Lin Clan who had been expelled for apparently being weak!!!

Chapter 53: A Fierce Tiger

“It’s him. No wonder... no wonder that he would dare attack me. I sent troops, but he killed them all, now I am next.” Na Lan Feng was extremely surprised. She was shaking from fear as she had sent a large number of people to kill him but he had killed them all, leaving no survivors.

When she remembered what had happened at the Whistle Wind Restaurant, Na Lan Feng had a bitter feeling in her heart. What had given her the right to act towards Lin Feng over such petty problems? She was regretting all of her actions to this point. She had created a terrible enemy for herself and her clan.

When the crowd saw the expression that the Lin Clan members had, they were surprised. They were confused and were wondering who the mysterious person under the mask was. Who was that guy who made the Lin Clan members so shocked?

“Impossible, how did you become this strong?” Lin Qian couldn’t believe what she had witnessed, all that strength that he had displayed. An insanely strong and powerful young man, he was a genius. She would have never considered that he could have strength to fight her, she used to think he was a piece of trash. The feeling she had at this moment was unbearable, if he was really trash then what was she?

“There’s no doubt. Your eyes are correct. I am Lin Feng, the one that you all despise so much, also known as the “piece of trash” within the Lin Clan.”

Lin Feng sounded indifferent. His simple answer made the hearts of the Lin Clan members extremely heavy. This young man should have been the glory and pride of the Lin Clan, with him by their side, their future would have been glorious. They should have hailed him as a hero but instead they had ridiculed him and expelled him from the clan. What complete foolishness they all had, they did not deserve such a genius.

The crowd was stirring and growing restless. The Lin Clan had abandoned Lin Feng. The rumors said it was a piece of trash who almost died against Lin Hong. Everybody in the Lin Clan despised him. Could this terrifying young man really have needed help from his father against someone so much weaker than himself? The rumors were beginning to sound more and more untrue.

What had happened on the stage was shocking. Nobody would have thought Qiu Yuan Hao would appear. They had discovered a genius, but that genius was the one known as a piece of trash according to rumors from the Lin Clan.

“No wonder that he was wearing that silver mask!”

Members of the audience slowly started to understand the chain of events that had occurred and why this mysterious young man had no background.

“Lin Qian, people as arrogant as you are very rare. You think that you stand at the top of the world, looking down on others. But it is only possible for you to be that way within the Lin Clan, that’s all. Never say that you are a genius because all you are is a foolish little girl. Lin Ba Dao, you are a weak shell of a man compared to my

father, you will never be as strong as him. But you acted in collusion with the Honorable Elder to overtake the power and make my father abdicate. On top of that, you wanted to expel him from the clan. You believe in Lin Qian's power more than anything, thinking that she will someday be the hope for the clan"

"But now, everybody can see that Lin Qian cannot compete with me. She's a worthless little girl who can only run her mouth. Don't you feel stupid? Don't you think you are laughable? Are you not ashamed of yourselves? Don't you regret what you did? Of course, I understand that you are not going to admit it even if you do regret what you did. However, today is only the beginning. Today I have only proved how stupid, foolish and shameless you all truly are. Your words, your faces... you are all filthy. Someday I will return with my Father and we will take justice."

Suddenly, Lin Feng had stopped being silent. Every single sentence he had said had penetrated deeply into the hearts of the Lin Clan members. It moved them and shocked them.

Lin Feng was right. Every member of the Lin Clan had dared despise Lin Hai and wanted Lin Ba Dao to become the head of the Lin Clan. It wasn't because Lin Ba Dao was strong though because Lin Ba Dao wasn't even in the same league as Lin Hai. All of this was because of Lin Qian and her talent. They all looked at her as if she was a deity. They had thought that Lin Qian had limitless power. They had thought that she could make the Lin Clan rise up and that they would all benefit in the future.

But they would have never thought that their beloved and cherished Lin Qian could be surpassed by someone else, especially

by another genius who had been expelled from the clan. The most bitter thing was that he was the son of the former head of the clan...

That was the beginning, nothing more. Lin Feng would become much stronger. He had huge potential and limitless talent. Would Lin Qian ever be able to catch up to him?

Why had a genius like him been expelled from the Lin Clan? Why had nobody acknowledged him when he defeated Lin Hong? Why had nobody given him the chance to prove them wrong? Why had they continued to think that Lin Qian was their only hope and raised her above him in every possible way? It wasn't until this moment that the Lin Clan truly understood the grave mistake that they had made. They had treated a hero, such a rare genius with nothing but disdain, they had brought the hatred of him and his father down upon themselves. Had any of them truly been thinking of the clan?

Regret? Of course, the Lin Clan members regretted everything. They knew that nothing could ever turn back time before they had made such mistakes. They had made a big mistake by hurting a genius of Yangzhou City. Even an extremely strong cultivator who had come from the Imperial City wasn't a match for a single strike from Lin Feng.

"You animal, shut the hell up!" shouted Lin Ba Dao furiously because he couldn't bear hearing Lin Feng's words anymore.

"Lin Ba Dao, you are a worthless clan member. Using my father's uncle to overtake his power. Your goal was to create confusion

within the Lin Clan. You never cared about our family ties, about the same blood flowing in our veins. From the bottom of your heart, all you ever wanted was kill my father and me. Lin Ba Dao, you are not even worth being called an animal yourself, you are nothing but a worm. I am ashamed to think that we share the same blood. Even if I am not part of the Lin Clan anymore, knowing that we share the same blood will always be a disgrace to me. Even if no one ever finds out we share the same blood, knowing this fact makes me sick.”

Every single word Lin Feng had said was like a sharp knife stabbing Lin Ba Dao’s heart.

Lin Feng was usually a quiet person, he would never spend long times speaking. He wasn’t an expert when it came to the expression of his feelings and emotions... but who could ever understand him, he had already lived another life?

Lin Ba Dao’s heart was pounding furiously. He could never forgive Lin Feng. He had no regret and could only feel the hatred inside himself.

“Head of the Na Lan Clan. Please don’t blame me for interfering in this match.” said Lin Ba Dao while looking at Na Lan Xiong.

“These are your clan’s internal affairs. I obviously have no right to intervene.” replied Na Lan Xiong in an indifferent tone.

When he saw them, Lin Feng smiled coldly. He had humiliated and injured Na Lan Feng. Na Lan Xiong already hated him bitterly.

But Lin Ba Dao was still scared to be beaten by Na Lan Xiong because he had broken the rules of the tournament.

“In my eyes, this annual tournament is a big façade. You only want the Na Lan Clan members to win. You can’t stand losing to anyone else. I don’t want to participate in these kind of stupid events again. It’s clear that if a genius injures a member of your clan, you will later send people to attack them by surprise. The Na Lan Clan is a huge joke. Truly shameless.”

Lin Feng’s black eyes looked ice cold. People were still shocked by Lin Feng’s aura. There was no one that did not have their eyes fixed on Lin Feng after the power he had shown.

“Lin Qian, didn’t you want to kill me? So now, I will take your life.”

Lin Feng said that while laughing evilly. He started walking towards Lin Qian. Lin Ba Dao was shaking in anger. He was in front of Lin Qian obstructing the way.

“DIE!” shouted Lin Feng demonically. He unsheathed his long sword from his back and moved it in Lin Qian’s direction. Thunderous roars spread throughout the atmosphere.

“Do you think you even have a chance?” Lin Ba Dao shouted while looking at Lin Feng who had unsheathed his sword. A strong Qi filled the atmosphere and thunderous roars filled the air.

“Moonlight Feather Agility.”

Lin Feng suddenly vanished but didn't move towards Lin Ba Dao and Lin Qian, he rather moved to a more distant place.

“Oh NO!.”

Na Lan Xiong turned pale with fright. He stood up. He raised his head and saw Lin Feng above Na Lan Feng's head as if he was falling from the sky. Lin Feng's target was Na Lan Feng!!

Na Lan Feng also found out that she was Lin Feng's target and was filled with shock. She saw his eyes filled with darkness moving closer... she attacked with a Divine Punch, but Lin Feng could use his soft sword with extreme speed. Na Lan Feng's fist shadow vanished and Lin Feng's cold sword was pressed against Na Lan Feng's throat.

“How dare you!?” shouted Na Lan Xiong short before arriving near Lin Feng.

“One more step and I will kill her” said Lin Feng in an ice cold tone. He looked expressionless. Nobody had any doubt when it came to Lin Feng. If Na Lan Xiong made one more step, Lin Feng would probably kill Na Lan Feng.

Na Lan Feng was looking at Lin Feng's darkness filled eyes. She had never been in such a situation. In Lin Feng's black eyes, she was just a worthless little brat. He had taken her as a hostage very

easily as if she truly had no strength. At that moment, Na Lan Feng obviously understood that Lin Feng had taken her as a hostage.

The crowd was looking at Lin Feng while remaining speechless. That remarkable young man who seemed to be blessed by the god was also extremely reckless and ambitious.

Everybody thought he was insane and he surprisingly dared humiliate every clan again and again. The crowd could only stand there in silence as they watched these events.

Maybe when they had seen Lin Feng appear for the first time when he had joined the tournament, they already had the feeling that things were not going to go as planned. Even the events with Qiu Yuan Hao were unexpected, Lin Feng however had been insulting all of the powerful clans from the moment he first appeared. He had been offending everyone because of something that happened before the tournament. Na Lan Feng had made a mistake before and it seemed like Lin Feng had already planned to use her to escape.

This was a ruthless and insane young man. Only somebody as strong as Lin Feng could be so reckless with his actions. Only someone as insane as Lin Feng could have planned this from the start.

His words were mysterious and his actions were insane. He had drawn the attention of the entire crowd.

When Lin Ba Dao wanted to take his revenge, Lin Feng had

pleasantly surprised the entire crowd with his words, including Na Lan Xiong.

Lin Ba Dao and Na Lan Xiong were helpless in front of Lin Feng, who was holding Na Lan Feng as a hostage. They looked like monkeys who were dancing to his tune.

Lin Feng was like a fierce tiger, he had completely captured his prey!

Chapter 54: Chi Xue Cavalry

Absolute control. Lin Feng was in absolute control.

Lin Feng was using his Celestial Spirit and that moment he was able to see everything extremely clearly as if he was looking down on the world frozen in time..

The moment when he had released his Celestial Spirit, his brain had started operating at an incredible speed and could solve even the most challenging problems. Everything that was happening around him was instantly processed by his brain and nothing was escaping his attention.

Every single word Lin Feng had said fascinated the crowd and drew their attention. Na Lan Xiong and Lin Ba Dao were furious at this turn of events. At the moment when Lin Feng had threatened to kill Lin Qian, he hadn't killed her and instead had taken Na Lan Feng as a hostage.

The most fascinating thing was that even though Lin Feng's brain was operating at an incredibly terrifying speed, he remained calm and level headed.

Lin Feng sighed, his Celestial Spirit had completely changed him as if he had transformed into something no longer human. His spirit enhanced all of his skills and abilities. Besides, that was also only the first layer of the Celestial Spirit. There was also the second layer which could be released used at any time, his Book Spirit.

“Let her go.” Na Lan Xiong said with a voice filled with killing intent.

“Let her go? Is that even possible?” said Lin Feng while smiling evilly in his heart. As before, his face was expressionless which made him look exceptionally ruthless.

“I can guarantee that if anyone tries to get near me or tries to attack me, I swear to you all that the first one to die will not be me.”

Lin Feng had said these ruthless words with almost no change in his expression, showing no fear. His words felt like a slap in the face. Na Lan Xiong could not help but twist his face in anger.

“Let’s go.” Lin Feng’s soft sword slightly moved. In a flash, a thread of blood appeared on Na Lan Feng’s throat even though the soft sword had only slightly pressed on her throat. Na Lan Feng was terrified when she felt a sharp burst of pain. Lin Feng’s pitch black eyes made her especially terrified. She didn’t believe that Lin Feng would let her go easily once they escaped. His eyes look inhumane and heartless, there were not the eyes of a man but that of a demon. She may truly die at his hands.

Na Lan Feng obeyed Lin Feng and started walking towards the exit.

“Remember my words.” said Lin Feng while looking at Lin Ba Dao who was very close to him at this moment. Lin Feng once

again pressed his sword against Na Lan Feng's throat and another trace of blood appeared.

“Step back.” shouted Na Lan Xiong at Lin Ba Dao who was standing at a strategic point. He could see that Lin Ba Dao was still planning to attack Lin Feng.

Na Lan Xiong's tone made Lin Ba Dao shiver. He hated Na Lan Xiong for standing in his way. He would have never thought that Lin Feng would be so sly and take Na Lan Feng as a hostage. Nobody would dare to confront him, for fear of angering Na Lan Xiong.

“Lin Feng, if I let you off, will you let my daughter go?” asked Na Lan Xiong with a stern tone.

“Are you trying to have me kill her right here and now?” Lin Feng's black eyes just stared at Na Lan Xiong showing no emotion. Na Lan Xiong felt powerless against facing Lin Feng. He didn't dare do anything because in Lin Feng's eyes was pure darkness which made him look incredibly evil. He was scared that Lin Feng would be angered and kill Na Lan Feng.

They didn't talk much longer. Lin Feng and Na Lan Feng gradually disappeared into the horizon. Even if Na Lan Xiong couldn't do anything, he was still praying that nothing tragic would happen to Na Lan Feng.

[TL Notes: Na Lan Feng was left there with the MC disappearing]

Finally, the crowd saw Lin Feng's silhouette disappear into the distance. They could not help but sigh a breath of relief at seeing him leave. They had felt like this was all a chaotic dream. They were all exhausted at the events which had come to pass. Lin Feng had done so many astonishing things. Everyone had more than enough excitement for one day.

“Lin Feng.”

“Lin Feng.”

“Lin Feng.”

In every corner of the city, only one name could be heard. The Na Lan Clan, the Gu Clan, even Qiu Yuan Hao and Qiu Lan, all had just one name in their mind and on their tongue: “Lin Feng.”

Lin Clan members all seemed to carry a look of regret and deep thought on their faces. Lin Feng was a prodigy who had once belonged to the Lin Clan but when he had revealed his power and become known as a great talent, the glory wasn't attributed to the Lin Clan. Actually, it was the opposite, they were going to suffer from harsh criticism. A talented young man who was once a member of the Lin Clan had been expelled from the Clan for being weak. How could they have been so stupid?

No matter what, after the battles of that day, Lin Feng had already gained an incredible reputation within Yangzhou City.

Very quickly, people in Yangzhou City would all hear the name, Lin Feng. The former piece of trash of the Lin Clan had become a genius who had received the blessing of heaven and earth, however he was stupidly thrown away by the Lin Clan.

Lin Feng obviously didn't think about that and didn't really care. All he wanted was to leave Yangzhou City. He didn't know when he would go back to Yangzhou City. He only knew that when he would go back there, people would respect him and acknowledge his power. There would be nobody who would dare disrespect or despise him. He wouldn't need to rely on a hostage next time. He would come and go freely as he pleased.

.....

Ten days later, Lin Feng had arrived at the Yun Hai Sect on Qian Li Xue. gazing at the mountains where the Precipice of the Abyss was situated. He could not help but remember fond memories.

The path of cultivation was like a mountain which you continue climb and then one day, you can look down at creation from the top of the world.

Even though Lin Feng had shown outstanding talent in Yangzhou City, he wasn't the least bit conceited. He only knew that he had made some progress on the path of cultivation, but the world was big and the path was long.

He didn't know exactly how vast the Continent of the Nine Clouds was or how powerful the people were. There was no reason

to be arrogant when he truly knew so little. There were many geniuses in the continent, for example, that man who accompanied Lin Qian who had a legendary roc spirit. He was so young and much stronger than Lin Feng. He already had the power to confront Yun Hai Sect Elder. He dared come to the Yun Hai Sect and demand respect.

“When I get back to the pavilion, the first thing I should do is choose new techniques of higher difficulty and take the exam to become an elite disciple. Joining the Elite Disciples will enable me to be a real Yun Hai Sect disciple and I’ll be able to participate in the internal affairs of the sect. At the moment, I can’t do anything as an Ordinary Disciple.”

Lin Feng was thinking about what he was going to do and it was already clear to him what he had to do next.

At that moment, he could hear the thunderous hooves of horses in the distance, the ground was shaking.

Lin Feng was surprised. He immediately turned around and saw a cloud of dust rise into the air. Armored horses were galloping at full speed.

“Chi Xue!” Lin Feng was stupefied. Those armored horses were the color of blood. Everyone knew of these horses, it was an extremely valuable horse. It was three times faster than his Qian Li Xue and it was extremely expensive.

It was said that a Chi Xue cost a thousand gold coins. It was also

said that some special troops had Chi Xue horses. These troops would most likely be battle hardened soldiers.

But what were these troops doing in a territory which was under the domination of the Yun Hai Sect.

The precious armored horses were approaching at full speed. The people riding them were all soldiers who looked extremely well trained. They were all ferocious and looked extremely dangerous.

“These people can go wherever they want, whenever they want. They are not like the self proclaimed masters and geniuses of Yangzhou City.” thought Lin Feng while slightly trembling at the sight of them. These people were extremely strong, deadly warriors. They were real masters to the extent that the weakest ones of the group would have at least reached the ninth Qi layer but the great majority would have broken into the Ling Qi layer long ago.

They are really elite troops... The smell of blood fills the air even miles away.

There were about thirty of them and when they got close to Lin Feng they suddenly slowed down. They raised their heads and looked at the mountain where the Yun Hai Sect was located, this was their destination.

Lin Feng had a strange feeling and his expression changed. He could see a figure which looked familiar, when his eyes focuses he could recognize the person.

“It’s her!”

On one of these Chi Xue, there was a girl wearing a red armor, she looked grandiose and heroic. Besides, she was extremely beautiful. Lin Feng would never forget her face.

“Shit.” Lin Feng thought while remaining vigilant. He hadn’t thought he would meet her there. She was obviously with this group of deadly warriors. That incredibly beautiful girl was a respected and illustrious disciple of the Yun Hai Sect: Liu Fei.

“Is that you?” said Liu Fei coldly. She looked angry while looking at Lin Feng. He had dared to disrespect her before. She hadn’t taken her revenge yet, but had not forgotten about it.

Lin Feng was cursing in his mind. The group that was with her, they were all much stronger than the group he killed in Yangzhou City. They looked like battle hardened warriors. If they wanted to fight, Lin Feng would be unable to compete with them. That group was so much stronger than him. He was in a desperate situation as they were both faster and stronger than him, he did not want to fight.

“Fei Fei, you have a problem with that guy?” said a young man next to Liu Fei while looking at Lin Feng. Because Liu Fei looked angry, that guy had also started to show anger.

“No problem, he’s one of my fellow disciples of the Yun Hai Sect. We recognized each other.”

That was unexpected. Liu Fei had shook her head and said that indifferently. Then, she didn't look at him again and continued.

“Shall we go inside.” said Liu Fei and then they left while heading towards the Yun Hai Sect. The young man next to Liu Fei glanced at Lin Feng with slight killing intent in his eyes.

Lin Feng frowned. He didn't understand what was going on. As far as he could remember, Liu Fei was rude and cruel, why would she let him go?

Chapter 55: Sword of Nirvana

“Forget it.” Lin Feng didn’t want to think too much about it. It looked like her status was much higher amongst those soldiers than he had thought. Their power was above his right now.

“I am not extremely strong and I do not have any troops to support me.” thought Lin Feng while looking at the group from behind. Lin Feng was determined to do his best once he got back to the Yun Hai Sect and join the elite disciples.

Lin Feng rode his horse towards the mountain. Two guards were standing there, their heads dropped to the ground and they did not look at him as he passed. These were the same guards he had met the first time, they had now learnt their lesson and had been humbled.

As before, the Yun Hai Sect’s atmosphere was filled with the feeling of power borrowed from heaven and earth. It was very inspiring and motivated Lin Feng even more to increase his strength. Especially since every year, there was the exam to become an elite disciple. The strongest ordinary disciples could join and possibly enter the Elite Disciples, which meant they could become real Yun Hai Sect disciples.

Besides, it was also said that the top elite disciples could directly sit an exam and if they passed they would be able to join the Core Disciples of the Yun Hai Sect which made them the foundation of the sect’s power.

The Yun Hai Sect had a formidable influence in the Xue Yue Country. While they were not the strongest sect, they were still could not be easily trifled with. Those core disciples were considered the pride and glory of the sect. Even in cities outside of their territory, a Core Disciple of the Yun Hai Sect would be treated with respect and wherever he went. They were supported by the sect itself.

It was also the case within clans. For example in the Lin Clan, the Honorable Elder or Lin Ba Dao also regarded Core Disciples of a Sect with respect. In the Lin Clan, they wanted Lin Ba Dao to be the Head of the Clan because they had hoped that Lin Qian could become a Core Disciple of the Hao Yue Sect. This would bring them great honor and greatly rise their status within the country. If Lin Qian progressed, she could even become a Elder in the Hao Yue Sect which would make the Lin Clan extremely influential.

Unfortunately, Lin Feng who everyone was sure would become an outstanding figure in the future, wasn't a member of the Lin Clan anymore and there was still regret remaining over the events.

When he arrived in the Yun Hai Sect, Lin Feng first decided to wash the dirt from his body as he had travelled for 10 days. He then put on a clean set of Yun Hai Sect disciple robes. It was now time for him to head to the Xing Chen Pavilion.

He had now broken through to the Ling Qi layer. He needed a more advanced agility technique and a higher level martial skill. Only then, he would be to fully unleash his power during a battle.

“Protector Bei.” Lin Feng saw the old man who had the same

expression as he always had at the entrance of the Xing Chen Pavilion. He looked like he was staring blankly into the horizon.

But Lin Feng was extremely happy to know that old man was a protector of the sect and when needed he would become extremely energetic and powerful. Lin Feng knew that the old man sitting in front of the Xing Chen Pavilion could look sluggish but that it was only one aspect of his personality. However, if Lin Feng hadn't seen it with his own eyes, he would hardly believe that the old man could actually be so powerful.

Protector Bei's expression suddenly changed, he raised his head and looked at Lin Feng with sparkling eyes. He then smiled, which was extremely rare, and said: "Oh, you have finally come back."

"Yes, I came to find a new Agility Technique to practice." said Lin Feng while smiling and nodding.

"Go to the first floor. Take your time." replied Protector Bei.

"Thank you, Protector Bei, thank you for your help and sorry to bother you." Lin Feng's goal was to go to the first floor and gain advanced skills. According to the rules of the Yun Hai Sect, only those who had reached the Ling Qi layer or those who were Elite Disciples could go to the first floor. The disciples who had reached the Ling Qi layer but not yet joined the Elite Disciples would have a limited time when selecting skills, they could not take their time. They would also not have access to the second floor without becoming an elite disciple. There was an oil lamp which was lit when they entered the room and when that oil lamp went out, they would have to leave. During that short timeframe, they had to

find suitable agility techniques and martial skills for themselves.

The time these oil lamps stayed on was normally not enough time to find suitable agility techniques and martial skills. There were a myriad of martial skills and agility techniques in the Xing Chen Pavilion. It was very hard to find something suitable for one's self in a limited time as there was just such a large number. But rules are rules. Nobody dared violate the rules of the sect. Many Yun Hai Sect disciples wanted to become Elite Disciples to be able to fully access the skills and agility techniques on this floor and the second floor of the Xing Chen Pavilion. That way, they would be able to greatly improve their abilities and find the best techniques for their fighting styles.

“No need to thank me or be sorry for bothering me. Just don't go to the second floor. You can stay as long as you wish on the ground floor and first floor.” said the old man indifferently.

Lin Feng was astonished, stupefied, stunned. Right after, he had a huge smile on his face. Lin Feng definitely was very lucky to have the protector watching over him.

“Thank you very much, thank you, thank you esteemed protector.”

Lin Feng became a bit more familiar at that moment when talking to the old man. He then entered the Xing Chen Pavilion and immediately after moved towards the stairs leading to the first floor.

“Little fellow, I’m just worried that your current level of cultivation wouldn’t match those skills and techniques on the higher floors, otherwise I would have told you to go to the third floor.” thought Protector Bei while looking at Lin Feng’s silhouette and then shaking his head and smiling. He then whispered: “The Precipice of Zhangu... eight drums... You have changed the history of the Yun Hai Sect. You will always be able to enter my humble Xing Chen Pavilion as you please.”

Protector Bei had a great impression of Lin Feng but the other disciples of the Yun Hai Sect didn’t think that way. When they saw Lin Feng, who was wearing the robes of the ordinary disciples and immediately went up to the first floor of the Xing Chen Pavilion, many people were stupefied.

“Who’s that guy? How can he go past the ground floor of the pavilion?”

“I don’t know but he’s clearly an ordinary disciple... and he is not one of the disciple known for breaking into the Ling Qi layer.”

Many people were envious and jealous. Not only could higher level agility techniques enable cultivators to greatly increase their speed and benefit cultivation but it also enabled them to greatly increase their overall fighting strength. It enabled them to use movements of a higher difficulty. In a battle, it could enable them to have a clear advantage in speed over their opponent. Who wouldn’t want that?

All the Agility Techniques and martial skills were divided into different levels: Sky level, Earth level, Xuan level, Yellow level...

These skills and agility techniques were spread over four levels in the Xing Chen Pavilion. On the ground floor of the pavilion were yellow level skills and agility techniques, on the first floor were skills and agility techniques of the Xuan level and were extremely powerful.

The first floor of the Xing Chen Pavilion was much more quiet than the ground floor. There were very few people on the first floor. They were all quietly looking for amazing skills and techniques suitable for themselves.

At that moment, many people saw Lin Feng go upstairs and looked at him with disdain.

“There are less martial skills and agility techniques than on the ground floor.” Lin Feng thought while looking at all the skills on the first floor. No matter what, these skills and agility techniques were extremely valuable. They were obviously very hard to find, therefore there were less skills on the first floor than on the ground floor.

“Let’s find an agility technique.” thought Lin Feng while looking at all the books and then immediately started to read them and analyze the skills.

“Purity Technique, Xuan level, absorbs the energy of the power of heaven and earth to purify the body, regulates body functions and provides greater control over the body, practice to the highest level and your body will be faster, stronger and controlled with ease.”

“Please note that this skill is suitable for any spirit. It cannot be practiced very quickly as the muscles and vessels must first become used to the change within the body. Improving too quickly would have the opposite effects and the body would become exhausted and possibly damaged.”

That was one of the techniques. There was a small note written on that book enabling those of the younger generations to understand it in more detail.

“I guess I will take this one...” said Lin Feng in a low voice. As if he hadn’t seen the warning written by hand in the book, Lin Feng immediately chose that technique.

Lin Feng didn’t even look at the other techniques. He knew what he was doing.

Everything about that Purity Agility Technique looked useless but Lin Feng thought it was great.

“Let’s find some martial skills now.” thought Lin Feng while moving towards to the skill shelves.

“Dead Forest.”

“Scorching Apocalypse.”

“Deadly Frost.”

Lin Feng was looking at all these skills but found none of them satisfying.

“Eight Strikes of Desolation. Xuan level. Eight extremely powerful strikes which cover the heavens and are almost impossible to dodge.

This skill drew Lin Feng’s attention.

“I will also take this one” Lin Feng took that book but didn’t leave, he needed another martial skill, it had been too long since he had practiced any new martial skills. So he needed to increase his battle power quickly.

After a while, Lin Feng found a sword skill which was extremely powerful and of the Xuan level but it required a sword spirit to perfectly comprehend. It also required a perfect understanding of sword force. If someone did not understand the world and the elemental forces within, it would be impossible to comprehend this skill. It was called Sword of Nirvana.

Many disciples had avoided this skill as the conditions to learn it were incredibly harsh. They would not only need to understand sword force, but the world around them and other elemental forces. They would need a great deal of comprehension.

“Lucky, I have found another.” Lin Feng was excited. It seemed

like the Sword of Nirvana had been prepared especially for him. Requiring understanding of sword force and also requiring a perfect understanding of the world and the forces contained within. He could gain a perfect understanding of the world and forces within by using his spirit. It was a perfect skill for him.

This skill was made for him.

The requirement of having a sword spirit in order to learn the skill was a joke. Was someone who had a sword spirit more knowledgeable about swords than Lin Feng?

Chapter 56: The Top Ordinary Disciple

“Let me have a look at that skill book.” suddenly said a voice coming from the left.

Lin Feng turned around and saw two young disciples. There was a young man who looked extremely evil while staring at the other disciple. Besides, his manner of speaking sounded like he was giving the other disciple an order.

That other young disciple was called Chen Chen. Lin Feng had already seen him before. He was an ordinary disciple, just like Lin Feng. However, he was much more famous than Lin Feng.

“This skill is mine.” said Chen Chen while coldly staring at the evil looking disciple. It wasn’t rare to see elite disciples despise ordinary disciples and this was clearly a case of an elite disciple trying to bully Chen Chen.

“How insolent, for an ordinary disciple to dare refuse my request!” shouted the young man furiously while releasing an extremely strong Qi from his body.

“Pfff, Li Lin, don’t think that I don’t know who you are. You are one of the weakest elite disciples. You only dare show off in front of us ordinary disciples. This year at the upcoming elite disciple exam, I, Chen Chen, will remove that smug head from your body. I will make your head roll from the fighting stage into the dirt where you belong.” said Chen Chen while emanating killing intent.

“Li Lin, you are an ordinary little boy, that’s all you are. Haha. You’re a joke.”

All those who were on the second floor of the Xing Chen Pavilion were looking at them and laughing. Chen Chen was right, Li Lin was an elite disciple but he was extremely weak in comparison with the other disciples of the sect. In order not to feel inferior in front of other people, he regularly went and bullied ordinary disciples trying to use his authority and power to gain a feeling of superiority. He hadn’t thought that today he would meet this kind of stubborn ordinary disciple who would actually refuse and insult him.

Chen Chen was the one of the top ranking ordinary disciples within the Sect. He had a flame spirit. All of his fire based skills were extremely powerful and he could gain insights into fire based techniques much quicker than other disciples. Nobody could compete with him. He was extremely strong. His main objective was to participate in the elite disciple exam of the Yun Hai Sect and become an elite disciple where he could gain extra resources for cultivation.

Obviously, when Li Lin heard what Chen Chen said, he became furious. He had already heard Chen Chen’s name and knew exactly how powerful he was. It really was his bad luck that he chose to bully the wrong disciple.

“There’s misunderstanding. Alright, I’m not looking at that skill.” said Li Lin whose facial expression had completely changed. He then retreated away from Chen Chen.

Laughter could be heard amongst all of the disciples who were present on the second floor. They clearly thought that that Li Lin was a good for nothing elite disciple. He had just been terrified by an ordinary disciple. To have an elite disciple back down from an ordinary disciple was a humiliation in itself.

“What are you laughing at?! Laugh again and I will cripple your cultivation!”

Li Lin regretted his previous actions because he had humiliated himself in the end. He had the feeling that everyone was laughing at him, he needed to find someone so he could have relief from his fury, so his threat was directed towards Lin Feng.

He couldn't afford to provoke Chen Chen more than he already had but he did have the abilities required to provoke other ordinary disciple?

Lin Feng was about to leave the Pavilion, he was stupefied at the threat he had received. He did not even laugh and had just continued with what he was originally there for. Did he laugh without realizing?

In fact, from the beginning to the end, he had remained expressionless. He had been annoyed by the confrontation that was happening but had remained expressionless. That guy didn't dare provoke the others, did that give him the right to treat Lin Feng as a punching bag?

“Obviously. Fear the strong and bully the weak.” thought Lin Feng with disdain. He was scared of Chen Chen and couldn’t continue to bully him so he had come to bully Lin Feng.

But Lin Feng wasn’t in the mood to deal with this special kind of childishness. He had chosen his agility technique and martial skills and was satisfied with them. It wasn’t necessary for him to stay in the Pavilion anymore so he decided to go downstairs.

Lin Feng started walking in the direction of the exit.

“STOP! You worthless ordinary disciple! How dare you ignore me!” said Li Lin looking cruel. He had now run in front of Lin Feng to prevent him from leaving.

Lin Feng smiled coldly. That guy obviously just wanted to show off in front of the others as he had just lost face.

“Worthless ordinary disciple? It looks like you’re the one who just got humiliated by an ordinary disciple.”

Lin Feng had said that in a joking tone. It clearly showed that Li Lin really had no sense of shame.

“You want to die.”

“Indeed, you’re right.” said Lin Feng coldly before adding: “Li Lin, is that your name? I don’t have time to waste on you. Let’s meet at the Stormy Gorge in the Life and Death Arena before the

elite disciple exam.

When Lin Feng said these words, everybody around laughed again. Lin Feng was surprisingly challenging Li Lin as well, but that time with their life at stake. Could Li Lin reject the challenge after being humiliated to such an extent?

“Interesting.” murmured some of the disciples watching from the sidelines. Li Lin looked perplexed. He didn’t know what to think about what had just happened. Lin Feng had surprisingly challenged him to a fight to the death, knowing full well that elite disciples could kill ordinary disciples in the gorge. Would he be strong enough?

“Alright, I’ll wait for you there.” Li Lin said. Li Lin was caught between a rock and a hard place. Chen Chen knew that too. If he had been scared of an ordinary disciple again, he would have had to hide himself forever from all other disciples in the Sect. He couldn’t afford to lose face again.

Li Lin turned around and immediately left.

Lin Feng smiled inside. He didn’t look at his opponent. If he wasn’t able to defeat the weakest elite disciple of the Sect, it would mean he hasn’t made any progress and has actually stepped backwards on the path of cultivation. He had already battled an elite disciple when he was only at the eighth Qi layer.

“Hehe, what’s your name? To be able to come to this floor, it means that you’ve already broken through to the Ling Qi layer.

How come I've never seen you before?" Chen Chen asked. Chen Chen was ranked first from all the ordinary disciples. He knew all of the strongest ordinary disciples by name and had measured their strength against his own. He also knew who had broken through to the Ling Qi layer with the sect and how many ordinary disciples had broken through. He was getting prepared to join the elite disciple exam of the Yun Hai Sect and hoped to become an elite disciple. He made sure to know about everyone who he would be competing against.

But Chen Chen had never seen Lin Feng...

"Lin Feng. I'm not popular so it's normal that you've never seen me." replied Lin Feng while smiling in a friendly way.

"Lin Feng, you mean the rumored piece of trash!?" Chen Chen was stunned. He had never seen him but he had already heard Lin Feng's name many times.

"Haha, it seems like one shouldn't believe rumors. How could a piece of trash have broken through to the Ling Qi layer?" said Chen Chen while smiling and shaking his head. Then, he added: "But even though we are both fellow ordinary disciples, there is still a big gap between you and me. Actually, there's a gigantic gap between you and me, there is nothing comparable. Soon I will become an Elite Disciple, we are not the same."

Lin Feng was a bit surprised. Lin Feng understood what Chen Chen meant. He was referring to the fact that Lin Feng had said to Li Lin that he had been humiliated by another ordinary disciple.

In Chen Chen's eyes, Lin Feng's sentence meant that he was saying that they were on the same level. Chen Chen thought that they had nothing in common. He was of course the strongest and Lin Feng was not strong enough to be his equal.

"It seems like you are very self confident." replied Lin Feng, not losing his temper and still smiling in a friendly way.

"Indeed, at least when I am amongst ordinary disciples. I am the number one ranked ordinary disciple." replied Chen Chen.

"Alright I see. It is said that ordinary disciples need an oil lamp when they are on the first floor and then when it goes off, they must leave. You are indeed very strong, but do you dare exceed that amount of time?" said Lin Feng while laughing.

"You don't need to flatter me. Indeed, all of the ordinary disciples need that oil lamp on the first floor. However, I am an exception. Because of my strength, I am not bound by the rules. Who would dare say otherwise?" said Chen Chen mocking that the rules were only meant for the weak.

"Is that so?" Lin Feng was smiling and seemed to be very interested. "Well, actually, I also can stay as long as I wish on the first floor but I try to follow the sect rules. You are the first ranked ordinary disciple, you are so strong. It's no problem for me to stay here as long as I wish so of course it would be even less of a problem for you right?"

“Are you joking? You plan to stay longer than the time allocated by the oil lamp?” said Chen Chen with a cold smile filled with disdain.

“Can you not see with your own eyes?” said Lin Feng with a meaningful smile on his face. He then stopped paying attention to Chen Chen. He then started looking at another skill. He didn’t intend to practice it but looking and learning was a wise thing to do.

“That guy must be crazy. Continuing to stay on the floor...” All the Elite Disciples on the first floor looked at him with interest. They all started to pay attention to the scene that appeared before them. They wanted to see how long he was going to stay.

“Hmph.” Chen Chen groaned. Lin Feng had arrived before him so he wasn’t in a hurry. Lin Feng’s oil lamp would burn out before his and the lie would be exposed.

The for half a lamp to burn had already passed. Chen Chen was looking at a skill. He was frowning, he didn’t have much time left on his lamp.

He looked at Lin Feng and saw that, as before, he was leaning against the bookshelf looking sluggish and still looking at a skill book. He looked like he was absolutely unaware of the time that was passing. He didn’t even pay attention to it.

“How long can you keep playing your little game?” Chen Chen wasn’t even the mood to look at skills anymore. He was soon going

to be an elite disciple anyway, he would be able to spend as much as he wished on the first floor and could look at as many skills as he wanted. He was watching Lin Feng and waiting for him to make a fool of himself.

But Chen Chen was disappointed. Some time passed again and Lin Feng didn't seem to be reacting at all. It seemed like he had completely lost the notion of time. He just continued to read the skills leisurely.

“Are you not leaving yet?” asked Chen Chen unable to remain calm. He had almost no time left on his oil lamp. If he didn't leave, he would be severely punished by the Sect for breaking the rules.

“I'm not worried, why are you worried? You are the top ranked ordinary disciple of the Yun Hai Sect! You are a genius!” Lin Feng said in an indifferent tone but everybody understood that he was making fun of Chen Chen.

Chen Chen suddenly became furious and said: “You want to die. I'm not staying here with you. When you come out, I hope you can explain everything to me.”

After threatening Lin Feng, Chen Chen turned around and left the Xing Chen Pavilion.

“Top ranked ordinary disciple? He is just a fool, nothing more.” thought Lin Feng while sneering at him which made Chen Chen who was looking at him even more furious and killing intent had appeared in his eyes.

Chapter 57: Liu Cang Lan

Chen Chen actually hadn't left the Pavilion. He wasn't in a hurry to leave. Instead, he was waiting the entrance door.

"You slightly exceeded the time limit. Next time, please pay attention." said Protector Bei while looking at Chen Chen and shaking his head.

"I slightly exceeded the time limit but there's another guy who's been in there for ages, way over the time limit. I want to see what will happen to him." thought Chen Chen waiting for Lin Feng to come down.

Lin Feng didn't make Chen Chen wait for too long. A short time after, he also came down looking relaxed as if there was no problem at all.

"Protector Bei, here are the skills and agility technique that I chose." said Lin Feng while glancing at Chen Chen. Lin Feng handed skill and agility technique books over to the Protector Bei while smiling in a friendly way.

"Purity Technique... It will help you consolidate your agility basics. It is definitely worth learning." said Protector Bei while looking at the agility technique and skills which Lin Feng had chosen. He was nodding with agreement. He then added: "Eight Strikes of Desolation is at the bottom of the Xuan Level skills, yet, it is an extremely powerful skill. It is hard to learn and practice but considering your abilities, it should not be too much of a problem.

Concerning the Sword of Nirvana, which is a triple strike attack, everybody can learn it but only a real genius can master it to perfection. People who manage to master it to perfection are really rare. You will have to make great efforts to achieve such a mastery of this skill.

Protector Bei was still looking at the agility technique and skills that Lin Feng had chosen and continued to give his opinion: “If someday by any chance, you manage to carry out these three hits using the Sword of Nirvana at full strength, then don’t learn another skill which is at the bottom of the Xuan Level or even an average Xuan Level... Directly move on and learn a high Xuan level skill. However, if you manage to master the skill, you will not have a problem even it collides with a high level Xuan skill.

Lin Feng was smiling when he heard what the old man was telling him. The gap between the different sub-levels of the Xuan level was colossal but if Lin Feng managed to master that skill, he would still be able to carry out amazingly strong attacks which could match a high level Xuan skill.

At the side of the pavilion, Protector Bei and Lin Feng were talking and laughing cheerfully. The more they talked, the uglier and angrier Chen Chen’s face looked. It looked like Lin Feng and Protector Bei were actually friends. No wonder Lin Feng took such liberties.

“He was on the second floor for a long time, more than that allocated within an oil lamp.” said Chen Chen interrupting them in the middle of their conversation which made Protector Bei smile. He then turned his head and looked at Chen Chen.

“I know.” said Protector Bei calm and unperturbed.

“Since you know that he violated the rules of the Sect, shouldn’t he be severely punished?!” Chen Chen hadn’t expected Protector Bei to admit it in such a straightforward way while looking like he was feeling completely at ease. He was feeling even more furious.

Protector Bei looked at Chen Chen with a strict look. He shook his head and then said: “I’ve been here for many, many years. No matter who, elite disciples or even core disciples, have to go through me when they want to enter the Xing Chen Pavilion. What do you think? Are you implying that you are trying to teach me, with my many years of experience, how to do my job?”

Protector Bei was an extraordinary person. The Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect, Nan Gong Ling, showed a lot of respect to him when he saw him. In his eyes, common ordinary disciples were tiny individuals with no power, nothing more. Even if it was the top ranking ordinary disciples, it was still a tiny individual with no power, a nobody who was not worth his time. It would even be a struggle for elite disciples to be considered less than a tiny insignificant power in front of this protector.

Lin Feng was an exception. The first time he had met Lin Feng, he had had an extremely good first impression. He immediately had the impression that Lin Feng was polite and wise beyond his years. Later, he had also found out that Lin Feng was extremely gifted, especially when he had made the eight drums beat. Therefore, he held Lin Feng in the highest of esteem.

What did Chen Chen think? How could he allow himself to interrogate the old man like he had done? How could Protector Bei treat him with esteem?

When Chen Chen heard Protector Bei's words, his face started looking demonic. He then said in an extremely cold way: "Your only job is just to guard the Xing Chen Pavilion. You dare not apply the rules of the Sect. That is a very serious crime against the sect, how dare you."

"Eh..." Lin Feng was speechless and shocked by Chen Chen's words... No wonder he was such an imbecile when it came to cultivation and relied on his spirit to achieve minor results. That guy didn't have the least bit of wisdom in his heart. What did that guy think he was doing when threatening Protector Bei and accusing him of having committed a serious crime? The top ranked ordinary disciple... that guy was living in a dream. He was so used to thinking he was a valuable and noteworthy talent that he had forgotten his place.

Protector Bei looked at Chen Chen in a way which clearly showed how ridiculous he thought Chen Chen was. The old man had worked there for a great many years and had never experienced such a thing. He also never got angry... and then at that moment, an ordinary disciple had dared come to him and interrogate him and then tell him that he had committed a crime.

Protector Bei was shaking his head. He started opening his mouth but looked like he was still thinking about what to say when his facial expression suddenly changed and shouted: "Get lost!"

After saying these two words, an insane strength burst out and crashed onto Chen Chen's body. At that moment, Protector Bei's eyes were filled with a sharp killing light. His body was unleashing an extremely strong Qi.

Chen Chen had just felt the extremely strong power against his body and had ended up kneeling down on the ground shaking from head to toe.

Chen Chen wasn't the only one who was shaking from head to toe with fear, people inside the Xing Chen Pavilion had also be shocked by the loud shout. Some of them had come to see what was happening and saw the protector's body surrounded by such a strong and powerful Qi. They all kept quiet with fear. As it turned out, that old man who looked sluggish was actually as strong or even stronger than the elders within the sect and looked like a powerful deity to the disciples.

The old man's strength was genuinely powerful without question.

It was well known that when breaking through to the Ling Qi layer from the Qi layer, Cultivators acquired a mysterious and profound strength. When breaking through to the Xuan Qi layer from the Ling Qi layer, it was said that the Cultivator's three energies, the Qi, the Shen and the Jing, fused together which enabled the Cultivator to acquire a genuinely pure and immense power.

The Qi inside the body became genuinely pure like the Qi of Heaven and Earth. A tiny bit of that pure power contained an

extremely condensed Qi and when it was used in an attack, it could destroy an entire mountain.

Protector Bei's shout had actually released that genuinely pure power. The power that had crashed onto Chen Chen's body wasn't immensely strong because Protector Bei had controlled his power perfectly but it had revealed the fact that he was an extremely strong Cultivator who had broken through to the Xuan Qi layer.

Xuan Qi layer; that was an incomparably strong cultivation level. He could easily become an elder in the Yun Hai Sect.

"I will be taking my leave." said Chen Chen while pale but still looking at Lin Feng with an evil look and added: "Piece of trash... relying on other people's strength... If you join the elite exam, at that moment, I will take good care of you."

When saying those words, Chen Chen turned around and left with his head held high.

Lin Feng shook his head while looking at Chen Chen. Even though that guy was the top ranked ordinary disciple, he was extremely arrogant and thought he was better than others. He didn't know anything else but the small place in which he lived and thought he had seen and knew everything. He really did not understand how large the world was and did not know that hidden dragons lay everywhere.

Protector Bei's strength was immense, he wouldn't even spare a glance at a cultivator like Chen Chen who was ranked at the top of

ordinary disciple. Why would he go out of his way to do favors for Lin Feng? If Chen Chen had even the slightest wisdom then he would come to the conclusion that he had met someone he could not offend.

Besides, everything that had happened was all part of Chen Chen attempting to show his dominance over Lin Feng. By attempting to show off, he had humiliated himself several times.

“It’s been a long time since I had to do something like this. I am much too old for things such as this” thought Protector Bei. Then he said: “Xue Yue, when I leave, you’ll be in charge of the Xing Chen Pavilion.”

After he finished talking, his body started shaking and wings of a crane appeared. Then, he flew high up in the air and disappeared.

The crowd was stupefied. They had seen how he had suddenly vanished into the horizon. What a terrifying power. He could even fly. What kind of power was this old man hiding?

That old man could travel over ten kilometers in the blink of an eye. That required an extremely profound power. The crowd had the feeling they were in a dream. The sluggish looking old man who guarded the Xing Chen Pavilion had suddenly shown his real power. At that moment, they hated themselves for not noticing and never asking the old man for advice. They had all ignored him, they had eyes but did not recognize Mount Tai.

Lin Feng was stupefied as well. His heart was pounding in

amazement. Protector Bei was a million times stronger than he was. Much stronger than he had originally thought.

A middle aged man entered the Xing Chen Pavilion. That was the one Protector Bei had called before leaving: Xue Yue.

.....

At that moment, on the highest mountain on the Yun Hai Sect, in the room of a temple, a gigantic Qi was filling the atmosphere.

Many people had gathered in that room and it looked like there were debating about something.

“Fei Fei, I will consider this with great attention. You should stop worrying.” Said the Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect, Nan Gong Ling, while smiling. He was speaking to Liu Fei who was sitting next to him.

Behind Liu Fei were a multitude of people wearing the same attire. They were all wearing noble red armor. They were precisely the people Lin Feng had seen at the foot of the mountain. They were the troops who were riding Chi Xue armored horses.

When she heard Nan Gong Ling’s answer, Liu Fei’s beautiful eyebrows frowned. Nan Gong Ling hadn’t replied happily, in fact it could be seen that he was not happy in the slightest. But Liu Fei could understand him. Letting some of the best disciples of the Yun Hai Sect leave with her was a difficult decision.

Each of the Yun Hai Sect disciples would go on to have children who represented a great future for the Sect. How could Nan Gong Ling abandon any of them easily.

“Uncle Nan Gong Ling, you know that my father is not a selfish person. It is fate and it is for the benefit of the Xue Yue Country. He will definitely let them come back to the Yun Hai Sect. He will treat them well. At that moment, they will all be able to assume a high status and will become pillars of the Sect.”

Liu Fei continued her argumentation.

“Your father and I practiced cultivation together, grew up together... We love each other like brothers. If he stayed in the Yun Hai Sect, he could have become the Patriarch of the Sect. How could I, Nan Gong Ling, not know what kind of man he is? The thing is that now, as the Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect, everything I do, I must do it considering what is good and bad for the sect first. I cannot selfishly decide things myself.”

Nan Gong Ling didn't elaborate more at that moment. He remembered all the things he and Liu Cang Lan used to do together without thinking of the consequences of their actions. They were two geniuses of the Yun Hai Sect. But these days, as the Patriarch of the Sect, he couldn't act irresponsibly anymore.

Chapter 58: Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue

When Liu Fei heard Nan Gong Ling's speech, she heaved a sigh. Actually, she could understand the difficult position in which Nan Gong Ling found himself. Yet, she was concerned about her father who also had to bear huge responsibilities, she was really trying her best to help him by any means possible.

Patriarch, Nan Gong Ling, building the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue is an order of His Majesty. Could you refuse to obey His Majesty's orders?" Said a young man who was next to Liu Fei while staring at Nan Gong Ling.

"When did I say that I wanted to disobey His Majesty's orders?" Nan Gong Ling replied coldly while glancing at the young man. He then said: "Building the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue is a project which I support wholeheartedly. I have no choice but to let a few outstanding disciples go and practice there.

He paused for a moment and then continued in a cold tone: "Besides, since when did you start to think it was good manners to poke your nose into other people's affairs and make criticisms? A little prince like you... What do you intend to do? Do you want me to call your father, Duan Tian Lang and have him teach you some manners?"

In the Continent of the Nine Clouds, elders had to be respected. Nobles also had to be respected which was especially true of those with high status as they were extremely strong. These days, the Duan Clan had become the Imperial Clan because they were extremely strong. The Duan Clan had become the strongest clan in

the entire Xue Yue Country. It wasn't just a matter of how much territory was controlled, it was a fact that they were the strongest.

However, the Duan Clan still had to humble themselves to the Sects and act politely when speaking with them. Nan Gong Ling wasn't going to submit himself to a little prince of the Duan Clan. It did not matter to him how strong the Duan Clan was, his sect was not something that could be looked down upon by anyone.

"You... Nan Gong Ling, I will tell my father about this." said the young man coldly while giving a glare filled with evil intentions.

"Tell him whatever you like." replied Nan Gong Ling while looking relaxed and not surprised.

"I heard that little Fei Fei came back." At that moment, a voice came from outside of the room in the temple. It was Protector Bei who had just arrived while striding forward with head high.

"Grandfather Bei!" When Liu Fei saw Protector Bei, she stood up. Protector Bei was actually her father's master.

"Little Fei, how's your father doing?" Protector Bei was looking at Liu Fei with affectionate eyes. The great elders and protectors of the Sect rarely had direct disciples. When they did, they developed deep and strong ties with them which would last a lifetime.

"He's still in Duan Ren City..." said Liu Fei making a wry smile.

“Phewww..” sighed Protector Bei shaking his head and making a wry smile as well.

“Little Fei, what brings you here? If you are looking for disciples then I have an amazing person in mind. You will definitely be happy.”

“One person?” said Liu Fei making a wry smile again.

“Didn’t your father leave the sect alone in the past? You don’t need too many people. It’s useless to take too many.” said Protector Bei while shaking his head.

“Grandfather, who are you talking about?” Liu Fei’s eyes had a glimmer of hope. When she heard the old man, she had the feeling he was talking about somebody extremely important. Could it be....?

“You will know when the right moment comes. Make those guys leave first. After the elite disciple exam of the Yun Hai Sect, I will personally accompany the person to the Imperial City.” said Protector Bei while looking at the crowd of troops behind Liu Fei.

“Alright.” said Liu Fei while nodding.

.....

In the mountains where he had first met Liu Fei, Lin Feng was sitting in a cave and cultivating. The Qi of heaven and earth looked

like a cocoon which was surrounding him as he continued to cultivate. Lin Feng's body was wrapped up in the cocoon-like Qi. That white-colored Qi looked like an extremely dense fog which had almost become solid.

At that moment, a terrifying attractive force emerged out of the deepest parts of Lin Feng's body which enabled the Qi of Heaven and Earth that surrounding his body to penetrate into his dantian.

Inside Lin Feng's body, a powerful milky-white Qi was circulating and looked as if it was boiling. The strong Qi which circulated in and out of Lin Feng's body was extremely pure.

After a long time, the Qi of Heaven and Earth was still uninterruptedly revolving around Lin Feng's body. At that moment, Lin Feng stopped cultivating.

He opened his eyes and had a big smile on his face.

“This Purity Technique has such strange effects on the body... but it definitely helped consolidate my cultivation basics. Now, I am much stronger than before, I can utilize my power much better than before. I can control my breathing much better than before as well.”

Lin Feng thought that thanks to his increased breathing abilities, he would be able to endlessly fight. A continuous explosive strength required a great power and of course every fight required control over one's breathing.

Lin Feng stood up, looked at a wall at the entrance of the cave, then thrust his palm forward into the air and whispered: “Eight Strikes of Desolation.”

Accompanying his words, a strong and explosive attack crashed into the wall in front of him.

“BOOM!.”

“BOOM!.”

“BOOM!.”

“BOOM!.”

“BOOM!.”

“BOOM!.”

“BOOM!.”

The entire cave was vibrating. Seven clear and distinct marks could be seen on the wall which Lin Feng had taken as a target.

“As expected, Eight Strikes of Desolation is an extremely strong attack.”

Lin Feng was smiling. Eight Strikes of Desolation was one of the lowest skills of the Xuan level. It could have up to eight strikes. If a Cultivator managed to achieve five strikes, that was already extremely strong and proved that he had great talent. If he could manage to go up to six strikes, he was definitely a rare talent... but achieving seven strikes could only be done by a real genius.

Lin Feng wanted to achieve eight strikes. Achieving eight strikes would fill the entire atmosphere with power. However achieving the eighth strike was extremely difficult and only real geniuses could achieve it. It usually required a lot of battle experience to fully comprehend the skill and master it to perfection.

Xuan level skills... were not easy to practice and the higher the level and strength, the more difficult they became.

However, as far as Lin Feng was concerned he could see no problem with practicing. When releasing his dark spirit, it gave him the amazing ability of increased comprehension and understanding. After one day, he had been able to master seven strikes. He just had to practice a bit more and he would be able to master the Eight Strikes of Desolation skill to perfection and achieve all eight strikes when using the skill.

But Lin Feng wasn't satisfied at that moment. Elite Disciples had nothing in common with ordinary disciples and Lin Feng wanted to climb above all others. During the elite disciple exam of the Yun Hai Sect, there could be a real genius within the disciples...Lin Feng didn't know how it was going to be, but the stronger his competition was the better.

Sword of Nirvana would greatly improve his strength in a very short time as well.

The Sword of Nirvana skill was actually a sword skill with three strikes which would grow in strength with the higher mastery of the sword. One strike could mean death, three strikes would mean certain death.

A deadly sword.

A fatal sword.

A lonely sword.

It could annihilate everything that stood in its way, so it had annihilated everything in its path. It had nothing left that was its equal and was therefore lonely.

While reading the Sword of Nirvana skill book, Lin Feng was lost in thought. He looked at the text and the stances while gradually absorbing all of the knowledge. Lin Feng could rapidly understand everything. Lin Feng had started to release his spirit. Lin Feng's world became a world filled with darkness again. The Earth, the Sky, not a single color or light could be seen. There was only darkness surrounding everything. Lin Feng was calm and unperturbed in that world of darkness, nothing could disturb him and he was extremely calm.

Lin Feng closed his eyes and the image of a person appeared in his

brain. That person looked like a holy man and didn't stop wielding his long sword. One strike, another strike, repeating the same movement over and over again, he was practicing the Sword of Nirvana. The deadly sword.

After a long time, Lin Feng opened his eyes. The twinkling sword lacerating the air disappeared.

One step, one strike, the deadly sword.

“BOOOM!”

The entire cave was shaking and trembling. The sword had left a large scar in the wall of the cave.

The cave was shaking and trembling more and more, the rocks had been crushed into nothing but dust. Lin Feng was stupefied. Lin Feng had quickly retreated from the cave and not long after, the cave collapsed on itself with a violent rumble.

The first strike was already so deadly. Combined with the Eight strikes of desolation he had completely destroyed the cave. He had only mastered the first strike of the sword of nirvana and the seventh strike of the Eight Strikes of Desolation, yet he had already collapsed a cave. These were indeed powerful skills. Lin Feng recalled his spirit back into his body. He was very excited. Xuan level skills were definitely extremely powerful, as expected. Was the power of all his skills going to be so incredible?

What Lin Feng didn't know was that the first strike was already devastating because he also knew how to control forces. He had unconsciously controlled the sword force at a very advanced level and combined it with his strike.

That deadly sword required a perfect fusion of his sword Qi, mastery of the skill and sword force. These three elements had to be in a perfect symbiotic fusion. Ling Feng's ability to comprehend and use the sword force so freely had made things much easier for him. That is why it wasn't that difficult for him to practice the skill. If it had been someone else, it would have been much more difficult, maybe even impossible to learn the skill in such a short period.

"Who?" Lin Feng had come out from the cave, turned around and looked around him at the mountains where the sun rays shone through. He could see someone walking in the distance. When he recognized the person, Lin Feng felt a sudden urge to take revenge which he suppressed.

"Liu Fei." Lin Feng was surprised. He didn't understand what she was doing there. She had had the opportunity to attack him before and she hadn't seized it. Why?

"Bastard, you took control over my territory. Today, you and me are enemies. You are the only one who has humiliated me to such an extent." Liu Fei was staring at Lin Feng with a deep and bitter hatred for him. Since she was a child, her father had taught her to stand alone and be independent. She had always been like that. She was more of a tomboy and didn't really act like a girl in the slightest. Besides, she had gone through a lot of hardships which

made her even more proud and ambitious.

But Liu Fei hadn't expected Lin Feng to be so shameless, he was a voyeur and had pounced naked onto her only to be beaten back and then when they next fought he had dared to say he wasn't interested in her anymore only because he had made great progress with his cultivation. Then, he had dared to steal her precious and beloved territory. How could she not be angry?

“Now, I have broken through to the Ling Qi layer, we will see if you still dare act so insolent towards me.” Liu Fei thought tyrannically.

Chapter 59: Lin Feng, That Bastard!

“I have already defeated you three times. Apologize to me and I might show mercy and let you off.” Liu Fei said in an ice cold tone.

“Defeated three times? Show mercy?” Lin Feng laughed, shook his head and said: “Just leave already before it becomes too embarrassing for you to stay.”

Liu Fei and Lin Feng had already met a few times. Lin Feng knew how proud and arrogant that girl was, so she would not accept others help and would use her own power. Therefore, when Yu Hao, an Elite Disciple wanted to help her to kill Lin Feng, she refused even though she just had nod once and Yu Hao would kill Lin Feng. She still didn't do it.

Then, at the foot of the mountain, with these cavaliers on Chi Xue armored horses, Liu Fei had said in a cold voice that they were fellow disciples within the sect. She didn't try to get her revenge with numbers.

Therefore, even though Lin Feng thought that that girl was quite detestable, he didn't think that she was evil or malicious. Maybe during the first time Lin Feng had come to her place, she had really believed that he was a pervert and that it was no accident at all.

“Embarrassing?” Liu Fei was looking at Lin Feng looking horribly self confident now she had a breakthrough.

“You should go home. My father gave me a silver Xuan Bow. If

you do not leave quickly then I will let you taste its arrows.”

Liu Fei grabbed the silver bow she was carrying on her back. It diffused a dazzling light and the sun was reflecting from every inch of the bow.

She put an arrow into the bow, made a small step and bent down... her movements looked smooth and agile. Her beautiful body, her clothes and her movements were in perfect harmony. She looked very attractive... but that beauty was hiding her dangerous power.

“Whoosh....”

The sound of a bowstring vibrating could be heard as the arrow shot through the air at incredible speed. Its dazzling light made it look like it was on fire. It was heading directly towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng was stupefied. The arrow was approaching so quickly that escaping seemed impossible.

He quickly moved from the path of the arrow and struck his sword against the incoming arrow. The arrow flew past Lin Feng and crashed into the side of a cave which was behind him.

“BOOOOM!.”

Behind Lin Feng, rocks were falling from the cave and half of the rock face had been destroyed. It had been crushed by Liu Fei’s arrow. That attack was quite violent and contained a great deal of

power.

“Huh?” Lin Feng was surprised. He could feel the power from her Ling Qi layer... So Liu Fei had broken through to the Ling Qi layer, no wonder that she wanted to fight with him again.

Liu Fei was very young and had yet already broken through to the Ling Qi layer. She was a really outstanding talent. She was about as strong as Lin Qian and Na Lan Feng. Considering these things her arrogance would be inevitable, however she was not as vicious and petty as Lin Qian and did not look down on others like Na Lan Feng. Also her status was much higher than that of Lin Qian or Na Lan Feng. One could notice it from the moment she was seen with the cavalry troop which contained troops much stronger than the ones he had slaughtered during the night before the annual tournament.

“As expected, Sword skills are indeed very powerful.” Her arrows were much quicker than before. She had also become much stronger as well. Her arrows could even exceed the speed of sound as they ripped through the air. The whistling sound of the arrow could be heard only after the arrow had reached its target or maybe the sound would be heard after the arrow had already pierced its opponent. Killing people with these arrows would be extremely easy for her.

Bow and arrow techniques were terrifying and Cultivators who used them were extremely respected. Their attacks were fast and precise while carrying extremely powerful destructive force.

Unfortunately for her, Liu Fei's strength was still not extremely

developed. It was incomparable with that of some extremely advanced Cultivators who used bows and arrows.

“You’re lucky.” Liu Fei said to Lin Feng while looking at him. She put another arrow in the bow and said: “I’ll give you another chance.”

“No need. I am not guilty of anything. I don’t need to apologize or to beg you.” Lin Feng said while shaking his head. He started walking towards Liu Fei.

“You’re bringing about your own destruction.” shouted Liu Fei furiously. An arrow then pierced through the air.

“Eight Strikes of Desolation!”

Lin Feng raised his hand and thrust out three strikes which collided with the arrow and with each strike it gradually lost strength until it eventually fell helpless onto the ground.

“Eight Strikes of Desolation, Xuan level skill, Ling Qi layer...” Liu Fei thought while shivering in fear. When she saw that Lin Feng knew the skill Eight Strikes of Desolation, she understood that Lin Feng had also broken through to the Ling Qi layer. No wonder he had remained so insolent.

She had realized her mistake, she immediately turned around and started running at an incredible speed in the opposite direction.

Lin Feng was baffled and had no idea what she was doing. Then, he saw Liu Fei bending over, her body had a perfect arch shape. That beauty was still hiding her killing intent and she would not let go of her revenge so easily.

“Whooosh”

An arrow shot through the air with a whistling sound but this time it was even faster and stronger than a moment ago.

Lin Feng wasn't scared. He was as confident as before. He started his Eight Strikes of Desolation attack again. This time, he used four strikes.

“Damn, how many strikes can that guy do using Eight Strikes of Desolation?!” Liu Fei whispered as she swore at Lin Feng in her heart. She suddenly released her spirit. A beautiful and resplendent Golden Arrow spirit appeared. It looked very different from the last time. This time, there were three arrows behind her back. Her spirit was emitting such a strong Qi that it made Lin Feng shake.

Besides, Liu Fei's spirit had been awakened as expected.

Liu Fei's arrow spirit flew up in the air and following it, Liu Fei also jumped in the air.

High up in the air, the arrows were accurately aiming at Lin

Feng. At the same time, Liu Fei was holding her silver bow and had loaded it with three arrows as well. Three cruel and deadly arrows.

“Meteor Fall.”

Liu Fei looked serene and calm. Her body floated high up in the air as six arrows were shot and pierced through the air.

The arrow spirit definitely had great advantages. Not only was it able to automatically aim at somebody but it was also able to aim at a specific body part.

At that moment, Lin Feng had the feeling that the arrow spirit was aiming at his soul which made him feel like his very being was being suppressed by the arrows.

“These arrows are so powerful.”

Lin Feng was feeling gloomy and immediately he started his Eight Strikes of Desolation attack using both hands. Fourteen strikes had blotted out the Sky and covered up the Earth. moving straight towards the incoming arrows.

“BOOM, BOOM,BOOM!”

Explosion sounds filled the air and an extremely strong wind blew onto Lin Feng’s disciple robes.

After these apocalyptic attacks vanished, Liu Fei appeared again in a cloud of dust. She was crouching down and was breathing heavily.

“How can he be this strong?” Liu Fei was looking at Lin Feng and wondering how she would get her revenge. It seemed impossible. She was completely astonished. After she broke through to the Ling Qi layer, her father himself had assisted her in her training. She had been practicing everyday with no rest. She had greatly increased her breathing abilities and her combat skills. She had greatly increased her strength and her attacks now contained explosive power within each arrow. Thanks to her spirit she was now even able to shoot six arrows at the same time.

She was extremely talented as a disciple of the first Ling Qi layer and not many people could defeat her but Lin Feng was still able to block all of her attacks. She had lost once again and was unable to put up resistance.

He was a genius. He could use up to seven strikes of the Eight Strikes of Desolation skill and up to fourteen using both hands. He had managed to master it with both hands to such a level, such a thing was impossible. Was he really only at the first Ling Qi layer? How could his attacks be that horrifyingly powerful?

When Liu Fei saw that Lin Feng was moving nearer and nearer with a weird smile on his face, she could feel a shiver run down her spine and while remaining vigilant she asked him: “What are you planning to do?”

“Hmmm...” Lin Feng said nothing and just hummed as if he was

thinking of what he would do. What kind of girl was she? She often used that delicate, charming and tender expression to fool others. She also looked very cute but he knew that deep down she was violent. If Lin Feng didn't have a strong willpower and determination, he could have ended up falling for her too.

Lin Feng whose expression was barely discernible looked at Liu Fei with an evil smile on his face and asked: "What do you think that I am going to do...?"

"You....." Liu Fei had the blood rush from her face and she looked incredibly pale. She took an arrow from her back... and started pressing it against her own throat. She was extremely determined.

Lin Feng was joking on purpose and at that moment was astonished. He wouldn't have thought that his joke would have such repercussions. He couldn't help but be completely shocked.

"If I wanted to do anything to you, do you think I would have let you off last time?"

Lin Feng had no choice but to speak. Could it be that he really looked and sounded like a pervert?

Lin Feng's words suddenly relieved Liu Fei. She also put down the arrow that she was holding.

"If you really want this place then I will leave it to you. From this

point forward we won't need to meet anymore, it's too troublesome with you. You continue to shock me." Lin Feng explained while walking towards Liu Fei. When he arrived next to her, he stopped.

Lin Feng bent over and looked at Liu Fei. He slowly sighed amazed by the beautiful skin of the girls in that world.

Lin Feng who was above Liu Fei looked closely and attentively at her delicate face. He looked startled. Then he smiled and whispered: "I have only just realized now that you are pretty cute after all."

When he finished talking, Lin Feng left.

Liu Fei was astonished for a while but she soon came to her senses.

"Ah... that bastard...."

Lin Feng sensed the stones of the mountains around him were shaking and the sound of Liu Fei's voice was echoing through the atmosphere into his ears. There was no need to react that way. Holding a grudge against somebody like this wasn't a pleasant thing after all. It was even scary to a certain extent.

"I guess this settles things between us."

Lin Feng had a resplendent and brilliant smile on his face. He

looked like a happy and well rounded young man. Always taking things too seriously or always being too worried was pointless. Sometimes it felt good to relax and not worry.

Chapter 60: Mo Xie is Evil

Lin Feng had left the mountains where he had just finally removed a thorn from his side. He saw some silhouettes on the horizon running at full speed which created a dust storm behind them.

“Hey, what’s going on?” asked a disciple who didn’t understand what was going.

“You still don’t know? There are too many ferocious beasts in the Black Wind Mountain. It looks like oceans of ferocious beasts have emerged. A countless number of ferocious beasts have gone into a frenzy. All the Yun Hai Sect disciples are going there now to stop the disturbance.”

“A flood of ferocious beasts...?” replied the other one looking really excited. They immediately headed towards the crowd at great speed, while heading towards the Black Wind Mountain.

The history of the Yun Hai Sect dated back a thousand years but the history of the Black Wind Mountain was even older than that. These floods of ferocious beasts weren’t a rare thing but for the great majority of them, they were weaker beasts. Many disciples were heading there for treasures and for battle experience. This was something which did not occur frequently and could not be missed.

A few hundred years before, there was a flood of strong ferocious beasts, the Yun Hai Sect was almost destroyed by this flood.

Ordinary ferocious beasts and Ling level ferocious beasts were not a problem, they were ordinary and easy to kill... but during the apocalyptic flood from the past, there was a gigantic quantity of Xuan level ferocious beasts which were extremely strong compared to cultivators at the same level. They were incredibly hard to kill which made them extremely dangerous. They made earthquakes with their movements and killed a multitude of people. The sect was almost completely destroyed.

There were also rumors, at that time the leader of the ferocious beasts was a mutant beast which could change its shape, a celestial ferocious beast.

Because it had happened such a long time before the information that people knew about it was limited. However, everybody knew that these floods of ferocious beasts were very dangerous but that they were also a great opportunity.

Cultivators would give their best efforts to obtain as many precious items as they could.

Fighting against ferocious beasts would quickly increase the battle experience of the disciples.

“I wouldn’t have thought that the Yun Hai Sect disciples would go there before the elite disciple exam.” Lin Feng thought. He then started walking and decided to head straight to the Black Wind Mountain.

Lin Feng didn’t walk for a very long time. Liu Fei also came out of

the mountains and was also heading to the Black Wind Mountain.

On the highest mountain of the Yun Hai Sect were sitting a group of mysterious people looking down at the surroundings. They were watching Ling Hu He Shan, the top ranked Core Disciple of the Yun Hai Sect.

“How strong. It looks like this time the number of ferocious beasts is quite large.

“Ling Hu is extremely strong as expected. He looks like one of the eight high officials of the country...” People thought while looking at Ling Hu He Shan’s silhouette. They all knew that the high official, Chu Zhan Peng had come to the Yun Hai Sect. They had seen how arrogant he was. It had moved Ling Hu He Shan’s heart a great deal and he had now placed orders to control who came in and out of the Yun Hai Sect.

.....

The Black Wind Mountain looked like an apocalyptic battlefield. Sect Elders and disciples were moving together towards to the Black Wind Mountain.

The entrance of the Black Wind Mountain was surrounded by the strongest Cultivators within the sect. The ferocious beasts were roaring loudly at the base of mountain. There were also many disciples killing ferocious beasts on the outskirts, it was a real bloodbath.

At that moment, Elder Mo Xie was standing on a huge monolith, his long sleeves were fluttering in the air.

“Elder Mo Xie, these disciples are quite strong. It looks like the ordinary disciples are all capable of advancing really quickly within the sect.” said an Ordinary Elder standing next to Mo Xie.

“Haha, this is actually so easy for us to handle. There is no danger that we fear on this mountain. This is just a warm up before the elite disciple exam. It’s quite fun actually.”

Mo Xie laughed when saying this. He sounded like there was absolutely no ferocious beast flood where disciples were fighting to the death.

“Elder Mo Xie, Elder Mo Xie....”

At that moment, more and more people were gathering. They all came to Mo Xie and were bowing in front of him. They were extremely polite.

At that moment, a silhouette passed by Mo Xie at full speed towards a ferocious beast.

Mo Xie looked pale as if he had seen a ghost. There was a loud thunderous roar and suddenly a level eight ferocious beast died on the spot.

The thunderous roars came from Lin Feng’s sword. They were

making the entire atmosphere vibrate heavily. He threw himself at wild enraged rhinoceros and smashed its head, then the beast collapsed and died.

Lin Feng used his sword to remove the precious core and other valuable items while placing them in his bag. These precious items were extremely expensive and valuable for him. He would be able to exchange them within the sect for useful tools which would increase his strength and increase his cultivation.

Mo Xie, who was still standing still on the huge monolith, couldn't help but feel like he had a weight placed on his heart when he saw Lin Feng. That was precisely that disciple who had made him lose face in the presence of many other people. He had really humiliated him in front of everyone. He would have never thought that Lin Feng could improve his sword skills to such an extent in such a short amount of time.

“You have become quicker and stronger but you, an ordinary disciple, dared to humiliate me. You should just die.” Thought Mo Xie full of hatred. He hadn't forgotten that day. The memory of those events were still fresh in his mind.

“STOP.” shouted Mo Xie while looking at Lin Feng. He sounded like a madman and his shout was filled with anger. He had shouted so loud that it surprised Lin Feng. He stopped what he was doing, turned around and saw Mo Xie.

“Elder, what's wrong?” asked Lin Feng.

“Bastard, stop killing all the ferocious beasts! You’re doing this only so that the others don’t get the precious items, you selfish bastard. Good thing that I’m here to pay attention and think about your fellow disciples of the Yun Hai Sect.”

Mo Xie was still shouting with anger. There was someone standing next to Lin Feng. He was an Elder who followed Mo Xie. He was sent there by Mo Xie as he could easily kill Lin Feng with a flick of his wrist.

“Elder, I don’t see what precious items you are talking about.” said Lin Feng while smiling coldly. Last time, Mo Xie had put Lin Feng in an almost fatal position. It was a death trap. He wanted to hand Lin Feng over to Chu Zhan Peng. Lin Feng wouldn’t have thought that Mo Xie would still hate him though. Lin Feng had never directly offended him. Mo Xie had been wrong to try and frame Lin Feng. He thought this Elder had already learnt his lesson”

“Bastard, how dare you talk to an Elder that way?” shouted the Elder standing next to Lin Feng. He sounded furious.

That Elder wasn’t weak and had relied on Mo Xie to become an Elder. Of course, he wasn’t going to miss an opportunity to show in front of his benefactor.

“I’m saying that you stole the precious items, do I need to repeat it once again?” said Mo Xie smiling coldly. Lin Feng wasn’t doing it on purpose. It was easy to misunderstand though. Mo Xie was once again accusing Lin Feng of made up crimes and then everybody would attempt to kill Lin Feng on the spot.

If Lin Feng died, who would say anything? He was just an ordinary disciple. Two Elders were there as witnesses. Two Elders in charge of enforcing the rules within the sect. There would be nothing strange if they killed Lin Feng.

“Little Boy, be very careful, will you dare humiliate an Elder?” Said Mo Xie and he was laughing on the inside. In his head, Lin Feng was already dead.

“You really are a shameless Elder.” Lin Feng cursed loudly. He had first accused Lin Feng of stealing items from the others and then started adding other crimes to the list. Mo Xie was in charge of enforcing the rules in the Sect... How could he abuse his power like this? Even if some others didn't agree, they would protect Lin Feng if he was having issues with an Elder... and Mo Xie was trying to create a conflict between Lin Feng and the other Elder.

Lin Feng had no way to defend himself. If an Elder said he had committed a crime, then he had committed a crime.

“Mo Xie, I know you want to kill me. You don't need to invent false crimes to accuse me. Just admit it honestly, like someone with a backbone.”

Lin Feng looked at Mo Xie and smiled coldly. He sounded extremely self confident and arrogant.

“Huh?” Mo Xie frowned. Lin Feng dared be that impertinent?

“”Mo Xie, I am just an ordinary disciple. You are an Elder, what are you afraid of? If you want to kill me, then go ahead and try to kill me. I am right here waiting for you.”

Lin Feng saw that Mo Xie was frowning and continued to talk. He didn't restrain himself at all. He didn't care about Mo Xie and continued to humiliate him.

“No wonder...” Mo Xie remembered that day. He had been extremely scared of the shadow which took hold of him when he attempted to attack Lin Feng.

Indeed, that shadow had protected Lin Feng during those events. How could Mo Xie be sure that the shadow wouldn't protect Lin Feng again? Was Lin Feng was not acting this way to make him attack so the shadow would act?

He remembered that frightening shadow as it completely dominated his body. Mo Xie couldn't help being terrified at the thought. He was clearly trembling in fear.

He looked at Lin Feng with an evil look. Lin Feng looked back while remaining insolent and not scared at all.

“He Chong, let's go, help me capture him.” Said Mo Xie to He Chong who was standing near Lin feng. He didn't say “kill”, only “capture”.

“Alright.” replied He Chong.

“Asshole.” Lin Feng said while glancing at He Chong. The insult had spontaneously burst forth from his mouth. It was completely unexpected by the people watching from the sidelines.

“What did you say???” said He Chong growing extremely furious. An ordinary disciple had suddenly dared insult him in front of the entire crowd, that was ridiculous absurd, impossible. That was truly outrageous.

“Mo Xie doesn’t dare to touch me and wants you to attack me, haven’t you thought of the consequences?”

Lin Feng was smiling coldly while looking at He Chong and then added: “I’m not just insulting you though. The same also applies Mo Xie. He abuses his power as an Elder. When you look at Mo Xie trembling in fear, Are you sure that you still feel like attacking me?”

“Mo Xie doesn’t dare attack me. He wants you to do it, you’re a scapegoat and you’re even excited to obey his orders. Even if I say you are an asshole, am I wrong with what I say?”

Lin Feng’s tone was cold but calm. It made He Chong furious. He didn’t hesitate and immediately started moving towards Lin Feng.

He secretly glanced at Mo Xie and saw Mo Xie was extremely furious as well but as before, he was not moving towards Lin Feng

at all. It was incredibly strange.

“Mo Xie is extremely strong and influential. Does he want me to act as a scapegoat?” He Chong thought. He thought about the conversation Mo Xie and Lin Feng had had. The more he thought about it, the more he thought Lin Feng could be right. Besides, Mo Xie’s father was standing behind them, so if something happened then Mo Xie would be helped by his father. However, if something happened to He Chong, who would protect him?

At that moment, a large group of Yun Hai Sect disciples were surrounding them and had seen everything. They couldn’t help but be stupefied. An ordinary disciple had only said a few words and had terrified two Elders of the Yun Hai Sect.

Chapter 61: Imaginary Demon

“I tell you to hurry up and kill me but you still don’t dare, what sort of Sect Elders are you?” said Lin Feng sneering at the, then he turned around and beheaded a sly python with his sword. His sword was extremely sharp and precise.

Lin Feng had an evil smile on his face which made He Chong even more hesitant to attack. He surprisingly already believed Lin Feng’s words and did not want to act rashly. Mo Xie didn’t dare take risks either so both elders were frozen in place, unmoving. The last time he made a move against Lin Feng, the evil shadow had defended him and had scared Mo Xie to death. Even just thinking about the shadow sent chills down his spine. It had been a deep psychological trauma for Mo Xie.

The flood of ferocious beasts was getting more and more intense. There were also more and more disciples who were joining in the fights. Each of them looked crueler than the other rushing into the multitude of ferocious beasts which actually gave the impression they were bloodthirsty beasts themselves.

Liu Fei had also arrived. She saw that Lin Feng was in the middle of all these ferocious beasts and that it seemed easy for him to kill them. His sword was bathed in blood and rivers of blood flowed under his feet. Lin Feng wasn’t using his full strength so it was hard to tell he was at the Ling Qi layer. He was using the strength of the ninth Qi layer to kill the incoming ferocious beasts. However every movement of his sword was precise, powerful, accurate and quick. His swordsmanship was on a whole new level.

Lin Feng had complete control when using his sword and every movement was perfection. He was quick, accurate and powerful. People were unable to tell how powerful Lin Feng was but they knew he must be strong.

“This damned guy again...” Liu Fei insulted Lin Feng in her thoughts. She took her bow and arrow from her back and immediately shot an arrow through the skull of a ferocious beast that Lin Feng was about to kill.

Lin Feng turned around and saw Liu Fei’s ice cold eyes glaring at him. He smiled at her in a friendly way and ignored her killing the ferocious beast. He believed their debt had been settled already.

“Raaawwwwwrrrrr.” a furious roar spread throughout the atmosphere and echoed through the air. The ground started violently shaking. Everyone had the impression the ground was collapsing under their feet. Everyone’s face suddenly became much more serious than before.

“An extremely powerful ferocious beast is coming.”

Many people started moving back scared of the ferocious beast which was heading in their direction. A black fog was filling the air in a distant location and was gradually moving nearer. The crowd could just see the fog moving forward and trees getting split into pieces and blown away.

“How scary!”

The crowd was still retreating backwards. That kind of monstrous power must be at least at the Ling level of ferocious beasts. If an ordinary disciple went to try to kill it then they would certainly die.

When Lin Feng noticed that such a powerful ferocious beast was approaching, he started retreating as well. He wasn't confident that he could easily kill such a powerful ferocious beast. Until that moment, he had been killing only low level ones and had never engaged in battle with a ferocious beast of the Ling Level.

While Lin Feng kept retreating backwards, a sudden oppressive force crashed onto his body. That oppressive force made his body go completely stiff and started to push him forwards and prevented him from moving back.

“Animal!” Lin Feng shouted furiously looking at Mo Xie who was behind him. He didn't need to ask himself who was doing this to him, it was obvious that only Elder Mo Xie was able to do that, especially with such strength. He didn't dare attack him so he just prevented him from retreating away from danger.

Mo Xie turned a deaf ear to Lin Feng's insults. He had an evil smile across his face. He had been humiliated by that worthless ordinary disciple a few times, he had completely lost face. But more and more he started to think that he was wrong about the shadow which was supporting Lin Feng. How was that possible that the possessor of that Shadow Spirit was always with Lin Feng? Besides, he had just looked around carefully and had seen no shadow at all. He had decided that if he was going to act, now would be the best chance.

Of course, Mo Xie wasn't absolutely convinced that the shadow wasn't in the area. Therefore, he had only tried to harm Lin Feng using sly and indirect methods. He would have the rampaging beast kill Lin Feng for him

The extremely powerful ferocious beast was moving nearer and it seemed like there was an earthquake every time it moved. The crowd could only see a black fog filling the air. Around that black fog, there was a large group of extremely strong ferocious wild beasts. Each of them diffused such a strong Qi that the disciples who saw had felt their hearts jumping from their chests.

“He's dead. Elder Mo Xie willingly put him in such a situation. He's definitely screwed.”

Everybody was running back and saw that Lin Feng was alone unable to move backwards in retreat. Mo Xie was also standing away from the crowd and had firmly placed himself behind Lin Feng. The crowd had clearly understood what was going on. They couldn't help but insult Lin Feng for his foolishness. They didn't understand what the situation was actually about. This was the result for insulting an Elder of the Sect.

“That ferocious beast is extremely powerful. If you force me into fighting it then I will most likely die in an instant” said Lin Feng who was still oppressed and shouted furiously. He wanted to go back but Mo Xie had blocked him.

“Pfff, it seems like this time the Shadow Spirit isn't with him.”

Mo Xie thought cruelly. Then, he said loudly: “Abandoning others before a large battle, this disciple is the shame of the Yun Hai Sect.”

When Mo Xie finished talking, an extremely thick vine suddenly burst out of his body threw itself at Lin Feng at an incredible speed.

Lin Feng body was burning under the pressure of the force that was oppressing him and in the blink of an eye, he was then constricted by thick vine plants which surrounding his body. It had moved extremely quick and looked like a Boa. At that moment, Lin Feng was absolutely unable to move.

“Spirit... It’s his spirit. Mo Xie has a Boa Vine Spirit!”

The crowd was shaking with roars of surprise. It looked like Mo Xie was determined to make sure that Lin Feng would fall into that death trap and die. If an ordinary disciple actually dared confront an Elder of the Sect, he was doomed.

However, there were some people who didn’t really agree with such a thing. They thought it wasn’t fair to attempt killing an ordinary disciple, especially when the one attempting to murder them was a powerful Elder in the Sect. They thought that it was quite shameless for Mo Xie to act as he did but nobody would dare to say anything. Who would dare to provoke Mo Xie?

Lin Feng howled furiously. His sword was glowing but it was constricted by the thick Boa Vine Spirit like the rest of his body.

There was nothing that he was able to move.

Even though Lin Feng was a genius who was extraordinary and could definitely easily defeat cultivators of the same level or even of a much higher level than him, he was unable to defeat Mo Xie who was an Elder of the Yun Hai Sect. The gap between the two was gigantic. At that moment, Lin Feng was powerless.

“Impressive for an Elder to bully a disciple... you’re really shameless.

At that moment, an ice cold voice shouting was heard. Everybody in the crowd was surprised and stupefied. Surprisingly, the one who had said that was... Liu Fei. The beautiful Liu Fei... who was desired by an incredibly huge amount of sect disciples.

“Huh??” Mo Xie frowned and looked at Liu Fei. He groaned but he didn’t dare attack Liu Fei either. He knew Liu Fei’s status and background. The funny thing is that Mo Xie’s father, Mo Cang Lan had the same name as Liu Fei’s father, Liu Cang Lan. But Liu Cang Lan was of course much more popular and famous than Mo Cang Lan. Everybody knew the stories Liu Cang Lan in the Yun Hai Sect. Mo Xie’s father paled in comparison.

The bow wielding genius, Liu Cang Lan and the Patriarch of the Sect, Nan Gong Ling were extremely arrogant yet popular when they were young. They cared a lot about their fellow disciples in the sect. They were both the best cultivators within the Sect, they were geniuses. Their friendship was also very deep and sincere, they were truly like brothers.

Liu Fei released her spirit and grabbed her silver bow from her back. She prepared three arrows in addition of the three arrows of her spirit and aimed at the Boa Vine Spirit.

Liu Cang Lan was extremely strong. Liu Fei envied her father's strength and power. Even though she bitterly hated Lin Feng, she couldn't bear the sight that was happening in front of her. Mo Xie was a very tiny personage, shameless and disgusting.

Liu Fei didn't know if that attack was going to be of any use but she still tried. As before, the Boa Vine Spirit didn't move at all.

Lin Feng looked amused for a second. He wouldn't have thought that Liu Fei would surprisingly be the one trying to help him in the last moments of his life.

"I have taken useless risks. I was too negligent. It's my fault." thought Lin Feng depressed. He wouldn't have thought that he would come across Mo Xie and he had even less expected that Mo Xie would do such an evil and shameless thing.

Besides, at that moment, Mo Xie was much stronger than him so nobody was helping him. Liu Fei was an exception but she wasn't strong enough. She tried to help but in vain.

"RRAAAWWWRRRR....." The roar of the ferocious beast sounded violent and fierce. The beasts around it were also extremely quick, but there was still that gigantic black fog to be careful about. Nothing could resist it. The gigantic black fog was

swallowing everything on its way through the forest. It was extremely strong, unimaginably powerful.

“It’s so strong! It must be an Imaginary Demon! It’s at least level seven!” Mo Xie could sense that terrifying power getting nearer and nearer. That monster was at the seventh Ling level which meant that it had the strength of a cultivator of the seventh Ling Qi layer. That strength was coupled with its natural strength as a ferocious beast which meant he was even more powerful than a cultivator of the seventh Ling Qi layer. Cultivators had to practice to acquire a basic strength whereas beasts already had a natural born strength which was added their level.

Mo Xie was observing Lin Feng and looking forward to seeing him die.

“Mo Xie, you bastard!” shouted an extremely loud voice which seemed to be thundering through the air. The person to whom the voice belonged was nowhere in sight.

Mo Xie’s face immediately changed into a look of disbelief. His Boa Vine spirit suddenly released Lin Feng and surprisingly went towards the group of ferocious beasts.

Chapter 62: The Strange Metamorphosis

“How dare you!” shouted an extremely loud voice which made the ground tremble. That extremely violent and furious shout terrified the entire crowd. They were all trying to guess to whom that voice belonged and who could be that powerful within the sect.

There was a flying crane which appeared in the air above then transformed into a bright light. Its light was so blinding that the light from the sun was completely blotted out. The light immediately began attacking the ferocious beasts.

It seemed like these ferocious beasts could sense that the person who had arrived was insanely powerful. They all started neighing, roaring and emitting other noises but that Imaginary Demon didn't seem to be affected as much. Lin Feng was about to get absorbed by that black fog when the Imaginary Demon suddenly rolled away as if he was suddenly trying to escape.

Ferocious beasts of the Ling Level were not only able to absorb the Qi of Heaven and Earth but they were also very intelligent. They could feel and sense forces as well as powerful energies. It seemed like the imaginary demon had been affected by the force and energy emanating from the crane, which made it want to escape.

The wings of the crane starting emitting a brilliant and dazzling silver light. It then immediately flew through the crowd of ferocious beasts and suddenly, a river of blood seemed to be flowing down the mountain.

These terrifyingly strong and powerful ferocious beasts had surprisingly been defeated by the mysterious person. The possessor of crane spirit was extremely powerful. It was impossible to judge exactly how powerful he was.

After all these ferocious wild beasts were destroyed, the black fog of that Imaginary Demon started dispersing through the atmosphere and turned into grey ashes. Lin Feng had vanished.

“Imaginary Demon... as expected, it’s power is incredible.”

Some people in the crowd thought while looking at the Imaginary Demon. It was turning into a multitude of smaller Imaginary Demons. It didn’t have a real body. Even if you were stronger than an Imaginary Demon, it was still very hard to catch.

Suddenly, the wings of the crane started shaking very violently which created a hurricane. Everybody in the crowd was falling down onto the ground from the pressure. Right after, the crane flew away and disappeared leaving behind a massive amount of dead ferocious beasts lying down on the ground.

How strong! Everybody was speechless.

Chu Zhan Peng who had come to the Yun Hai Sect not so long before was also able to fly and had a Legendary Roc Spirit. Even though he had similar skills and was also extremely strong, in comparison with this Crane Spirit, Chu Zhan Peng was a weakling. In a fight between the Legendary Roc and the Crane, the

Legendary Roc would not be able to withstand a single blow.

A great majority of the people who were present had never seen such a strength before. They were very excited. They were wondering who that person was and how he was related to the sect. He was so strong that not a single ferocious beast could have given him a hard time.

“Our Sect has existed for about a thousand years. We are really the Sect of the millennium... even in periods of great prosperity, there are always hidden cultivators of amazing strength which have hidden amongst us.”

Everybody was extremely excited after watching such a display of power. They all hoped that one day they would have the chance to become that strong.

At that moment, two people were moving through the sky. Even though their agility abilities were extremely developed, they were moving through the sky in a way which gave the impression it was an easy thing for everyone to do. These two people were surprisingly the Patriarch Nan Gong Ling followed by Mo Cang Lan.

“What’s going on?” asked Nan Gong Ling while falling from the sky onto the ground before landing in front of Mo Xie.

“Mo Xie has been trying to kill one of our disciples. He pushed him towards the ferocious beasts so that he would get slaughtered by the monsters.” said someone who was standing next to Liu Fei,

whose eyes were filled with hatred.

Liu Fei hated Lin Feng but she hoped that she could become strong enough someday to regain her dignity and defeat Lin Feng. She didn't like to see Lin Feng treated in such an unjust way. Lin Feng was a real genius, he was even stronger than her and no one could treat him that way. Lin Feng could become a pillar of the Yun Hai Sect. Liu Fei was sad to see an Elder treat Lin Feng that way.

“Patriarch, this is untrue. There is one ordinary disciple who was killing all the ferocious beasts and stealing all the precious items. Then, when the stronger ones arrived, he deserted. Damn him!” said Mo Xie who was, obviously, not going to admit what he had done. Lin Feng was already dead anyway. Even if he didn't admit that he had killed Lin Feng, who would say anything?

“Alright, today, you clearly wish to die today!”

An extremely loud and aggressive voice emerged. A hurricane was rolling through the air blowing almost everyone away and no one was able to stand steadily on their feet.

Mo Xie's face changed drastically. A terrifyingly powerful Qi appeared and was surrounded by a radiant light. It then flew threw the air and crashed into Mo Xie's body.

“BOOM! BOOOM! BOOOOM!. ”

The rock on which Mo Xie currently standing exploded into a thousand pieces and Mo Xie's mouth spurted blood like a fountain. That single attack was extremely powerful.

The Elder Mo Xie had been defeated in a single strike, he was bleeding endlessly and all of this was done in the presence of his father, Mo Cang Lan.

The crowd had the impression they were watching a dream. They couldn't believe that it was really happening before their eyes.

Then, the crowd looked again to see who had done that attack and saw an old man. Everybody recognized him.

“Huh? That's the old man who is the entrance guard of the Xing Chen Pavilion.”

Everybody was stunned. As a disciple of the Yun Hai Sect, everybody had already been to the Xing Chen Pavilion. It had to be the old man. Who couldn't recognize Protector Bei?

They were not used to seeing him like this though. They were used to seeing him looking almost asleep or lazy at the entrance of the Xing Chen Pavilion. They would have never imagined that he could be so monstrously strong.

At that moment, Protector Bei's eyes were filled with murderous intentions and he was moving slowly towards Mo Xie. He then said in an ice cold tone: “You're an Elder of the Yun Hai Sect in charge

of enforcing the sect rules and yet you dare to kill a young disciple, a junior, of the Sect...? If I don't kill you, it means that the sect holds no place in my heart."

Mo Xie's face was deathly pale. He wouldn't have thought that, suddenly, someone would kill him just because of a simple disciple.

A silhouette appeared before Mo Xie and seemed to be vigilant. It was precisely Mo Cang Lan.

"Protector Bei, don't you think that you are exaggerating a little bit?"

"Exaggerating? Mo Cang Lan, have you not educated your son." said Protector Bei extremely sharply which made Mo Cang Lan completely lose face. He then shouted: "Get the hell away!"

"Protector Bei, do you have to be this furious?" asked Nan Gong Ling who came in front of Protector Bei at the same time.

Nan Gong Ling, of course, knew what kind of person Mo Xie was but when it came to the sect, he was still an important person. Besides, there was still Mo Cang Lan. He was extremely strong and in charge of the elders. Therefore, attacking Mo Xie would cause trouble amongst those standing at the top within the Sect.

"Patriarch, let me handle this business, I am about clean up the Sect today." said Protector Bei ignoring everything which had been said until that moment. He regarded Lin Feng as the bright future

of the sect. He thought Lin Feng was a gift bestowed upon his sect by the gods... and Mo Xie had fed him to the ferocious beasts.

“Protector Bei!!!!” shouted Nan Gong Ling extremely loud attempting to make Protector Bei regain his calm.

“Don’t kill Mo Xie, think about the sect above all!” said Nan Gong Ling to Protector Bei.

“Think about the sect above all?!” said Protector Bei with a sort of smile on his face. He thought that killing Mo Xie was particularly important for the sake of the sect.

“Nan Gong, do you know who that young man was?”

Protector wasn’t shouting anymore. His voice was low and sounded it was filled with emotions.

Nan Gong Ling was stupefied. He had no idea, there were so many young disciples in the Sect.

“If Protector Kong was here today, Mo Xie would be dead already!” said Protector Bei. That sentence was filled with meaning. His eyes were filled with pain and sorrow, he then said: “Think about the Sect first... Nan Gong... In your life as Patriarch... We will never be blessed with a talent like that again...”

When he finished talking, Protector Bei transformed into a Crane

again and suddenly vanished leaving a hurricane behind him.

“Protector Kong...” Nan Gong Ling couldn’t believe he had heard the old man pronounce that name. He was shaking from head to toe. Nan Gong Ling obviously remembered and understood everything. That shadow which had protected Lin Feng last time was precisely Protector Kong’s spirit. He had protected Lin Feng. He then remembered the eight sounds of drums from the Precipice of Zhangu which had filled the entire atmosphere of the Yun Hai sect.

“BOOM” Nan Gong Ling’s heart started pounding, his thoughts were flowing at full speed. He was getting more and more furious. He was starting to find himself being overwhelmed with murderous thoughts.

“Mo Xie!!”

Mo Cang Lan could feel that the Patriarch wanted to kill his son and that he was growing furious. What had happened? What had Protector Bei told Nan Gong Ling?

Mo Cang Lan glanced at Mo Xie. That bastard of a son’s behavior was really worse and worse. He was insolent and acted selfishly and relentlessly without thinking.

.....

Lin Feng had been wrapped up in that black fog and immediately

after he had had gone through a mystical event. It had seemed like his body had been transported through the universe. He didn't know where he had landed.

An extremely cold Qi started to oppress his body and to dig into his flesh and bones. He wanted to struggle but he didn't know what or how to fight against this Qi

He realized he was extremely weak in comparison.

When confronted with death, Lin Feng released his twin spirits. His eyes became pitch black and he became aware of all the universe that was surrounding him. However, as before, he was immersed in a world of darkness.

“Celestial Spirit.”

Lin Feng said in a low voice. A brilliant and resplendent light appeared. It was dazzling and mystical. Lin Feng suddenly saw two piercing cold eyes of a ferocious beast which was staring at him as if he was a prey.

“What's that? Is that a real ferocious beast?” Lin Feng saw cruel eyes and a hideous face. It looked truly horrible.

Many tentacles were approaching him as if they wanted to wrap themselves around him. At the same time, a tentacle had touched his spirit. His strange small snake spirit as well as his celestial spirit were being swallowed.

Lin Feng was feeling so weak that he even thought that some of his vitality was slowly being consumed as well.

At that moment, something very strange happened to Lin Feng.

Something that had never happened before happened. His small snake spirit had moved for the first time, the snake was starting to move!

Chapter 63: The Trash Spirit?!?

The small snake was moving, it slowly started to open its mouth and the black fog suddenly started to pour into its mouth.

Swallowing the black fog...

Lin Feng could obviously feel and sense that his spirit had changed and was still changing. That small snake was becoming full of black fog.

His snake spirit continued to swallow the black fog. The more it ate black fog, the bigger it grew. It was gradually growing larger and larger.

Tentacles started to move towards the snake but it didn't have any effect on the snake spirit. Strangely, the snake was swallowing them as well. Lin Feng was astonished. His snake spirit was consuming everything.

Lin Feng had been utterly helpless when facing the ferocious beast of the Ling layer and thought he was about to die. He would have never thought that his small un-awakened spirit, which was the reason for his nickname as "trash" would start moving so suddenly.

There was something strange about the ferocious dark eyes as if there was something wrong. There was a small twinkle which appeared in the eyes which were half filled with worry.

Then a formation of dark tentacles and the black fog started to move away but the snake threw itself towards them.

“Rrraawwww....”

Lin Feng was utterly stupefied. His snake spirit looked excited. It opened its huge and ferocious mouth. Inside, there were a multitude of tentacles and black fog in the process of being swallowed.

It was not enough for his snake spirit. The previously little snake was growing bigger and bigger. From an initial size of a third of a meter, it had grown to a meter in length. It seemed like it was a gluttonous snake trying to consume the world.

The Imaginary Demon groaned and roared as it was fighting against the snake but its body was still being gradually eaten by the snake spirit.

The Imaginary Demon released Lin Feng and the black fog slowly disappeared.

“Rawwwrrrrr.....” the snake made the same sound as the Imaginary Demon had made. It then swallowed as much black fog as it could and went back to Lin Feng’s side.

The snake spirit had become small again but was still much bigger than before. Then it rolled itself around Lin Feng’s shoulder

and fell asleep.

“It swallowed the imaginary demon?”

Lin Feng's eyes were wide open with shock. The black fog of the Imaginary Demon had completely disappeared without trace.

That's... That was.....The trash spirit...?

Lin Feng was speechless. At that moment, he had the sensation an immense strength was invading his body and a loud buzzing noise was resonating in his brain. He felt his vision grow blurry and he collapsed, completely losing consciousness.

Lin Feng didn't know how much time had passed when he regained consciousness. When he opened his eyes, he was in a cave. It looked like that of a ferocious beast.

“BOOM!”

Suddenly, Lin Feng's body seemed like it was being crushed which terrified him. Panic filled his face and he felt pain that was indescribable.

His heart was pounding. His dark spirit appeared along with his celestial spirit and suddenly, his mind began to become clear and undisturbed. His Celestial Spirit was also floating before his eyes in the form of a book.

Immediately after, the small snake spirit also appeared. It was about one meter in length. Its body was becoming more solid and rigid. As before, it was still small and looked like it was asleep curled around Lin Feng's shoulder. It looked like it had a lot of affection for Lin Feng. From a glance they seemed to be very close and looked to have a deep connection.

He had awakened his snake spirit!

Something extraordinary happened which made Lin Feng tremble from head to toe. On his back a face had appeared. It had two ice cold, pitch black eyes.

“Imaginary Demon...”

Lin Feng was still shaking and still trying to understand what had happened. How was this possible? At the moment when he had been swallowed by the Imaginary Demon, his snake spirit had suddenly appeared.

A third spirit!?!

Multiple spirits??... He was a real genius. He was truly gifted from the gods... On the continent, there was almost nobody who experienced such a thing. Out of a million of people, there was maybe one to who happened to have two spirits. Surprisingly, Lin Feng even had three. Was he a supernatural existence? A god?

Three spirits. He would be able to terrify everyone at the mere mention of it. He would scare his enemies to death.

There was an unceasing milky-white light circulating in and out of his body. It seemed to be the powerful Qi from heaven and earth. It was encircling him and circulating through his body.

“Did I just break through to the second Ling Qi layer?”

Lin Feng’s brain was somehow short circuited with the shock of all these events. Even if he had released his spirit and was still able to remain calm to a certain extent, it was hard not to get excited considering the circumstances and the terrifying power of the things happening within his body.

Lin Feng was using all off his mental focus to try and understand all the things that had occurred.

“It looks like that small snake is able to swallow ferocious beasts and enables me to use them and their power. It also seems like it is able to absorb them into itself and use them to increase my strength.”

Lin Feng was just conjecturing what was happening but a smile appeared on the corner of his mouth.

Trash spirit?

People laughed at him because they thought his spirit was useless

but it was actually extremely powerful. If all those people who constantly laughed at him, bullied him and called him a piece of trash because of spirit, knew that he had such a powerful ability granted from his snake spirit, how would they react?

“Damn, I only narrowly climbed from my own grave. I have escaped from the pit and this will be the end of all the hardships I have suffered until now.”

Lin Feng recalled his spirits back into his body. He looked up to the sky and uttered a long cry. He didn’t know where he was at that moment though. He could only analyze the situation considering all of his past experiences and knowledge.

“Celestial Fangs. These Fangs can devour anything. That’s a good name.” Lin Feng whispered. That’s the best name Lin Feng could think of to refer to his spirit, to that small snake. Celestial Fangs.

“Mo Xie. If I don’t kill you, I swear, I will make your life not worth living or my name is not Lin Feng.”

Lin Feng stood up and his eyes filled with incredible killing intent.

Lin Feng took a deep breath and as he did, the air in his throat tasted filthy. It tasted like a ferocious beast.

Lin Feng looked carefully around him and it seemed like he was in the cave of a ferocious beast which made him feel extremely

uncomfortable and nervous.

Lin Feng quickly moved outside of the cave. Outside was a huge forest. Its trees were crushed into pieces. It seemed like its trees had been crushed by ferocious beasts that had trampled through the area. The smell of ferocious beasts still filled the air. He could even sense the ground shake under his feet at times. He could hear them roar and neigh in the distance.

It seems like the flood of ferocious beasts hasn't stopped.

Lin Feng had just encountered a large group of ferocious beasts where the Imaginary Demon was, but he knew that there were still other groups filled with extremely powerful ferocious beasts. The Black Wind Mountain was full of extremely strong ferocious beasts.

He released his dark spirit. His eyes became pitch black. His sense of hearing and his vision became extremely well developed. He could see and sense everything in his surroundings. His brain was also processing all the data it received very quickly. It was as if he could sense and understand the whole area around him, as if he was looking down on a strategy map.

At the same, the strong Qi of ferocious beasts was revolving around Lin Feng's feet on the ground. It had started enveloping Lin Feng's body until it completely covered it. Lin Feng entered into a transcendent state of mind. Wrapped inside that Qi, it became impossible to see Lin Feng from the outside.

It was the Imaginary Demon which had given Lin Feng its power. That Imaginary Demon was extremely powerful and its impression was enhanced. This was why it was impossible to see the Imaginary Demons real body. It was just a gigantic black fog as far as anyone could see. Lin Feng, thanks to his spirit consuming the Imaginary Demon, now had that ability too. The Imaginary Demon's skill was imprinted onto Lin Feng's mind and could be used naturally.

In the Black Wind Mountain, there was an incredible amount of ferocious beasts. They were not only in one place but were everywhere in the territory. Because some ferocious beasts were extremely strong, Lin Feng had to be very careful. He could use his Qi to pretend he was a ferocious beast himself thanks to his new ability.

These ferocious beasts were running madly everywhere in the Black Wind Mountain. As the number of ferocious beasts had greatly increased, they were running towards the outskirts as if trying to conquer new territory.

At that moment, the Qi which surrounding Lin Feng really seemed to be that of a ferocious beast. Lin Feng started to walk.

Some small and weak ferocious beasts passed by Lin Feng. Surprisingly, all these small ferocious beasts emitted small and cute sounds indicating that they were submitting themselves to him. The world of the ferocious beasts was even rougher than that of cultivators. It was ruled by the law of the jungle: The weak would become the food for the strong.

Even some Ling level ferocious beasts were running away when they sensed Lin Feng's presence. Adult ferocious beasts of the Ling Level were at least level five which was quite terrifying. However, ordinary ferocious beasts of the Ling level could not compare themselves to the Imaginary Demon.

“The depths of the Black Wind Mountain are really frightening.”

Lin Feng realized how terrifying the depths of the Black Wind Mountain were and he couldn't help but think about before, when he was still at the Qi layer and dared come here without being scared at all. How ignorant was he? If they had met any of the ferocious beasts of the Ling level, they probably would have died.

Of course, in the eyes of a ferocious beast of the Ling level, a Cultivator of the Qi layer was like an ant. Maybe these ferocious beasts wouldn't even have looked at them just like Lin Feng looks at ordinary low level ferocious beasts.

“This is a great opportunity, why am I not hunting and killing ferocious beasts to gather precious items?”

Lin Feng started being both nervous and excited. Ling Level ferocious beasts were not like ordinary ones. They could absorb the Qi of the earth and the precious items he could get from them were extremely valuable. If he gave these items to the Elders within the sect to trade, they could produce profound pills or weapons for the Ling Qi layer. Besides, some of the energies these ferocious beasts absorbed were also extremely useful in increasing a person's cultivation.

Good Profound healing pills could cure injuries, including broken bones... It was even said that some pills could resurrect the dead.

Good weapons could help greatly enhance one's attack and defense skills in battle.

All of these items could be acquired and bought in exchange for precious items recovered from these ferocious beasts. This is why so many people took the risks to travel here and kill ferocious beasts. They wanted to acquire precious items to trade.

Lin Feng had the feeling that he was far too poor. Apart from the soft sword, which was given to him by Protector Bei and the profound healing pills which Protector Kong had given to him, he actually had nothing of value. He had indeed never taken the time to consider his wealth and equipment.

Chapter 64: Deadly Sword

“Some people have a high status in society and do not have to worry for money. It’s also possible to use some profound pills to increase one’s strength and move up in the hierarchy. I could use profound pills and trade for better weapons to increase my strength. As far as I am concerned, I do not have an influential background and I can only rely on my own strength.” thought Lin Feng.

His future on the path of cultivation was too important to him. There were many commitments he had in this life. If Lin Feng wanted to succeed, he had to put in more effort than anyone else. Effort was not all he needed though, some luck was also necessary. He also needed people supporting him if he wanted to advance quickly. It seemed like life was going to be full of hardships. In life there would be a great deal of injustice, not everyone and everything could be partial and fair. However to someone who put more in more work than anyone else it would eventually show its rewards and eventually make life easier.

If your natural abilities were too low, hard work coupled with perseverance and willpower, could be enough to lead a luxurious and comfortable life.

However, not only were Lin Feng’s natural abilities not low, he was an incredible genius with latent potential hidden within his body. Since this was the case, how could he not acquire great power and wealth to one day live a comfortable life?

While thinking of all these things, Lin Feng started moving. Not

so long after, he encountered an Abominable Rhinoceros eating a small ferocious beast. There was blood everywhere on the ground and the whole scene was painted red with blood. It was a gruesome scene.

The ferocious beast Qi which was surrounding his body vanished and Lin Feng started walking slowly and carefully towards the scene.

As if it was aware that something was approaching him, the Abominable Rhinoceros turned around. Its bloodthirsty eyes were staring at Lin Feng. It looked brutal, ferocious and bloodthirsty. Its pupils were huge and dark as its gaze pierced through Lin Feng.

There was surprisingly someone in the world who was foolish and dared to step within its territory.

The Abominable Rhinoceros was naturally strong, cruel and bloodthirsty. Once it had reached adulthood, it was a first class Ling Level ferocious beast. It could reach a length of two meters and a height of one meter. It was a giant but sturdy ferocious beast.

That Abominable Rhinoceros looked like it had just reached adulthood. It was thus a first rank Ling level ferocious beast.

“The Abominable Rhinoceros is quick... its horn is extremely sharp... but its strength lies in its natural defense abilities. An ordinary cultivator who is at the first Ling Qi layer could never defeat it.”

Lin Feng was trying to remember all the characteristics of an Abominable Rhinoceros. It was impossible to easily break through its defense. Only with enough speed and a precise strike could a cultivator hope to defeat this ferocious beast, otherwise fighting it would lead to their death.

At that moment, the Abominable Rhinoceros was stamping its foot on the ground. A hole appeared under its feet. It was getting ready to charge forward at any moment.

Lin Feng was still incredibly relaxed as he watched the situation. A strong sword Qi was released from his body and had begun to fill the atmosphere. Before the ferocious beast could even start its charge, Lin Feng had already thrown himself towards it.

Following each of Lin Feng's step, the sword Qi which he was releasing increased and became stronger. A few steps later, the air was filled with a whistling sound.

The hair which was covering the body of the Abominable Rhinoceros stood completely on end and suddenly it roared loudly and retreated.

Low level ferocious wild beasts were very intelligent and had advanced instincts. It sensed the incredibly powerful sword force which was hidden and knew that the human in front of him would be extremely dangerous to fight.

“Moonlight Feather Agility.”

Lin Feng couldn't let it escape. He dashed through the air at full speed and his sword was glowing with a radiant light.

“One strike, one life.”

The sword force completely filled the atmosphere. A white light was being emitted from the tip of the sword.

The running Abominable Rhinoceros had a cut which had appeared on its body but it continued to run forwards. Blood was rushing out of its body and left a long thick trail of blood behind it as it ran. It was badly injured and was losing large amounts of blood.

Some poisonous Qi started flowing out from the body of the rhinoceros. Lin Feng's thrust his sword into the Qi and in an instant the Qi had vanished. The Abominable Rhinoceros was dead.

Ferocious beasts were extremely sensitive to blood. In the Black Wind Mountain, there were too many extremely strong ferocious beasts. Therefore, Lin Feng would need to quickly kill the Abominable Rhinoceros and would then leave, otherwise the blood would attract too many ferocious beasts who would be attracted by the blood.

Lin Feng was extremely satisfied with his sword skills and the power unleashed with each strike. Even though the Abominable Rhinoceros was extremely strong and its body was tough, its body had suffered lethal injuries from a single strike with Lin Feng's

sword.

As Lin Feng continued to move through the mountain. Lin Feng killed another Ling Level ferocious wild beast but this time it wasn't the Abominable Rhinoceros but an Earthshaking Bear. As before, Lin Feng killed it in one strike.

.....

Two days later, on the outskirts of the Black Wind Mountain, a young man had appeared and all of his clothes were torn and dirty, he was filthy from head to toe. He was carrying a sword in his hand and in front of him, there was a gigantic snake.

That snake was about twenty meters long. It's extremely thick body was slithering on the ground towards the young man. Its head was five meters up in the air. It looked hideous and ferocious. It looked like it was ready to strike at any moment.

Its gigantic eyes were green and were filled with murderous light. Poison and blood was endlessly spraying from its mouth.

"A second level Ling ferocious wild beast is incredibly hard to deal with as expected." Lin Feng's robes had a large hole through which one could see his skin where he had been struck, he was bruised and the area had turned dark purple. Lin Feng was worn out from this fight. Lin Feng had been injured by fighting with that Python of Darkness.

During these two days, Lin Feng had killed around a hundred ferocious beasts, all at the Ling Level. He had killed a few second level Ling ferocious beasts as well but it was the first time that he came across such a strong and dangerous ferocious beast.

“Sssssss, ssssssss.....” Its huge tongue was flickering through the air while it continues to hiss. The snake was spitting out poison and Lin Feng would have to constantly avoid the poison from the snake.

But at that moment, the huge Python of Darkness fell down and its head crashed into the ground. This was because its tail had been damaged and pinned by a tree which had fallen down onto it. The snake couldn't avoid it.

Suddenly, a strong gust of wind had filled the air.

If Lin Feng didn't have good agility techniques, he would have already been killed. The second level Ling Python of Darkness was incredibly strong and powerful.

Suddenly, the space in front of Lin Feng filled with light and slashed down onto the python before vanishing from sight again.

The snake emitted an extremely loud moan. Lin Feng had felt like he was being oppressed by the power of the snake. The Python of Darkness kept moving towards him.

“BOOM! BOOOM! BOOOM!...”

The trees were cracking as the python was crushing everything on its path. Lin Feng was like a shadow in the sun and was too fast for the snake to catch him. If there was an observer, he would think that the snake had gone mad and was chasing an illusion.

Even though the Python of Darkness was only the second level of the Ling level, even an extremely strong cultivator of the third Ling Qi layer would find it difficult to escape with his life. They knew it would be extremely difficult to kill the snake and would never directly confront it. However, Lin Feng had just reached the second Ling Qi layer two days before and was not aware of how dangerous the python was.

“Deadly sword!” shouted Lin Feng. At that moment, his extremely strong and powerful sword thrust towards the Python of Darkness which cut through its body leaving it severely bleeding.

But this time it seemed like the snake hadn’t felt the strike connect with its body. It wanted Lin Feng’s life and had gone into a complete frenzy.

“I’m not playing with you anymore.”

Lin Feng had almost gotten killed by the Python of Darkness multiple times already. After two days continuously fighting within this mountain, his sword skills had already become much stronger than before. He had even more confidence in his own ability. He was convinced that he would be able to defeat almost any cultivator in the second Ling Qi layer... after all, how many

cultivators of the second Ling Qi layer were stronger than the Python of Darkness?

Lin Feng released the first layer of his Celestial spirit. His eyes became pitch black and he was surrounded by a world of darkness. Nothing could escape from his vision, he could see and feel everything. Even if the snake was extremely quick, its attacks seemed slow to the Lin Feng that now stood before it.

The snake was about to attack from the side. Lin Feng was firmly holding his soft sword. Which emitted an ice cold light.

A deadly sword Qi emanated from Lin Feng' body. It looked like it could destroy anything it touched.

Lin Feng raised his head. He calmly looked at the Python of Darkness that was moving towards him. Lin Feng's eyes looked like that of a brutal demon. At that moment, he was extremely heartless and there was not an ounce of mercy left inside him.

“Deadly sword.”

Lin Feng had faintly said those words. His mouth had barely moved. He wielded his long sword which was releasing a strong Qi as well as a strange grey Qi... It was a deadly Qi.

“Tsss... tsss...”

The extremely powerful grey Qi moved very quickly and was

accompanied by a long and painful screech. That strike had cut the snake cleanly into two halves. A cloud of dust rose into the air and the snake hit the ground.

The body of the Python of Darkness was still writhing on the ground as if it did not believe it was dead. Lin Feng used his long sword to pierce through the python's skull and with that action it had completely stopped moving. The atmosphere had become calm once more.

Lin Feng had managed to kill the Python of Darkness, a second level Ling ferocious beast!

Deadly sword. Lin Feng's sword could truly be called deadly after being bathed in blood these two days in the Black Wind Mountain.

Lin Feng stepped forward and picked up the precious items from the body of the Python of Darkness then left towards the sect.

Two days and the flood of ferocious beasts had already strongly decreased to the point that it wasn't a flood anymore. It also seemed that the elite disciple exam was about to start in the upcoming days..

Chapter 65: Po Jun

The sudden ferocious beast flood had disappeared as fast as it had come. At the edge of the Black Wind Mountain there were only a few Qi Layer ferocious beasts and a great quantity of dead ferocious beasts.

Of course, there weren't only carcasses of ferocious beasts, there were also human corpses which showed that some disciples had lost their lives while fighting against the flood of ferocious beasts. Streams of blood were flowing endlessly on the ground making a river of blood which was flowing down the mountain. It showed how terrible and fierce the flood of ferocious beasts had been to have caused such a scene.

It had been mostly weaker ferocious beasts in that flood, if there had been a flood of stronger ferocious beasts, what would have happened to the sect?

At the base of the mountain there was still a great deal of Yun Hai Sect disciples. The majority of these disciples were ordinary disciples who were fighting against Qi Layer ferocious beasts. They were using the battle to develop their skills while also gathering precious items.

“Haha, there is a ferocious beast of the Ling Level, try to prevent it from leaving and then I will kill it.”

At that moment, a clear and bright voice spread throughout the atmosphere followed by an extremely loud laughter.

Some people saw that there were two Yun Hai ordinary disciples were fighting together against a ferocious beast of the Ling level. Actually, they had an Abominable Rhinoceros in front of them.

Between them and the Abominable Rhinoceros, there were carcasses of ferocious beasts. The two ordinary disciples seemed to be ignoring them. They were focused completely on the opponent in front of them and were filled with greed from the precious items they could receive from its body.

“The Abominable Rhinoceros is extremely strong and its strongest point is its defense. Do you think you can kill it?” said a thin young man. His name was Po Jun. He was staring at the Abominable Rhinoceros whose eyes looked bloodthirsty and violent.

“Don’t worry, Po Jun, don’t you believe in my abilities?”

The thin young man named Po Jun simply grinned at the other disciple. The other disciple seemed really confident in his abilities.

“The only person I trust is myself.” said Po Jun. But at the same time, he grabbed two rattans that he was carrying and threw them at the Abominable Rhinoceros to bind it in place.

“Rrrrhmmpphh...” The Abominable Rhinoceros was enraged and tried to move around but it seemed to be unable to move freely, it was growing more and more furious over time. Po Jun was being whipped back and forth by the beast but he still had a calm

composure. He was holding the rattans steadily trying to use them to bind the Abominable Rhinoceros. He was managing to lock the Abominable Rhinoceros in place.

“ATTACK NOW!!” yelled Po Jun. There was no need to shout this as his friend was already there attacking the Abominable Rhinoceros within the blink of an eye.

The Abominable Rhinoceros was stamping on the ground heavily which made a cloud of dust rise into the air. It was going into a frenzy.

Po Jun’s friend carried out an extremely strong attack on the rhinoceros using both his palms. The Abominable Rhinoceros roared extremely loudly. One strike had been enough for the beast to meet a brutal and instant death.

“Po Jun, how was that? Was it a mistake to cooperate with me?” asked the strong young man while smiling. At that moment, Po Jun had already stepped forward and started removing all of the precious items from the corpse.

“When you’ve broken through to the Ling Qi layer, it’s really a different level. Your spirit gives enough strength to deal with some opponents.” thought Lin Feng who saw that Po Jun had used rattans. Obviously, that was his spirit. It was similar to Mo Xie’s spirit. Of course, Mo Xie’s strength and Po Jun’s strength were not on the same level though.

“I would have never thought that this guy’s strength had

improved so much.”

Lin Feng was smiling. He then moved forwards to the two young people who were picking up their precious items.

“Who?”

At that moment, Po Jun quickly turned around. An extremely strong Qi quickly burst out of his body and his two rattans started moving towards Lin Feng.

“Huh?”

Lin Feng was surprised, he hadn't thought that Po Jun's defense perimeter was so wide and that he'd attack so quickly upon sensing someone moving closer to them.

Lin Feng stepped aside really quickly and a strong sword Qi emerged from his body, directly crashing down onto Po Jun making him almost suffocate from the intense pressure.

“Po Jun, stop it, he's my friend.”

The strong young disciple said quickly as he had turned around and saw the scene in front of him.

At that moment, Po Jun recalled the rattans back and the Qi which was suffocating him had vanished as well. He remained

vigilant and kept watching Lin Feng very closely.

“That guy, he is incredibly strong!”

“Haha, Lin Feng, you’re finally showing yourself. I came to look for you more than a dozen times and I couldn’t find you anywhere. I thought you had left the Yun Hai Sect forever...”

It turned out that that strong young disciple was Lin Feng’s friend: Han Man.

“I just came back a little while ago.” Said Lin Feng while smiling before adding: “Han Man, you’re now able to kill a ferocious beast of the Ling Level... You have progressed so fast!”

When Lin Feng had left for Yangzhou City, at that time Han Man was only at the eighth Qi layer. In that short amount of time, Han Man had surprisingly broken through to the Ling Qi layer. Lin Feng was astonished. He was, of course, also extremely happy for Han Man. He did not have many friends but he would definitely count Han Man as one of them.

“Haha, I’ve broken through to the Ling Qi layer but I was just lucky this time.” Han Man said while scratching his head and then continued: “Oh, anyway, How about you Lin Feng? You used to be much stronger than me. How strong have you become now?”

“I’m just an average dsiciple.” said Lin Feng with a big teasing smile on his face. Lin Feng was looking at Han Man’s friend, Po

Jun. That guy had an ice cold expression on his face. He looked like he was ready to strike Lin Feng if he made the wrong move. If that was the case, it could made things complicated and unpredictable for Han Man.

“Oh by the way, I forgot to introduce the two of you. Lin Feng this is Po Jun. He’s extremely strong but he’s discreet and every reserved, unlike the ordinary disciples who consider themselves the best because of some ranking. He is also much stronger than them.

Han Man said as he was smiling while introducing them to each other.

“Po Jun, this is Lin Feng. He is like a brother to me. I hope you can become good friends with him as well.”

“I’m first taking the precious items we have just obtained.”

Said Po Jun while looking cold and indifferently. Then, he turned around and continued what he was doing. He took out a dagger and split the beast open to harvest the materials which could be traded into the sect.

“Lin Feng, don’t worry, Po Jun just has that kind of personality. He’s a very cold person but he is a good guy.”

Lin Feng ignored it and kept smiling. Po Jun and Lin Feng were not friends so it didn’t matter if Po Jun did not interact with him.

There was no need to get offended by a stranger's behavior.

“Han Man, everybody has started to leave, how come you are still out here fighting?”

“Many of them have left because of the Elite Disciple Exam. As we were already here, we thought we should get some more precious items to trade with the sect. We are the only two remaining Ling Qi Layer in the surrounding area so there should not be a problem. All that remains are Qi layer disciples.

“Are you not getting ready for the Elite Disciple Exam?”

Lin Feng was stupefied and couldn't help but ask.

“Of course, I'll join. I'm not late yet. I still have some time to collect more riches. Hehe.” Han Man was the same guy as before, always smiling and positive. Lin Feng sometimes had the impression he was talking to a simple minded person... but at least these kinds of people were honest and true to themselves. They were not the kind of people to have evil intentions in their hearts and they are easy to get along with.

“Po Jun, it's alright, there is nothing of value in the area and I doubt we have missed something.”

Han Man said while looking at Po Jun.

“Alright, let's leave.”

Po Jun said while nodding. He picked up the bag full of precious items and stood up.

“Lin Feng, you should leave too. Let’s go back together.” said Han Man to Lin Feng and then asked: “Lin Feng, come on, tell me, how strong are you now?”

Lin Feng thought for a while and then shook his head. He was actually unable to clearly identify his own strength. Maybe he had to fight against someone of the third Ling Qi layer to correctly judge his current level of strength.

.....

“You really enjoy being mysterious... and keep so many things secret from me. Can you cope with an Abominable Rhinoceros or not?” asked Han Man whose curiosity had become unbearable. He needed to know.

“Cope with an Abominable Rhinoceros alone?” thought Po Jun when he heard Han Man ask that question. Lin Feng’s strength was certainly of the Ling Qi layer. A moment ago, the Qi from Lin Feng’s sword had almost made him suffocate and created immense pressure on his body. Po Jun would have probably been defeated by Lin Feng in an instant if they had fought and Po Jun was sure that he would not even be using his full strength. Po Jun could not measure how strong this young man was.

Even though the Abominable Rhinoceros had extremely high

defense abilities, Lin Feng had had no problem killing one using his sword.

“I should be able to handle it.” said Lin Feng while touching his nose. Dealing with an Abominable Rhinoceros? He had required only one hit to deal a lethal blow on one previously, but even then it did not require him to use his full strength.

“Hehe, you obviously have broken through to the Ling Qi layer. This time, we three will probably pass the Elite Disciple Exam and all become Elite Disciples. After that, we will be able to work hard and become pillars of the Yun Hai Sect.” said Han Man joyfully with a big smile on his face. Three Disciples of the Ling Qi layer, they would probably be able to accomplish great things if they worked together.

“Work hard for the sect? Whose decision is that?” asked Po Jun tactlessly. He thought that Han Man was really naive.

“We should let Lin Feng decide. He’s a real genius and he has a much greater potential than me. Even though he may be weaker than me now, he will probably surpass my power later. He’s always been there to protect the weak... He saved my life. Whatever he says, I will always listen to him.” said Han Man sounding extremely simple minded.

“What about me?” asked Po Jun.

“You and I are very strong but since I listen to Lin Feng, you should obviously listen to Lin Feng as well.” said Han Man which

sounded extremely simple and completely illogical. Lin Feng was speechless and was looking at him while stupefied. That guy was so naive and his thoughts were so simple. Po Jun would never be convinced by such naive statements. Who would?

Chapter 66: Asking for Trouble

In the Stormy Gorge, a huge crowd had gathered which almost seemed endless, the crowd had gathered in front of the Life and Death Arena. They were all young disciples of the Yun Hai Sect who were excitedly talking amongst themselves. There was such a larger number of disciples that they were all standing shoulder to shoulder. Looking down from above it looked like thousands upon thousands of ants.

On the top of the cliffs surrounding the gorge there was also a large crowd of people looking down at the gorge. They were all staring at the people in the arena, these people all had sharp expressions on their faces. There was a powerful Qi which was filling the atmosphere around the arena.

There were some people within the gorge who were extremely strong compared to the average disciple of the sect. They were the high level disciples of the sect. Nan Gong Ling, many years ago was one of those disciples. Nan Gong Ling was sat in the middle of the high level Yun Hai Sect disciples.

Those participating in the Elite Disciple Exam were some of the most important disciples of the Yun Hai Sect. It was the first time in many years that there were so many ordinary disciples who would attend Elite Disciple Exam. Some of them were going to become Elite Disciples within the sect and some of the strongest participants could even become Core Disciples.

Of course, some of them were going to be eliminated from the exam altogether.

That was the rule: fight and win or be eliminated.

Ordinary disciples who sat the exam might have to fight with the current elite disciples. The battles were randomly arranged. If the ordinary disciple won, he would probably be chosen to become an elite disciple. If an elite disciple lost, he lost face and reputation.

On the same basis, if an elite disciple wanted to become a core disciple, he would then need to fight a core disciple and win. If an elite disciple could defeat a core disciple then he could become one of the core disciples and would definitely gain a lot of prestige and recognition from the high ranking members of the Yun Hai Sect.

The rules were very simple. You would have to fight repeatedly, fighting an elite disciple would enable an ordinary disciple a chance at promotion. There were people at the Elite Disciple Exam who had big arrogant smiles on their face from winning and there were others who looked depressed as they were eliminated.

It was the first time in the year that all of the ordinary disciples, elite disciples and the core disciples were present in one place.

It was the second time this year that the ordinary, elite and core disciples were going to be ranked.

No matter if it was an ordinary, an elite or a core disciple whose ranking was in the Top Ten, he would gain an infinite amount of prestige within the Sect.

Furthermore, the disciples who showed the most potential and placed at the top would receive great rewards such as precious stones, weapons, profound pills or maybe even extremely powerful skill books.

Obviously, the elite disciples and core disciples who would get eliminated or not obtain a good ranking would be humiliated. If the disciple had bad luck then the opponent could be very strong and humiliation would be inevitable. This is why all disciples would fight with their utmost power if they wanted to achieve the best results. Losing because of underestimating an opponent would bring shame and humiliation.

Lin Feng and his group had arrived at the Life and Death Arena. When they arrived, the Elite Disciple Exam had already started. Coincidentally, ordinary disciples were challenging elite disciples.

At that moment, two people were fighting on the rocky stage of the Life or Death Arena. The fight was very intense and the crowd continued to discuss the battle as they watched it very closely.

“It’s Liu Fei, she said earlier that she had broken through to the Ling Qi layer... obviously it’s true. She’s very pretty and on top of that she’s incredibly strong and powerful. I wish she could become my wife in the future...”

Said Han Man who was looking at the battle of Liu Fei while laughing. Liu Fei was a dream for many of the young disciples. They all wanted her to become their lover. Liu Fei was famous for

being extremely beautiful in the Yun Hai Sect. Many of the young disciples would spend their entire lives within the sect and would even take a wife from the sect. This is why many men were courting her, including some geniuses and even core disciples...

The rumors said that Liu Fei was pretty and that she was a real genius... in other words, she was amazing.

“Haha, go ahead and ask her to become your wife!” Lin Feng said while laughing at Han Man. That simpleton had even dared to imagine such a thing. Liu Fei was too much of a tomboy for him. She was violent and stubborn, he would not last a second.

“Hehe, I think that I’m pretty strong but I don’t think I’d manage to court her.” said Han Man while laughing and scratching his head. He then continued, while looking at Lin Feng and said: “By the way Lin Feng, I heard that you got along quite well with Liu Fei. She’s very beautiful and you’re very handsome, you are both geniuses, you would definitely be a perfect couple.”

“Me?” asked Lin Feng with a shiver running down his spine. He shrugged his shoulders and shook away the feeling from that shiver. He was so scared that it may become reality that he would have trouble sleeping later that night.

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at the people around. His attention focused on a particular person.

“Mo Xie, during this elite disciple exam, I will take care of you.” thought Lin Feng while smiling coldly. He had precisely rushed to

the Exam because of Mo Xie.

It looked like Mo Xie could feel a dark premonition and felt like darkness itself was staring at him. He stopped looking at the arena and observed the crowd, he was glancing at everyone trying to find the source of his premonition.

At that moment, Liu Fei released her spirit and effortlessly won the battle. Her bow and arrows were radiating a brilliant light as she stepped out of the arena. Lin Feng was looking at her with new eyes.

For Liu Fei, joining the elite disciples wouldn't be something which would make her extremely proud. She looked around her and heaved a sigh. She had broken through to the Ling Qi layer and her spirit had awakened, she had the same spirit as her father in the past... but she still couldn't beat the person on her mind...

Unfortunately, Lin Feng had gone to gather some precious items and had been killed because of Mo Xie.

“If he was still here, I could learn so much from him and I would certainly be able to greatly improve my strength.”

She didn't know why but Liu Fei, suddenly missed Lin Feng: that unconventional and unrestrained genius... but he did have some detestable aspects.

If she had the choice, Liu Fei would prefer to be fighting against

Lin Feng and winning against him to that of participating in the Elite Disciple exam and becoming an elite disciple.

At the same time, back at the pavilion was Protector Bei who was staring blankly at the horizon while watching Liu Fei who had just won her battle.

“Not bad, Liu Fei... a real genius, but you still have a lot to do before reaching your father’s level. It will be hard to achieve his power while not growing in the Imperial City.”

Protector Bei’s thoughts were flowing at full speed. Imperial City... these two words made him shiver but they were very clear to him. It was a very crowded place. There were lots of political strategies which were involved in the day to day life of the city. This was a gathering place for many strong cultivators. Cang Lan was still there to protect her but if he wasn’t, maybe Liu Fei would get into trouble.

“I wanted to let Lin Feng go to the Imperial City. Not only would he have become more important by moving up in the hierarchy but it would have also enabled him to fight against stronger cultivators. At the same time, he could have helped Cang Lan... and maybe, he would have met his destiny there.....”

While Protector Bei was thinking these things, he started to grow furious and wanted to kill Mo Xie yet again. Because of Mo Xie who had killed Lin Feng, Protector Bei’s slowly realized that his dream was impossible... and these painful thoughts flowed like a stream of blood as his face turned red with anger.

Lin Feng didn't know that there were so many people that missed him. At that moment, he noticed someone else.

"Lin Feng, you're here as well! What a coincidence." Jing Yun was walking towards Lin Feng. Her expression looked fresh and pure like spring.

"What a great coincidence." said Lin Feng while looking at Jing Yun and smiling. Han Man, Jing Yun and Lin Feng were finally together again after what seemed like an extremely long time.

"It's not a coincidence, it's called fate." said Han Man smiling. "Jing Yun, I am the biggest person in the group, how come you only saw Lin Feng and not me?"

"Ehhhh..." Lin Feng was glaring at Han Man. That couldn't be true.

"Who would know someone like you?" asked Jing Yun while pouting.

"Alright, if you don't know me then I should just go. I am starting to remember that there was a young girl who was waiting for Lin Feng every day, wondering when she would see him again." said Han Man with a fake smile on his face. Lin Feng was speechless. Since when was there a girl like that?

"How would I know something like that?" replied Jing Yun while

blushing. She looked so delicate and charming that it was touching. Han Man couldn't help but burst into laughter.

Po Jun who was standing next to them looked at Lin Feng with a wry smile on his face. He was truly heartless to join in and laugh at Lin Feng.

“You guys, can you shut your filthy mouths?”

At that moment, a cold voice had shouted at them which had destroyed their good mood.

They all looked at the person who had spoken. It was an elite disciple carrying a sword on his back and he was looking at them with a look of disdain.

“Does it look like we were talking to you?” Han Man said furiously. That guy was incredibly impolite so Han Man could not hold his temper.

“You are courting death.” said the disciple carrying a sword on his back. A strong Qi suddenly emerged from his body.

“It's you.” said Lin Feng. It was really a huge coincidence. Lin Feng recognized that disciple. It was the elite disciple who had helped Liu Fei during their fight in the stormy gorge. It was Yu Hao, the one who said he would kill Lin Feng if Liu Fei asked it of him. He had actually almost killed him twice with that sword on his back. He was extremely strong.

Yu Hao was stupefied when he heard Lin Feng. He attentively looked at Lin Feng and then remembered him. He then smiled and said: “Last time, you were lucky that I didn’t kill you. Are you that impatient that you want to die now?”

“Impatient?” said Lin Feng while smiling coldly. He just regretted that he hadn’t broken through to the Ling Qi layer on their last meeting otherwise he would have unsheathed his sword and beheaded Yu Hao.

Chapter 67: Attracting Attention

“I am very impatient when it comes to living my life, I have such a long life to live after all.” said Lin Feng smiling coldly with a strangely evil look on his face.

“Hehe, Have met many pieces of trash in the past but I’ve never met a piece of trash who was so impatient to die.” said Yu Hao with extreme arrogance. He then added: “Since you really want to die, I will help you achieve your goal. Wait until the end of the Elite Disciple Exam and then I will deal with you.”

An ordinary disciple was worth nothing to most people within the sect. They could be killed at a whim and nobody would care, especially when in the Life and Death Arena of the Stormy Gorge.

“I will give you an opportunity to kill me before the end of the Elite Disciple Exam.”

Lin Feng said while nodding his head as if he had come to a decision. Yu Hao was lost and didn’t know what Lin Feng meant. Immediately after, Lin Feng started walking towards the Life and Death Arena.

“Lin Feng, what are you doing?” Jing Yun shouted as she could feel the fear gripping her heart.

“Jing Yun, you have to trust Lin Feng. That guy is always full of surprises.” said Han Man to Jing Yun trying to reassure her. Even though they hadn’t been friends for a very long time, Han Man

really admired Lin Feng. He was beyond insane, but he was truly a genius. He would fight anyone at the drop of a hat when it came to his friends. Each time they met, Lin Feng did something unpredictable.

Jing Yun tried not to worry but she could only make her heart grow slightly calmer. She looked at Han Man and nodded. That's right, it looked like Lin Feng was going to do something dangerous and unpredictable again.

Jing Yun couldn't help but be worried about Lin Feng. Going into the Life and Death Arena and challenging an elite disciple wasn't something one could do easily. If you wanted to become an elite disciple within the sect then you first had to have an incredible strength, luck was of no use. To become an elite disciple, the only way was to be stronger than a former elite disciple.

"Huh?" Yu Hao frowned. He hadn't replied yet. Han Man and Jing Yun understood what Lin Feng wanted to do because they were friends with him and could understand him... Besides, Yu Hao was extremely arrogant, how could he imagine what Lin Feng wanted to do?

Yu Hao smiled at Liu Fei who had already made her way out of the arena. He moved towards Liu Fei. Such a beautiful girl needed attention and who better than him to give it to her.

The Life and Death Arena was huge. Disciples could fight against other disciples on different rocky fighting stages. While the battles were randomly picked, they could also fight each other as they wished.

However, it seemed like there was an unwritten agreement between everybody to not step onto a fighting stage if there were already too many people fighting. This was also beneficial for the observers as they could only focus on a certain amount of action at once. If everyone started to fight then it would quickly become chaos.

Of course, no one had any plans to step onto the highest stage. Ordinary disciples didn't want to seem too self confident in their abilities. Overestimating their own powers would give the seniors of the Sect a bad impression. Only real geniuses, the most talented Disciples, would dare climb onto the highest stage and amaze the entire crowd.

At that moment, Wang Mang stepped onto a stage within the Life And Death Arena.

But at that moment, he saw that someone else wanted to get onto it as well.

“Hey, friend.” shouted Wang Mang while smiling at Lin Feng to get his attention. He was the third ranked ordinary disciple. He was extremely strong and had the arrogance of a ranked disciple who had not seen the world. He assumed that Lin Feng would notice he wanted to get on the stage and would let him go first.

But what Wang Mang hadn't planned is that Lin Feng stared at him and nodded to return the greeting while looking indifferent, he then continued walking towards the fighting stage. It really did

look like Lin Feng wasn't going to let him go first.

Wang Mang frowned. He was extremely famous amongst all the ordinary disciples. He wouldn't have thought that Lin Feng wouldn't give him face and let him go first. He wanted to open his mouth but he was speechless. He was too stupefied at what had happened. He opened his mouth to speak but no words could come out.

“Crazy moron.” said Wang Mang in a low voice filled with anger. He immediately went back to where he was standing before. That other disciple was heading towards the central fighting stage. How insolent! This was the first time that someone dared to go onto it.

Wang Mang wasn't the only one who was surprised but the entire crowd was stupefied to see someone go on that particular fighting stage. Their eyes were wide open. The crowd burst into an uproar and was wondering who that guy was.

“It's him. So he wasn't devoured by the Imaginary Demon...? He's surprisingly still living!” said someone who had seen Lin Feng at the moment when he had been consumed by the black fog of the Imaginary Demon. The person was stupefied to see Lin Feng living and breathing before him.

“Oh my..... He is insane.....” Han Man, Jing Yun as well as Po Jun were all astounded. Lin Feng did not fail to surprise them.

However, Han Man had a big smile on his face. He had the feeling that Lin Feng was stronger than him, much stronger than him. He

even had that feeling when he hadn't seen Lin Feng. He really admired Lin Feng and believed that he held an incredible strength.

In the Stormy Gorge, Mo Xie was stupefied. How was this possible? How could Lin Feng still be alive?

He was just an ordinary disciple and he had been eaten by an Imaginary Demon... how could he come back alive?

"It's him." Like everybody else, Nan Gong Ling was also astonished. His face showed how relieved he was. Now he would be able to tell Protector Bei and Protector Kong that Lin Feng was alright and the punishment of Mo Xie would not be so harsh.

"Haha, that young man never dies!" said a voice coming from the pavilion where an old man was sitting. It almost sounded like he was cursing but he was actually very cheerful.

"You continue to surprise me, young man." thought Protector Bei smiling. The first time that he had met Lin Feng, he had already had a good impression. The second time, Lin Feng had made the drums of the Precipice of Zhangu beat which had stupefied Protector Kong and Protector Bei... and this time, he had been eaten by an Imaginary Demon and then returned without a single injury on his body. He really was the king of miracles.

At that moment, Yu Hao arrived next to Liu Fei. He looked at Lin Feng who had stepped on the fighting stage and said while laughing: "Fei Fei, that piece of trash surprisingly dares go onto the fighting stage. He really wants to die."

Liu Fei frowned. She didn't like Yu Hao calling her by a nickname. She was in a bad mood because of this. Then, she looked at the fighting stage and her expression immediately changed, her beautiful eyes were filled with delight.

“He is not dead!!!”

Liu Fei was astonished and then a beautiful and resplendent smile appeared on her face.

“You're not dead... that's a good thing, I will beat you myself. I will humiliate you.”

Yu Hao saw that Liu Fei was smiling and looked enchanted but he didn't seem to understand. Then thinking that he could be her hero, he said: “Fei Fei, just like last time, you just need to open your mouth and I'll go kill that piece of trash when he's done with his challenge. ”

“You'll kill him?” Liu Fei asked while looking at Yu Hao. Even though Yu Hao had a Sword Spirit and was quite strong, he hadn't progressed for a year because he hadn't been practicing. He was still at the first Ling Qi layer. If he fought against Lin Feng, did he even stand a chance?

Besides, what Liu Fei wanted the most was to defeat Lin Feng herself.

“Yes, you only have to nod your head and I’ll put an end to his life.” said Yu Hao while smiling.

“Yu Hao.....”

Yu Hao was still smiling when the sound of an annoyed voice went straight into his ears.

“Yu Hao, Where have you run away? Come and fight me, damn you!”

Lin Feng was standing on the highest fighting stage. He raised his head and looked at everyone who was observing from above on the cliffs of the Stormy Gorge. He wanted to go to the highest place, the most craziest of places and look down on the world.

Yu Hao was still smiling. He hadn’t gone to the fighting stage. He hadn’t understood what Lin Feng had meant a moment ago. He did not understand that Lin Feng was actually challenging him to a fight. However he really wanted to fight with Lin Feng.

During the Elite Disciple Exam, being challenged was a humiliation because it meant you were weak. If you were weak, people wanted to fight against you.

But at that moment, Yu Hao was being challenged. On top of that, he was being challenged by the one he wanted to kill to win the affection of Liu Fei.

However, he hadn't thought that Lin Feng would challenge him right after he finished talking. Obviously, he had just been humiliated in front of a countless number of people. He had the feeling he had just been slapped in the face.

Yu Hao's expression looked like that of a demon. He was staring at Lin Feng with a cruel expression.

"Fei Fei, that guy wants to challenge me, that's great. I'm going to kill that shitty piece of trash."

As before, Yu Hao had no doubts about his own strength. He started walking towards the stage while still looking evil.

The entire crowd was amazed. Lin Feng was truly insane.

Not only had Lin Feng immediately stepped on the highest fighting stage but he was also challenging Yu Hao.

Yu Hao was far from being one of the weakest Elite Disciples. Before the Elite Disciple Exam, ordinary disciples had already checked the profiles of the different elite disciples. They had access to a list which contained detailed information on their strength levels. Yu Hao was far above the weak elite disciples. He had a Sword Spirit and he was very talented and strong. He was much stronger than most of the average elite disciples. Nobody would have thought of challenging him.

Yu Hao hadn't expected someone to challenge him either.

As he moved onto the fighting stage, Yu Hao while still looking like a demon, said: “I wanted to let you live a bit longer but you already want to die...So impatient”

“I’m in no hurry to deal with you, wait until I am done.” said Lin Feng while smiling. He stopped looking at Yu Hao and turned to the crowd.

“Li Lin, get your ass onto the damn fighting stage as well.”

Lin Feng continued to spit insults in the faces of elite disciples. Li Lin while in the Xing Chen Pavilion hadn’t dared to confront Chen Chen, so he had decided to take it out on Lin Feng. Lin Feng still remembered and planned to settle his grudge.

Everybody in the crowd was astonished at his actions. Li Lin... That was the name of another elite disciple, what did he intend to do by challenging two elite disciples at the same time?

Chapter 68: The Sword Master

During the first round of the Elite Disciple Exam everyone had to be in attendance, elite disciples as well as core disciples, because they could be challenged at anytime by another disciple within the sect.

Li Lin was no exception to this rule.

When Li Lin heard that he was being challenged by Lin Feng, his heart was pounding. That guy had probably broken through to the Ling Qi layer and wanted his revenge.

But then Li Lin tried to relax because Lin Feng hadn't only called his name instead he had called two: his name and Yu Hao's.

Yu Hao was infinitely stronger than Li Lin. He had a overpowering Sword Spirit and he was known as a genius. Lin Feng had even dared to challenge him but he was probably going to die because he could not fight against Yu Hao.

When entering the Life and Death Arena, Li Lin started to get nervous. When he saw that everybody was looking at him, he could feel his heart pounding in his chest.

“What are you doing? Why are you making him come onto the fighting stage as well?” asked Yu Hao glancing at Li Lin. He was puzzled. Besides, he despised being associated with a weakling like Li Lin.

“I will fight both of you at the same time.”

Lin Feng didn't reply to Yu Hao and just said these words in a cold tone which made Yu Hao frown in anger.

Insanity...

Madness...

In the entire history of the Yun Hai Sect which dated back a thousand years, nobody had ever dared challenge two higher ranked disciples at the same time during the Elite Disciple Exam.

Lin Feng, a simple ordinary disciple had challenged two elite disciples to fight against him. To make things even more shocking, one of them was an extremely strong cultivator who had a Sword Spirit. Lin Feng had broken a new record of insane behavior.

“That ordinary disciple is so arrogant and clearly overestimates his own power, even if he is incredibly strong, is it right to act in such a way?”

Mo Xie had said that in a cold and belittling tone. Not only was Mo Xie very strong but he also had a high status within the sect. Besides, his father Mo Cang Lan was standing behind him. Therefore, he was trying to regain some of the face he had already lost.

Nan Gong Ling was coldly looking at Mo Xie but remained expressionless. It was impossible to tell what he was thinking.

Regarding Protector Bei, he was just laughing and shaking his head: “This young man really has no limits!”

“Together? Who do you think you are, you piece of trash?”

Yu Hao’s face twisted in anger and revealed a hideous expression. What kind of person was he after all? A sword master with a strong Sword Spirit and he was an elite disciple?

Yu Hao despised Lin Feng. He thought that Lin Feng was an insolent piece of trash, he thought that comparing the two was the difference between earth and heaven. Yu Hao thought that it was an honor for Lin Feng to call a noble person such as himself onto the stage.

But Lin Feng had not only called him onto the stage. He had also called someone else. Surprisingly, he wanted to fight against two people at the same time. Wasn’t Yu Hao being humiliated from his actions?

“Exactly! What are you thinking? Suddenly challenging both of us at the same time. Yu Hao has an extremely strong Sword Spirit, he’s very powerful and can kill you with a single strike. How can you be so arrogant?!”

Li Lin was licking Yu Hao’s boots and trying to gain favor from

Yu Hao. Then, Yu Hao would do all the work alone and defeat Lin Feng while he could just stand and watch. Then he would not have to fight at all, this was obviously the best choice for someone like him who was incredibly weak for an elite disciple.

Yu Hao seemed to enjoy being complimented by others. A big smile had appeared on his face and he then said: “Haha, Li Lin, you’re entirely right. It’s not worth unsheathing my sword for such a worthless ordinary disciple... you help me take care of him.”

“Of course. But for such a worthless ordinary disciple to dare to challenge Yu Hao, he should be humiliated. Fellow disciple Yu Hao should show him how big the difference is between you and him.”

When Li Lin heard Yu Hao’s words, he got frightened that he would have to fight. He didn’t know if Yu Hao wanted him to fight so he did his best to lure Yu Hao into fighting alone. He really did not want to engage in a battle with Lin Feng.

“That guy is such a disgrace for our mighty Sect. He’s making all of the members of the Yun Hai Sect, lose face.” said members of the crowd while looking at Li Lin. He was so shameless. But that guy actually had to defend his point of view.

“You are so pathetic.” Lin Feng was sneering at Li Lin. “Li Lin, when I was looking for skills in the Xing Chen Pavilion, you attacked Chen Chen and then you ended up being scared to death by him causing everybody to laugh at you. Coincidentally, there was another ordinary disciple there so you decided to pick a fight with me. You also threatened me that you would kill me. You insulted me several times and called me a piece of trash. Now, I

challenge you and you seem to be terrified, how come?”

“Yu Hao, you who have a mighty Sword Spirit, what a genius! You attacked me without any reason on that day. You said that you could kill me anytime but it seems like you were just bullying me and trying to humiliate those weaker than yourself. Now, I am standing in front of you willing to fight but where is your sword?”

Lin Feng said in a very cold tone. Everybody in the crowd understood what had happened. These two elite disciples were very pretentious. They had both provoked and bullied that ordinary disciple but now that he had become stronger, he wanted to get his revenge.

Yu Hao’s face grew vicious and he said to Li Lin: “I will give you three seconds, if you don’t attack him within that time, I will cripple your Cultivation.”

Li Lin was furious. He was gnashing his teeth in hatred for Yu Hao.

On that day, Yu Hao had bullied Lin Feng and treated him as if he was an insignificant existence. At that moment, Lin Feng’s behavior towards him was strangely similar.

“Alright, I will start and then you finish him.”

Li Lin said against his will... He was really forcing himself to fight. He then started moving towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng shook his head. His style looked incredibly laughable. Lin Feng really wondered how that guy had managed to become an elite disciple.

“Get lost...”

Lin Feng then thrust his palm into the air and used his Eight Strikes of Desolation. Four strikes immediately broke through the air and crashed onto Li Lin’s body.

“BOOM!”

“BOOM!”

“BOOM!”

“BOOM!”

Li Lin was one of the weakest elite disciples. His strength was so low that he could not match some ordinary disciples. Lin Feng had hit him with a single skill while not even using his full strength and that had made him fly through the air and heavily crash outside the Life and Death Arena main stage.

Lin Feng ignored Li Lin after that and said to Yu Hao: “So what are you waiting for? I thought you were going to kill me.”

“Four strikes....That’s all? That’s only half of eight strikes, how laughable.”

Yu Hao knew what attack Lin Feng had used. In the Yun Hai Sect many people had learnt and practiced it to a similar level. Most elite disciples who had practiced it had managed to do four strikes and some talented individual had done five. But there were very few people who managed to do more than four strikes within the elite disciple. It was extremely rare to see someone talented enough to break through four strikes.

Lin Feng had only used four of the eight possible strikes but he could freely control how many strikes he used. He did not want to use his full strength when dealing with Li Lin.

“Even though I said I would kill you, today is the Elite Disciple Exam... even though we are in the Life and Death Arena, we are not allowed to directly kill. So today I will just cripple your Cultivation and break both of your arms. You will be half dead when we finish this battle.”

Yu Hao was already very cruel to begin with and now he had hatred towards Lin Feng.

While talking, Yu Hao was unsheathed the sword that he was carrying on his back. His sword was already glowing and its light was radiant. The glowing light looked like the water of a river as sunlight shone down upon it. It was a truly dazzling light. An intangible Qi started spreading through the air.

That wouldn't be enough though. Yu Hao released his sword spirit. It was an extremely sharp sword shadow which appeared behind him. It was pointing towards the Heavens as if it was about to cut down the heavens themselves.

“Even though those who possess a sword spirit are not weak, Lin Feng is also dangerous.”

The disciples in the crowd who were close to the arena could sense the strength and power contained within the sword Qi. They had the sensation that they were being pressured by the power of Yu Hao which made them feel dizzy and uncomfortable. However Lin Feng who was standing much closer had no reaction.

“I know that you like to rely on your sword spirit so I will show you what it really means to be a sword master.”

Lin Feng said with a voice filled with killing intent. He then unsheathed the sword he was carrying on his back and a powerful Qi spread through the atmosphere moving towards Yu Hao's sword. The pressure within the atmosphere suddenly increased greatly.

“What, he's also a sword user. Does he have a Sword Spirit?”

Everybody was shaking when they sensed the Qi contained within Lin Feng's sword. Yu Hao was also stupefied. Everyone was shocked because Lin Feng had unleashed this pressure without releasing a sword spirit. Lin Feng had a faintly discernible smile on the corner of his mouth.

“Why would he use sword skills if he doesn’t have a sword spirit?”

Yu Hao made a step forwards. Suddenly, a whistling noise spread throughout the atmosphere. The devastating sword Qi was growing more and more powerful. The Sword Spirit behind his back was also glowing brighter and brighter.

Yu Hao’s sword Qi was getting stronger and cutting through the atmosphere moving straight towards Lin Feng.

“Do you necessarily need to have a sword spirit to use sword skills? Can the cultivators who possess a Sword Spirit only use sword skills?” asked Lin Feng looking extremely calm. He stepped forward and said: “Even with your sword spirit you don’t understand the basic principles of wielding a sword.”

“BOOM!”

Suddenly, an extremely strong Qi shot towards Yu Hao. Even his own Qi was retreating from the Qi which had been unleashed.

Lin Feng had started to gather sword force into the tip of his sword. The power which was released was incredible.

“Force, he is using sword force.”

People in the crowd seldom saw cultivators who had knowledge of forces and when they saw some, they were usually battles between elite disciples and core disciples. Everyone had started to sense the immense power that was contained within his sword, the crowd was growing more shocked.

“So that’s sword force.”

“How powerful!”

There was an infinite amount of Qi which was also released from the sword. This had allowed Lin Feng to utterly suppress Yu Hao.

“Oh my... He’s only an ordinary disciple who just broke through to the Ling Qi layer and he already controls his sword force to perfection. What a genius!”

Some people knew that forces were extremely hard to understand and control, especially at Lin Feng’s level. Even some cultivators who had reached the peak of the Ling Qi layer were not necessarily able to control forces to the extent of Lin Feng, but Lin Feng seemed to master the forces to perfection.

Of course, some of the ordinary disciples didn’t even know what a force was and were asking other disciples how Lin Feng had such a powerful and oppressive sword.

“He’s the one who beat the drums at the Precipice of Zhangu. He’s so young and already extremely powerful. I could only dream

to be that strong at his age. He definitely deserves a high status within the sect. He truly deserved the title of a true genius. We should take good care of him and honor him. He will become the future of the sect.”

Nan Gong Ling understood what Protector Bei had been talking about previously and now understood why Lin Feng was so important. He was a pillar of the Sect. A solution had to be found so that Mo Xie wouldn't attempt to kill him again. That young man was a genius.

Chapter 69: Fury

Nan Gong Ling felt happy but Mo Xie was not happy in the slightest. He had an evil look covering his face.

“That young man is too outstanding... He should have been killed at birth.” Mo Xie thought evilly. Lin Feng had humiliated him so even if he was a genius, he had to be killed and Mo Xie couldn’t afford to wait until Lin Feng grew up as he would become too strong.

In the middle of the crowd, Han Man felt at ease. He had a smile on the corner of his lips: “He really has become so strong already. He even managed to convince me that I might be stronger.”

When he saw that Lin Feng was stronger than him, he was really happy for his sworn brother.

Jing Yun, who was standing next to him, also had a brilliant smile on her face. She looked like a lotus flower in blossom. Her smile looked so pure and innocent, it could charm any man who saw.

Po Jun, who was standing next to them, had a sparkle in his eyes while looking at Lin Feng on the fighting stage. He thought: “No wonder he was able to react so quickly against me and with such a terrifying strength.... He was this powerful.”

Inside the Life and Death Arena, Yu Hao’s face was turning deathly pale. His face had become so pale and cold that he already

looked like a corpse.

“Even with your sword spirit you don’t understand the basic principles of wielding a sword.”

Lin Feng had destroyed his honor and dignity. He had no choice but to agree with his statement and he was not the only one. Everybody in the crowd had agreed. Yu Hao didn’t understand basic sword principles. Compared with Lin Feng, he looked like a child holding a toy sword.

Who was it that said, only those who had a Sword Spirit could become amazing sword masters?

Every single trace of sword Qi emerging from Yu Hao’s body was vanishing as fast as it had appeared. It was crumbling and disintegrating each time he tried to release it. Controlling forces like he did, Lin Feng wasn’t consuming much energy and the sword force was growing extremely powerful.

“I give up. You can become an elite disciple.”

Yu Hao had been struggling with his pride but had finally said those words. He just had the feeling that he had been truly humiliated and that the entire crowd was laughing at him for thinking he was so powerful.

“Give up?”

Lin Feng was smiling coldly. Could he really be let off so easily?

When Yu Hao thought his victory was certain and he would easily overpower Lin Feng, he had wanted to cripple Lin Feng's cultivation. He wanted to break his arms and leave him half dead. It was impossible for him to be crueler than that.

At the moment when Yu Hao found out that he couldn't compete with Lin Feng, he thought that one sentence was going to be enough to purify the hatred between them. Was that how things really worked?

Well Lin Feng didn't agree.

"Do I need to accept?" said Lin Feng making fun of his actions. Lin Feng continued moving forwards and the sword force became even more powerful. It was oppressing Yu Hao's body so much that he could no longer breathe.

"I said I give up! What do you want me to do?"

Yu Hao's face changed. Lin Feng didn't stop moving closer. How terrifying.

"What do I want? That is very simple. I want you to do to yourself what you had said you would do to me." said Lin Feng with an ice cold smile on his face. Yu Hao was shaking from head to toe. Lin Feng wanted him to cripple his own cultivation and break his own arms. This was a death sentence; he wanted him to

commit suicide.

“This is the Elite Disciple Exam of the Yun Hai Sect, how dare you?” shouted Yu Hao.

“You may not dare to kill me, but shall we see if I dare to kill you.”

Lin Feng was moving closer while replying to Yu Hao. His sword slightly shook. A terrifyingly strong sword Qi invaded the entire atmosphere and shot towards Yu Hao while piercing through the air.

A deadly sword which existed solely to take the life of others. In the blink of an eye, Yu Hao's blood sprayed everywhere. His body collapsed lifelessly on the stage. His eyes were still wide open as if he was shocked at his own death. It looked like he couldn't believe that Lin Feng had actually dared to kill him.

“Phewww.....” It seemed like the atmosphere had become tense. The entire crowd was holding their breath in shock. The arena had become so quiet that they could almost hear each other's heartbeat.

Lin Feng had set a new record in the entire history of the Yun Hai Sect: he had challenged and defeated two Elite Disciples at the same time. He had then ruthlessly killed one of them in front of the entire sect.

Lin Feng had violated the rules of the Yun Hai Sect in the presence of every disciple, every elder and even the Patriarch of the Sect Nan Gong Ling. He had killed his opponent during the Elite Disciple Exam.

“Audacious!”

An extremely loud shout spread throughout the area. It sounded like it was coming from above. The entire crowd was surprised and had the feeling they had been awoken from a dream as they could barely come to grips with what had just happened.

“In the presence of every member of the Yun Hai Sect. You really have no respect for the rules and no respect for the Patriarch either. You are guilty of crimes for which even death cannot atone.”

There was a loud shout. It sounded like that person really wanted to kill Lin Feng on the spot.

The disciples in the crowd raised their heads and saw Mo Xie. Some people didn't understand what was going on but when they saw Mo Xie, it had become clear. Mo Xie and Lin Feng were enemies and Mo Xie wanted to take advantage of the fact that Lin Feng was still weak. He could not let that young disciple become someone important and grow stronger than himself, if he did then he would surely be killed. Therefore, he directly accused him of various crimes and then said that he had to die for his grave crimes.

Lin Feng raised his head and saw Mo Xie. He just glanced at him for a second and then ignored him.

He had joined the Elite Disciple Exam, stepped on the highest fighting stage and had amazed the entire crowd. He had challenged two elite disciples at the same time. He had use sword force and had killed Yu Hao on the spot.

He had done all of this for Mo Xie!

Lin Feng had willingly given Mo Xie an opportunity to find excuses to kill him. He had hoped that Mo Xie would use these excuses to confront him. It was clear to Lin Feng that if he didn't do it himself, Mo Xie would continue to plot against him. Lin Feng had just delivered himself to Mo Xie with a neat ribbon. This was all part of his plan.

When Mo Xie saw that Lin Feng was ignoring him, he became so furious that he was shaking from head to toe in anger. However in his heart he was smiling coldly. He shouted: "Everybody, arrest this traitor and if he tries to resist, kill him on the spot."

When the crowd heard Mo Xie's words they were disappointed. He was really beyond shameless. That elder's behavior was really impudent and cruel. It was clear that he was using his power in the sect to settle personal grudges.

"Bastard!" cursed Han Man. Everybody had heard him. Yu Hao wanted to cripple Lin Feng's cultivation then break his arms and leave Lin Feng half dead. Was anything that Lin Feng had done,

unjustified?

Jing Yun's face also turned livid. She was so scared for Lin Feng's safety.

“Pfff, that Elder is really shameless, what a disgrace!” cursed Liu Fei. Mo Xie had already used this trick once yet was he going to give it another try?

A few silhouettes flashed through the air towards the fighting stage ready to catch Lin Feng.

“Wait! Wait!” shouted a voice which made the silhouettes, who were heading towards Lin Feng, immediately stop. The one who had stopped them was Nan Gong Ling.

Everybody turned around and looked at Nan Gong Ling. They were all curious to see how Nan Gong Ling was going to handle the situation. Was he going to punish Lin Feng?

“Patriarch, that young disciple is presumptuous and arrogant. You don't exist in his eyes. You must punish him. It will be a warning for others as well.”

Mo Xie had come next to Nan Gong Ling and was slightly bowing, showing him respect with the intention to persuade him. He also quickly glanced at the people standing next to Nan Gong Ling.

“Elder Mo Xie is right. That ordinary disciple is too aggressive.

He does not give the sect any respect. He will ruthlessly kill all his fellow disciples. We must kill him.”

“Patriarch, his punishment should be death, we should kill him.”

A few elders were supporting Mo Xie. Mo Cang Lan had served the Sect for a longer period than Nan Gong Ling. In the Yun Hai Sect, all these elders wanted to give him face so they would obviously jump at the chance to support his son, Mo Xie.

Nan Gong Ling raised his head. He looked at Mo Xie and all the elders who were getting involved. He then said indifferently: “Have you finished talking yet?”

All the elders were stupefied. They didn’t know what Nan Gong Ling meant by those words.

“Mo Xie, are you the Patriarch of this sect? Or is it me, Nan Gong Ling, who is the current Patriarch of this Sect?”

He said that while paying no heed to anyone else but Mo Xie.

Mo Xie was speechless. He then hastily replied: “You, of course. You are the Patriarch. I wouldn’t dare...”

He was then interrupted again.

“What about all of you, am I the Patriarch of this Sect or is Mo

Xie the Patriarch?” asked Nan Gong Ling to the elders who were supporting Mo Xie.

“You, of course.” replied the elders feeling a slight chill run down their spines. Nan Gong Ling was a moderate person and never lost his temper. He had never talked to them in that way, but it was clear at this moment that he was angry.

“Oh...” said Nan Gong Ling while nodding: “Then I would like to ask you; who is in charge of the Elite Disciple Exam?”

“The Patriarch of course!” replied Mo Xie and the others elders in unison. Their backs were soaked with a cold sweat. They had really picked the wrong time to support Mo Xie.

“So you all know... Since you all know then I would like to ask you, Mo Xie, you say that in this young disciples eyes the sect is of no importance, then what about you? In my presence, in the presence of every member of the sect you are shouting loudly and trying to act like the Patriarch... and you even want to handle things of which I am responsible. How imposing! Elder Mo Xie, you tell me, do you even attach any importance to me or the Sect?”

Nan Gong Ling’s voice dropped in volume. It seemed like there was a cold breeze blowing in the air over the crowd. Mo Xie and the other elders felt that they were in a very bad position.

The elders who had been supporting Mo Xie a moment before didn’t say anything which was their only option at this point.

Mo Xie thought that because his father was Mo Cang Lan that he could usurp all powers of the sect for himself. Mo Xie's behavior and words had finally made Nan Gong Ling furious.

“CRACK!”

A loud noise pierced the silent atmosphere of the arena. The chair on which Nan Gong Ling sat had shattered under the pressure.

“Speak! I want to ask all of you elders, do you still see me, Nan Gong Ling, as the Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect and am I of any importance in your eyes?”

Nan Gong Ling stood up and shouted coldly at the elders. He had gone completely insane with anger. The elders felt their hearts drop and fear spread throughout their bodies. What role did they play in the Sect anyway? Could they compare with the patriarch?

Everybody was looking at Nan Gong Ling who was furious. His eyes looked like he was calm which made it even more terrifying. His temperament was actually very good and he was never usually angry. What could have caused him to act in such a way? He had suddenly lost temper... and on top of that it was because of Mo Xie.

Chapter 70: Lin Feng's State of Mind

Mo Xie had never been as shocked and scared as he had been when he saw Nan Gong Ling growing furious. He had to think carefully about what his next words would be. He bowed respectfully then said: "Patriarch, Mo Xie admits his mistake."

Mo Xie and Mo Cang Lan had power in the Yun Hai Sect but Nan Gong Ling was the Patriarch. Nan Gong Ling had become furious at Mo Xie's actions. Mo Xie had no choice but to admit his mistake.

"Maybe I am too aggressive and too arrogant... Maybe I've been disrespectful to the Patriarch..." said Mo Xie while insulting himself and acting humble.

When Nan Gong Ling saw that Mo Xie acknowledged his mistakes, he started to calm down. He coldly glanced at Mo Xie and said: "Since you acknowledge your mistake, let's forget about it this time. If this happens again then there will be no more chances."

"Regarding the disciple on stage, Yu Hao was the first to provoke him and state his intent. He threatened that he would cripple the cultivation of this young disciple then planned to break his arms. He showed no intention of having any mercy and only gave the impression of cruelty. This was then returned onto him."

"But Patriarch...." Mo Xie wanted to speak again. He hadn't understood the reason why Nan Gong Ling was furious after all.

“Huh?” Nan Gong Ling glanced at him furiously. Mo Xie swallowed his previous thoughts and forced himself to say: “Patriarch, you are wise and brilliant.”

Nan Gong Ling groaned, he didn't really care about what Mo Xie had to say. He then looked at Lin Feng and said: “What's your name?”

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at Nan Gong Ling. He looked incredibly calm at this moment.

“Lin Feng.”

“Lin Feng, good job, you are now an elite disciple of the Yun Hai Sect.” declared Nan Gong Ling. Nan Gong Ling was really impressed by Lin Feng's abilities and actions. He personally asked Lin Feng his name and personally gave him the status of an elite disciple. Many others would never have that privilege. The other disciples would need to check the results with the elder in charge of the Elite Disciple exam.

Lin Feng was smiling from ear to ear. His smile seemed to be filled with a strange feeling which wasn't gratitude. His smile contained the feeling of accomplishment.

“Only those who are strong enough can demand respect.”

Nan Gong Ling hadn't forgotten that Lin Feng had once said words in that respect. At that moment, Lin Feng had showed that

he held an extremely strong power and everyone had witnessed it. The question was as to how Nan Gong Ling was going to answer Lin Feng's actions. He had given Lin Feng the answer he had wanted.

Mo Xie had tried to hand Lin Feng over to Lin Qian and Chu Zhan Peng. He hadn't gotten involved in the incident at that time. He had thought that an ordinary disciple wasn't worth creating a dispute with an elder. So he had just watched from the sidelines.

But this time was different, Mo Xie had wanted to kill Lin Feng again and Nan Gong Ling had stopped him. It was only because Lin Feng had shown that he was truly a genius and proved it by returning with such an incredible increase in power. Nan Gong Ling now knew about the Precipice of Zhangu so he was always going to value Lin Feng. Protector Bei had told him about it when he had wanted to kill Mo Xie. Mo Xie had been humiliated but Nan Gong Ling had actually helped him in a way. Did Mo Xie really want to continue making this talented young disciple his enemy?

But... was that enough for Lin Feng?

Obviously it wasn't. Lin Feng was not satisfied at all. Would he really let someone who had made so many attempts on his life get away with only a slap in the face?

When the ferocious beasts had attacked the sect, Mo Xie simply handed Lin Feng over to them without hesitation. Lin Feng didn't believe that Nan Gong Ling was not aware of these actions. Nan Gong Ling may have been able to overlook these incidents, but could the same be said about Lin Feng?

Just a moment ago while in the presence of everyone, Mo Xie had wanted to kill Lin Feng again and Nan Gong Ling had seen it with his own eyes.

Had Nan Gong Ling punished Mo Xie? Everyone had the impression that he had but in Lin Feng's eyes, he had just humiliated Mo Xie. Was Nan Gong Ling just trying to make Lin Feng feel grateful for this minor kindness and make him serve the sect?

Lin Feng had never been a servile person. This was his second life and he had almost died at the hands of Mo Xie too many times. Were Nan Gong Ling's words enough? They were too far from being enough. An elder was an elder and an ordinary disciple was just an ordinary disciple but because Lin Feng had proved to everyone that he was a genius, he was now an elite disciple.

"There is only one solution to this problem. If Mo Xie remains in this sect then I will make my own path, however if he is no longer within the sect then I will stay."

Thought Lin Feng. He knew that Nan Gong Ling and the Yun Hai Sect had to choose one person. If they chose him then he would dedicate his life to the Yun Hai Sect. If they chose Mo Xie then not only would he leave the Sect but he would return one day to take his revenge... because of the hatred that he held for Mo Xie there was no longer a peaceful solution. If the Yun Hai Sect was unable to choose him over Mo Xie. Then he had no other choice but leave the sect.

Lin Feng didn't say what he was thinking. He had hoped that Nan Gong Ling would choose him when the time came. This was only the beginning of the grudge between them. During the Elite Disciple Exam, Lin Feng had already planned how to take care of Mo Xie.

Lin Feng stepped down from the fighting stage and looked determined. Each of his steps were filled with firm determination.

Nan Gong Ling was observing Lin Feng's eyes and thought that he looked very mysterious. It was not surprising that this young disciple would have some secrets as many exceptional talents did.

"How strong and mysterious."

"If I was that strong, I would act the same way that he does"

"Even if there were ten disciples who would join me to fight against him, we wouldn't be able to win."

"Lin Feng... I'll remember that name."

"Why would you remember his name? He wouldn't even recognize you. He's on a completely different level to us. We are just ordinary disciples. Even the highest ranked Chen Chen is nothing in comparison with him."

"None of the ordinary disciples are as strong as him. Lin Feng and Chen Chen are worlds apart."

Two disciples were talking loudly amongst themselves but didn't know that not far away was someone who looked furious. That person was precisely Chen Chen who was the top ranked ordinary disciple. He was the one who had provoked Lin Feng in the Xing Chen Pavilion and who had been humiliated by Lin Feng.

“I'm the best amongst all the ordinary disciples.”

Chen Chen was thinking about the words he had said to Lin Feng in the Xing Chen Pavilion. Chen Chen had nowhere to hide from the shame he felt from saying those words to Lin Feng. Even though these two disciples were harsh with their words, it was the truth. Chen Chen was nothing in comparison with Lin Feng.

Yu Hao was an elite disciple with a sword spirit and he had been killed in a single strike.

“Maybe he has forgotten about me completely.” thought Chen Chen feeling hopeless while trying to understand his situation. He was terrified that Lin Feng would seek him out and kill him.

Lin Feng didn't attach any importance to Chen Chen and had actually forgotten about him. An ordinary disciple who kept repeating that he was the best amongst all the ordinary disciples probably had limited mental abilities.

“You... you're so much stronger than me that it's actually incredible!” said Han Man who saw Lin Feng. Why was Han Man always so enthusiastic?

“Lin Feng you are really incredible.” said Jing Yun impressed. She was wondering how Lin Feng practiced and hoped she would get the chance to join him.

The disciples surrounding them envied that little group of friends. Han Man and the others were all ordinary disciples but they were very close friends with Lin Feng. They were probably going to mutually benefit from Lin Feng’s rise in status. Han Man and the others also felt happy to have such a friend. They were thinking that it was too bad that they hadn’t met him sooner!

Lin Feng shrugged and asked Han Man while smiling: “When are you getting onto the fighting stage?”

“Hehe, good thing that there is nobody on the fighting stage because of your display. It seems like now it’s my turn.” said Han Man while smiling. He then moved towards the Life and Death Arena.

Because Lin Feng had just created a huge uproar when he unleashed his power, Han Man felt less pressure to go onto the stage. Everybody was waiting to see what Han Man would do once he got onto the stage.

The thing which shocked the crowd even more was that Han Man, like Lin Feng had no clue how to be subtle. He surprisingly stepped onto the highest fighting stage. Everyone, including Lin Feng, was shocked. What a brave guy.....

“I did not really think about these things beforehand. Does anyone of the first Ling Qi layer want to come and fight me?”

Han Man was standing on the fighting stage as he asked the crowd. His manner of speaking sounded so rude that everybody was speechless. He was either completely clueless or he was indeed another genius!!

Lin Feng had challenged two elite disciples at the same time but he knew what he was doing and he had chosen his own opponents. Han Man was the complete opposite of Lin Feng, He didn't know any elite disciples names and was challenging anyone who wished to fight against him. This was the first time that such a thing had happened in the whole of the sects thousand year history.

Lin Feng was speechless as he stared shocked at Han Man. His jaw had hit the floor and he was stupefied by Han Man's actions.

“Hee Heee” Jing Yun couldn't help but giggle. That big goofball was hopeless.

The entire arena was completely silent for a while until an elite disciple stepped onto the fighting stage and said: “Alright, I'll fight against you.”

“Thank you, my name is Han Man.”

“I'm Wang Han.”

“I like people who are quick to accept a challenge. Let’s fight.” said Han Man while laughing loudly.

An extremely strong Qi emerged from the earth beneath his feet. In the blink of an eye Han Man’s body had transformed and looked like it was made completely from compact earth. In the Life and Death Arena at this moment, he was one with Mother Earth and Mother Earth was one with him. He had completely fused with the earth and become a symbiotic force.

“BOOOOOM!!!”

Han Man took a step forward and the entire arena began to shake under his feet. It sounded like a thousand foot giant was walking and each of his steps made the ground tremble. The disciples who were watching from the crowd felt their hearts begin to race, some with excitement and others with fear. An incredible force suddenly crashed onto Wang Han’s body and it felt like he was being crushed.

“He has mastered his use of force too!” thought Nan Gong Ling whose eyes were sparkling with delight. There were no words to describe his shock and joy. It wasn’t surprising that Lin Feng could use forces but that unknown ordinary disciple could use forces as well. Even though he had to rely on his spirit and clearly didn’t understand forces to the same extent as Lin Feng, he could use and control them with an extraordinary strength. He could be regarded as another genius within the sect.

“Haha, it’s incredible. It’s fantastic. The Yun Hai Sect hasn’t seen such strong young disciples for many years and now two shocking

geniuses have appeared at the same time.”

Nan Gong Ling felt an incredible surge of joy in his heart. This was without a doubt his best Elite Disciple Exam. The sect would actually rise to new heights within his generation.

Chapter 71: Liu Fei's strange behavior

In the Xue Yue Country there were a great number of sects and clans fighting for supremacy. Achieving power was not an easy thing to do as the competition was fierce.

The Imperial Clan was the strongest clan that existed in the whole Xue Yue Country. They were so powerful that nobody dared to challenge their authority. There was no room to question the authority of the Imperial Clan.

Apart from the Imperial Clan there are also some other extremely powerful clans in the Imperial City. There were the Yue Clan of the Imperial City, the Yu Clan and the Wan Shou Men Clan.

Outside of the Imperial City there were also the extremely strong sects which held a great deal of power. The Yun Hai Sect and the Hao Yue Sect were both strong sects which were outside of the imperial city's borders. There was also the Luo Xia Sect as well as the Ice and Snow Mountain Village.

There are eight high officials of the Xue Yue Country who represent the strongest and the most gifted young cultivators within the country. Everyone who is within those eight officials is incredibly strong and has advanced to a high level of cultivation. The future of the country was held by these eight young cultivators. The Yun Hai Sect was a great power, but it did not have anyone who qualified for a position as one of the eight high officials.

Even though a high official was extremely powerful and had an incredibly high status, it wasn't enough to affect the foundation of a sect. However in ten or twenty years that may not be the case. The foundation may be strong, but over time it can be shaken.

Nan Gong Ling clearly understood how things worked with the politics of the country. Even if there was no sign of a sect declining in power, what about its future prospects? What if there were no suitable successors to take the place of patriarch? What if the general power of the sect members declined? If these events happened over an extended period of time then the end of the sect was inevitable. The effects would not show in the short term, however in the long term it was clear that the sect would fade from existence.

This was the case of the Yun Hai Sect at the moment. The general level of strength that the young disciples of the Yun Hai Sect possessed was clearly in decline. Over the years they were attracting less and less talented individuals. How could Nan Gong Ling not be worried in such circumstances? This was something which troubled him for every second of every day.

The fact that Lin Feng and Han Man stood before him and unleashed such spectacular talent, he has once again regained hope. He could feel that the fate of the Yun Hai Sect was changing and it could possibly have a prosperous future.

Lin Feng had incredible fighting power and his talent was truly unfathomable, he was a genius. With more time and dedication to practice, he could become one of the eight high officials. This would create a bright new future for the Yun Hai Sect, with him

they would rise in power once again.

The Yun Hai Sect was going through a period of prosperity during these peaceful times however if a conflict came about then they would be in a very dangerous position. The sect was currently in decline and its strength paled to that of the past generations.

“I hope that they can both climb to the top of the hierarchy within the Yun Hai Sect.” thought Nan Gong Ling while looking at Han Man on the fighting stage. In the Imperial City, the construction of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue had already started and he now had these talent to nurture, wasn't this a good omen?

“BOOOM!”

Han Man took another step. In the Life and Death Arena there were waves of yellow sand which were surrounding and covering Wang Han, he was struggling to breathe under such immense pressure. The Qi which was being released was so powerful that Wang Han felt like he was being buried alive where he stood.

“You win. Congratulations on joining the elite disciples.” Said Wang Han

Wang Han suddenly was able to breathe again. His body felt light and the pressure which was burying him had completely vanished. His eyes were half closed and voice was filled with disappointment in his lack of strength. He had been defeated. He had been humiliated but he had also gained valuable insight thanks to the battle with Han Man.

“Haha, brother, don’t be so disappointed. I just exploited the fact that my spirit is very powerful.” said Han Man while the Qi around his body was slowly disappearing. Han Man looked and sounded honest. It was very hard to find a grudge against such a simple person. He could instantly become friendly with anyone.

“Thank you.” said Wang Han while nodding at Han Man. He turned around and left the fighting stage. The final result was his defeat. That was a humiliation for any elite disciple and he did not want to stay in the spotlight any longer.

Han Man quickly rushed back to Lin Feng and while looking incredibly happy with himself he said: “How was it? I earned everyone’s respect right?”

“Not bad.” said Lin Feng while smiling and nodding. Han Man had a good grasp of forces which he could control with the help of his spirit. Against somebody of the same level, Han Man clearly had a huge advantage in power and understanding. It would be very hard to find a cultivator on his level which could fight equally with him. Only those who possessed incredible talent would have a chance to defeat him.

Lin Feng and the others stayed at the stormy gorge and continued to watch the other battles. There was always the chance for a cultivator to gain insight from watching a battle. There is not always such a great opportunity to watch so many battles at once.

“I would like to challenge Tu Fu today. He is extremely strong. I

hope that with my power I will be able to defeat him and join the ranks of core disciples.”

Han Man had eyes filled with awe at the end of the first round and he wasn't the only one. Many disciples were amazed at the battles they had the opportunity to watch. Tu Fu's battle was too amazing. Tu Fu was much too powerful, He had only used one punch which made even the heavens shake and the fight was already over.

“Lin Feng do you have anyone that you would like to defeat within the core disciples?” asked Han Man.

“Me?” asked Lin Feng surprised. He then shook his head while smiling and said: “I haven't thought that far ahead yet.”

Lin Feng really hadn't thought that far ahead. A great majority of the ordinary disciples of the Yun Hai Sect were only at the Qi layer. If they wanted to become elite disciples then they would at least need to have broken through to the Ling Qi layer.

The first Ling Qi layer was the minimum requirement for elite disciples. The elite disciples who had broken through to the third Ling Qi layer were exceptionally strong individuals. Those who had broken through to the fourth Ling Qi layer would have the qualifications to join the core disciples.

However the core disciples of the fourth Ling Qi layer were considered weak compared to the other core disciple. Those who joined the core disciples also had had to go through the same

process of defeating one of the current core disciples. However who were the core disciples? They were the foundation of the sect and defeating even the weakest of them was not an easy task.

Every year, many disciples tried to advance during the Elite Disciple Exam. There was only a single chance for a disciple every year. This exam was the only chance they had to move to a new disciple ranking.

There were many elite disciples between the first and the fourth Ling Qi layer. Only the ones with incredible talent or battle power could join the core disciples.

Lin Feng had three spirits thanks to all the suffering he had been put through. He was thinking about difference between elite disciples and core disciples. Even if he joined core disciples, so what? Mo Xie was still an elder and held a huge advantage over him.

The first round of the Elite Disciple Exam came to end and there were many lively discussions happening within the crowd. It was hard for many of the disciples to hold their excitement for the second round which would be in three days time.

All the elite disciples and the core disciples would use all of their power in the upcoming battles as it would decide their rankings within the sect. Holding the highest ranking within the disciples was an honor for any disciple.

Lin Feng didn't want to wait around any longer. He immediately

headed towards the practice area for elite disciples. He was now an elite disciple. He needed to get his new disciple robes as well as a certificate of entry into the elite disciples. These were of symbolic of the status a person held within the sect.

“Lin Feng.”

At that moment, Lin Feng heard a voice coming from behind which made him stop. He turned around and saw such a beauty running towards him.

“What’s wrong?” asked Lin Feng to Liu Fei who was walking towards him. He was a bit surprised to see her.

“Can I talk to you in private?”

Liu Fei looked embarrassed when she looked at Han Man and the others.

Talk in private...

Lin Feng was really puzzled. What could Liu Fei have to tell him that required to talk in private?

Even though Lin Feng’s opinion of Liu Fei had completely changed since she had tried to protect him against Mo Xie, his opinion had not changed to such an extent. Were they close enough that they could talk in private?

“Haha of course there would be no problem. Lin Feng, we have an important matter to handle now. We will head off first and you can join us later.”

Lin Feng hadn't said anything yet but Han Man had already replied for him. He also hastily pulled Po Jun and Jing Yun away from the couple. Lin Feng was speechless. Since when had Han Man become so cunning?

They had an important matter? What did he mean? Going to receive the elite disciple certificate and a new set of robes?

Liu Fei was already standing next to Lin Feng and had become very embarrassed. She quickly said: “Let's move to somewhere private where we can talk.”

Lin Feng slightly nodded. He was really curious to know what Liu Fei could have to tell him.

“Lin Feng, do you remember the first time we met?”

“I remember. You almost killed me for no reason on that day.” said Lin Feng. That girl's strength was incredible and there was something hidden deep within her. However she was really too rash and viscous.

“If you hadn't tried to peep on me and do perverted things then would have I tried to kill you?” said Liu Fei who was suddenly in a

bad mood.

“I never peeped on you or had any perverted intentions.” replied Lin Feng who was also growing angry at Liu Fei. On that day, when he had gone into the mountains it had really been a coincidence. How could she categorically state that Lin Feng was a pervert?

“You.....” Liu Fei saw that Lin Feng wasn’t going to admit it. That bastard was really evil.

Lin Feng actually thought that Liu Fei was really beautiful but he did not even know she was there, that was a fact. She really was one of the most beautiful girls in the sect though so it was understandable that many people wanted to peep on her.

“Alright, I admit that I was wrong, I misunderstood you. I would like to apologize.”

Liu Fei was gnashing her teeth and had forced the words out from her mouth. If it was not for her father, she would never have come to Lin Feng.

“Ehhh...” Lin Feng couldn’t understand Liu Fei. He stared blankly at her while trying to understand what had just happened.

“What are you looking at?” asked Liu Fei.

Lin Feng was still staring at her. She was embarrassed and she was blushing which had caught Lin Feng by surprise. Could it be...

“Did you.....” Lin Feng was strangely looking at Liu Fei. He was gazing deeply into her beautiful eyes.

“Did you..... fall for me?” Lin Feng had finally managed to say what had come into his mind. He could not stop all of the thoughts that were rushing through his head. Liu Fei was incredibly strange and tomboyish, but she was beautiful and had an interest in Lin Feng. Lin Feng had never had a girlfriend so he couldn't help but feel very embarrassed at his current situation.

Liu Fei was stunned. She had finally lost her temper and shouted: “You Bastard!”

Chapter 72: Provocation

Lin Feng simply shrugged and smiled. He couldn't be blamed for thinking that way because Liu Fei was acting so strangely.

Liu Fei was looking at Lin Feng and her heart was pounding in her chest. She couldn't help but gnash her teeth. She had never been so furious but she had to control herself.

“There is something I would like to discuss with you.”

Said Liu Fei, she then fell dead silent. Her face had turned red and she tried to open her mouth but there were no words coming out.

“What do you want to talk about?” asked Lin Feng surprised.

“Do you know who the strongest people are in the Xue Yue Country?” asked Liu Fei.

“Of course I know, it's the Imperial Clan.” Lin Feng replied immediately. Lin Feng knew that the Imperial Clan were the strongest and there was not a person who would dare contest that. This is why they so easily ruled over the country. Only the strongest person could become Emperor and only with power could they control the country. This was a fact.

Liu Fei was surprised. She didn't know that Lin Feng was so knowledgeable about the subject. He had responded so quickly

without even taking time to think.

“That’s right. In the Xue Yue Country the Imperial Clan is the strongest. Even though there are extremely strong clans and sects within the country like the Yun Hai Sect, there is not a single power that would dare to face against the imperial clan.” Liu Fei explained. “However, now the Emperor has requested some of the outstanding disciples of the Xue Yue Country to help develop the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. They will receive the best cultivation resources available and the best teachers will be available to them. They will develop into incredible powers for the country and they will become leaders in the future.”

At that moment, Liu Fei stopped talking and looked at Lin Feng’s reaction.

Lin Feng looked at Liu Fei while smiling and ask: “What does that have to do with me?”

Liu Fei looked at Lin Feng with anger building up inside her. She was cursing at him under her breath. He was extremely smart and she didn’t believe for even a second that he didn’t understand what she wanted.

“So you’re not interested in going there? Are you not interested in getting the best profound pills, the best weapons, the best martial skills and agility techniques?” said Liu Fei while trying to convince him.

Lin Feng had understood what Liu Fei meant. She was being very

obvious with her intentions. However what he was trying to figure out was Liu Fei and exactly what was in it for her. What was her relation with the Imperial Clan and why would she need to come and recruit on their behalf?

When he thought of the day when he had seen Liu Fei with the Chi Xue armored horses, he believed even more than Liu Fei held an extraordinary status within the Imperial City.

Liu Fei saw Ling Feng's eyes were sparkling with intrigue, she then smiled and said: "So, how does it sound? Are you excited?"

Lin Feng scratched his head while looking at Liu Fei and said with a giggle: "Are there any girls as beautiful as you there?"

"....."

When Lin Feng saw that Liu Fei was blushing, he laughed and started walking away.

"Even though the Imperial Clan is extremely strong, there are also other clans who are very ambitious. The Imperial Clan wants them to hand over their best disciples and go to the Holy Courtyard... Do you really believe that it will be so simple?"

After these words left Lin Feng's mouth it caused Liu Fei to stare at him with a stunned expression. He really was much smarter than she had initially imagined. No wonder he had managed to advance his strength in such a short period of time. He was a real

genius. But this bastard was making her lose face.

Liu Fei was in a bad mood because of what Lin Feng had said. If she had the chance then she would definitely defeat that bastard and make him regret everything. That would be her revenge for constantly getting ridiculed by him. She had started following him as he left.

.....

Nine Frost Mountain was the name of the place where the elite disciples lived.

In the Nine Frost Mountain, there was a gigantic cave which was popular with the elite disciples because of a certain cliff.

At the top of the precipice, engraved in the stone were a list of names. Those names were the names of the strongest elite disciples. There were eighty names in total which were carved into the stone.

What intrigued people the most is that it looked like a chess board. Each of the eighty names was like a chess piece which could be moved across the board. Some names would be eliminated, while other insignificant pieces would cross the board and transform into powerful pieces.

All of the elite disciples within the sect hoped that their name could be engraved on that board someday. It would mean that they

had finally reached the top and would be respected by all.

At that moment, Tu Fu's name which was at the top of the list was removed. They all understood what was happening. He was one of the first people to become a core disciple and he had even defending his right to be a core disciple.

Then, a new name replaced Tu Fu's name on the list of the elite disciples.

“Wen Ren Yan.”

His name had appeared there suddenly like a comet which had crashed through to the top position. He had only needed a year and he was already at the top of the elite disciple rankings. Everybody knew of his strength. He had the power to join the core disciples but he decided to stay as an elite disciple. Everybody knew the reason why he had done such a thing. He did not want to join the core disciples because he was too arrogant and refused to be lowly ranked amongst the core disciples. He would rather rule over the elite disciples than be kicked around by the core disciples.

Wen Ren Yan was sixteen years old. There were many young disciples in the Yun Hai Sect who were exceptionally talented. He had never been an ordinary disciple because he had directly joined as an elite disciple. Once he joined the elite disciples he had been fighting intensively and his name had constantly been rising up in the rankings. A year had passed and his name was already carved into the top stone on the board.

Many people trusted Wen Ren Yan and believed in his power. He had achieved a great deal of accomplishments in the year he spent fighting his way to the top. He could even be compared to people like Ling Hu He Shan or Fu Tu.

Outside of the cave a group of people had arrived. All of the disciples there were looking at this group with respect filling their eyes.

“Wen Ren Yan has arrived.”

Amongst the group was a young man wearing a white Chang Pao. He looked incredibly arrogant yet powerful. He had deep blue eyes and had a strangely cold looking face. This young man was Wen Ren Yan.

“Wen Ren, congratulations!” said a disciple standing next to him while smiling.

“The top ranking amongst the elite disciples... that’s all I have achieved.” replied Wen Ren Yan expressionless. He glanced at his name on the stone and said: “Chen Xing, considering your current strength, you should also have your name carved onto that ranking list.”

“Yes, I will do my best.” said Chen Xing while nodding. Chen Xing was the elite disciple that had been defeated by Lin Qian in front of everybody when she came to the sect. Since then, Chen Xing had been practicing harder than he had ever practiced before. He wasn’t far from breaking through to the second Ling Qi layer.

He was also considered a young genius. He was quite respected amongst the elite disciples. Even Wen Ren Yan respected him and his determination.

“Hehe.” Wen Ren Yan smiled. Immediately after, he glanced at the crowd. His blues were sparkling with a strange light.

“From today, I declare that Liu Fei is officially mine. If anyone tries to flirt with her then do not blame me for being ruthless.”

Everybody sighed when they heard what Wen Ren Yan had said. He had been interested in Liu Fei for a while and now that he was the strongest within the elite disciples, he had wanted to prevent others from approaching Liu Fei.

Wen Ren Yan was actually insane to say such a thing because everybody knew that he had only refused to join the core disciples because he wanted to remain as the top elite disciple. However there were many strong core disciples who were interested in Liu Fei. In Liu Fei’s eyes, Wen Ren Yan didn’t even exist.

The entire crowd was speechless when suddenly a loud voice was heard within the crowd.

“How can you say that Liu Fei is yours when what you say is of such little importance? We want to hear Liu Fei say it herself.” Han Man knew that Lin Feng and Liu Fei were together at that moment. He got angry when he heard what Wen Ren Yan had so boldly declared.

“Huh?” everybody was surprised.

“Who was that audacious guy who dares provoke Wen Ren Yan? Does he want to die?”

The crowd was whispering amongst themselves. Not only was Wen Ren Yan extremely strong but he was also respected within the Yun Hai Sect. Even some of the core disciples didn't dare provoke him.

“Very good.” said Wen Ren Yan while turning around. His blue eyes revealed his murderous intention. Immediately an image of a poisonous snake shot from his hand.

“BOOOM!”

Han Man's body was thrown against the wall of the cliff. Blood was spilling out of his mouth. His eyes had an insolent expression as if he wasn't going to obey.

“If you say another word, I'll kill you where you stand.”

Wen Ren Yan sounded calm and serene but also firm.

“Piss off.” Han Man said while spitting out blood. He was staring coldly at Wen Ren Yan and said: “Don't think that you're strong because you needed one year to reach the top of the ranking. When my brother arrives he will wipe your name from the list in no time.”

“Huh? Who’s your brother then? Tell me.” Wen Ren Yan said as his words were filled with disdain.

“Lin Feng, Liu Fei’s boyfriend.”

Han Man had said this on purpose. After what happened during the Exam where Lin Feng had dared to kill an elite disciple in front of everyone including the elders, Han Man was convinced that no one would dare provoke Lin Feng so easily. He was also sure that Lin Feng would not need much time before he had surpassed Wen Ren Yan. Han Man was convinced that Lin Feng could defeat him in less than a year.

“Who’s Lin Feng?”

Wen Ren Yan said that indifferently. He hadn’t bothered to go to the Exam on that day, he knew that nobody would dare to challenge him because he was one of the strongest elite disciples.

“Someone who has just broke through to the Ling Qi layer but has already mastered forces. He is nothing compared to you.”

Chen Xing said full of disdain.

“Oh, is that really what you think?”

Suddenly a voice echoed through the silence as two figures

appeared in the distance.

Chapter 73: The Punishment

Suddenly, everybody gazed into the distance and tried to make out the figures of the people who were approaching.

The beautiful Liu Fei was approaching. But who was that young man that she was following?

What shocked everybody at that moment is that Liu Fei together with this young disciple and they had been alone together. This young man was actually Lin Feng. Many people had seen Lin Feng in the Life and Death Arena as he killed an elite disciple in cold blood and they made sure to remember his face. Many had made a mental note to not offend this young disciple in the future.

The voice which had interrupted them was actually Lin Feng's voice.

“Could it be that it was true and Lin Feng is actually Liu Fei's boyfriend?”

Everybody was thinking about the words of Han Man and they were paying close attention to Wen Ren Yan.

But Wen Ren Yan still had a calm look on his face as if he was not affected. His blues however were revealing his evil intentions. It was clear he would not let this matter rest.

“So, you are the new little elite disciple, Lin Feng?” said Wen Ren

Yan with a hint of disdain in his voice. He was talking down to Lin Feng and attempting to humiliate him.

What surprised him is that it seemed like Lin Feng had completely ignored his presence. He just glanced at him for a second and continued over to Han Man who was still in a bad condition.

“Are you alright?”

“I just have a small injury. Don’t worry about it.” said Han Man while smiling and now he was also ignoring Wen Ren Yan.

“Don’t start so many fights. I do not want to see you die.” said Lin Feng glaring at Han Man. This simple minded disciple was a trouble maker, he could not stop himself from causing trouble. A moment before, he had said that Liu Fei was Lin Feng’s girlfriend. Liu Fei would be furious after hearing such a thing.

“That guy is insane. He’s saying to everyone that Liu Fei belongs to him.” said Han Man sounding angry. Liu Fei was furious and quickly glanced at Wen Ren Yan.

At that moment, Wen Ren Yan was frowning. He could not believe that a disciple who had just broken through to the Ling Qi Layer could be as insane as to ignore him. Within the Yun Hai Sect nobody had ever dared to provoke him, not even the elders of the sect would ignore him when he spoke.

“Let me ask, have you been listening to what I have said?” Said Wen Ren Yan.

It suddenly seemed like the entire area was growing colder. Everybody was looking at Lin Feng. That guy was an incredible genius who was able to control sword force but he was far from being able to challenge Wen Ren Yan. It looked like Wen Ren Yan was going to have to teach him how large the world truly is.

“Let him continue to talk with himself. He has a big mouth so it is easy to ignore him when he speaks. It’s unfortunate that you can only ignore him, it would be better if he would stop talking.” said Lin Feng to the others while ignoring Wen Ren Yan. He continued talking to Han Man: “When he says that Liu Fei is his? So what? That is none of my business.”

“.....”

Han Man was staring at Lin Feng and was shocked speechless. Han Man was doing this out of loyalty for Lin Feng. He knew that they were secretly a couple and he was still trying to hide it.

“I... want... to.... ask.... you... something...”

Wen Ren Yan had said this sentence very slowly emphasizing each word with a voice filled with anger. A strong Qi was spreading through the air. In front of the whole crowd, Lin Feng was still ignoring him and causing him to lose face in front of such a large crowd.

“I heard you.” said Lin Feng turning around his head. He then looked at Wen Ren Yan and said: “You’re asking me if I’m Lin Feng, is that right?”

“Hmph, so you’re not deaf.” said Wen Ren Yan while smiling coldly.

“Since you ask me who I am, it means you don’t know me, right?”

Wen Ren Yan was staring at Lin Feng confused, he was asking such an obvious question. Did Lin Feng have a defect in his brain?

“Such nonsense.” Said Wen Ren Yan.

“Nonsense? Maybe. Since we do not know each other. Why should I waste my time speaking with you?” Said Lin Feng as he looked at Wen Ren Yan and added “What are you going to do about it?”

When he finished talking an immense Qi emerged and filled the atmosphere.

Madness!

Everybody was stunned. Lin Feng was actually insane enough to fight with Wen Ren Yan. That guy was really crazy! He was courting death!

Wen Ren Yan looked deathly pale. It was the first time that someone had dared to talk with him like that.

“Lin Feng, You are dreaming if you think you can fight against Wen Ren, you will die for sure. You shouldn’t have provoked Wen Ren.” said Chen Xing while staring at Lin Feng.

“Chen Xing, do you think you are a top ranked disciple? You obviously think that you’re a genius but not so long ago you were defeated by Lin Qian when she had just broken through to the Ling Qi Layer. Everybody watched how you lost so pitifully and yet you call yourself a genius? You are far from a genius in my eyes.”

Lin Feng said with a calm face as if he was talking normally but it had made Chen Xing furious. He had been badly humiliated by a nobody disciple.

“That guy really has a big mouth.” thought Liu Fei while looking at Lin Feng who had made both Wen Ren Yan and Chen Xing furious with his words. She was wondering why Lin Feng acted in the ways that he did.

“You are insulting me and attempting to bully me because I only recently reached the Ling Qi layer. Well let’s solve this problem in the Stormy Gorge in the Life And Death Arena. Do you dare?”

Stormy Gorge, Life and Death Arena, did he dare?!

Lin Feng was challenging Chen Xing to a battle in the Life and Death Arena where the rules were more relaxed. In the Arena they would forfeit the protection granted by the sect and could really lose their life.

A strong Qi was constantly emerging from Lin Feng's body and he sounded extremely confident. Chen Xing was stunned at such actions. Chen Xing was at the second Ling Qi layer and was so strong that he would soon have his name engraved onto the ranking list. But Lin Feng's words had stunned him. How could Lin Feng be so self confident and arrogant?

In the Life and Death Arena, did he dare?

He was trying to relax but his heart was pounding.

"How can you be so confident in challenging me? Is it because of your Sword force?" asked Chen Xing.

"Sword force is indeed extremely powerful. Yu Hao wasn't weak but he had been killed from a single strike. Even if Yu Hao had been stronger, the result would have still been the same."

"I cannot be sure that he used all of his strength during that fight. If he is much stronger than what he has already shown during the fight against Yu Hao, will I be able to fight against him?"

Chen Xing's thoughts were racing and he was considering every

possible situation. He had a weird expression on his face, he was straining his face and he looked like an idiot. He had already lost against Lin Qian in front of a large crowd. He could not afford to lose face again.

“So ridiculous... and you used to be the top ranked ordinary disciple? You think you’re important because you became an elite disciple with such little strength? You haven’t made any progress and you are still weak in cultivation and willpower. A strong cultivator is firm and persistent. A strong cultivator takes the path of cultivation seriously. On the path of cultivation, relying on other people’s success will never allow you to reach the top.”

Lin Feng saw how ugly Chen Xing’s face looked. The Qi surrounding Lin Feng’s body shot towards Chen Xing and started to apply pressure on his body. Lin Feng started walking slowly towards him. He was walking very slowly, one step after the other. Chen Xing was scared to death. He could barely breathe under the pressure of Lin Feng’s Qi and he could feel a deathly chill running down his spine.

“A strong cultivator is firm and persistent... is strong... and takes the path of Cultivation seriously.” these words were resonating in Chen Xing’s head. He used to work harder than anyone else to cultivate and everybody used to think he was a genius because of that. Then when he started to associate with Wen Ren Yan, his speed had dropped and he was slacking. He felt inferior to Wen Ren Yan and had lost his motivation to grow stronger.

Was he able to regain his former glory and self confidence that he used to hold so dear?

Chen Xing wasn't the only who felt affected by Lin Feng's words. Other disciples in the crowd who had heard his words were feeling bad about their own choices.

"He is speaking very wise words and his words are having a profound impact on everyone who hears him." Liu Fei was also affected by Lin Feng's words. He really was a genius in so many ways. He was so unconventional and unrestrained, he really had nothing servile in his personality.

"Chen Xing, come on. Are you not ashamed of yourself? Provoking others while being rude and then not daring to fight? If you refuse then not only will you prove that you are not a genius but you will also prove that you are a coward." Lin Feng said while he continued walking towards Chen Xing. An incredible force was oppressing Chen Xing's body and soul.

"Coward.... Coward....." that word was resonating in Chen Xing's brain and it was like torture for him. His face was completely distorted in pain.

"Aahhhh....." Suddenly, Chen Xing shouted loudly. Some disciples had to cover their ears.

Everybody was staring blankly at the scene that was occurring in astonishment.

How powerful was Lin Feng!

Lin Feng didn't even need to fight. Chen Xing had only said a few words and was already about to collapse because of the pressure that Lin Feng was applying. How could he fight when he could not even speak under the pressure.

At that moment, the entire crowd was looking at Lin Feng and only saw that he had a cold smile on his face. He looked like a dangerous ferocious beast. His eyes looked so dark that it gave the impression that he was no longer human.

Lin Feng had abilities similar to that of the Imaginary Demon. He had a mystical power. He had used that power on Chen Xing.

"Piece of trash." said Wen Ren Yan. His azure blue eyes were staring angrily at Lin Feng.

"Even though you're a little bit stronger than Chen Xing, you're still extremely weak in comparison with me. You are nothing but a bug which I can crush at any time. Now, kneel down and beg me for mercy or I will crush you here and now."

Wen Ren Yan said in an ice cold tone filled with killing intent. Lin Feng had said that it was useless to rely on somebody else's power. He was going to teach Lin Feng a lesson and make him kneel down before him.

Chapter 74: Confrontation

It seemed like Lin Feng hadn't heard Wen Ren Yan. He actually didn't care about what he was saying. Lin Feng was used to people who talked big but in the end did not have the strength to match their arrogance.

"Han Man, is he the one who injured you?" asked Lin Feng to Han Man. Wen Ren Yan was indeed the person who had attacked Han Man and caused him to be injured.

"Yes." said Han Man while nodding. He then whispered in Lin Feng's ears: "Wen Ren Yan is not even close to the strength of Tu Fu. So now that Tu Fu has become a core disciple, he is currently ranked first within the elite disciples. He's strong and has a fierce temper. I'm not in a hurry to get my revenge on him. I believe that in a short time, you will definitely be able to defeat him."

He was strong?

An elite disciple who had broken through to the third Ling Qi layer could be ranked amongst the top disciples with no difficulty. Those who had broken through to the fourth Ling Qi layer were strong enough to fight against the core disciples of the sect. If Wen Ren Yan had broken through to the fourth Ling Qi layer then he definitely wouldn't have stayed as an elite disciple and would have become a core disciple. So at that moment he was most likely at the peak of the third Ling Qi layer. He would not have had a breakthrough yet to the forth Ling Qi Layer.

A cultivator of that level was indeed very powerful but that did not mean that he was invincible and could provoke who he wished. Lin Feng was confident that if he had to fight with him then he would be able to win and if he was not able to fight against him then he could retreat unharmed.

“No need to discuss any more. This is the only chance I will give you. Even if you’re a genius, I can take your life at any time. Now kneel before me.”

Wen Ren Yan thought that he was the strongest and his arrogance was clear. He truly did not know how vast the world was. He thought that because Lin Feng had just become an elite disciple that he was weak and could be bullied. To Wen Ren Yan who would even dare to fight against some core disciples he was really nothing but a bug. Even though Lin Feng understood a lot about forces, he was too weak. There would be no problem to defeat Lin Feng with a single thought.

Wen Ren Yan had an extremely strong spirit. It would in no way be weaker than the sword force of Lin Feng. Wen Ren Yan had an unbreakable faith in the strength of his spirit.

“There is no need to think it over.” said Lin Feng while shaking his head and then while giving a cold smile, he said: “Even though you want me to kneel down and beg you for mercy, I have no reason to obey you.”

Everybody was stupefied by Lin Feng’s words. He was aggressive and would not retreat no matter who he faced. He truly had the demeanor of an emperor.

Wen Ren Yan was the top ranked elite disciple. He was respected by everyone and feared for his strength. What did he think of Lin Feng? He only just become an elite disciple and was no better than those bugs called ordinary disciples.

“Hehe. Alright... Alright....” Wen Ren Yan said with an evil smile which was filled with hatred. His azure blue eyes were emanating a strong killing intent which made other disciples tremble in fear.

“This is terrible! Wen Ren Yan has become furious.”

Some disciples in the crowd knew that this had become a very dangerous situation. They were very scared of Wen Ren Yan. Nobody dared provoke him because of his strength and also because of his temper.

Lin Feng also sensed the cold air which was emanating from Wen Ren Yan’s body. Lin Feng didn’t sense it in the same way though. He felt that there was a diabolic and evil intention held within his eyes.

“Wen Ren Yan, what do you intend to do? You are not in the Life and Death Arena.” said Liu Fei while moving in front of Lin Feng to block the way.

Wen Ren Yan said that Liu Fei was his and declared that no one else could attempt romance with her. In fact, they hadn’t known each other for a long time but Liu Fei had already come to an understanding of what kind of person he really was. He looked

strong and confident on the outside but he was like a venomous snake. He did not have the honor and morals which other had.

Liu Fei still wanted Lin Feng to go to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. Therefore she didn't want him to die from his current situation. In Liu Fei's opinion, Lin Feng wasn't weak but could never fight against Wen Ren Yan. If he fought against him, he would surely die.

“You are mine and yet you protect this young man, are you not afraid to make me angry?”

Wen Ren Yan looked hideously evil at that moment. It looked like his azure blue eyes alone could kill if you gazed into them for too long. They clearly revealed his murderous intentions.

“I've never said that I was your girlfriend or that I was your property. Stop dreaming. I would never be in a relationship with a guy like you. It's actually the opposite. Lin Feng is my boyfriend. If you touch him, I will never let you off.”

Liu Fei was staring at Wen Ren Yan looking extremely serious.

“Oh my, so that's how it is. Liu Fei admits that she is Lin Feng's girlfriend. What a lucky bastard! He captured the heart of the most beautiful girl within the Yun Hai Sect!”

Everybody was staring at Lin Feng and were filled with envy and jealousy.

Han Man, who was still injured, was looking at Lin Feng with eyes revealing an immense amount of respect. He looked like he truly worshiped and adored Lin Feng. He knew that Lin Feng not only had a strong body but his heart was the strongest that he had ever seen.

Core disciples had never been able to conquer Liu Fei's heart and then suddenly Liu Fei admitted to being the girlfriend of his sworn brother!!! What great news!

Lin Feng had no idea what was going on and had been confused by this whole situation. When had this all happened? When had they become a couple?

Lin Feng then looked at the crowd who was surrounding them. They were looking at him with evil eyes. Damn it, that girl.....once again she had caused him trouble.

“Well, I will just have to kill him.” said Wen Ren Yan who looked even more furious than before.

“Do you dare?!” shouted Liu Fei furiously.

“In the Yun Hai Sect, there is nothing that I, Wen Ren Yan, don't dare.”

Wen Ren Yan then laughed an evil laugh as if he cared for nothing in the world.

“Is that so? We will see about that.” said a firm and steady voice.

A silhouette which had appeared in the distance suddenly shot towards the cave of the elite disciples.

“How presumptuous. Wen Ren Yan, do you think that you’re the patriarch of the sect?” said a voice which was coldly laughing. The man who had just arrived was looking at Wen Ren Yan with a look filled with disdain and anger.

“Yue Xue, this none of your business and doesn’t require you to get involved.”

Wen Ren Yan was also looking at the man with disdain in his eyes.

“Wen Ren Yan is really presumptuous and audacious! How dare he disrespect an elder?”

Some disciple who were watching the scene were shocked. Xue Yue was an Elder of the ordinary disciples. There were not many within the elite disciples who dared to disrespect him.

“Pfff, Lin Feng and his friends came to receive their Elite Disciple Certificate and their new disciple robes and you suddenly threaten to kill him. What would other people think of our Yun Hai Sect? I am an elder, how could I not care?”

“Indeed, this territory is under my control so you have nothing to do here.”

An ice cold voice was heard inside the cave and then a middle aged man wearing an indigo chang pao suddenly appeared from the shadows.

“Elder Lu.” said Wen Ren Yan to the man wearing the indigo chang pao. He was also an Elder. He was responsible for giving the Elite Disciple certificates as well as the Elite Disciple robes to the new disciples. He was also in charge of the rankings within the disciples.

Lu Yuan nodded at Wen Ren Yan in a friendly way but he wasn't as friendly to Xue Yue.

“Xue Yue, you should stay where you belong. What are you doing here causing trouble ?”

“What do you mean?” asked Xue Yue while staring at Lu Yuan.

“What do I mean? This is my territory. We don't need you to concern yourself with our affairs.”

“You mean that within your territory, Wen Ren Yan can kill other disciples as he wishes, including other elite disciples?”

“Even if he killed a few weak ones, who would even care? Here the weak do not deserve to live and only the strong can survive.

Xue Yue, you're causing too much trouble by being here."

Everybody was surprised. They wouldn't have thought that the issue between Lin Feng and Wen Ren Yan would lead to an argument between two elders of the sect. However, elder Lu's words were harsh and cruel.

According to elder Lu, Lin Feng was inferior to Wen Ren Yan so even if he got killed by him, it wouldn't be a problem at all. He was even saying that Lin Feng did not deserve to live. How laughable.

Lin Feng also understood what Elder Lu meant. The thought had made him smile but his heart grew colder than ice.

He had become an elite disciple and had to come pick up his certificate and his robes but the one who was in charge of giving him these things ended up saying he wasn't strong enough and deserved to die for being inferior to Wen Ren Yan. What was that supposed to mean?

Regarding Xue Yue, the first time Lin Feng had seen him was when Protector Bei had passed the responsibility of protecting the Xing Chen pavilion onto him. He was clearly one of Protector Bei's trusted friends.

"Elder Xue." said Lin Feng suddenly. Xue Yue turned around and looked at Lin Feng.

"Thank you." said Lin Feng while smiling.

Lin Feng then looked at Wen Ren Yan and Lu Yuan and said: “Elder Lu, Lin Feng came to pick up his certificate and new disciple robes.”

Lu Yuan glanced at Lin Feng with a look of disdain. He then looked at Wen Ren Yan. Not only was Wen Ren Yan very strong but his background was also terrifying.

Because he appreciated Wen Ren Yan, he also decided that he was Lin Feng’s enemy.

“Elder Lu, Lin Feng came to pick up his certificate and new disciple robes.”

Lin Feng said it even louder than before sounding extremely strict and firm.

“You really don’t know who you are talking to.” said Lu Yuan while glancing at Lin Feng and then shouted: “Get Lost!”

Chapter 75: The Yun Hai Sect Has Abandoned Me

“Audacious. Lu Yuan, you’re really being unfair. Lin Feng is now an elite disciple of our Yun Hai Sect, you must give him his robes and his certificate. This is a rule within the sect. Would you be daring enough to break the sect rules so blatantly?” said Xue Yue in an ice cold tone.

“Elder Xue.” Lin Feng said in a soft voice. Xue Yue turned around and looked at Lin Feng.

“Today, I have come to pick up my certificate and robes as an elite disciple but Elder Lu doesn’t want to let me. He insulted me and told me to get lost. Elder Xue had witnessed all these things as they happened, right?” asked Lin Feng.

“Indeed.” said Xue Yue nodding. He didn’t understand Lin Feng’s point.

“Since I now have a witness that I am being treated unfairly, I have had enough.” said Lin Feng while smiling coldly. “If they refuse me entry into the elite disciples, it means that the sect has chosen to abandon me.”

When he finished talking, Lin Feng quickly turned around and went towards Han Man. The whole crowd was stupefied and didn’t understand what Lin Feng meant.

“Pfff, don’t think that you can run away because Xue Yue is here to defend you. Next time that I see you, I will kill you.” Wen Ren Yan knew that he couldn’t kill Lin Feng in front of Xue Yue but next time they’d meet alone, he’d definitely kill Lin Feng.

“I’ll wait for you to try.” Lin Feng’s words were clear even though the distance between them had grown. He had already started walking away and his silhouette was gradually disappearing.

Xue Yue frowned. He looked at Lu Yuan with an ice cold glare and said furiously: “Lu Yuan, I cannot believe your ignorance today! You will truly regret your actions today, you will do nothing but regret these actions.”

When he finished talking, Xue Yue brushed the dust from his sleeve and left. How ridiculous was Lu Yuan acting? Did he really think that supporting Wen Ren Yan was the right thing to do? That it would be useful to him in the future? Did he not understand how greatly the protectors and the patriarch valued Lin Feng? If he had truly known the situation then he would not have had the same attitude when dealing with Lin Feng.

“I never regret anything that I do.” said Lu Yuan showing everyone that he was not scared of any repercussions and then said to Wen Ren Yan: “what a pity that we had to let him go.”

“Don’t worry, he will die sooner or later.” said Wen Ren Yan. His words were like those a venomous snake. He was gazing with a venomous stare into the distance where Lin Feng had left. When Lin Feng left, Liu Fei had surprisingly followed him. Saying that

Liu Fei was his girlfriend and his possession had caused him to be humiliated after everything that Lin Feng and Liu Fei had said.

.....

“Lin Feng...”

Liu Fei quickly caught up with Lin Feng and shouted out to him.

“Haha, I just remembered that I had things to do and that I had to leave with Po Jun.”

When Han Man saw that Liu Fei was coming towards them, a huge smile appeared on his face then he quickly pulled Po Jun and ran ahead to give the couple some privacy. Judging from his actions, you would hardly believe he had been injured only moments ago

.

Lin Feng’s eyes rolled. That sneaky guy..... how could he suddenly have become so crafty?

“Lin Feng, please be careful next time. If you see Wen Ren Yan, please avoid a conflict with him. Stay away from him at all costs. That guy is very dangerous.” Liu Fei warned Lin Feng.

She knew that Wen Ren Yan would try to kill Lin Feng if he had

the opportunity in the future.

“I thought that you hated me. How come you suddenly care about me now?” said Lin Feng while laughing as if he had ignored Liu Fei’s warning.

Liu Fei was speechless. That guy was surprisingly in the mood to make jokes. She knew how terrifying Wen Ren Yan was and the status that he held.

“I just don’t want you to die because you have to go to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, that’s all.” said Liu Fei while staring at Lin Feng.

“Is that so? But I have never said that I was going to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.” Lin Feng continued: “Now that I think about it, I do remember that you said something about you being my girlfriend?”

“I just said it because of the situation.” said Fei resolutely while staring at Lin Feng without blinking. That guy had dared to bring up an embarrassing situation again. She just wanted to show to everyone that Wen Ren Yan was a liar. She wanted him to stop creating lies about her and humiliate him at the same time.

“Can you really just say such things just because of the situation?” asked Lin Feng whose eyes were rolling. His hands started moving towards Liu Fei.

“What are you doing?”

Liu Fei felt a chill down her spine and vigilantly looked at Lin Feng.

That guy.....

“You’re my girlfriend now. I should start behaving like a proper boyfriend would with his girlfriend. As your boyfriend I have certain duties to fulfill.” Said Lin Feng as he was moving towards Liu Fei in a peculiar motion.

“You bastard! Dream on!”

Liu Fei’s face was flushed completely red. She was furious and embarrassed. She immediately stormed off.

That bastard..... what did he mean by “a boyfriend has duties to fulfill”? ...and he then dares say he’s not a pervert.

Lin Feng observed Liu Fei as she walked away. Her body was incredibly graceful with each movement. He had a tender smile on his face. His impression that Liu Fei was a bad person was disappearing with each day. He now had a very good impression of her and had started to grow fond of her. She was actually very cute. There was no one who could deny that she was incredibly beautiful and grew more attractive with each day.

“How come I never noticed this before?” Lin Feng thought with a

smile on his face.

When he had first arrived in this world, he thought it was a very cold and ruthless world. His determination, willpower and strength were the only things he could rely on.

Now he was beginning to feel familiar in this world and he was gradually becoming more relaxed. Sometimes, he was a bit unconventional or a bit insolent... but he had to make others respect him through force or he would be bullied for the rest of his life. He has chosen to never serve beneath anyone and be bullied again.

Lin Feng's determination and willpower was truly incredible for a cultivator. He was proud of his sword skills and there was a determination to improve his sword skills while growing stronger. He wanted to grow stronger.

.....

A pleasant and warm light was illuminating the ground.

On that day, the Yun Hai Sect looked absolutely desolate. There was almost nobody that could be seen.

But in a distant place it wasn't desolate at all: within the Stormy Gorge.

The Stormy Gorge was filled with all members of the Yun Hai

Sect. Again they looked like a colony of ants, they were all being pushed shoulder to shoulder.

The Elite Elders and the Ordinary Elders were not sitting inside the gorge, they were now upon a high seating area which could see the Life and Death Arena from above.

This seating area was grand and imposing to all those who looked upon it. It was entirely made out of stone. The view made Lin Feng sigh in admiration. He remembered the stadiums in his previous life and thought that the seating area in the Stormy Gorge was even more fantastic. The Yun Hai Sect usually didn't use this seating area often, but this time they wanted to show everyone how important the Elite Disciple Exam was.

It was the beginning of the second round of the Elite Disciple Exam. The ordinary disciple ranking list had a hundred names, the elite disciple list had eighty one and the core disciple list only had thirty six names.

But it was clear to everyone that the ordinary disciple ranking list would lose a great deal of power when the strongest ordinary disciples joined the elite disciples. Indeed, the ordinary disciple ranking list would lose the strongest disciples. This is why people particularly enjoyed watching the elite disciple and core disciple ranking.

By looking at the ranking lists, it was possible to understand how powerful each of the disciples were. By understanding how powerful the disciples were, it was possible to know how strong the sect currently was. After all, the disciples were the future of

the sect.

Nan Gong Ling had suddenly stood up. Everyone had quickly become completely silent.

Nan Gong Ling slightly smiled and then started talking. But at that moment, he looked surprised and frowned.

He was staring into the distance at a storm of violent clouds on the horizon. There was a strangely violent air approaching. The sea of violent clouds rushed across the sky like a wave crashing into the ocean.

“Nan Gong Ling, that is Chu Mou from the Hao Yue Sect. He is carrying a group of people with him.”

The clouds were crashing through the sky and making terrifying booms. The air was shaking with the pressure. The sound of crashing was so loud that it entered the ears of the disciples and seemed to pierce through into their souls.

“How terrifyingly powerful!”

Everybody was staring in amazement looking at the group of people who were approaching. They looked like there were surfing on the violent clouds.

At the same time, the sky was growing cloudy and snowflakes seemed to be falling from the clear sky above.

“Han Xue Tian of Ice and Snow Village Mountain has come to pay a visit.”

There was a powerful voice which was echoing through the snow. The voice was accompanied by a sudden strong snowfall. Everyone started feeling cold.

Han Xue Tian was the Patriarch of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village.

“Duan Wu Tian and Duan Wu Tian have also come to pay a visit.”

More voices were heard within the snow. A storm of raging clouds was heading towards them on the horizon and snow was filling the atmosphere around them. Everybody was shaking from the cold and also the fear of the power which was being displayed .

The scariest was that that cold air was filled with a terrifying sword Qi. It was extremely sharp and seemed like it was ready to pierce through flesh at any moment. However the source could not be seen.

In the distance there was a black shadow moving through the sky, it was a colossal monster which was completely black from head to toe. With each flap of its wings it created a vacuum in the air.

That colossal pitch black monster had a length of a few dozen meters and about 4 meters thick. The people who were riding it were wearing chang paos which blew elegantly in the wind.

That wild beast was a Python Fish which could fly through the sky and swim to the deepest ocean. Its scales were pitch black and it had gigantic wings on its back. It was a very strange creature and mysterious creature.

“What a horrible looking monster!”

Everybody was stupefied staring blankly at that Python Fish. It was swallowing clouds and blowing out a dark fog with each breath.

What terrified the crowd even more was that around his huge wings was the same incredible amount of sword Qi. No one knew where this terrifying sword Qi was coming from.

Suddenly everyone could see a gigantic sword flying in the air, there was a silhouette standing atop the sword with an arrogant smile.

Chapter 76: Brutality

Nan Gong Ling's expression was gradually becoming ice cold. The expression in his eyes was as sharp as a sword as he looked at the crowd in front of him.

Chu Qing was the Patriarch of the Hao Yue Sect. He was Chu Zhan Peng's father.

Han Xue Tian was the Patriarch of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village.

Teng Wu Shan was the Vice-Patriarch of the Mo Shou Sect.

Duan Tian Lang was the prince of the Imperial Family and was also Duan Han's father who had come to the Yun Hai Sect recently and been thrown out.

All these people belonged to some of the most powerful Sects and Clans. They had come during the Elite Disciple Exam and it did not feel like they had come with good intentions.

“Patriarch Nan Gong Ling, all of these people coming to visit on the same day, this is a bit strange.”

Duan Tian Lang was the person standing on the gigantic sword. He was wearing a magnificent plate of armor which made him look like a majestic ruler. The gigantic sword began to lose altitude and moved towards the viewing platform accompanied by the sound of

the atmosphere tearing under its pressure.

At the same time, Chu Qing and Han Xue Tian were also slowly moving down to the platform while looking extremely condescending.

Next to Duan Tian Lang, Duan Han was staring at Nan Gong Ling looking indifferent. Nan Gong Ling had recently humiliated him and told him to leave the Yun Hai Sect. Now he held a grudge against Nan Gong Ling and wanted to teach him a lesson.

“Oh hehe, it is an honor for me to receive Duan Tian Lang within the Yun Hai Sect. Please feel at home.” said Nan Gong Ling with a cold smile across his face and he then added: “It is only that we didn’t expect you to bring so many people. What brings you all to my Yun Hai Sect?”

“Not so long ago, that boy, Duan Han already visited you. The purpose of his visit was also very clear to you. His Majesty sees the things that we cannot. Therefore, he is preparing to finish building the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. Thus, he requires some of the most outstanding disciples within the country. All of the sects have already replied and chosen some of their disciples except for the Yun Hai Sect.....”

When he finished talking Duan Tian Lang smiled and didn’t add anything else.

“Huh?” Nan Gong Ling was making a strange face. Chu Qing, Han Xue Tian and all these people were extremely powerful. Their

children were also extremely talented. If they sent disciples there then they would be under the control of the Imperial Clan and as a consequence, would not belong to the Yun Hai Sect in the future.

But Chu Qing noticed that Duan Tian Lang had been talking in a very calm and soft tone which was why, Nan Gong Ling hadn't understood what he meant.

“Alright, what does Duan Tian Lang propose to do?” asked Nan Gong Ling.

“Since Nan Gong Ling hasn't been willing to hand over some of his best disciples, I personally came on behalf of His Majesty to select some myself. Today is the day of the Elite Disciple Exam within the Yun Hai Sect. I'll be able to see your strongest disciples with my own eyes and select them one after the other.” said Duan Tian Lang in a strict manner.

The facial expression of every member of the Yun Hai Sect suddenly changed. How savage! What kind of place did they think the Yun Hai Sect was? What gave them the right to choose geniuses as they pleased?

“What happens if I don't agree?” said Nan Gong Ling as his voice grew colder.

“Nan Gong Ling will agree just like all the other Patriarchs had to agree.” said Duan Tian Lang as he was filled with confidence. He was talking as if his word was law and no one could refute him.

“Nan Gong Ling isn’t hurrying to select disciples because of the Elite Disciple Exam but he shouldn’t disagree too fast either. The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue will not accept mediocre disciples. It will only accept the best and most outstanding disciples of the entire Xue Yue Country. They will give them access to the best profound pills, the best weapons and the best teachers available. Resources will be almost endless.

There will also be the possibility to learn the most powerful skills available. They will be able to choose between an enormous amount of martial skills and they will truly become the pillars of the country.”

Duan Tian Lang was saying those words to all the disciples of the Yun Hai Sect. He was trying to tempt them with the vast wealth. Gaining access to an unlimited quantity of weapons, pills and skills... all disciples of the Yun Hai Sect would obviously be tempted, who would refuse such a wonderful opportunity?

They came to the Yun Hai Sect for the sake of Cultivation. They wanted to become powerful. If the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue could provide them with a better cultivation environment as well as much better cultivation facilities, what reasons did they have to stay in the Yun Hai Sect?

At that moment, many disciples became restless. Many disciples were prepared to give their utmost to be accepted into the Holy Courtyard.

“How despicable.”

Nan Gong Ling cursed. Duan Tian Lang who was trying to cause a rift within the Yun Hai Sect. It was truly a cunning and ruthless plan.

What Nan Gong Ling found even more intolerable is that they were clearly provoking the Yun Hai Sect with these actions.

“I’m curious to see who would dare to oppose the Yun Hai Sect.” thought Nan Gong Ling. He then looked at Duan Tian Lang and said: “Since Duan Tian Lang wants to watch the Elite Disciple Exam, I will allow you to stay and watch.”

“The ranked battles for the ordinary disciple and the core disciples are postponed for another day. Today, only elite disciples can fight.”

The crowd burst into an uproar when they heard Nan Gong but a short instant after, they understood why he had made that decision.

The ordinary disciples were too weak so the Yun Hai Sect would lose face. The core disciples were the heart of the Yun Hai Sect and he could not afford to lose these disciples. There wouldn’t be much time before a core disciple could become a new pillar within the Sect. In addition, it wouldn’t be wise to show the strength of the core disciples to the unwelcome guests. Therefore, showing the elite disciples was the most suitable decision.

Duan Tian Lang was smiling. Would Nan Gong Ling’s actions

make any difference?

“Elite disciples, go into the Life and Death Arena and make a line in the order as indicated by the ranking list.” Said Nan Gong Ling.

The elite disciples, whose name was in the list of the ranking list composed of eighty one disciples. The entire crowd was staring at them with admiration. They would have the chance to bring honor to themselves and the sect.

“I will also change the rules of the second round of the Elite Disciple Exam. If you want to be in the ranking list, you must challenge someone who is already on the ranking list. If you win, you will be ranked. No disciple can be challenged twice.”

Nan Gong Ling continued to talk. The crowd burst into an uproar again. A multitude of people was disappointed and had given up all hope. This round was a chance for disciples to test themselves and their own strength. However because of the new rule the exam had changed. Many disciples would no longer have the chance to test themselves against the elite disciples.

“These battles will all be fought to the death. There are..... no restrictions.”

“Boooooom.” That shocking sentence was like a bomb exploding in everyone’s head. No restrictions....to the death...

If they challenged the stronger of the elite disciples then they

could lose the battle and their life along with it. There was no option to give up, they would be slaughtered.

A victory meant being able to see one's name in the elite disciple ranking list. Losing had serious consequences to the extent that an opponent without mercy could end your life. That was a big price to pay for losing.

“Dangerous.”

“Gambling with one's life at stake is too dangerous. I'll just try again next year.”

A countless number of disciples were shaking their heads after the previous statement. Many of them agreed on the fact that risking one's life in order to join the ranking list was not a worthwhile risk.

“Lin Feng, the Patriarch is really cruel. I just joined the elite disciples but I am also only at the first Ling Qi layer. On that list composed of eighty one names, the weakest have already broken through to the second Ling Qi layer. I have no chance for winning at all.”

Han Man was smiling wryly. He thought he was going to get the chance to fight as much as he could during the Elite Disciple Exam but hadn't expected that things would turn out this way.

Lin Feng had a different feeling. These new rules would probably

lead to incredible battles. Not only were those who were going to join brave, but they would also be the most outstanding members of the sect. Only those outstanding disciples would risk their life. That is what Nan Gong Ling wanted to see. He wanted to show these people how strong his disciples were.

“All the eighty one disciples on the ranking list are now on the fighting stage in the Life and Death Arena. Now you can challenge any of them and go onto the fighting stage of the middle.”

When Nan Gong Ling finished talking, he sat down and observed Duan Tian Lang.

“Luo Lie is willing to challenge You Lin to a battle.”

A silhouette stepped onto the fighting stage. Because it was impossible to challenge the same person twice, the first person had a huge advantage over the other disciples as he could challenge someone who was very low in the rankings. You Lin was the eighty first ranked disciple.

At that moment, You Lin had an ugly facial expression. Being the first one to be challenged... that was such a humiliation.

“Whoever chooses to challenge us ranked disciples, death will be your punishment.”

Said Ren Wen Yan who was standing in front of everyone else on the fighting stage. He had made it clear to all disciples with his cold

tone that the ranked disciples would kill all their challengers.

“Agreed.” Said You Ling as he jumped onto the fighting stage. He immediately started to unleash all of his skills using his full power. Even if Wen Ren Yan hadn’t said, You Lin had already planned to kill his opponent.

.....

The Stormy Gorge became particularly calm.

The crowd was watching the fighting stage within the Life and Death Arena. The fighting stage was entirely red with blood. Lying on the fighting stage was a pile of corpses. All of these corpses were the corpses of the challengers. They had all lost and been killed without exception. They did not remove the corpses but left them there as a reminder to anyone who issued a challenge. This would be the place where they entered their eternal rest.

Losing your challenge would mean certain death.

The lesson was cruel and bloody. Gradually, those who were eager to challenge these ranked disciples were slowly dwindling.

The disciples who had been challenged were the ones at the bottom of the ranking. From that moment, if someone else wanted to challenge these ranked elite disciples, they had to challenge those who were even higher in the ranking list.

As expected from the ranked elite disciples, none of them was mediocre. Even You Lin who was ranked eighty one was exceptionally strong.

Nan Gong Ling was still sitting indifferently looking at the fighting stage. That bloody lesson was going to show these young disciples how hard, cruel and brutal the path of cultivation was.

On the path of cultivation, only those who had a persistent heart, as well as a determination and willpower as solid as rock, could march forward courageously. Those who had a fear of blood would not last long on the path of cultivation. Those who were too kindhearted would be killed for their foolishness. This was not a world to be underestimated with light heartened ideals.

“A bunch of crappy cultivators trying in vain to be ranked is enough to make you all so desperate and hopeless?”

Wen Ren Yan said while pointing at the five corpses on the stage. He then glanced evilly at the entire crowd looking extremely. He was mocking every elite disciple who was not within the ranking.

He was the top ranked elite disciple and none of these five people were worth his time.

All the elite disciples were furious but at the same time they felt powerless. They couldn't believe Wen Ren Yan's harsh words but he was a genius whose power was acknowledged by everybody. There were very few people who would dare to provoke him.

“Patriarch, I think that you can establish the new ranking list now. They are all pathetic and hopeless.”

Wen Ren Yan was looking at Nan Gong Ling as he hurled insults at the other elite disciples to make himself look better.

Nan Gong Ling looked around at the crowd and slightly nodded. Wen Ren Yan was really highly arrogant but he was right, the Yun Hai Sect didn't have that many geniuses. Inevitably, he would sooner or later become one of the pillars of the sect.

“Ridiculous, you truly are laughable.”

A loud voice was heard spreading through the atmosphere. It made the crowd shiver.

Wen Ren Yan was surprised. He looked around to see who had said these words to him.

“You again.” Said Wen Ren Yan with murderous intentions in his eyes. “What is so ridiculous?”

“You're the top ranked elite disciple. Yet you are still extremely presumptuous. You look down on other disciples while calling them names, calling them crap... but at the beginning when you started practicing cultivation, were you as strong as now? Were you born as an unrivalled master of the Lin Qi Layer? Have you ever considered that to others, you might be the crappy cultivator?”

Lin Feng had a cold smile on the corner of his mouth as he continued to hurl insults. Wen Ren Yan was extremely arrogant. Lin Feng had said these words to make him aware that the world is bigger than what he knows. Wen Ren Yan was like the frog stuck in the well, he did not know how vast the sky was.

Chapter 77: The Yun Hai Sect is Polluted!

Crappy Cultivator? Suddenly, someone dared insult Wen Ren Yan and call him a crappy cultivator?

The entire crowd was staring deeply at Lin Feng. They were stupefied because Lin Feng was still wearing the clothes of an ordinary disciple. Could it be that he was still an ordinary disciple?

Nan Gong Ling was also surprised. He had taken great pleasure in openly announcing to the sect that Lin Feng had become an elite disciple. Why was he still wearing the clothes of an ordinary disciple?

Within the Yun Hai Sect Nan Gong Ling had a lot of admiration for four disciples: Ling Hu He Shan, Tu Fu, Wen Ren Yan and Lin Feng.

At that moment, Ling Hu He Shan was constantly impressing him with his actions. Fu Tu was becoming stronger and stronger with each passing day. Wen Ren Yan seemed to have an infinite potential. Regarding Lin Feng, he was still a bit weak but he had made a display of his abilities and his future was certainly going to be brilliant.

These disciples also regarded Nan Gong Ling as a good Patriarch. Therefore, Nan Gong Ling hoped that there were no tensions between them. The tensions existing between Lin Feng and Wen Ren Yan would probably not be to his liking.

“What gives you the right to talk to me like this? In front of me you will always be a crappy cultivator and like before a piece of trash.”

Wen Ren Yan azure blue eyes were evilly staring at Lin Feng.

“You’re really narrow minded. You’re that kind of person who doesn’t know who is good or bad, who has abilities and who doesn’t, especially who to call names and those you should never dare to call names.”

Lin Feng’s words were getting more and more profound as well as harsher which somewhat amused the entire crowd. They found him fascinating. He could not see the difference between heaven and earth. Wen Ren Yan was respected by everyone and he surprisingly dared disrespect him. He was truly reckless and immature.

“Are you trying to say that you are more qualified than me?” asked Wen Ren Yan as if he had just heard the funniest joke of his life.

“I may not be more qualified than you but I don’t go around randomly insulting people and calling them ‘piece of trash’. I am careful of who I offend.” said Lin Feng slowly walking towards the Life and Death Arena, towards the central fighting stage. He looked extremely calm and serene.

“You’re the top ranked elite disciple and you despise the other elite disciples. You say that they are hopeless. If there was a core

disciple here to call you trash, would you dare still act so arrogantly?”

“Pffff, core disciples are obviously stronger than me but I will surpass them eventually so they don’t have the qualification to call me trash. People like you will never be able to surpass me or even catch up to me.”

Wen Ren Yan was endlessly arrogant. The Yun Hai Sect disciples felt so furious that their cheeks were burning in anger. They were not strong enough to rebuke him as much as they had wanted to. Wen Ren Yan was an incomparable genius within the sect.

“Ridiculous.” Lin Feng had already arrived on the edge of the fighting stage of the Life and Death Arena. He then climbed up onto the stage.

“In the eyes of many people, you are indeed a once in a lifetime genius. However in my eyes, you are a fool and nothing more. I don’t understand why the Yun Hai Sect respects you and even attaches even the slightest of importance to you.”

When Lin Feng finished talking, everybody was stupefied. Not only was he humiliating Wen Ren Yan but he was calling into question the actions of the sect. How audacious!

“You really want to die!”

Wen Ren Yan had a demonic expression in his eyes and he slowly

started walking to the fighting stage. Very slowly, one step after the other. He looked like a demon ready to unleash his fury.

“Nobody slacks when it comes to the Elite Disciple Exam. They all want to become ranked for the glory that comes with it. Those who are not ranked rely on the weaker disciples to become ranked. Those who are ranked rely on those at the top of the list to protect order. This is the way that things worked. This is the way of the world. Even if they lose while attempting to rise to new heights, it is not a humiliation. There’s nothing to be ashamed of, but Wen Ren Yan you are evil. You don’t even respect those who died today. You... are truly heartless.”

“Being the top ranked elite disciple and insulting the other elite disciples... calling them worthless even after their death. That is a cruel humiliation for our fellow disciples who died attempting to rise to glory. That’s unfair.”

“Heartless, cruel and unfair... The Yun Hai Sect, including all of our fellow disciples has helped you become what you are now. If the Yun Hai Sect ever has a big problem then will it be able to trust you considering that you don’t care about killing your fellow disciples or seeing them murdered? The most important thing is that even if you are extremely strong, will the Yun Hai Sect even be able to benefit from it?”

While Lin Feng was saying these profound words, the atmosphere had gone completely silent and still. A cruel, heartless and unfair yet extremely strong disciple, did the Yun Hai Sect need him?

“BOOOM!”

A violent and ice cold Qi emerged like waves on the fighting stage. The temperature rapidly began to drop.

“So ashamed that you cannot control yourself? Too bad, I’m not done talking yet.”

Lin Feng wasn’t frightened at all and was smiling coldly. Lin Feng moved forward to the center of the fighting stage and looked at Wen Ren Yan with disdain.

“The Continent of the Nine Clouds is so incredibly vast. Wen Ren Yan, what other places have you even ever been to? How many real geniuses have you met in your life? And you dared to talk like you were unrivalled under the heavens. You dare to be extremely arrogant and humiliate other people while being so insignificant. A Cultivator of the third Ling Qi layer is considered as relatively weak compared to the rest of the world. In the Xue Yue Country, there are cities filled with stronger cultivators than you with talent that you could only dream of. I don’t understand how you are more qualified than anyone else, I do not understand what gives you the right to act in such a way.”

“Wen Ren Yan you are like a mouse which can only see an inch, a frog at the bottom of a well... that’s all. You really know nothing about the world. You know not how vast the sky is or how deep the ocean is. You know nothing.”

Lin Feng’s words astonished everyone. Even Nan Gong Ling and

Duan Tian Lang were moved by Lin Feng's words. Everything Lin Feng said was profound and showed how wise he truly was.

Wen Ren Yan was shaking from head to toe with fury. Lin Feng's words were piercing to the extent that even his soul was shaking in anger. He could see that everyone was staring at him with looks of disdain.

It seemed like Lin Feng was determined to punish him using his words.

He was gazing into the distance. Lin Feng had not said a single lie and had revealed the truth of his nature.

“An unfair and cruel young disciple like this... adored and respected by other disciples... respected by the elders... a source of inspiration for ordinary disciples... Could it be that the Yun Hai Sect was only worth this much?”

Was the Yun Hai Sect only worth this much?

Everybody in the crowd felt awkward. Lin Feng said that Wen Ren Yan was arrogant. What about him? Saying that the Yun Hai Sect was only worth so much, wasn't saying this very arrogant of him?”

“What an audacious ordinary disciple. Daring to humiliate the entire Yun Hai sect. You really want to die!” said an Elder while looking at the fighting stage. That was precisely the elder, who had

humiliated Lin Feng refusing to give him his elite disciples robes and certificate: Lu Yuan.

“There are many people like you in the Yun Hai Sect. It is becoming more and more polluted each day with your stupidity.”

Said Lin Feng who wasn't scared and just smiled coldly. He then said to Lu Yuan: “So, you think that ordinary disciples are not worthy and that elite disciples are above others because they are strong?”

“You five, you consider yourselves to be strong and powerful. Yet you dare to ruthlessly murder your fellow disciples. How powerful you must be to murder an already defeated opponent! Have you ever thought of the fact that there are people who are much stronger than you and they might treat you in the same way? Have any of you stopped to consider that before you murdered a fellow disciple for wanting to become stronger?”

Lin Feng was staring at the five ranked elite disciples who had just killed their challengers. “Even though the Yun Hai Sect has rules, they are still useless as they are not enforced. All that is enforced is to destroy fellow disciples and humiliate them. I challenge you five murderers, I think that nobody will have any problems with this. Shall we listen to what the Patriarch has to say.”

Lin Feng stopped talking. At that moment, everybody was stupefied. Lin Feng wanted to challenge five ranked elite disciples.

Madman!

Lin Feng was obviously insane!

Even though Lin Feng understood how to use sword force, these five Cultivators were of the second Ling Qi layer. They could kill him with a single strike.

But Lin Feng surprisingly dared to challenge five ranked elite disciples at once. How insane was he?

Han Man's mouth was wide open. He was speechless. That guy....

At that moment in the crowd, Liu Fei was also shocked. Her beautiful eyes were staring at Lin Feng looking worried. She thought that even though Lin Feng was powerful, he was still much weaker than the geniuses standing before him. That's why she wanted Lin Feng to take his time and practice. With time he could become an incredibly powerful person. His name would definitely appear on the ranking list in the future, however if he fought right now he may lose his life.

But was Lin Feng going to achieve a miracle? That bastard, how could he challenge five ranked elite disciples at the same time? Could it be that he didn't know the difference between their strengths.

"Bastard." Liu Fei was cursing secretly in her heart. She was incredibly worried about Lin Feng's safety. There was no chance of

them letting Lin Feng leave the arena alive.

As far as Nan Gong Ling was concerned, he was very surprised. Suddenly challenging five ranked elite disciples? Did he not even understand that this might not go the way he planned?

He had personally declared Lin Feng as an elite disciple, how come he was still wearing his ordinary disciple robes?

“Five is too many. Start with one first.”

Nan Gong Ling didn't want Lin Feng to take such great risks. He was also worried about two of the disciples that he respected the most. The tensions existing between the two of them was not to his liking.

“No need. The five of you, hurry and climb up onto the stage.”

Lin Feng sounded like he was an immature brat who knew nothing of the world. He was talking down to his opponents as if they were nothing.

“You want to die, I will show you.”

One of the five was laughing. Lin Feng was already dead in his mind. He had dared challenge the five of them at once.

“Quickly get up there. I am sick of looking at his smug face.”

Wen Ren Yan interrupted him. He kept thinking about what Lin Feng had said, that he was cruel, heartless, arrogant. That he would be of no use to the sect... He had a deep and bitter hatred for Lin Feng.

The five disciples hurried up because of what Wen Ren Yan had just said.

The five silhouettes climbed up onto the fighting stage. Suddenly, a strong Qi pressed down onto Lin Feng.

“Remember the name of the one who is going to kill you: Yue Yang.”

An enormous flame suddenly appeared illuminating the entire arena. It was growing much bigger and hotter as if it was being fueled by everything around it, to endlessly burn everything.

Another Gigantic flame emerged out of his head and rose into the atmosphere. The other four disciples all started using their own skills, each more powerful than the last. This was the combined strength of five disciples of the second Ling Qi layer. Even if they didn't release their spirit, their combined strength was absolutely enormous. Even people who were not on the fighting stage could sense it.

It looked like Lin Feng was going to be killed by the pressure enveloping his body before they even had a chance to attack.

“BOOM!”

“BOOM!”

“BOOM!”

“BOOM!”

“BOOM!”

“BOOM!”

“BOOM!”

“BOOM!”

Eight extremely powerful strikes covered the sky and crashed down onto the atmosphere shattering it instantly. Each strike rushing forward looked like a stampede of armored horsemen.

“The Eight Strikes of Desolation mastered to perfection.”

The crowd was amazed by the attack and its boundless strength and power. The sound of the five disciples’ attacks colliding with Lin Feng’s attack filled the atmosphere.

“Die.” Yue Yang threw himself towards Lin Feng. Flames were unceasingly coming out of his body even stronger and hotter than before. When he had seen Lin Feng using the Eight Strikes of Desolation, he was surprised as he hadn’t thought that Lin Feng was so strong. But he thought that a perfectly mastered Eight Strikes of Desolation, when facing the combined power of five ranked elite disciples, it was still far from being enough to compete with them.

“Die.”

The whistling sound of the sword spread throughout the atmosphere. The atmosphere was glowing with the power of sword force. It looked resplendent.

It was so quick that it all that could be seen was a trace of light between them. Before the light slowly faded to the sound of Lin Feng sheathing his sword.

Yue Yang’s body was still diffusing an immense flame. He even had a flame coming from his head. Suddenly, in the blink of an eye, a small line had appeared on his neck out of which blood started to endlessly spill.

Sword unsheathing.

They had all almost forgotten that Lin Feng’s strong point was when he was using his swords. He was better at using swords than his fists.

There was an incredible amount of sword force contained within the arena and the sword was still glowing with power.

Lin Feng's Eight Strikes of Desolation attack a moment ago had been very powerful but he had relied on the strength of the first Ling Qi layer and had attacked all of the five ranked Elite Disciples. Yue Yang seemed to have forgotten that Lin Feng was an expert at using swords and that he could use both hands. That was the price to pay for forgetting that. For underestimating Lin Feng the small price of a head would be collected.

“Was that sword unsheathing?!”

Quite a lot of disciples knew the attack. They were astonished though because they thought sword unsheathing was a useless skill... but in Lin Feng's hands, it was so powerful. It was fast as light. In his hands it was an incredibly destructive skill.

That sword! How breathtaking! How stunning!

“No wonder Protector Bei appreciates him so much. Give him any skill and he can accomplish miracles with it.”

Lin Feng was now even higher within Nan Gong Ling's esteem. He was most likely only at the first Ling Qi layer and could already master Eight Strikes of Desolation to perfection as well as Sword Unsheathing. It was hard to believe that he had just become an elite disciple when looking at his skills.

Chapter 78: The Patriarch's Mistakes

The four other disciples had survived the Eight Strikes of Desolation attack. Standing side by side, they were looking at the dead body lying on the fighting stage yet they all were still calm.

Yue Yang was ranked seventy first. He was the strongest of the five disciples but Lin Feng had killed him with a single strike. If it had been any of the other four, they would have been unable to withstand that strike.

Lin Feng, who was stronger than Yue Yang had the potential to kill each of them.

When thinking about what had just happened, they were paying more attention while staring deeply at Lin Feng. A slight murderous chill had filled the air and as it was carried by a small breeze, on contact it would make the disciples shiver.

“When I take your life, don’t forget to remember that you cruelly took the life of others before. You will equally be killed by someone stronger than you. This was the fate chosen by you. You will now have to deal with the consequences of your actions.”

Lin Feng finished speaking and started to walk forwards.

Sword energy had started to fill the atmosphere and condense on the tip of his sword.

A cold sweat ran down the backs of the four elite disciples. They could feel exactly how powerful the sword force contained within the sword was. Was Lin Feng already a sword master? How could he master sword force to such a high level?

A strong Qi filled the air within the arena and with each step it was growing stronger. The four disciples could feel that the terrifying sword force and Qi were growing stronger with each step made by Lin Feng. It seemed like this force was absorbing the Qi from the atmosphere.

“We cannot delay this for even a second longer, my Qi is getting weaker while the sword force and the Qi contained within his sword continue to grow stronger. If we wait too long, we are doomed.”

The four of them were looking at Lin Feng vigilantly and understood that the situation was getting incredibly dangerous. At the same time they had all started rushing towards Lin Feng from different directions.

“Die.”

An incredibly violent sword force started to press down against the four other disciples. His hand slightly moved and suddenly a radiant light shot through the atmosphere.

Suddenly two sprays of blood shot into the air like bloody arrows and turned into an endless stream. His sword was so deadly that with each move another life was taken.

Two bodies fell heavily onto the ground making a soft thud. When rushing towards Lin Feng, the remaining two disciples had chosen to move slightly slower than the others who had just died. They had betrayed them and used them as a shield.

But did they think that they were going to survive?

Everybody in the crowd was shaking in fear, especially some of the elite disciples. How? How had Lin Feng become so strong? Not only was the Qi he was using of the first Ling Qi layer but he had also managed to kill ranked elite disciples with a single strike. He was fighting five elite disciples and rather than being at a disadvantage, he had already killed three of them.

“Sword of Nirvana... It’s an average skill of the Xuan level. That skill enhances the power of each sword strike and also enabled the cultivator to greatly increase his power when using sword force.”

Many people were looking at Lin Feng and his swordplay. It seemed like he had chosen skills which are usually ignored by other disciples. Many people thought that the Sword of Nirvana was a useless skill. However they didn’t know that the Sword of Nirvana was actually an extremely powerful attack which had the potential to match that of a high Xuan level skill. However it required an advanced understanding of the world and elemental forces. It was a very hard skill to practice. This was the reason why so many people had not considered this skill.

But Lin Feng could already master that skill to perfection and

fully benefit from the enhanced power contained within his sword.

“Escape.”

The remaining two thought to themselves. Escape was the only thing which remained within their minds. They couldn't fight against Lin Feng anymore. They both turned and attempted to retreat into different directions.

“Die.”

Lin Feng's eyes were very sharp. His sword started to glow and an extremely powerful sword Qi spread throughout the atmosphere and then pierced down through the atmosphere. It was aiming directly at each of the remaining two disciples. When the Qi pierced through their bodies, they both heavily collapsed onto the floor.

The names of these five Disciples had now disappeared from the stone on which the ranking list was engraved.

“Sword of Nirvana... how powerful. What a terrifying sword force! how strong!”

Many of the ordinary disciples and even elite disciples were looking at Lin Feng with adoration filling their eyes. No wonder that he had dared to provoke Wen Ren Yan. Lin Feng's abilities and natural talent was much higher than that of Wen Ren but his cultivation was lower due to less time practicing. With enough

time he would definitely be stronger than Wen Ren Yan.

Liu Fei's pretty eyes were wide open. She was shaking at what he had just witnessed. That bastard had killed five ranked elite disciples?

"It seems like I'll never be able to get my revenge and defeat him."

Liu Fei was thinking. Her main goal was to get stronger and defeat Lin Feng. But she wouldn't have thought that the lowly bastard was even stronger and more talented than she had initially thought. It seemed like it would be impossible for her to take her revenge in this lifetime. But Liu Fei refused to stop working hard as one day she might have the chance to gain the advantage again.

Nan Gong Ling was making a wry smile while looking at the fighting stage.

"That guy... killing five extremely talented ranked elite disciples without any hesitation..."

"Patriarch, even though they were fairly strong disciples, they were exterminating their fellow disciples so ruthlessly. Maybe they would be a calamity for the sect in the end."

Mo Xie moved and whispered something to Nan Gong Ling.

Nan Gong Ling looked at Mo Xie and seemed to be really

disappointed. He then said: “When these five disciples slaughtered their fellow disciples and when Wen Ren Yan approved it, why didn’t you say anything at that moment?”

“Patriarch, how could Lin Feng....?” started to ask Mo Xie.

“Alright, I have a pretty clear idea of everything that is going on at the moment.” Nan Gong Ling was annoyed for being interrupted Mo Xie. Mo Xie had no choice but to step back. He couldn’t help but look at Lin Feng as he still hoped in his heart that he would get the chance to kill him. Mo Xie wanted to kill Lin Feng more with each passing day. He couldn’t bear being in the Yun Hai Sect while Lin Feng was still breathing.

“Lin Feng.”

Nan Gong Ling was looking at Lin Feng who was standing on the fighting stage with a smile on his face.

“Patriarch.”

Lin Feng turned around and looked at Nan Gong Ling who was standing up.

“It was already clear to you that your strength would enable you to win these ranked battles. But before joining, wasn’t there something you needed to do?” asked Nan Gong Ling with a smile on the corner of his mouth. Lin Feng made him feel even more gratified each day. Not only was Lin Feng extremely strong,

powerful and naturally gifted, but he was also polite. He wasn't arrogant at all. Lin Feng was stubborn but he fought for his convictions. Considering how talented and strong he was, he still acted as if he was an ordinary person.

On the other hand, he could understand things and draw conclusions, like when he had said that Cultivators who had reached the Ling Qi layer were actually weak when considering the whole Continent of the Nine Clouds.

Lin Feng was also thinking about his future and thought that he could climb up within the hierarchy at some point and occupy a high position in the country or even in the continent.

“What?” asked Lin Feng.

“Put on your elite disciples robes.”

Nan Gong Ling laughed. Lin Feng was really an unconventional genius... wearing his old ordinary disciple robes in the presence of extremely important people such as Duan Tian Lang wasn't appropriate.

“Hehe.” Lin Feng had a smile filled with a hidden meaning on his face. He shook his head and said: “I will not put on the elite disciple robes and I will also not become a ranked elite disciple. If I fought on the fighting stage of the Life and Death Arena, it was just to show these few people how ignorant they were.”

“Huh?” Nan Gong Ling frowned. He was puzzled and thus asked: “What is that supposed to mean? Can you please explain?”

“Patriarch, ordinary disciples don’t count as genuine disciples of the Yun Hai Sect and they are able to leave the Sect as they wish, correct?”

Lin Feng’s words made Nan Gong Ling’s heart pound like mad. He was very confused but didn’t show anything and just said: “Correct.”

“Patriarch, I hope that you can forgive me for this but from this point forwards I am no longer a member of the Yun Hai Sect.”

“.....”

Lin Feng’s words stunned a great multitude of people. Lin Feng wanted to leave the Yun Hai Sect?!

What kind of joke was that? Lin Feng was standing on the fighting stage within the Life and Death Arena like a warlord adored and respected by everyone... but then he suddenly said he would leave the sect. How were people supposed to feel after hearing these words? How could they not be stunned?

Everybody wanted to understand why Lin Feng would act in such a way. They needed explanations.

“Hahahaha.....” an insane laughter emerged. Duan Tian Lang

was laughing and laughing. He then looked at Nan Gong Ling and said: “The Yun Hai Sect has to go through some hardship I see. How horrible for you to have to say goodbye to such an amazing disciple. How amusing! It’s really funny.”

“Lin Feng, right? You can come to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue where you will receive everything that you need to become an even stronger cultivator.”

“Lin Feng, my sect, the Ice and Snow Mountain Village usually only accepts cultivators who possess an ice or snow spirit. Today, I can make an exception and accept you. If you are willing to join us, I will make you a core disciple right away.”

“Same for our Hao Yue Sect, if you want to join us then I can arrange that you will be a core disciple.”

A few of the powers were trying to make Lin Feng join their sects in the presence of the entire Yun Hai Sect which made them furious. The cheeks of the Yun Hai Sect members were burning. They found themselves feeling incredibly humiliated at such actions.

“I will think about it.” said Lin Feng in a detached tone while smiling.

“What a little bastard! If he doesn’t die now then the entire Yun Hai Sect will be humiliated as well as its dead disciples!” shouted Mo Xie furiously. He was smiling coldly in his heart though. Lin Feng was going to get in trouble because of his own actions.

“Shut the hell up!” shouted Nan Gong Ling furiously which stupefied Mo Xie. Mo Xie was stunned when he saw that Nan Gong had a cold smile on his face.

“Lin Feng, three days ago, I personally made you an elite disciple. You used to be eager to become an elite disciple. What has happened? Why would you want to leave the Yun Hai Sect and rebel against it?”

Nan Gong Ling was struggling to remain calm. It wasn't easy to see a genius who wanted to leave the Sect. Could it be that other members of the sect had threatened him that if he didn't leave, they would kill him?

“Rebel against it and leave? Patriarch, the word “rebel” is not really appropriate. In fact, it is the Yun Hai Sect which has already abandoned me. In the sect, it seems impossible for me to earn my place.”

“Explain.” said Nan Gong Ling who was full of doubts.

“First, I would like to ask the Patriarch a few questions, is it possible?”

“Of course, you can.”

“Patriarch, as an ordinary disciple, one has nobody to learn from. One can only rely on one's self. Is that right?” asked Lin Feng.

“That’s right.” said Nan Gong Ling while nodding. In fact, this was the way it had always been. Even elite disciples who received cultivation teachings from elders were extremely small in number.

“Patriarch, as an ordinary disciple, one can only access the first floor of the Xing Chen Pavilion if one wants to learn new skills and agility techniques. All of these skills and agility skills are of the yellow level. One can access these skills and agility techniques anywhere else. Many places provide these skills and techniques. Is that right?”

“That’ right.” said Nan Gong Ling nodding again.

“Since it’s that way, everything that I’ve been learning until now, all the progress that I’ve made on the path of Cultivation, would it be wrong to say that it is all only due to my hard work and that I learnt everything alone? Therefore, since there are no strong ties between the Yun Hai Sect and me, would it be wrong to assert that the Yun Hai Sect means almost nothing to me? That it is almost useless for me to be a Yun Hai Sect member?”

When Nan Gong Ling heard Lin Feng’s words, his face changed and he went pale. The entire crowd also found themselves pale at the thought, but nobody could deny what Lin Feng had said.

At that moment, Nan Gong Ling nodded again and said: “You are right, the Yun Hai Sect means almost nothing to you but you are a Yun Hai Sect member after all. Leaving because the Yun Hai Sect has given you nothing is the wrong reason. It’s illogical. However,

if you want to leave for other reasons, because of your own personal interests, then it would definitely be ungrateful.”

“Patriarch, please wait until I finish talking.”

“Go ahead.” said Nan Gong Ling.

“The first time that you and I met was here in the Life and Death Arena. I was unpopular and nobody knew me. I was a nobody. Chu Zhan Peng came with Lin Qian. They wanted to take me away and because I was only an ordinary disciple, Elder Mo Xie wanted to hand me over to them very quickly. At that moment, you didn’t know that I wasn’t as weak as everyone thought. If I hadn’t been able to stop you from expelling me from the sect then I would most likely no longer be a sect member. Is that right?”

“I made a huge mistake on that day.” said Nan Gong Ling admitting his fault. Everyone was touched and moved.

Nan Gong Ling was an open minded individual.

“Patriarch, when the flood of ferocious beasts happened, while I was there hunting and not bothering anyone, Mo Xie, who profoundly hates me, attacked me again because I was a mere ordinary disciple. He tried to hand me over to the extremely dangerous ferocious beasts. He tried to kill me. When people saw that I hadn’t died, they started to believe in my strength... but Mo Xie, as before, didn’t get punished at all because I was a simple ordinary disciple. I am a bit weak. I’m not worth it. Is that right?”

Nan Gong Ling was speechless. That was indeed the second time that he had made a big mistake. If Lin Feng hadn't been strong enough, he may have died because of Mo Xie.

At that moment, Nan Gong Ling was staring at Mo Xie. Lin Feng wanted to leave the Yun Hai Sect and Mo Xie looked like he was refuting any responsibility.

“That was my second big mistake.” admitted Nan Gong Ling for the second time. “Lin Feng, I want you to know that Protector Bei was furious because of that issue. He even injured Mo Xie because of that. He almost killed Mo Xie at that moment. You have a privileged place in Protector Bei's heart. I think that he would be devastated if you left the Yun Hai Sect.”

Chapter 79: No Compromise

Protector Bei cared so much about Lin Feng that he had nearly killed Mo Xie?

Nan Gong Ling wasn't trying to avoid talking about taboo subjects as there was too much at stake right now. When he said that, many Elders made a strange face. They all knew what kind of person Protector Bei was and surprisingly, he cared so much about Lin Feng?

Not too far behind Nan Gong Ling, there was another Elder who made a very strange face. It was Lu Yuan.

"Fool, no wonder Xue Yue had protected Lin Feng in front of the ranking list. No wonder he took action to stop me." Lu Yuan was making a depressed face. He would have never thought that Lin Feng had such a terrifying background. He was protected by Protector Bei. He suddenly understood why Xue Yue had told him that he was going to regret his actions of that day.

Lin Feng was also moved. He didn't know that after what had happened with the Imaginary Demon, Protector Bei had become so furious that he had tried to kill Mo Xie. Lin Feng felt bad because he was unable to return the favor and the one person that he really appreciated was Protector Bei.

Lin Feng was reluctant to leave the Yun Hai Sect because of the protectors who had shown him such kindness. He also had some really good friends such as Han Man, Jing Yun, Protector Bei as

well as Protector Kong and he would miss Liu Fei a little too.

“Even with the matter concerning Protector Bei, Mo Xie is an Elder who believes that he is above everybody else and frequently abuses his power. This is a fact.”

“In addition, three days ago when I went to pick up my Elite Disciple robes and my Elite Disciple certificate. Wen Ren Yan tried to kill me and he attacked my friends. Wen Ren Yan is also a Yun Hai Sect disciple. I will of course not blame the Yun Hai Sect for this but Elder Lu Yuan was there and did nothing to prevent it from happening.”

“But Lu Yuan is a Yun Hai Sect Elder. Not only did he not try to prevent it from happening but he also said I should die because I wasn’t as strong as Wen Ren Yan. Is everyone in the sect, who is not as strong as Wen Ren Yan or even stronger supposed to die? All of this is the truth. When the confrontation was over, I asked for my Elite Disciple robes and certificate twice but Lu Yuan just replied with one phrase: get lost.”

When Lin Feng finished talking, everybody understood what he meant. It was all because he was still considered as an ordinary disciple and because he hadn’t been able to get his Elite Disciple robes and certificate. This had all happened because of another Elder within the sect abusing their power to punish him. Lu Yuan had used his power as an elder to attempt to win favor with Wen Ren Yan by oppressing Lin Feng.

At that moment, everybody was staring at Lu Yuan. He was shaking from head to toe in fear. His entire body felt like a giant

weight was pressing down on him. Would he have acted the same if he had known that this would happen?

“Lu Yuan, is what Lin Feng said true?”

Nan Gong Ling’s tone was indifferent but he still sounded firm and imposing. He would not tolerate if Lu Yuan lied in this situation.

“Patriarch.”

Lu Yuan was looking down at the ground. He didn’t dare look at Nan Gong Ling. At that moment, he infinitely regretted what he had done. What had happened because of him? He had provoked Lin Feng because of Wen Ren Yan. However was Wen Ren Yan going to help him today? He had to face the consequences of his actions alone.

When Nan Gong Ling saw Lu Yuan’s reaction, he immediately understood what had happened. There was no need for more explanations, everything that Lin Feng had said was true... and he even kept calling himself an ordinary disciple. What a tragedy!

“Alright... Alright... You have a lot of authority but I respect everyone who can become one of the elite disciples with their own power. When you told him to get lost, you were indirectly telling me to get lost, right?”

“I would never dare.”

Lu Yuan couldn't help but lower his head and look down at the ground. He felt a cold shiver run down his spine. He was only an ordinary Elder within the sect, he did not hold any special rank or status. He wasn't as strong as other Elders either. Mo Xie and Lu Yuan were not comparable, Mo Xie would try to kill Lin Feng every time he laid eyes upon him.

“I will never forget this.”

Nan Gong Ling sounded indifferent which made Lu Yuan panic. He did not know what Nan Gong Ling intended to do with him which is why he was terrified. He feared the unknown punishment he would receive.

Nan Gong Ling looked at Lin Feng and couldn't help but reveal a wry smile on his face. Each time they had met, someone had wanted to kill Feng and an Elder of the sect had wronged him.

“Patriarch, today, you have to understand me and what I had to go through. I don't know when Mo Xie will try to kill me again. I also don't know exactly how many people like Mo Xie and Lu Yuan there are in the sect. Even if an elite disciple is a high status within the Yun Hai Sect, it is still lower than that of an Elder. Much like all the times before, if an Elder wants to kill me, he can do it freely whenever he wants, as if I am nothing but a piece of trash that they can dispose of at any time. This is all that we disciples mean to the sect. ”

Every single word Lin Feng said was resonating deeply in

everyone's heart. Everything was true so nobody could deny anything that he has said. Nan Gong Ling was also unable to refute anything which was just said.

“Lin Feng, what do you want me, Nan Gong Ling, to do?”

Nan Gong Ling was intently staring at Lin Feng while saying these words.

Everybody was astonished. Because Nan Gong Ling wanted Lin Feng to stay, it seemed like he had completely put aside his status of Patriarch. It even sounded like Nan Gong Ling was begging Lin Feng to stay.

“In fact, all of this is not happening because of you. It is happening because in this world, strength and power are the most important things. Without strength or power then your life is not valued. This is exactly where the problem lies and it has deep roots within the sects.”

When Lin Feng saw how Nan Gong Ling was handling the matter, he had a good feeling. As a Patriarch, he forgot about prestige and glory and was losing face, but he didn't care. He knew that apologizing a few times and admitting one's faults was the right thing to do. That way, Nan Gong Ling showed that he loved and cherished all of his disciples. He did not protect his face and understood he had been wrong.

“Patriarch, you already told me that only those who are strong and powerful can be respected and are considered as important

members but have you ever thought that outstanding disciples, just like everyone else had to start from the bottom while being called worthless? Everyone within this world, no matter how powerful was at one point a low leveled cultivator. All of us never stop progressing and each person has their own pace. Imagine if low level cultivators with an incredible potential think that they are not important at the beginning because they did not progress as fast as others. If they think they mean nothing to the Yun Hai Sect then how discouraged will they be in their future cultivation? How are they supposed to have faith in the sect once they become strong? How can they believe they will ever been considered as important and that they will be cherished?”

Lin Feng’s words made Nan Gong Ling think about the sect itself. Indeed, strong disciples had also all started from the very basics but they were noticed by the sect only once they made a display of their own abilities, only once they stood out. Some of them were considered so weak initially that they were targeted much like Lin Feng and even when they became strong, those who hated them continued to target them.

“The same punishments are applied no matter who breaks the rules, regardless of whether it is an ordinary disciple, an elite disciple or even an Elder who breaks the rules. That’s the only way to live in harmony and advance together. There should be many cases where Elders have randomly killed disciples. If the rules are broken, the violator, no matter who he is, should be punished.”

“Disciples and Elders should be punished the same way. The violator, no matter who he is, should be punished.”

Nan Gong Ling looked perplex. Indeed, in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, strong cultivators also had to abide by the rules even if they had higher status or power. Why did this not apply within the Yun Hai Sect?

Nan Gong Ling realized that he had made a lot of mistakes. Outside of the Sect, there were rules for everyone but what about the Yun Hai Sect? If it did not change then the same as what happened to Lin Feng would happen again. There were a few cultivators who were not respected when they were weak but actually had an infinite potential. Once they were strong, how were they supposed to respect the sect if they hadn't been respected before?

“That guy is really a genius. He's so fascinating and wise. He has a lot to teach.”

Thought Nan Gong Ling as he was looking at Lin Feng and then said in a very solemn tone: “You have just taught me and made me realize a great deal. Lin Feng. If someday, you were to be one of the leaders of the Yun Hai Sect, it would definitely enter a period of prosperity and glory. I really hope that you will stay.”

Lin Feng, would someday become one of the leaders?

Everybody was puzzled. Did Nan Gong Ling's words have a hidden meaning with further implications?

Lin Feng shook his head. He didn't really care about these things, he just wanted to make everybody understand the error of their

ways. He had a certain potential and could understand a lot of things but it maybe wasn't all that was needed to become a good leader.

“Patriarch, I don't feel like leaving the sect. I just want everybody to understand how ignorant and cruel they are behaving. I also want to have a reason to stay.”

Lin Feng's words weren't as cold and sharp as before. Even Nan Gong Ling, Mo Xie and Lu Yuan felt calmer at that moment. Even if he stayed in the Yun Hai Sect, Lin Feng wouldn't devote himself to the Sect in the future. However, he admired and had a lot of esteem for Nan Gong Ling for the actions that he had taken today. Besides, leaving the Yun Hai Sect wasn't required. He just needed a reason for him to stay.

“Lin Feng, I will prevent others from bullying and threatening you again. No need to say that I will even more do my best so that they don't try to kill you or that they make false charges against you.”

Nan Gong Ling promised.

“This is for the future. What about what happened before? All those people who have bullied and threatened me?” said Lin Feng. Was this really justice?

“My words were not devoid of substance. I will cripple Lu Yuan's cultivation and he will not be an Elder anymore. He will also be expelled from the sect.”

Nan Gong Ling's words were sharp and poignant. Everybody was astonished. Nan Gong Ling was going to cripple an Elder's cultivation because of Lin Feng. This was a clear warning to everyone within the sect that things were changing.

"Patriarch, please forgive me!" said Lu Yuan who turned deathly pale when he heard Nan Gong Ling's words. Crippling his cultivation and expelling him from the sect would make him turn into an existence even weaker than a normal person. How was he going to survive? He would have no reason to live anymore.

"Your crimes are unforgivable." said Nan Gong Ling firmly. Lu Yuan's cultivation had to be crippled for Lin Feng to find his peace of mind.

"Wen Ren, save me!"

Lu Yuan knew that Nan Gong Ling wasn't going to take back his words. He was unable to make Nan Gong Ling change his mind so he shouted these words to Wen Ren Yan.

But at that moment, Wen Ren Yan was trying to find a way to deal with Lin Feng. How could he care about Lu Yuan? He coldly glanced at Lu Yuan and then ignored him again which made Lu Yuan feel like he had been betrayed.

"Heartless and unfair!" thought Lu Yuan.

Lu Yuan understood what Lin Feng had meant. Wen Ren Yan did not care for anyone but himself and was not someone who would care about any past ties. Lu Yuan had now understood that it was useless to back Wen Ren Yan, but he had made Lin Feng suffer a lot and it was too late for regrets.

“Lin Feng, are you satisfied now?” asked Nan Gong Ling.

Lin Feng looked at Nan Gong Ling with a calm face and shook his head.

“Patriarch, it seems like you continue to forget about someone.”

Nan Gong Ling smiled wryly while looking at Lin Feng. This guy was really stubborn.

Everybody was stunned at what they had just heard and then they all looked at Mo Xie. They obviously understood that Lin Feng meant Mo Xie should be the next person to be punished. If it wasn't Mo Xie, who else could it be?

But many people had thought that Lin Feng would be satisfied just because Nan Gong Ling had taken action on his behalf. Nan Gong Ling had asked him if it could be considered enough, which was a hint that he should consider the whole problem as solved.

After all, Mo Xie was an important person within the sect. Not only is Mo Xie an Elder with extremely high status but his father was a Great Elder. He had a lot of power and influence within the

sect. If Nan Gong Ling punished Mo Xie, he would indirectly be punishing his father as well. Nan Gong Ling was in a very critical situation.

But for Lin Feng, there was no compromise. His words were like a sword which intended to behead Mo Xie.

Chapter 80: The Sword Force

Mo Xie looked at Lin Feng with an ice cold look which was filled with killing intent. This brat really didn't know anything about power and status. Did he think that just because he was a genius that he could get Mo Xie into trouble?

“That is ridiculous.” said Mo Xie firmly.

“Patriarch, Duan Tian Lang and the others are here to watch our Elite Disciple Exam. We should continue without delays.”

Mo Cang Lan had been sitting there all along and finally opened his mouth. His eyes had a certain chill emanating from them. He remained silent about the events as the situation was still not clear to him. Protector Bei had tried to kill Mo Xie? He was furious? After all the years that he had spent in the Yun Hai Sect, Protector Bei had tried to kill Mo Cang Lan's son because of this disciple?

Could it be that Nan Gong Ling wanted Mo Xie to kneel down and admit his faults in front of everyone that was present just because of that young disciple?

When Nan Gong Ling heard Mo Cang Lan, he could not help but continue to smile wryly. If Mo Cang Lan hadn't been there, maybe that Nan Gong Ling would have punished Mo Xie but Nan Gong Ling had joined the Yun Hai Sect after Mo Cang Lan. Mo Cang Lan was a senior member of the Yun Hai Sect. Nan Gong Ling could penalize Mo Xie to make Lin Feng feel better but he wouldn't dare to interfere with Mo Cang Lan.

Nan Gong Ling was in a dilemma.

As a Patriarch, he really had to think and properly analyze situation. He was caught between a rock and a hard place.

“Lin Feng, let’s continue with the Elite Disciple Exam and discuss that problem later, alright?”

When Lin Feng heard Nan Gong Ling, he clearly understood that his status was still not high enough. An Elite Elder who had a father who was a Great Elder... they were more important than a junior disciple even if he was a never seen before genius. But Mo Xie needed to be punished for what he had made Lin Feng go through...

Did Lin Feng still have to submit to humiliation and keep being bullied because he was weak?

If Mo Xie didn’t get punished then he would continue to humiliate and threaten Lin Feng or even try to kill him, because he knew that Nan Gong Ling would never do anything against him because of his father.

Lin Feng shook his head. He looked more determined than ever. Even though he was weak, he was still a human being and a disciple of the sect. He deserved dignity and honor the same as every person.

Mo Xie definitely wanted to kill Lin Feng and he had tried to kill him a few times already. If Nan Gong Ling didn't try to do what Lin Feng wanted then Lin Feng would continue to be bullied by Mo Xie and other with high status within the sect. Mo Xie would keep thinking that he could do anything without having to bear the consequences for his actions.

“Patriarch, I understand that Mo Xie's status is high within the sect and that his father is even higher and more important, but does it mean that they can keep bullying and threatening me? Why would I stay within the Yun Hai Sect if I am to remain in constant danger?”

Lin Feng was being extremely firm on this point. Mo Xie had to be punished for his actions. There was no alternative that Lin Feng would accept.

The atmosphere in the Stormy Gorge was completely silent. Everybody was watching the events occurring in suspense. Lin Feng or the Elite Elder Mo Xie, everyone wanted to know whom Nan Gong Ling was planning to choose.

“How stubborn.”

Many people were smiling wryly inside. Lin Feng was being so firm and determined that Nan Gong Ling had to decide then and there. How stubborn!

“This is ridiculous!”

An extremely loud voice spread throughout the atmosphere. It was an elite disciple who was also present at the current events. He was actually a ranked elite disciple and he was ranked twenty first within the power rankings.

“It’s really a bunch of nonsense, Lin Feng! Elder Mo Xie has an important status in the sect and he’s extremely strong. What do you think you can do? Mo Xie humiliated and accused a simple ordinary disciple of crimes, so what? You still dare open your filthy mouth and talk nonsense. I am really ashamed to be a member of the same sect as you. I feel dirty and humiliated.”

The young man had an ice cold tone and dared say that Lin Feng’s words were nonsense.

When Mo Xie heard that disciple speak, he had a big smile on his face and looked at that disciple with a look of approval.

“Lei Bo, there is no need to lower yourself to the same level as this foul mouthed little brat. The Patriarch is a wise man. I know that his decision will be fair and partial.”

“Elder, I obviously know that the Patriarch is a wise man but that little brat who regards himself as a genius is just too insolent. If I came across him during the Elite Disciple Exam, I would definitely kill him.”

Lei Bo said to Mo Xie. They both said that Nan Gong Ling was a wise man to flatter him, if Nan Gong Ling punished Mo Xie, then obviously this would be the actions of a fool.

“I see that Mo Xie raised many stray dogs. No wonder that he is respected by so many and allows himself to murder so many disciples of the sect.”

Lin Feng’s words were extremely sharp. He was looking at Mo Xie in a mocking way. Lei Bo had wanted to protect Mo Xie and he was about to pay the price for it.”

“What a filthy mouth.”

Mo Xie cursed at Lin Feng and glanced at Lei Bo indicating that he was happy to receive his help.

“Patriarch, I, Lei Bo, am an open minded and kindhearted person but Lin Feng has insulted and humiliated me. He called me a stray dog. He’s an animal. I would like to challenge him to a battle in the Life and Death Arena. I hope that Patriarch has no objection.

Lei Bo was furious and asked Nan Gong Ling for permission to challenge Lin Feng.

Nan Gong Ling frowned. Lei Bo was ranked twenty first and he had already broken through to the third Ling Qi layer. He was extremely powerful within the elite disciples. Even a cultivator of the second Ling Qi layer could never compete with him. Even though Lin Feng was extremely masterful when using his sword, the cultivation gap between them was gigantic. It would be too dangerous for Lin Feng to fight against him with only the first Ling Qi Layer.

When Nan Gong Ling was about to refuse, Lin Feng started speaking.

“Patriarch, I am an open minded and kindhearted person but Mo Xie humiliated and bullied me. Then this little stray doggy of his dares say I have a filthy mouth... there is no need for him to ask the Patriarch for permission to battle against me. Let’s just do it!”

Lin Feng raised his head and looked at Nan Gong Ling in an indifferent way. Lin Feng was so confident with his words that Nan Gong Ling’s heart started to beat faster.

Could it be that Lin Feng had hidden his real strength?

When Nan Gong Ling thought that Lin Feng may have hidden his true strength, he became really curious to see and couldn’t help but say: “I allow you to battle.”

“Thank you, Patriarch.” said Lei Bo while looking at Nan Gong Ling, who actually seemed to be really excited. He then moved towards the central fighting stage and climbed up onto it. He was then facing Lin Feng.

“This battle is a Life and Death battle. We both need to put our lives at stake. The Patriarch said it himself. Lin Feng, today everybody will see you die like a dog.”

Lei Bo said these words in an aggressive tone as if he feared that

Nan Gong Ling would go back on his words concerning the life and death battles.

Lin Feng's words before were very aggressive. Mo Xie was unable to get out of this extremely embarrassing and awkward situation. If Lei Bo was able to kill Lin Feng then Mo Xie would take him as his personal disciples and help him improve his cultivation.

“You are very confident.”

“Of course. You just became an elite disciple. You're just a little brat. You may have natural abilities and a high potential but in front of me, a cultivator of the third Ling Qi layer, you are just too weak. I will not even need to release my spirit to kill you.”

When Lei Bo finished talking, a strong Qi was released from his body. It was so extremely powerful that the audience could feel the pressure from him releasing it. His body started releasing sparks into the air and even the dust that approached him exploded. As he moved the sound of thunder roared from his body.

The difference between a cultivator of the first and the third Ling Qi layer was colossal. Even a genius couldn't compete with a much stronger cultivator. Even if Lin Feng had mastered sword forces, it was still impossible for him to win.

“I can tell you, my spirit is a Thunder Spirit. I am as strong as thunder itself. My attacks are extremely powerful and quick. But you will not have the honor to see me release my spirit.”

Lei Bo held his right hand up in the air. It started diffusing a dazzling light. It looked like he was using something extremely powerful.

Possessors of a Thunder Spirit could carry out extremely strong attacks. Besides, each of their attacks was incredibly swift and skillful. Lei Bo hadn't broken through to the third Ling Qi layer for a long time and already had his name on the elite disciple ranking. He was ranked twenty first but he would soon be ranked twentieth.

“Eight Strikes of Desolation.”

Lin Feng didn't feel like talking to Lei Bo much longer. He thrust out his hand and six powerful strikes shot toward Lei Bo.

“Hmph.”

Lei Bo smiled coldly. Lin Feng's six strikes, at the moment when they had crashed into his thunder attack, disintegrated themselves in the blink of an eye.”

“Force.”

Lin Feng took a step forwards an extremely powerful sword force began to invade the entire atmosphere. The atmosphere was absorbed by the sword Qi and the sword force completely.

He thrust his hand out again and another six strikes emerged

shot toward Lei Bo.

But Lin Feng clearly knew that these attacks wouldn't affect Lei Bo too much. He suddenly dashed forward with incredible speed and quickly a whistling sound spread throughout the air. The entire atmosphere was filled with sword Qi and sword force as if his sword was the only thing which mattered in the entire arena.

What was even scarier is that the sword force was getting more and more powerful as it absorbed the energy around it. The sword force was even stronger than what he had used to kill the other five ranked elite disciples.

An incredible force started oppressing Lei Bo's body. Lei Bo had the feeling that he was being strangled and could hardly breathe. It was very painful as if his bones were about to be crushed from the pressure.

“Second Ling Qi layer.”

Lei Bo was stupefied and he then shouted: “You are not at the first Ling Qi layer, you are at the second Ling Qi layer!”

The entire crowd was stupefied. Lin Feng had, once again, hidden his real strength! What a monstrous power! Not so long before, there was almost nobody who knew who Lin Feng was. In a very short time, Lin Feng had repeatedly made a display of his abilities and was now at the center of everyone's attention.

Now with his mastery of forces coupled with his strength of the second Ling Qi layer he was definitely able to compete with a cultivator of the third Ling Qi layer. No wonder he had accepted to fight against Lei Bo without hesitation.

“That young man is really a genius... and the speed at which he learns and masters skills...”

Nan Gong Ling felt like his body had gone numb. He still remembered the first time he had met Lin Feng. Lin Feng was still at the Qi layer. He was so weak. Even Lin Qian of the Hao Yue Sect could humiliate him back in those days. In such a short time, he had become so strong.

Lin Feng had broken through to the Ling Qi layer and had killed five ranked elite disciples. At this moment, he was battling against a cultivator of the third Ling Qi layer and it looked like he had a great advantage over his opponent.

“You just talk shit. You are too weak to be my opponent.”

Lin Feng started moving so fast that it looked like he had disappeared. His sword tore through Lei Bo's clothes and Lei Bo felt an intense pain as if his flesh was being split apart piece by piece. The sword force was terrifying, it was the first time that Lei Bo felt such a strong force. He was terrified.

“Die!” shouted Lei Bo.

Thunderous roars started unceasingly spreading throughout the atmosphere and as they collided with the sword Qi they started releasing sparks. It looked like an incredible storm was being released from Lei Bo's body.

Lin Feng thrust his palm forward.

“Eight Strikes of Desolation.”

A terrifying attack was launched from Lin Feng's palm. His strikes were so powerful that they consumed the sky and covered the whole arena with a domineering power.

“Divine Thunder!”

Lei Bo shouted extremely loudly and suddenly an extremely powerful thunderous roar came out of his hand and started bombarding the atmosphere. The whole crowd was blinded by the sight of such a powerful attack. It seemed like the deadly power contained within that lightning was endless. In the blink of an eye, it had disappeared as it struck against Lin Feng's eight strikes.

“Sword unsheathing.”

Lin Feng's strikes hadn't fully disappeared yet and his sword was already overflowing with an endless amount of sword force.

Sword Unsheathing was a skill which required the utmost speed. The quicker it was, the more explosive its power

was. It was a truly terrifying attack.

Lin Feng's sword force was extremely powerful as it pierced through the atmosphere and consumed everything in its path.

“Divine Thunder of Wrath!”

Lei Bo shouted extremely loudly and looked like his entire body was becoming a thunderstorm. Both his hands raised to strike against the atmosphere with all the power contained within a thunderstorm.

“BOOOOOOOM!!!”

The thunders collided with the sword Qi and the sword force. A dazzling light blinded the entire crowd and a scorching heat rushed outwards from the collision. The power of the shockwave was so strong that it would sting the disciple's skin and they couldn't even open their eyes.

Lei Bo felt an incredibly intense and sharp pain come from his body. He would have never thought that Lin Feng could be this powerful.

What terrified him was that the sword force contained within each of his strikes was growing stronger each time.

That sword was surrounded by an incredible amount of sword force. Not only was it not weakening but it was also growing

stronger which gave Lei Bo the impression that he was going to collapse under the weight of the sword force.

Chapter 81: Pure Insanity

“Roaring Thunder.” Shouted Lin Feng.

He then thrust his sword towards Lei Bo.

The sword force which he unleashed started to combine with thunderous roars in the atmosphere. The atmosphere was being consumed by the immense power of the attack. In Lin Feng's hands, that yellow level attack coupled with sword force was as powerful as a Xuan Level skill.

Roaring Thunder was filling the atmosphere with an incredibly explosive force.

Lei Bo's hands were still unleashing a powerful thunder Qi. He had managed to block Lin Feng's Roaring Thunder but he was sent flying backwards while groaning in pain.

Lin Feng's sword force started to consume more energy and grow even more powerful.

“I give up! I do not want to fight anymore.”

Lei Bo shouted extremely loudly. He knew that he couldn't win against Lin Feng and on top of that, he was already wounded from attempting to block the last strike.

The twenty first ranked elite disciple, who was at the third Ling Qi layer, suddenly wanted to give up when fighting against Lin Feng?

The crowd sighed. Lin Feng who had only shown his power 3 days ago, he seemed to be invincible. He continued to shock people with his incredible strength.

“If you look at him, it seems like he is around fifteen or has just turned sixteen.”

The crowd was trying to guess how old Lin Feng was compared to his battle ability. They were even more stupefied when they thought about it. He was still sixteen years old and could defeat a cultivator of the third Ling Qi layer who was on the elite disciple rankings... How was that possible? Was he really human?

Lin Feng stopped moving, his sleeves were swaying with the breeze, but the Qi and the sword force which filled the atmosphere were still omnipresent and just as oppressing as before. Lei Bo's body was still feeling the immense pressure crushing down on his body making it hard for him to breathe.

“Give up?”

Lin Feng had a cold smile on the corner of his mouth: “This is a fight in which we both put our lives at stake. If I live, you die... and if I die, you live.”

“We are fellow disciples of the Yun Hai Sect and we don’t hate each other so why do you need to kill me?” said Lei Bo hoping to make Lin Feng change his mind.

“How ridiculous! You think that I will fall for that? Could it be that you forgot what you said before this battle? You said that you could kill me whenever you wanted? You even said that you didn’t even need to release your spirit to kill me. Have you also forgotten that this battle is a battle where our lives are at stake? You said it yourself. If you were stronger than me, would you still say that we are fellow disciples and let me live?”

Lin Feng was disgusted by Lei Bo’s words. Saying so easily that they were fellow disciples and that they didn’t hate each other after everything that he had said before, he had to be insane.

“Lin Feng, you are extremely strong but it would be impossible for you to kill me. Even if you defeat me, you will have to bear the consequences for it.”

Lei Bo knew that Lin Feng wasn’t going to let him off so he tried to threaten him.

“Oh, is that so? Watch me then.”

Lin Feng’s eyes suddenly started to fill with killing intent and a smile appeared on his face. His sword released even more force coupled with thunderous roars.

Lei Bo started to rub his eyes as he could not believe what he was seeing. He couldn't see Lin Feng anymore. Instead of Lin Feng, there was only a huge sword in front of him. That sword was glowing and coupled with the extremely bright light was a dark fog. In that dark fog, so many lights were sparkling that Lei Bo had the impression that a million swords were hiding within it. The black fog had started to move in his direction.

Extremely loud thunder sounds spread throughout the atmosphere.

Lei Bo shouted extremely loudly. Even more powerful and intense thunder emerged from his body. His body was coated in a Qi which was yellowish-blue, it contained the power of thunder and lightning.

When they saw the light surrounding Lei Bo the crowd was surprised. What was Lei Bo doing exactly?

Lin Feng's sword was more suited to battle. He didn't need to consume too much energy in order to carry out powerful attacks and he could also use it for protection. It gave the impression that Lin Feng was like a fortified mountain.

The crowd didn't understand what was going on. The crowd could not see Lin Feng's sword the same way Lei Bo did.

In Lei Bo's eyes, there were a million swords whose lights were dazzling and which were trying to kill him. Sword lights were shining everywhere inside the black fog and could take his life at

any time.

“It’s the end for you.” Said Lin Feng in a cold voice which stupefied the entire crowd.

“Sword of Nirvana”

Sword of Nirvana made his sword turn into a deadly sword. Each strike would take a life and its power defied the heavens. His sword descended from the heavens themselves towards Lei Bo.

It seemed like his sword had pierced the heavens themselves. From a distance it could be seen that a hole was pierced through the clouds and the heavens had been pierced.

It looked like his sword would destroy the entire universe if it stood against him.

It was over with this strike. Lei Bo was finished.

The entire crowd was blankly staring at that wonderfully mystical sword.

The millions of swords as well as the black fog disappeared from Lei Bo’s vision but his face revealed that he had given up all hope because there was a terrifying light which kept moving towards him. It was most likely the last light that he would see in his life.

“Don’t.....”

Lei Bo’s shout resonated everywhere in the Stormy Gorge but his body could not move. He was still stood on the stage motionless.

After what seemed to be an eternity, a thin mark appeared between his eyebrows. It was a thin bloody mark which slowly started to pour with blood. His body fell heavily onto the fighting stage within the Life and Death Arena.

That’s what the Life and Death Arena was about: life and death!

Did he die? The twenty first ranked elite disciple who had a Thunder Spirit had been killed?

Lei Bo had wanted to protect Mo Xie. He had wanted to kill Lin Feng and gain the Elders favor. He would have never thought that he would become Lin Feng’s stepping stone. At that moment, the Patriarch was secretly afraid that Lin Feng would start his verbal assault where he had left off.

Even though the Elite Disciple Exam was about fighting, not many disciples had participated in it. This kind of event was unprecedented in the history of the Yun Hai Sect’s Elite Disciple Exam. It had however been an extremely enlightening event and many disciples were forced to look deeply at their actions until now. There was not a single person who regretted watching these events unfold.

The crowd of the Yun Hai Sect had realized that they were witnessing the rise of an incomparable genius.

“I want that young man!”

Duan Tian Lang’s eyes were glowing. He then quickly glanced at Duan Han. Lin Feng’s abilities and power were infinitely higher than that of his son, of whom he was already intensely proud.

“If he doesn’t join me, I will make sure he dies today. I will not allow him to rise up or let him become more powerful. He could become an extremely large obstacle.”

The Patriarch of the Hao Yue Sect, Chu Qing, as well as Bing Han of the Ice and Snow Mountain Village thought the exact same thing. If Lin Feng continued becoming more and more powerful, he would definitely become one of the eight high officials!

Lin Feng couldn’t understand all these people’s thoughts. He wasn’t even as strong as Mo Xie. He was unable to kill Mo Xie but he definitely wanted to make him understand that he could not bully and threaten him as he wished.

Since he hadn’t showed all of his abilities so far, the sect did not recognize him. Then he just had to show them more.

Holding his soft sword in the hand while his robes were swaying in the air, Lin Feng slowly glanced around at the Stormy Gorge.

“Mo Xie, because he is an Elder, he dares to behave unscrupulously. He dares to try and kill disciples in cold blood. He is the shame and disgrace of the Yun Hai Sect. My current strength doesn’t enable me to kill that scum of the sect. What I want is for that degenerate to get expelled from the sect.”

“.....”

The entire crowd was stunned, astonished, stupefied! Lin Feng had wild ambitions! He suddenly wanted Mo Xie to get expelled from the sect!

That was almost impossible! If Mo Xie was expelled from the sect, Mo Cang Lan would completely lose face!

“That guy really is insane.”

Liu Fei was looking at Lin Feng. She was speechless. She couldn’t stand Mo Xie either but she had never thought of trying to get him expelled from the sect, not even in her dreams! It was impossible for an elite disciple to get an elite Elder expelled from the sect, but Lin Feng was not sparing any efforts in his attempt to remove Mo Xie.

Mo Xie, who was sitting on the viewing platform looked ghastly pale. In his eyes, a mere disciple was less than a bug to him. They didn’t even exist in his eyes and suddenly, there was a disciple on the fighting stage of the Life and Death Arena accusing him of various things and calling him the shame and the scum of the sect, and on top of that, he wanted to get him expelled from the sect. He

had never been so humiliated in all of his life.

He used to be the one who demanded that other people would be expelled from the sect. He used to be the one who expelled lowly disciples from the sect. However these things were now happening to him.

If these things had happened at any other time before then he would have killed Lin Feng without the slightest hesitation.

But that was almost impossible now because of Nan Gong Ling.

As the Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect, he had to give consideration to all parties. Mo Xie was an elite Elder and his father, Mo Cang Lan was a Great Elder. They were both given the great honor of enforcing the rules within the sect.

As far as Lin Feng was concerned, he was one of the most extraordinary geniuses that the Yun Hai Sect had ever had. Wen Ren Yan would never be able to achieve the same level as Lin Feng, they were worlds apart. Lin Feng was also protected by Protector Bei.

If he wanted Mo Xie to be a little bit penalized, that could possibly be arranged, however Lin Feng said that if Mo Xie was still in the Yun Hai Sect, then he would leave. Lin Feng's terms for staying within the sect was to expel Mo Xie from the sect.

"I know that Mo Xie's status is high and important, he is an Elite

Elder. I also know that his father, Mo Cang Lan is a chief figure in the Yun Hai Sect and that he has dedicated his life to serving the Sect. I am also aware that I am currently a nobody within the sect and that my words carry little weight. I know that if Mo Xie commits crimes, I cannot do much but Mo Xie tried to kill me on multiple occasions. Even after being almost killed by Protector Bei he still had thoughts on taking my life. If he is not severely punished for his crimes, how am I supposed to put my mind at rest and stay within the sect?”

“I just have my sword to show everyone what I am really capable of. This is my only way of proving to the Yun Hai Sect that having me is ten times, no, a hundred times better than having Mo Xie.”

Lin Feng’s words were inspiring. Lin Feng was even crazier than Wen Ren Yan but was in no way weaker than him.

Everyone however was wondering how Lin Feng could prove that having him was a hundred times better than having Mo Xie.

Nan Gong Ling was curious as well to know how Lin Feng could prove that.

At that moment, Lin Feng, who was still standing on the central fighting stage of the Life and Death Arena, was just looking at many elite disciples sitting on the sidelines and declared: “Today is the Elite Disciple Exam. I, Lin Feng, am now challenging any elite disciple who is willing to fight against me. Anyone can come and challenge me. No matter what kind of battle, normal or life and death battle, no matter how many I need to fight against, I will fight with anyone under any terms.”

“What?!!” people in the crowd were stunned. You could hear everyone’s heartbeat start to intensify.

“He’s a madman. That guy is insane. He wants to challenge every elite disciple?!”

How insane! Wen Ren Yan could even compete with core disciples. Even some of the disciples within the top ten elite disciples could fight with core disciples. They all had unique skills and abilities. They were much stronger than Lei Bo. Lin Feng suddenly dared to look at these elite disciples as if they were weaklings. What was going to happen?

The crowd was just speechless. Could it be that Lin Feng was really insane? Had he lost his mind after defeating Lei Bo?

But if he was able to defeat any of the elite disciples, then wouldn’t he really prove to the Yun Hai Sect that having him was better than having Mo Xie. If he could defeat any elite disciple under their own terms then wasn’t it even greater than a hundred times the worth of Mo Xie.

“This bastard...”

Liu Fei’s magnificent eyes were wide open. Lin Feng was way too crazy. A short time before, he was only a simple ordinary disciple and nothing more.

Han Man couldn't help but giggle. He was so proud to see Lin Feng, who was like a brother to him, on the fighting stage of the Life and Death Arena while issuing the challenge. He had a big smile on his face.

Nan Gong Ling was also shocked beyond belief. He was completely stunned. Lin Feng wanted to challenge all of the elite disciples?

Even though Lin Feng was naturally gifted, had he really become so terrifyingly strong?

“Actually, as far as I can remember, he has not been using his spirit.”

Nan Gong Ling suddenly had a realization; he realized that he had never seen Lin Feng release his spirit. He was extremely curious and he was excited to find out what Lin Feng's spirit was. Considering he had already mastered sword skills and sword forces, could it be that he had a sword spirit? If he had a Sword Spirit then he would probably be able to make his sword force even more powerful.

Chapter 82: The Rise of a Genius

Currently there were some elite disciples whose eyes had lit up, especially the twenty at the top of the rankings.

They all regarded themselves as geniuses. They were arrogant and prideful. But Lin Feng, who was on the fighting stage of the Life and Death Arena dared to talk conceited nonsense and challenge every elite disciple to battle against him.

But many of them were worried about how strong Lin Feng really was, especially those close to Lei Bo within the rankings. Lin Feng was so strong that he had managed to kill Lei Bo and was even threatening all of them at that moment.

What made them even more worried was that many of these geniuses had noticed that Lin Feng hadn't released his spirit at all. If he had a Sword Spirit, his strength would probably be monstrous. That would definitely be terrifying and incredibly dangerous to step on the same stage as him.

Nobody had dared to reply to Lin Feng as many were deep in thought. The atmosphere was drowned into absolute silence. That silence was broken a few times by some of the sword Qi, which emanated from Lin Feng's body, ripping through the air.

“Wen Ren Yan, you called me a piece of trash, a nobody and said that you can easily kill me. Do I need to come down and beg you to kill me? Now that you have an opportunity to kill me, what are you waiting for? Are you currently not scared to challenge like

those you called worthless before? ”

Lin Feng was looking at Wen Ren Yan. When everyone heard his calm voice as he spat insults into Wen Ren Yan’s face, they were all stupefied.

Lin Feng was definitely someone who continued to surprise.

He suddenly dared challenge the top ranked of all the elite disciples.

Wen Ren Yan was at the peak of the third Ling Qi layer. Even though Lei Bo was at the same Ling Qi layer, nobody would dare compare Lei Bo and Wen Ren Yan. They had nothing in common at all.

Cultivators of the same Ling Qi layer were not necessarily comparable. For example, Lin Feng was at the second Ling Qi layer but could defeat and kill Lei Bo who was at the third Ling Qi layer. The skills practiced and battle experience played an extremely important role regardless of the layer reached.

Wen Ren Yan was also similar to Lin Feng. He had broken through to the third Ling Qi layer but many core disciples of the fourth Ling Qi layer didn’t dare provoke him.

“You are overestimating your abilities. Just because you killed Lei Bo doesn’t mean that you can compete with me. Lei Bo was nothing in comparison with me. In my eyes, Lei Bo was the same as

you, a piece of trash, a nobody.”

Wen Ren Yan, was looking at Lin Feng with eyes filled with disdain. Lin Feng wasn't weak but challenging Wen Ren Yan was like committing suicide. Strength is strength. In Wen Ren Yan's eyes, Lin Feng was a weak piece of trash.

“You talk so much shit. Is it because you want to show off in front of everybody?”

Lin Feng didn't understand what Wen Ren Yan exactly meant. Lin Feng then added: “You don't have to be like that. Since you are so powerful and that you consider me as a piece of trash, as a nobody, then just climb up onto the fighting stage immediately. Show everybody how strong you are and kill me. Show everybody your real power. Actions will always be better than the drivel from your mouth. Everybody will believe you when you come onto this fighting stage and prove your words or you can continue to hide there and talk big.”

“Everybody can talk big. Lei Bo also called me a piece of trash before I killed him. He said he was stronger than me. What happened in the end?”

Lin Feng's words were straightforward and he was clearly provoking Wen Ren Yan but what he was saying was actually the truth. Anyone can talk big but it only matters if your actions can prove what you say.

If Wen Ren Yan climbed onto the fighting stage of the Life and

Death Arena, he would gain infinite glory. He would be regarded as an amazing talent by everyone in the sect. But he wasn't doing it at all.

Not only didn't he climb onto the fighting stage but he kept talking and talking, bragging about how amazing he was.

In his eyes, Lin Feng was just a nobody, an insect which he could crush at anytime. Since Lin Feng could be crushed at any time, why did he need to fight? Talking and humiliating Lin Feng was enough but was that enough to be regarded as a strong cultivator?

Wen Ren Yan glanced at the people standing next to him who were still looking as arrogant as ever.

“You guys go and kill him. I will give you the glory of killing him.”

Many people's eyes were glowing with killing intent when they heard Wen Ren Yan. Wen Ren Yan was considered a great cultivator by everyone. The glory for killing him... they all know what it meant.

Wen Ren Yan had a lot of profound pills. There was a profound pill which he had in abundance: a sort of pill which had a deadly attraction force.

“I'm going to kill him.” said a silhouette while moving towards the fighting stage. It was a young man aged seventeen, no older

than eighteen. His gaze was as sharp as a dagger. He looked to have an extremely brutal nature.

“Tong Shou, the blade master.”

“It’s him. Lin Feng is in trouble.”

The young disciple came out from the crowd. When Tu Fu had become a core disciple, there were two extremely respected and strong elite disciples: Wen Ren Yan and Tong Shou.

Even though Tong Shou was ranked sixth on the elite disciple rankings, nobody had doubts concerning the fact that Tong Shou was much stronger than the four others who were above him in the rankings.

That was because Tong Shou’s spirit was a Blade Spirit. If Tong Shou only had a blade spirit, people wouldn’t have so much faith in him but he was similar to Lin Feng with his mastery of force, he was able to control blade forces.

Tong Shou wasn’t able to master blade forces like Lin Feng mastered sword forces. There was actually a huge gap between them as far as forces were concerned. However, Tong Shou had already broken through to the third Ling Qi layer which would bridge the gap in strength between their forces.

Tong Shou versus Lin Feng, it should be a very balanced battle.

“Alright, go ahead. Don’t immediately kill him. When the time of his last breath comes, make him kneel down in front of me so that he understands before he dies that I am much stronger than him. The difference between him and me is colossal.”

Wen Ren Yan said that in an indifferent tone.

“Don’t worry, I understand.”

Tong Shou slightly nodded and then went up onto the central fighting stage. He was facing Lin Feng and looking as if he had already won.

He then grabbed the long knife that he had on his back then said in a voice filled with hatred: “I have used this knife for a long time. Being killed by it should be an honor for you.”

“If I properly understand, you’re implying that you choose to have a battle where one of us must die, correct?”

Lin Feng asked that question in an indifferent tone.

“Do you think that I have time to play with you?”

Tong Shou was looking at Lin Feng in an evil way. His expression was sharp and poignant like his knife. His body was radiating killing intent.

Tong Shou grabbed his long knife and caressed it as if it was his beloved girlfriend.

“The knife is an extremely powerful weapon. It’s the best of all bladed weapons. The Blade Spirit is also an extremely powerful spirit.” Said Tong Shou.

“I’ve always heard that swords were the best bladed weapons. It’s really the first time that I have heard that a knife is the best of all bladed weapons.”

Lin Feng was calling in question what Tong Shou said.

“What do you know about such things? A blade from a sword is too heavy. Sword force is also much harder to control. How could you even compare a knife and a sword? Today, I will show you what a knife is. You will understand that it is the best bladed weapon ever.” Said Tong Shou.

A powerful energy emerged from his long knife and spread throughout the atmosphere like a fierce flood. It seemed like it was cutting everything in its path.

“Blade force.”

Lin Feng was surprised. How could that guy brag about his knife? Lin Feng also mastered forces and the force of that knife was quite weak in comparison.

Lin Feng's sword emitted a whistling sound. The atmosphere was filled with two opposing forces. The forces on the fighting stage were extremely sharp and were piercing and cutting everything within their path.

“Blade force against Sword Force... How terrifying!”

Many people who were close to the fighting stage were projected back by the forces which had just been released. Many could feel the oppressive nature of these forces. They were too close. They had the feeling that they were going to be cut and pierced by the confrontation of the two forces.

“But it seems like Tong Shou's knife will be much stronger. After all, he is a cultivator of the third Ling Qi layer. He's much stronger than Lin Feng. It looks like Lin Feng was unlucky this time.”

“So, do you still think that swords are better than knives?”

Tong Shou was arrogantly looking at Lin Feng.

“Ignorant.” snorted Lin Feng.

Lin Feng didn't reply to Tong Shou's question and was sneering at him.

“I'm ignorant? Alright, I will show you who the ignorant one is.”

When Tong Shou finished talking, the force released from his knife became even stronger and more powerful. It seemed like it was going to completely envelop the sword force and Qi.

“Celestial Spirit!” thought Lin Feng.

Lin Feng released his spirit but didn't say anything. Everything around him started to change into a world of darkness.

The entire world was now covered in complete darkness. He became omniscient. He could feel and sense every single bit of blade force and sword force around him. He knew where every single particle of energy was situated and exactly how they were moving around in the atmosphere.

Lin Feng's eyes had turned completely pitch black. They looked like black holes.

“The knife is the best bladed weapon. It is too powerful. A sword is not even comparable with such a magnificent weapon.”

Tong Shou took a step forward and suddenly the color of the atmosphere changed. It was filled with the horrifying blade force from his knife.

Tong Shou moved towards Lin Feng and he looked like he was invincible. An incredibly powerful strength seemed to fall from the sky onto Lin Feng's body and then started oppressing Lin Feng.

“Laceration!”

Tong Shou shouted extremely loudly as he stabbed forward with his knife. It seemed like even the sky could not stop itself from being lacerated.

Lin Feng looked as calm and serene. He remained absolutely fearless as he stood there. It seemed like he completely disregarded the power of Tong Shou’s knife.

The glowing light of his sword started rising into the air towards the atmosphere where Tong Shou’s blade force was the weakest.

“BOOM!”

Nan Gong Ling’ heart was pounding. Tong Shou’s knife was like a hot knife cutting through butter. It was as fast as lightning with its attack. Lin Feng’s sword force kept being lacerating by the force contained within the knife. It seemed like Lin Feng’s body could get lacerated at any second. Instead of dodging, Lin Feng had used his sword to counterattack, why?

Even though Lin Feng could use his sword in an extremely skillful way, the force of his sword wasn’t as strong as Tong Shou’s blade force. If Lin Feng could get rid of Tong Shou’s blade force then there probably wouldn’t be any problem but that seemed impossible. If Lin Feng didn’t dodge the attacks then Lin Feng’s body would be cut into two.

During that extremely short amount of time, Nan Gong Ling had a million thoughts rushing through his mind. That young disciple who certainly would be able to rise up someday... was he going to get killed that easily and that quickly?

Lin Feng had gotten much too excited. He should have controlled himself better.

Tong Shou was smiling coldly. He wouldn't have thought that it would be this easy to kill Lin Feng. What alternative was there? Lin Feng had put himself into this situation. If Lin Feng had known earlier then he wouldn't have said that blade force was weaker than sword force. Besides, wasn't the knife much quicker than the sword?

Ignorant!

Tong Shou could already see Lin Feng's body being cut into two.

The crowd was also already imagining that. Everybody had stopped breathing. They were speechlessly staring at the fighting stage and had the impression that there was nothing on it but a knife and a sword.

Finally, the deadly light of the knife vanished. It seemed like time had stopped.

Tong Shou's knife was twenty centimeters above Lin Feng's head and Lin Feng's sword was now held at his waist.

What was happening? Their two bodies had frozen in that strange position.

A small breeze was blowing in the air. Somebody coughed breaking the terrifying silence that had consumed the whole arena.

“Who won?”

Suddenly, somebody asked the question. It was not clear to them who had won the battle. Everything had been too fast. They didn’t even know where to look.

Tong Shou seemed like he was about to speak. Everybody was stupefied. Had he really killed Lin Feng?

“How did you do that?”

The one who asked that question was Tong Shou. It seemed like he couldn’t believe what had just happened.

At that moment, Lin Feng spoke slowly and unhurriedly.

“Blade force and sword force are the same, they are force. A force is a good way to enhance your attack power as well as other abilities necessary in a battle. A knife has many different uses in life, it is a tool created to aid us. My sword is different, the sword is made for the sole purpose of killing.”

Lin Feng was standing straight with his head held high. Tong Shou was had blood pouring from his chest. Blood was flowing endlessly from his body onto the ground. Everybody was just staring at the amount blood in shock.

“I understand.....” said Tong Shou while his eyes slowly closed themselves. Then, his body also slowly collapsed onto the ground.

Immediately after the crowd could not believe their eyes. Lin Feng had thrown the body into the crowd of disciples. He refused to let it remain on the stage in disgrace.

Tong Shou had lost, another genius had been killed by Lin Feng!

“How terrifying!”

Everybody had the impression that they were in a dream when looking at Lin Feng. It was like he had supernatural powers. He was like a death god as he stood on the main stage. It seemed like nobody was able to defeat him. No matter how strong his opponent was, Lin Feng was always stronger.

“Pheewww...” Nan Gong Ling took a deep breath. He didn’t know what to think though.

Another valued genius of the Yun Hai Sect had died and it was only because Lin Feng wanted to prove how powerful he was.

Nan Gong Ling did not want to pay that price.

But even though Nan Gong Ling regretted losing so many disciples, he still felt gratified to have a disciple such as Lin Feng. He was also happy to see the rise of a real genius.

That kind of strength, that kind of power, who could compete with it?

He was starting to believe Lin Feng. Lin Feng just needed a little bit more time and nobody could stop him. Even a hundred Mo Xie-like cultivators wouldn't be able to defeat Lin Feng.

Chapter 83: Confrontation of Geniuses

Lin Feng turned around and looked at the elite disciples once again.

“Does another one of Wen Ren Yan’s delegates wish to come onto the fighting stage and die in his place?”

Nobody dared to reply, not even those who were above Tong Shou in the ranking list.

Tong Shou’s knife was extremely powerful. Even if they wanted to win, they thought it wasn’t worth the risk as they may lose their life in doing so. Once again, Lin Feng had used his sword to strike only once and Tong Shou’s blood had been spilled.

What had scared them even more is that they didn’t know if Lin Feng had really shown all his strength. He had only required a single strike which was not enough to measure his power. Each time he would increase the power depending on his opponent.

Tong Shou had been killed in a single strike. Exactly how much of his strength was still remaining hidden? He was always stronger than his opponent, how was that possible?

Everybody was staring at Wen Ren Yan as if they thought that Wen Ren Yan was the only one who could defeat Lin Feng.

“Today’s Elite Disciple Exam could almost be entitled “The Rise

of Lin Feng””

Some people in the crowd were smiling wryly as someone made that comment. The Elite Disciple Exam had gone completely off track. The original purpose was completely forgotten. There was only a single person at the center of their attention. They were focusing on that genius who was named Lin Feng.

Almost everybody without exception was intensely staring at Wen Ren Yan. Wen Ren Yan frowned as his face twisted with anger and he looked like a demon with hatred filling his eyes.

Lin Feng had been demonstrating extraordinary talent every time he fought. Each time, Lin Feng was surprising everybody even more. Therefore, at that moment, Wen Ren Yan had the feeling that he was being slapped in the face by every single person who was staring at him because he had kept humiliating Lin Feng over and over again calling him a nobody and a piece of trash. His own words had come back to humiliate him in front of the entire sect.

At that moment, no other elite disciple would dare to fight against Lin Feng. Only Wen Ren Yan could fight against Lin Feng. However at this point many people were scared that Wen Ren Yan had talked too big and was not Lin Feng's match.

Lin Feng was extremely strong and had hidden his power to such a great degree. He hadn't talked big and he had not lost face yet. How could anyone call him a nobody or a piece of trash?

“Wen Ren Yan, are you not supposed to prove to everybody that I

am a piece of trash and a nobody now? I think that's what you should do." Shouted Lin Feng which broke the silence and echoed throughout the arena.

Lin Feng was also staring at Wen Ren Yan and quickly glanced at Han Man who had been injured by Wen Ren Yan. Lin Feng really wanted to kill Wen Ren Yan when he had found out about him injuring Han Man. He had built up a great deal of killing intent just thinking about it.

Wen Ren Yan had lied and said to everybody that Liu Fei was his girlfriend. Lin Feng, because Liu Fei had now said that she was his girlfriend, wanted to kill Wen Ren Yan even more. Because of Wen Ren Yan he was once again stuck with Liu Fei.

Wen Ren Yan was more arrogant than strong.

"Since you are stronger than me, come and kill me, otherwise it means that I am stronger than you and you are just courting death."

Lin Feng was secretly had a cold smile in his heart. Wen Ren Yan and Mo Xie were the same. They had to die because of what they had done to him and his friends.

If Lin Feng didn't kill them, whenever they would have an opportunity to kill Lin Feng, they would do so without hesitation.

"How ridiculous. How pathetic."

said Wen Ren Yan as he started walking towards the highest central stage of the Life and Death Arena.

In the blink of an eye, everybody's expression changed. They could not hold back their excitement. They couldn't wait to watch the battle of these two geniuses.

Wen Ren Yan was the top ranked elite disciple who could even fight with core disciples. He was ranked first from all the powerful elite disciples. Before Lin Feng appeared, Wen Ren Yan was considered as the junior disciple with the greatest future potential. He was considered as a treasured genius within the sect. Of course, his strength hadn't reached that of Ling Hu He Shan or Tu Fu.

The rise of Lin Feng seemed like it had started. Lin Feng was killing all the arrogant disciples because they had humiliated him or threatened him. The ordinary Elder Lu Yuan's cultivation would be crippled and he would be expelled from the sect because of Lin Feng. Lin Feng also wanted Mo Xie to be expelled from the sect.

These two disciples were considered as outstanding geniuses in the Yun Hai Sect. Who could dare criticize them?

“You think that just because you defeated Lei Bo and Tong Shou, you can compete with me?”

Wen Ren Yan said with his usual arrogant and aggressive tone and then added: “If I want to, I can crush you like a bug. You're

just a nobody, an insect, in my eyes. I don't think it's worth fighting against you but you are insisting so much that I have no choice but to prove you how ridiculous your provocations are. How pitiful for you that you are so over confident."

"I will use your death to prove to everyone that my abilities are endless."

He was arrogant, aggressive and thought he was the best cultivator in the world. However he was indeed strong and respected within the sect.

"The only thing which is endless is your ability to talk shit." Shouted Wen Ren Yan as he grew even more angry.

The more Wen Ren Yan heard Lin Feng talk, the even more hideous his face looked.

"Alright."

When the two disciples were both on the fighting stage, Nan Gong Ling started talking.

"You are the geniuses of my Sect. The Yun Hai Sect will need you both in the future. You are the successors of those in charge of Yun Hai Sect. Please let's make this battle an educational one for yourselves and everybody who is present. There will certainly be a lot to learn from your battle. So please, this time, do not fight until the death."

Nan Gong Ling thought that Wen Ren Yan and Lin Feng were outstanding geniuses within the Yun Hai Sect. The Yun Hai Sect could be proud to have such disciples. If any of them died then it would be too much of a loss for the Yun Hai Sect.

Nan Gong Ling hoped that none of them would die or get severely injured, or to be more precise, he hoped Lin Feng wouldn't die or be injured.

That was because Nan Gong Ling perfectly knew how powerful Wen Ren Yan was. His strength was way too monstrous. Besides, Wen Ren Yan had a very rare spirit which was more powerful than an average spirit.

“Patriarch, that piece of trash has been provoking me over and over again. How could I not hate him bitterly for that? This will be his grave.” Said Wen Ren Yan.

Nan Gong Ling was unable to convince Wen Ren Yan. Nan Ren Yan definitely wanted to kill Lin Feng. If he didn't, he wouldn't be able to prove everyone that he was the true genius of the Yun Hai Sect.

Lin Feng was just a nobody and could not be compared with the mighty Wen Ren Yan. This was Wen Ren Yan's current though process.

“Lin Feng, please refrain from this fight.”

Nan Gong Ling couldn't help but beg Lin Feng to not fight.

Lin Feng was slightly smiling and said, while looking at Nan Gong Ling: "It seems like the Patriarch still isn't convinced of my abilities, could it be that I have not shown you enough yet?"

Nan Gong Ling smiled wryly and said while shaking his head: "Lin Feng, Wen Ren Yan has broken through to the third Ling Qi layer and has a Blue Bamboo Beast Spirit. Even though you are very strong, you still need more time before you are able to catch up with him."

Blue Bamboo? Blue Bamboo Beast Spirit?

Lin Feng eyes shrunk. In his memories, the blue bamboo beast spirit was a sort of snake who was small yet very venomous. It had blue eyes and was as fast as lighting. Besides, it was capable of dodging attacks very efficiently. Its power was horrifying and just the mention of it made many people cower in fear.

"That's why his eyes look so hideous when he was angry. Sometimes, they look like they're blue. That comes from his beast spirit."

Lin Feng was thinking about Wen Ren Yan's hideous blue eyes. They really looked like that of a snake and made people feel very uncomfortable when looking at them.

But would Lin Feng lose only because Wen Ren Yan had a Blue Bamboo Beast Spirit?

“Patriarch, don’t impose restrictions on them. That little brat keeps humiliating my disciple over and over again, he must die. If he doesn’t die then it would make me lose face. Do not put them under any restrictions in this fight.”

At that moment, a cold and high pitched voice spread through the atmosphere. A woman was on the top of the gorge. She had called out as she was slowly descending into the gorge. Her body looked lithe and graceful. In the blink of an eye, she landed onto the viewing platform.

“Who is she? Wen Ren Yan is her disciple?”

The crowd was staring at the woman who had just appeared. She looked haggard and the little hair she had on her head was hanging loosely which gave people a gloomy impression. She looked like she had come straight out of a horror story.

Besides, she dared to talk to the Patriarch in such a way which meant that she certainly had a high status.

There were also a certain number disciples who recognized her. They wouldn’t have expected her to intervene. Things were not looking good for Lin Feng with the arrival of this woman.

“Teacher.”

Even though Wen Ren Yan was normally extremely haughty and arrogant, he was acting very courteously in front of this woman. He was even more polite to her than to Nan Gong Ling.

“Hm.” the woman slightly nodded while looking cold and detached. She glanced at Duan Tian Lang and then said to Nan Gong Ling: “Patriarch, we should not get involved in this issue, otherwise, that would make these two disciples lose face.”

Nan Gong Ling was making a wry smile. He hadn’t thought that this woman would appear there. It seemed like things were getting worse and worse.

“Old woman, you come here and tell the Patriarch that he shouldn’t get involved, but what are you doing yourself?”

A silhouette which was high the air said as its wings created small whirlpools in the atmosphere.

“Protector Bei.”

Nan Gong Ling was even more surprised with each passing minute. The conflict between Wen Ren Yan and Lin Feng made two of the protectors get involved.

“Lin Feng, what do you think?” said Protector Bei

“I agree to a battle to the death.”

Lin Feng had obviously understood what Protector Bei meant. If he said he didn't agree, Protector Bei would protect him. He had to fight in order to settle his grievance.

If Wen Ren Yan knew what even one of Lin Feng's spirits were then he would immediately refuse this battle and escape. Even if he was entirely convinced by his own strength, Lin Feng also had powerful spirits which were much stronger than his own. Lin Feng would not back down from this fight.

Protector Bei said: “If you really want to fight in a battle to death, this is your own decision and I will not intervene but you have to remember that you might regret it later.”

“No need to think about useless things.” Said Lin Feng who shook his head. He was already determined to kill Wen Ren Yan.

“Ok.” Protector Bei felt gratified and was nodding, he then said: “Once you have won, I will help you have Mo Xie expelled from the sect.”

When they heard what Protector Bei had said, the entire crowd was stupefied. Protector Bei was planning to help him expel Mo Xie from the sect? It looked like the old man of the Xing Chen Pavilion was an incredible figure within the sect. Who else could make such a promise to Lin Feng? He was also incredibly sure of Lin Feng's victory.

Mo Xie's face looked hideous and evil intentions filled his mind. If Lin Feng won this fight then Protector Bei would expel him from the sect, what a bastard!

Mo Xie hated Protector Bei so much at that moment. The difference between their statuses within the hierarchy was like heaven and earth, Protector Bei was even higher in status than his Mo Cang Lan. Mo Xie could only hope that Lin Feng would die in the upcoming battle.

“Old woman, if Lin Feng is defeated, I will not get involved however if Lin Feng wins, will you get involved?”

Protector Bei was looking at the woman as he asked his question.

“Why would I do that? Besides, my disciple will not lose.”

The old woman was looking at Protector Bei with eyes full of confidence in her disciple. Protector Bei was also very proud of Lin Feng and believed that this would be his victory.

Protector Bei nodded looking indifferent.

“Since it's like that, you may now fight.” Said the old woman.

Nan Gong Ling was smiling wryly. Now that the old woman and Protector Bei had appeared, nobody was listening to him anymore.

So, after this battle, there would be only one genius disciple left?

Nan Gong Ling was extremely reluctant but what choice did he have?

Lin Feng and Wen Ren Yan's battle was inevitable.

Both of them were standing on the fighting stage of the Life and Death Arena. Wen Ren Yan was looking at Lin Feng and said: "I really don't understand why Protector Bei has any confidence in you. He surprisingly believes that you can defeat me. He will soon find out that he has overestimated your abilities."

"In front of me, you are just a miserable insect. In front of me, people will think that your abilities are pathetic and miserable. I will prove to everyone that I am the only genius within the Yun Hai Sect."

When Wen Ren Yan finished talking, an evil Qi emerged from his body. From his back, a small snake appeared and floated behind him. Even though the snake was only a shadow, people had the impression that it was a real venomous snake. This was Wen Ren Yan's Blue Bamboo Beast Spirit.

Chapter 84: The Real Threat

The small Blue Bamboo Snake slithered up onto Wen Ren Yan's body until it finally sat atop his head. Its blue eyes looked incredibly evil.

“Lin Feng, look into my eyes.”

Wen Ren Yan was speaking loudly. Lin Feng was staring at Wen Ren Yan's evil blue eyes. They looked like torrents of lightning. Lin Feng was so absorbed in Wen Ren Yan's eyes that he was absent minded for a second.

Wen Ren Yan had an evil smile on his face. He suddenly moved as fast as lightning and landed in front of Lin Feng in the blink of an eye. He thrust out his hand directly towards Lin Feng's head.

“How quick!”

Everybody was stupefied. Not only did Wen Ren Yan's eyes look really evil but he was also extremely quick and agile. When Wen Ren Yan released his spirit, his entire body looked like a snake. Looking directly into his eyes for even a few seconds could lead to your death.

“This looks bad.”

Lin Feng had been absent minded for only a brief moment and had quickly used his sword to block the attack. In the blink of an

eye, an extremely powerful energy struck against Lin Feng's sword and sent him into the air. His soft sword was zigzagging in the air and it looked like he was going to fall heavily on the ground because of Wen Ren Yan's attack.

“Moonlight Feather Agility.”

Lin Feng's body started to twist in mid air and he managed to land steadily on both his feet.

Wen Ren Yan didn't even try to come close to Lin Feng. He was still at the same place and said with an evil smile: “You see the colossal difference? You may be a genius, but in front of me, you are nothing. If I want to play with you, I can play with you. Even if I don't attack you, my speed alone would make it impossible for you to even touch a hair on my body.”

“As expected, Lin Feng is strong but the difference between Wen Ren Yan is gigantic. Lin Feng is unable to even touch him. Wen Ren Yan is way too powerful. Even the second of the ranking list would be unable to compete with him.”

The crowd was convinced that Lin Feng couldn't do anything. Wen Ren Yan's attacks almost couldn't be blocked. Lin Feng would quickly get discouraged and end up losing his life.

Lin Feng's eyes shrunk. He didn't dare look at Wen Ren Yan's blue pupils again.

When Wen Ren Yan released his spirit, his eyes were filled with an evil light. If you looked at them even for even a second, you could be paralyzed. Lin Feng hadn't forgotten what had happened just a moment ago.

What the Blue Bamboo Beast spirit allowed Wen Ren Yan to do was extremely frightening. It granted him incredible speed and the ability to paralyze an opponent.

It was a wonderful natural ability. Some geniuses had such amazing spirits that they had a clear advantage over many people. Wen Ren Yan was one of those people with an amazing spirit.

“Celestial Spirit.”

Lin Feng's cold look disappeared and was replaced by a pair of pitch black eyes which looked extremely evil. He gradually became aware of every single movement within the atmosphere as if the world was moving in slow motion. His brain was processing the data at an incredible speed.

His sword was diffusing an extremely powerful Qi and sword force was gathering. The entire fighting stage was filled with the power from his sword. The smell of blood was still fresh on the fighting stage, however the sword was emanating an aura of death. It felt like whatever the sword attacked would be cursed to death.

“Sword force, oh isn't that terrific?”

Wen Ren Yan was smiling coldly. He was motionless and suddenly an extremely violent energy spread through the atmosphere and attacked Lin Feng. The energy was being released from Wen Ren Yan's hand in an attempt to crush Lin Feng. This energy was so strong that it did not compare with Wen Ren Yan's previous attack.

Lin Feng managed to break free while looking as agile as the wind.

The energy being released by Wen Ren Yan's hand was shaking the atmosphere.

“Phewww....”

Wen Ren Yen took a deep breath and tried to attack Lin Feng again.

But it seemed like Lin Feng already knew in advance what attack Wen Ren Yan was attempting and where his attack would target. With graceful and effortless movements, Lin Feng dodged the incoming attack. His body moved like the wind, looking light and agile. It seemed like Lin Feng hadn't required any effort to dodge the attack.

“Huh?”

The crowd was observing Lin Feng with the greatest attention. Lin Feng's body looked so graceful and agile. Could it be that Lin

Feng had learnt and practiced an agility technique to dodge attacks?

“What kind of agility technique could make him so quick and agile?”

“Could it be that it’s not an agility technique and that it’s just an illusion?”

“If Lin Feng is able to create illusions, then that’s really terrifying.”

Many people in the crowd were talking about that move Lin Feng had just displayed. Wen Ren Yan who was extremely quick and agile had suddenly been unable to reach Lin Feng. Lin Feng had been able to dodge his attacks very easily.

Lin Feng was effortlessly dodging attacks and moving with a calm look on his face. Even though the move he had done a moment before looked like an agility technique, it wasn’t one but his Celestial Spirit allowed him to move without wasted movements. His spirit made him omniscient and aware of everything surrounding him which enabled him to dodge to perfection. Besides with his spirit unleashed, Wen Ren Yan was moving in slow motion for him. Lin Feng also felt more relaxed which made it easy for him to dodge Wen Ren Yan’s attacks with a calm demeanor.

“Get lost.” Snorted Lin Feng.

Lin Feng's sword started glowing and he elegantly moved the sword through the air. The force diffused by the sword seemed like it could annihilate anything in its path. Wen Ren Yan immediately jumped back to a safe distance and did not want to approach Lin Feng. They were both moving incredibly quick.

“How can you be so quick?” said Wen Ren Yan, whose evil blue eyes were staring at Lin Feng in shock.

“I thought you wanted to play with me, why are you suddenly retreating? I thought I was nothing compared with you, what's wrong? Why do you keep running away?”

Lin Feng's tone was ice cold. Wen Ren Yan's blue pupils and Lin Feng's pitch black eyes both looked demonic but at that moment Wen Ren Yan couldn't help but stare at Lin Feng's black eyes with a hint of fear.

“Why have his eyes also changed? Could it be that he has a spirit similar to mine?”

Wen Ren Yan was wondering what was going on while looking at Lin Feng's eyes. He had noticed that Lin Feng's eyes had changed. They were ice cold a moment ago but now they seemed expressionless, lifeless and contained endless darkness. In Wen Ren Yan's opinion, it could only be due to some sort of skill or a spirit. This would be the only thing which could explain Lin Feng's eye transformation.

“Skill or spirit, it doesn't matter. I will kill you anyway.” Wen

Ren Yan thought that deep in his heart. He kept staring at Lin Feng and then said: “Lin Feng, look into my eyes.”

Wen Ren Yan’s normal aggressive and cold look was mixed with his beast like eyes. This time when Lin Feng stared at Wen Ren Yan’s pupils nothing happened. His eyes still looked like two endless black holes.

“As expected, it is a skill. It’s impossible to paralyze him.”

Wen Ren Yan looked surprised. It seemed like his two blue eyes were going to be useless against Lin Feng.

“Don’t worry, I was just playing with you. Since you seem so impatient to die, I will help you achieve your goal.”

Wen Ren Yan raised his head. He held his hand out in front of him. His blue eyes were refracting the light around him. An ash-grey Qi emerged from his palm. The Qi was carrying a deathly stillness and the smell of death filled the entire arena.

The Blue Bamboo Snake, apart from being extremely quick when dodging attacks, it was extremely venomous and touching it would be fatal. There was no cultivator who would risk the poison contained within the Blue Bamboo Snake.

Wen Ren Yan had used his spirit to practice demonic skills which allowed him to channel the poison of the Blue Bamboo Snake.

The venom was as powerful as an average Xuan level attack. It enabled Qi to transform into a venomous Qi. This type of attack was extremely powerful. It was also able to paralyze the opponent from pain. Touching it would lead to death or immense suffering.

These kinds of skills were also extremely hard to practice. Only extremely talented geniuses could learn such skills. Besides, they required spirits which could be considered as rare and mysterious. For example, Wen Ren Yan could learn such skills because he had a Blue Bamboo Snake Spirit. His spirit was a perfect combination for these types of skills which enabled him to carry out monstrously powerful attacks.

Wen Ren Yan's silhouette flashed in the atmosphere. His velocity was as quick and agile as before. In the blink of an eye he was already in front of Lin Feng.

He then cruelly attacked Lin Feng with his deathly Qi. Lin Feng was surprised by this action. He had been already been touched by the Qi which suddenly made him move much slower than before.

However, Lin Feng was still very quick and agile when dodging the attacks. He jumped and his body suddenly looked like it was floating in the air. He suddenly thrust out with his glowing sword.

Wen Ren Yan's movement abilities were also extremely good. He was moving like an extremely fast and agile snake. Suddenly, Lin Feng's sword made a whistling sound when it passed next to Wen Ren Yan's body. He had successfully dodged the sword strike from Lin Feng.

“No wonder that Wen Ren Yan is so arrogant. He is indeed extremely strong.”

Lin Feng was feeling gloomy for a second. Wen Ren Yan’s blue pupils as well as his venom were enough to carry out extremely powerful attacks. Besides, his speed when dodging was also extremely good. He could move his body to dodge attacks like a snake. And finally, his speed remained unchanged. It seemed like Wen Ren Yan had no weakness.

If Lin Feng didn’t have his Celestial Spirit, he wouldn’t be able to cope with Wen Ren Yan’s speed of attacks. Because of these things, there was probably no other elite disciple who could compete with Wen Ren Yan. If they fought against him, they would be in quite a terrible situation.

“I’ll see how long you can endure this.”

Wen Ren Yan said that while smiling coldly, he was looking down on Lin Feng more than ever. All of a sudden, an incredible Qi consumed the entire atmosphere.

“That’s enough!” shouted Lin Feng.

“Deadly sword.”

An incredible quantity of sword force emerged from the tip of his sword. It also seemed like it illuminated the entire arena with its

glow. Wen Ren Yan venomous Qi was progressively being pierced and chopped off into pieces by Lin Feng's sword force. Lin Feng stopped using his sword force and prepared to use his Sword of Nirvana.

“A moment ago you said that you were playing with me. I still have seen how you intend to play with me though. The top ranked elite disciple, a peerless genius? Please stop talking such nonsense when standing before me.”

Lin Feng's voice resonated throughout the Stormy Gorge.

Wen Ren Yan thought that he was playing with Lin Feng but how was that even possible? Lin Feng hadn't even been slightly harmed by any of Wen Ren Yan's attacks. He had been able to easily dodge all of them without taking even a scratch.

“Stop talking nonsense and you are nothing. You are just pathetic and childish.” Said Wen Ren Yan whose tone was filled with disdain.

“Stop talking nonsense? Do you not have eyes in that head or do you have no brain? Do you think that you are the only one to possess a spirit?”

When Lin Feng finished talking, a black shadow appeared behind his back. What stupefied everybody was that within that shadow, there were two pitch black eyes. They looked extremely evil and demonic.

“That is the first time that Lin Feng has released his spirit. It looks like it is extremely powerful.”

“What kind of spirit is that? I have never such a thing before.”

Many people were stupefied when they saw Lin Feng’s spirit. That’s right, Lin Feng hadn’t released his spirit until now. They obviously didn’t know that Lin Feng had actually already released the first layer his Celestial Spirit during the battle however it could not be detected.

“Oh my... Is that Lin Feng’s spirit? I remember that everyone said Lin Feng had a small snake spirit and that it was completely useless. Since when does Lin Feng have such a spirit?

Someone had sighed while saying that. The crowd quickly glanced at him and then ignored what he had said. It was an ordinary disciple who was extremely weak. He was obviously misinformed.

“That’s right. I remember Lin Feng’s useless and crappy snake spirit. Could it be that Lin Feng has two spirits? Otherwise, how could he have this spirit as well?”

Another ordinary disciple said. Only the ordinary disciple knew that Lin Feng used to be bullied and humiliated by everyone because of his spirit. Almost all the ordinary disciples remembered that he was known to be a piece of trash.

It seemed like Lin Feng had become a completely new person. In such a short time, he had progressed become so powerful that he was respected by many of the other disciples.

Unfortunately for these ordinary disciples, even though they had said the truth, nobody believed them. They believed that these ordinary disciples were just idiots making up rumours.

Dual Spirit? How could it be that simple? Dual spirits were extremely rare. If Lin Feng had a double spirit, considering that he was already a genius then it would mean that he is not a genius but a monster!

Many of the ordinary disciples were absolutely fascinated by Lin Feng and had become completely captivated.

“Wen Ren Yan, I will show you my real power now.” Lin Feng sounded completely emotionless which made everybody shiver with fear.

Lin Feng hadn't been using his full strength at all until now?

How strong was he?

A black fog emerged from his body and started to cover the fighting stage. Lin Feng's pitch-black eyes were looking more and more frightening and cruel than ever before.

He was holding his sword in his hand out of which was

emanating a huge quantity of sword Qi.

“Celestial Ability.”

When Lin Feng said that, a small white light flashed in Lin Feng’s dark pupils. They looked even more dangerous than Wen Ren Yan’s blue eyes.

Lin Feng had already released his spirit but it was the first time that he was using spirit ability: Celestial Ability.

Wen Ren Yan was somehow paralyzed. Suddenly, Wen Ren Yan’s spirit had appeared in front of his eyes and was using his own skull against him. That was a refraction.

Wen Ren Yan had a strange sensation at that moment. He had the impression that, in that darkness, he was running but that his body was not moving at all.

“Moonlight Feather Agility.”

Lin Feng started to step forwards, Lin Feng was extremely fast and he suddenly appeared in front of Wen Ren Yan and thrust out his deadly sword.

Wen Ren Yan dodged the attack and retaliated with the poison from the palm of his hand.

But at the same time, a black Qi emerged absorbed the poison into the black fog. The sword started to glow again and sword force became extremely thick and powerful.

“Retreat!”

Wen Ren Yan tried to retreat but he found that Lin Feng was closely following him like his own shadow. No matter what he did he could not escape from Lin Feng.

The dazzling glow from the deadly sword swallowed the entire atmosphere once again.

As Wen Ren Yan retreated he continued to be met with Lin Feng’s sword and it was getting harder and harder to dodge his strikes.

Wen Ren Yan gnashed his teeth. He was confused because he could see the glow from the sword attacking him from every angle. No matter where he moved, he would be in danger.

What astonished Wen Ren Yan the most though is that Lin Feng was attacking continuously without break. It seemed like he did not have to think about anything and was reacting and attacking instantly.

“How is this possible?”

Wen Ren Yan was really astonished. How terrifying. It was as if

Lin Feng knew exactly what Wen Ren Yan was going to do at any moment. Just a moment before, Lin Feng had actually aimed his strike where Wen Ren Yan was planning to dodge. It seemed like Lin Feng already knew exactly what Wen Ren Yan would do before he did it.

Maybe it has something to do with the oppressing force in the atmosphere?

Wen Ren Yan's face looked ghastly pale. Lin Feng's sword was glowing again ready to attack.

Wen Ren Yan was exhausted and felt hopeless. He tried to release more poison but it immediately got absorbed by the strange black fog. It seemed like Lin Feng was able to completely dominate Wen Ren Yan's strength and abilities.

“Lin Feng is surprisingly able to put Wen Ren Yan in such a dire situation?”

Everybody's face looked as rigid as wood. It seemed like Wen Ren Yan was no longer at an advantage but was actually in danger. He was just defending himself from attacks. No matter where he dodged, he would be attacked again. Each attack was growing more and more dangerous. It looked like he could be killed at any moment.

Was it really Wen Ren Yan who was playing with Lin Feng or the opposite? It more looked like Wen Ren Yan was in serious trouble.

Everybody was fascinated by Lin Feng. He was so powerful once he released his spirit. He was a real genius and his power was terrifying. The entire crowd envied his power and his talent.

At that moment, they all understood that Lin Feng was hiding another terrifying power. It seemed like he had another horrifying yet sensational power. How frightening! It seemed like Lin Feng was able to block all of Wen Ren Yan's senses and abilities.

“Hey, genius! Why are you having such a hard time dodging and continue to spend your time running away?” Lin Feng said these words with an emotionless tone which sent shivers down everyone's spine.

Lin Feng surprisingly looked like he wasn't tired at all. It almost even looks like he had more energy than at the beginning of the battle as if he had just finished his warm up. The entire crowd was so stupefied that they had mixed feelings: they were both excited and scared of Lin Feng at the same time.

Lin Feng's tone and voice had sounded just like that of Wen Ren Yan before the battle when Wen Ren Yan believed he was just toying with Lin Feng. The crowd was looking at Lin Feng like he was an absolute monster.

In the end, who was the true genius?

“Wen Ren Yan, didn't you say that there was a huge different between you and me? I believe you said that I'd be unable to reach a hair on your body? Yet now you just keep running away and

blocking my attacks. Aren't you feeling ashamed of yourself by now?"

Lin Feng unsheathed his sword while saying these words which stabbed deep into Wen Ren Yan's pride. He was going insane from the humiliation he was suffering.

"Wen Ren Yan, were you not supposed to prove everybody that you were an amazing genius? Is this how you intend to prove it?"

Lin Feng did not look like he was going to let Wen Ren Yan off at all. He was humiliating Wen Ren Yan as he continued to attack him endlessly. Wen Ren Yan's thoughts were getting more and more confused. He was going crazy from the humiliation and Lin Feng continued attacking him over and over again.

"You insult others and call them "a piece of trash". Well, it seems like you are a piece of trash yourself. Can you feel it? It is called humiliation, but you are a shameless person so I guess that you do not understand how to feel shame."

Lin Feng's words continued to bombard Wen Ren Yan's pride and arrogance. He stopped dodging attacks and started to gather a large quantity of poison which threw itself straight at Lin Feng while looking like a snake. Wen Ren Yan was finally brave enough to challenge death.

"You should wait until I am done. Then death will come to collect you."

Lin Feng's pitch-black eyes were expressionless. The sword force was getting more and more intense. It was consuming everything within the atmosphere and growing in power.

“Deadly sword.”

Lin Feng's sword illuminated the atmosphere. It was thrusting towards Wen Ren Yan whose heart was pounding.

“Retreat!” A voice shouted from the crowd. Wen Ren Yan, without hesitation, retreated backwards while focusing all of his remaining power on escaping.

“Die!”

That word spread throughout the atmosphere and Lin Feng's deadly sword began to pierce through the atmosphere annihilating everything in its path.

Chapter 85: Selected Geniuses

“BOOOM!”

A deadly whistling sound spread throughout the atmosphere. Wen Ren Yan would probably be exterminated in the blink of an eye. Wen Ren Yan's face turned deathly pale and blood started to drip from his mouth under the pressure. That sword was incredibly powerful.

“Disperse!”

At that moment, a strong and pure Qi came from the sky and collided into that deadly sword Qi. The rumbling noise caused by their collision was unceasingly resonating in the entire gorge. Besides, a silhouette had landed in front Lin Feng. It was the old woman who was Wen Ren Yan's teacher.

“It's enough. You won.” said the old woman in an indifferent tone yet sounding like she wouldn't tolerate any resistance.

Lin Feng's pupils shrank. How ridiculous. Was that all? He had won? But Wen Ren Yan could continue behaving like before if he didn't die.

“Old woman, have you forgotten our agreement?” said Protector Bei sounding annoyed.

“Don't worry, I haven't forgotten about it but Wen Ren Yan is

my only disciple. Even if I am losing face now, I cannot even bear the thought of losing my only student and seeing him die.”

The old woman’s words deeply moved the crowd. However, she said to Protector Bei that he didn’t have to worry and that she hadn’t forgotten their agreement. She had interrupted Lin Feng and Wen Ren Yan’s battle and had saved Wen Ren Yan. Wasn’t that a bit contradictory?

But the whole crowd didn’t pay attention to that. They were still lost in thoughts recalling Lin Feng’s sword a moment before. Lin Feng had definitely defeated Wen Ren Yan, the top ranked elite disciple.

At that moment, Lin Feng actually became the strongest of all the elite disciples

Nan Gong Ling had already stood up. He was staring blankly at the fighting stage of the Life and Death Arena. He was stupefied but in his heart, he felt extremely gratified by that amazing young disciple.

Lin Feng was just amazing.

“Alright, the Elite Disciple Exam is over for today. Everybody can leave.”

Protector Bei was waving at people. He also didn’t argue with the old woman which surprised a multitude of people.

The Elite Disciple Exam was over?

Everybody was staring at Nan Gong Ling. Nan Gong Ling was staring at Protector Bei who was just nodding.

“Hehe, brilliant. The Elite Disciple Exam is fascinating. There is no need to finish that early.”

At that moment, Duan Tian Lang said these words while scratching his ear which made Nan Gong Ling frown.

“Patriarch, let the crowd disperse. Dissolve the entire sect.”

Protector Bei suddenly sounded so solemn. The entire crowd was astonished. Disperse the crowd... and dissolve the sect?

What was going on?

Many people in the crowd suddenly had a bad premonition and then Duan Tian Lang's laughter spread in the atmosphere.

“No need to waste time. Those at the periphery of the mountain are already dead. Nobody can leave. The best option is to stay here.”

“Duan Tian Lang, what do you mean?!”

Nan Gong Ling suddenly seemed extremely strict and firm. He was intensely staring at Duan Tian Lang.

“What do I mean? Nan Gong Ling, do you think that I have come here only to watch the best Elite Disciples of the Yun Hai Sect fighting at the Elite Disciple Exam? You are way too naive.” said Duan Tian Lang coldly and then said: “I said it already. I came here today because last time, the Yun Hai Sect refused to hand over some of its best disciples. I came here personally as a delegate of His Majesty.”

“Boom....”

His words were detonating in people’s brain. The ground was faintly shaking which stupefied everybody.

Besides, it seemed like it was shaking more and more. Not too long after, it seemed like the entire gorge was about to cave in. The noises were becoming louder and louder, more and more intense and were probably covering the entire area of the Yun Hai Sect.

“Pffffff....” Protector Bei sighed in a sorrowful way. He realized that these people had actually come to the Yun Hai Sect with harmful intentions.

The ground kept shaking and a huge cloud of dust was rising up in the air. At that moment, the crowd looked up in the air and saw a great number of Chi Xie armored cavalry at the top of the gorge. They were carrying bows on their back and looked like they were

ready to attack at any moment.

“Chi Xie armored cavalry.” Lin Feng’s eyes shrank. How come the armored cavalry were suddenly surrounding the area?

Lin Feng glanced at the armored cavalry and then glanced at Liu Fei but at that moment Liu Fei seemed as surprised as him.

What was going on? What had happened?

Liu Fei also glanced at Lin Feng. These were her father’s personal army and they were surprisingly surrounding her father’s sect.

“Could it be that my father gave them orders himself? Is it even possible? Liu Fei was thinking and looked extremely perplexed. She thought that it would be ridiculous. Nobody could understand her father better than her... and her father would have never ordered such a thing.

What was going on?

“Duan... Tian... Lang...” Nan Gong Ling looked enraged and furious. His eyes, filled with murderous intentions, were fixedly staring at Duan Tian Lang.

“Nan Gong Ling, no need to stare at me like this. These Chi Xie armored cavalry are your dear friend’s, Liu Cang Lan’s, personal army. If there is a problem, talk to him, not to me.”

Duan Tian Lang was smiling evilly.

The ground was still shaking. In an instant, the top of the Stormy Gorge was full of Chi Xie armored cavalry. There were so many of them that not a drop of water could trickle through.

The Stormy Gorge was completely surrounded by Chi Xie armored cavalry and the situation really looked critical and dangerous.

Many disciples of the Yun Hai Sect were scared and shaking. What did these people want to do?

In the Stormy Gorge, around the Life and Death Arena, the beginning of a great turmoil was about to happen.

Wen Ren Yan was in a dire situation as blood dripped from the side of his mouth. He was injured from that strike and if this battle continued then he would surely lose his life. However events had unfolded to his advantage.

Suddenly Duan Tian Lang started to move down from the viewing platform. All eyes fell onto him as he slowly stepped down.

Chu Qing, who was next to him, looked at him anxiously. He surprisingly was moving towards the fighting stage of the Life and Death Arena.

He was extremely powerful. It seemed like each of his steps made the entire atmosphere vibrate. He was slowly moving towards the Life and Death Arena and then stepped on the highest fighting stage.

He was walking slowly as if he was having a peaceful walk in a flower garden.

“People of the Yun Hai Sect, please listen.”

Duan Tian Lang glanced at everybody and said in a loud voice: “I, Duan Tian Lang, represent His Majesty. My duty is to select some outstanding disciples who will join the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. However, your Patriarch has refused to help his Majesty’s aim. These days, His Majesty is furious and wants the Yun Hai Sect to disappear.”

Duan Tian Lang’s harsh words penetrated into everybody’s soul. He wanted the Yun Hai Sect to disappear from the Xue Yue Country?

How could he make such a powerful sect as the Yun Hai Sect disappear? There was only one solution... exterminate everybody within the sect.

These people wanted to exterminate every single member of the Yun Hai Sect!!

Everybody was panic stricken. The Yun Hai Sect members had joined the sect for the sake of cultivation to become stronger. Being killed for no reason would be an injustice.

“However, His Majesty is willing to show mercy. He’s giving a chance to every single one of you, ordinary disciple, elite disciples as well as core disciples, whose names are on the ranking lists to accept our offer and leave the Yun Hai Sect to join the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. The others will not be required.”

Duan Tian Lang’s words detonated in everybody’s brain. The crowd felt numb after hearing these words.

Leave the Yun Hai Sect? Only those who were ranked disciples?

Those who were not ranked felt frustrated in their own lack of power. They wouldn’t have the chance to enjoy the best weapons and skills. They may even die here because of the sect they had chosen.

Nan Gong Ling, who was sitting on the viewing platform didn’t look happy to hear this announcement. They wanted to exterminate his beloved Yun Hai Sect? Did he hear them correctly?

The Yun Hai Sect had already been existing for a thousand years. It had gone through many great crises but probably never as serious as the current situation. These were earth shattering events for the sect.

The Hao Yue Sect, the Ice and Snow Mountain Village, the Mo Shou Sect as well as Duan Tian Lang had come to the Yun Hai Sect to completely wipe its roots from the Xue Yue Country.

Obviously, all of this originated from the Imperial clan. They were the ones who had assigned Duan Tian Lang to carry out these tasks. The Yun Hai Sect had become the Imperial Clan's prey.

“Why choose our sect, the Yun Hai Sect?”

Nan Gong Ling sounded cold as ever. He was intensely and fixedly staring at Duan Tian Lang wishing he could tear apart his flesh and bones. Would the Yun Hai Sect disappear under Nan Gong Ling's reign?

“Nan Gong Ling, you really don't understand?” said Duan Tian Lang while smiling coldly.

“If you say that this is because I offended your son, I will not believe it. I think that even you wouldn't believe it. The Hao Yue Sect, the Ice and Snow Mountain Village... you all came for such a stupid and absurd reason.”

Nan Gong Ling glanced at Chu Qing and Han Xue Tian and met their gazes.

“Hehe, you're right. The Hao Yue Sect also refused the request at the beginning but I told them that I would make the entire Yun Hai Sect join me or be destroyed. Then, they immediately accepted.”

Duan Tian Lang's stupefied everybody in the crowd. Make the entire Yun Hai Sect join him or be destroyed?

"I knew it." said Nan Gong Ling with a sad smile on his face. When all these people had come, Nan Gong Ling had tried to guess why Chu Qing would also come along.

"Then, why the Yun Hai Sect? It's easy to guess, because the Yun Hai Sect is the weakest and the easiest to defeat from all of the great powers. You just have to let some of your best disciples of the sect leave to join me then I may show mercy upon your sect."

"You're a liar."

A soft voice said spread in the air. It came from a lithe and graceful silhouette in the crowd which was slowly moving towards the fighting stage of the Life and Death Arena. Her facial expression revealed intense and bitter hatred.

"Duan Tian Lang, you're lying."

Liu Fei's beautiful cheeks suddenly seemed very pale. She was filled with anger and indignation.

"If you chose the Yun Hai Sect, Duan Tian Lang, it's because you are jealous of my father. You envy him. You envy his strength and talent. That is why you chose the Yun Hai Sect and plotted against it. You lied and made the Chi Xue armored horses come with me

beforehand. All of this is because you want my father to suffer because you are jealous that you can never be his match.”

Liu Fei was filled with hatred and then she added coldly: “Duan Tian Lang, you are shameless. You’re disgusting.”

Many people were astonished when they heard Liu Fei’s words. In the Yun Hai Sect, nobody knew exactly what Liu Fei’s status really was or who her father was. From what Liu Fei was saying, it seemed that her father had a really high position within the country, especially if amazing and famous cultivators such as Duan Tian Lang envied him.

Besides, what were the Chi Xue armored horses? They were the private troops of Liu Fei’s father?

“The Divine Arrow, Liu Cang Lan.”

Many people said that together. In the Xue Yue Country, it was said that there was a man even more glorious and famous than Duan Tian Lang. That man could only be Liu Cang Lan and his divine arrow.

At some point, Liu Cang Lan was the leader of a huge army composed of thousands of cultivators and they had saved a city from destruction. They had killed tens of thousands of enemy troops.

An arrow on his back, one man... he had led an entire army on

his own. He had killed a huge amount of enemy soldiers and when he had come back, he was covered with blood and fell into a coma.

The divine arrow was a symbol of the Xue Yue Country. Besides, the Chi Xue armored horses made enemies panic stricken and terrified.

What made everybody proud was that Liu Cang Lan was a member of the Yun Hai Sect and even though he had been helping the Imperial Clan, he had always been loyal to the Yun Hai Sect and had always been proud of being one of its members.

Liu Fei's family name was Liu. Many people would adore her even more for that.

“Fei Fei, how can you even possibly think that way of Uncle Duan Tian Lang? Your father and I are bosom friends. We're like brothers. How could I be jealous of him?”

Duan Tian Lang was shaking his head and smiling. He was looking at Liu Fei with eyes full of affection. That made everyone feel even more scared.

Liu Fei's father and he were bosom friends? Nan Gong Ling thought that Duan Tian Lang was being extremely treacherous. It made him want to vomit.

“You and my father are bosom friends, like brothers? Yet you want to exterminate the Yun Hai Sect and all of my father's friends

and fellow members?”

Liu Fei’s eyes, which were filled with disgust, were staring deeply at Duan Tian Lang.

“Fei Fei, that is what His Majesty wants. If I exterminate the Yun Hai Sect, it will be only because His Majesty has ordered it. This is nothing personal. The Yun Hai Sect of today is not the Yun Hai Sect of tomorrow. What it wants to do now would just be hindering some disciples’ progress, especially the geniuses. Leaving would be a great opportunity for them to learn and benefit from the best resources available.

“Besides, I firmly believe that they will all be pleased. If you don’t believe me, just come and look.”

Duan Tian Lang had a smile on the corner of his mouth. He turned around and look at the entire crowd. His facial expression became ice cold.

“What I said was all true. Ranked disciples, who are willing to leave the Yun Hai Sect, please immediately move over there to the Chi Xue armored horses. Please remember that you don’t have much time.”

The entire crowd suddenly became very agitated.

A lot of people were looking at Nan Gong Ling and the Elders of the sect.

“Those who are willing to leave, please go already. Don’t stay within my Yun Hai Sect.”

Protector Bei had suddenly said that while waving his hand.

“Protector Bei.”

Nan Gong Ling was looking at Protector Bei as if he couldn’t understand what the old man meant.

“Patriarch, this is their own decision.”

Protector Bei looked sad as if his heart was broken. It was hard to abandon ranked disciples. They were all extremely talented. Besides, someday, they were likely to rise to even greater heights. What a pity!

“Alright.” said Nan Gong Ling who knew how sad Protector Bei felt. Therefore, he didn’t refute and then nodded.

“Thank you Patriarch and Elders of the sect.”

Many people, when they saw Nan Gong Ling nod, started moving towards the Chi Xue armored horses.

In the blink of an eye, hundreds of disciples were moving towards the Chi Xue armored horses. Besides, the number of

disciples moving towards the horses was way above the number of actually existing ranked disciples. Many unranked disciples were trying to pass themselves as one of the ranked disciples of the Yun Hai Sect.

“Stop there.” Duan Tian lang had a big smile on his face.

“Fei Fei, you see? These people understand that I’m giving them a great opportunity and they cherish and appreciate it. Therefore, they are happy to leave the Yun Hai Sect for something better.”

Nan Gong Ling looked sad. He had the feeling that he was being abandoned by too many people.

“Lin Feng, you were right. When Yun Hai Sect’s disciples are weak, they are not treated well enough. We don’t attach enough importance to them. Only when they become strong enough, we attach enough importance to them, for the glory of the sect.”

Nan Gong Ling was staring at Lin Feng. His voice was filled with sorrow. He hadn’t realized these things until he saw all these disciples willing to leave. His heart was broken after watching all of the disciples who had wanted to leave.

Hard times were the best moment to see who would remain loyal to the sect and who would attach no importance to it at all.

“Unfortunately, I found that out too late. If I had found that out ten years earlier, maybe things would have been different. I would

already have accomplished great things like Liu Cang Lan.”

At that moment, Lin Feng was expressionless. He also wouldn't have thought that things would turn out this way.

However, Lin Feng admired Nan Gong Ling. Nan Gong Ling cared about the Yun Hai Sect more than himself.

Chapter 86: Only Option!

“For you, it’s too late. For him, he still has a chance. If he wishes to go to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue then we would welcome him with open arms.”

Duan Tian Lang was looking at Nan Gong Ling and Lin Feng. He knew that Lin Feng was a real genius. In comparison to all of the other disciples of the Hao Yue Sect and the Yun Hai Sect, Lin Feng definitely stood at the top. He was such a talented disciple that he had to go to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

Of course, there was still Wen Ren Yan as well. Even though he had been defeated by Lin Feng, he was still extremely strong and his fighting style was indeed lethal. If Lin Feng hadn’t been there then Wen Ren Yan would have been the most outstanding disciple of the Yun Hai Sect.

“Even if they destroy the Yun Hai Sect, they will never kill Lin Feng. He’s way too important. He’s a unique genius which is only seen once.”

“Lin Feng has a bright future with endless possibilities.”

Everybody was amazed by Lin Feng’s talent and envied him. What did they have to do to be as respected by others as Lin Feng?

Besides, it really seemed like the situation was as Lin Feng had described. In the Yun Hai Sect, those who were weak were bullied and threatened. So the Yun Hai Sect had nothing to offer to those

whose strength hasn't manifested itself yet.

“You two, you just have agree to my terms and the doors of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue will open themselves for you. There is no need to repeat myself, but statement that the training conditions will be much better than in the Yun Hai Sect is a fact.”

Duan Tian Lang was looking directly at Lin Feng and Wen Ren Yan.

“That Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue again...”

Lin Feng thought about the fact that Liu Fei had already solicited him a few times and wanted him to join the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue but he still hadn't given his reply.

He wouldn't have thought that somebody would ask him to go there again and in such a short period of time. He definitely never thought it would be under these conditions.

Wen Ren Yan looked rigid, he then glanced at the old woman who was standing on his side and then at Duan Tian Lang. He had a evil smile on his face.

“My teacher is great and the Yun Hai Sect respects me... would it be right for me to leave?” Thought Wen Ren Yan.

The old woman had prevented Lin Feng from killing Wen Ren Yan. Wen Ren Yan could finally repay all of the things she had

done for him.

“Wen Ren Yan is extremely strong and there is no doubt to his talent. Staying here would just be a waste of his talent. He should definitely go.”

“Even though he was defeated by Lin Feng, there is nothing to be ashamed when comparing such geniuses.”

The whole crowd was looking at Wen Ren Yan who was furiously looking at Duan Tian Lang.

“The history of the Yun Hai Sect dates back a thousand years and you want to destroy it in the blink of an eye. How tragic, how pitiful! The Yun Hai Sect.....”

While saying this, Wen Ren Yan had released his Blue Bamboo Beast Spirit.

At full speed, he launched himself at Duan Tian Lang while shouting loudly.

“The Yun Hai Sect’s will live on through me. I will become stronger than anyone within the sect has before!”

When he finished his sentence, Wen Ren Yan had already landed next to Duan Tian Lang while looking as evil as always.

“.....”

The entire crowd was surprised. They didn't know what Wen Ren Yan was doing and they only saw an evil look in his eyes. He was going to betray the sect and join the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

“What a shameless person!”

“He really doesn't care about losing face. How can the sect create such disgusting and shameless person?”

Many disciples and elders were cursing at him.

“Haha....” Duan Tian Lang paused and then said while smiling: “A wise man submits to circumstances. Wen Ren Yan, do not worry because in the future you will never be forced into such a sorry state.”

“Evil little monster!!!”

The old woman looked furious and released an extremely cold Qi and then she rushed towards Wen Ren Yan.

At the moment when the old woman was passing next to Duan Tian Lang, he swung down towards her using his gigantic sword.

A loud thunderous impact spread through the Life and Death

Arena. The body of the old woman was thrown back to where she was initially standing and she couldn't help but feel a sensation of fear fill her heart.

“Teacher, don't worry. In the future, I will become much stronger than you ever could. I will never disappoint you.”

Wen Ren Yan was looking at his teacher with eyes filled with arrogance. The old woman who was forcefully repressing her injuries could not help but spit out a mouthful of blood after hearing these words. It had been a long time since she had seen the sight of her own blood.

“Don't be impatient.”

Duan Tian Lang was staring at the old woman while watching her movements closely and then looked at Lin Feng and said: “What about you? Will you accept my offer like Wen Ren Yan? The Yun Hai Sect has made you suffer greatly, is there even any reason for you to give it face?”

Lin Feng looked at Duan Tian Land with a calm look as if everything that had happened did not affect him in any way. It was impossible to remove the serenity covering Lin Feng's face.

Everybody in the crowd was staring at Lin Feng while impatient to hear his answer.

“Lin Feng, he's right. The Yun Hai Sect has made you suffer so

much. You should go with him. I will not try to prevent you from leaving. Nobody in the Yun Hai Sect will blame you for leaving after everything that has happened.”

Nan Gong Ling had spoken these words as he stood motionless on the viewing platform. Wen Ren Yan had accepted so it would be normal for Lin Feng. Wen Ren Yan had been treated completely differently to Lin Feng. He had received a lot of attention from the sect at the beginning. He had been protected, admired and respected by all of the elders. He had also become the direct disciple of a powerful teacher.

Lin Feng was different. He owed nothing to the Yun Hai Sect. Nan Gong Ling hoped from the bottom of his heart that Lin Feng would stay but he also could blame him if he wanted to leave... because he had no reason to stay.

Even if Lin Feng accepted Duan Tian Lang's proposition, Nan Gong Ling wouldn't blame him but he would definitely be depressed..

“You are asking Wen Ren Yan and me at the same time, do you think that I would reply positively knowing that he might go as well?” said Lin Feng with a cold tone. Lin Feng's reply stupefied Wen Ren Yan. Wen Ren Yan could not suppress the hatred which had appeared on his face when he heard the words from Lin Feng's mouth.

“In this world, enemies cannot be enemies forever. Even if you hate him, I will give you both the same chance to join the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue and the possibility to advance your

cultivation in such an amazing environment, where you will receive the best resources. In few years, you can kill him if that is your wish. I will stay out of personal grudges. All that matters is if you have the strength to achieve your goal.”

“No.” said Lin Feng while shaking his head: “If you have me then you don’t have him, if you have him then you don’t have me.”

Lin Feng was strict with his words which made Duan Tian Lang frown.

“What do you want then?” said Duan Tian Lang.

“I want to kill him, right now.” Lin Feng’s ruthless words had surprised Wen Ren Yan... that bastard...

“Are there no other solutions?” asked Duan Tian Lang.

“No other solution will ease my anger. This is the only option.” replied Lin Feng.

Duan Tian Lang was surprised and after a small moment said: “Alright. But first, you have to promise that you will join us. Once you have joined our side and agreed to my offer then I will kill him where he stands.”

“BOOM.” Wen Ren Yan had the impression that a bomb had detonated in his brain. Lin Feng just had to agree for Duan Tian Lang..... to kill him?

He was betraying the sect which had nurtured him and what was going to happen in the end?! How ridiculous.

Everybody watching felt a cold shiver run down their spines. Surprisingly, Duan Tian Lang attached so much importance to Lin Feng that he suddenly was ready to kill Wen Ren Yan to make Lin Feng join them.

It looked like Wen Ren Yan was going to die a miserable death.

“No. You must kill him first.” replied Lin Feng shaking his head as firm as before.

“If I kill him, will you go back on your promise?” said Duan Tian Lang while shaking his head as well: “Are you trying to use me?”

Lin Feng smiled when he heard Duan Tian Lang’s words: “You are very smart but you are also very heartless. You are good at manipulating others to your will, I don’t like those types of people.”

“So do you mean that you are refusing my offer?” said Duan Tian Lang in a slightly angry tone.

“Indeed.” Said Lin Feng as he indifferently nodded which made everyone watching astonished.

Lin Feng had surprisingly refused to go to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. He had even tried to trick Duan Tian Lang into killing Wen Ren Yan.

Everybody was looking at Lin Feng with a perplexed expression. Nobody understood why Lin Feng would act in such a way.

“Wen Ren Yan, did you see? You are a piece of trash. When you are not needed anymore, nobody will hesitate to throw you away. Even if you stay alive, you are doomed to forever live in my shadow.”

Lin Feng’s words were like sharp blades which cut Wen Ren Yan’s pride into tiny little pieces. His arrogance and pride had just been crushed, he would never forget this moment.

That’s right. Lin Feng just had to nod once and Wen Ren Yan would be killed. How laughable was his situation.

“That’s enough.” said Duan Tian Lang who was now in a bad mood after being used. Staring at Lin Feng, he said: “I admire your courage but could you give me your reason for refusing my offer?”

Duan Tian Lang thought that Lin Feng hated the Yun Hai Sect because of everything that he had said. He could easily kill Wen Ren Yan at any time if it would convince Lin Feng to join them.

“Even though the Yun Hai Sect itself doesn’t mean much to me, I have a debt of gratitude owed for Protector Bei’s recognition and

appreciation. He cares about me deeply and has continued to protect me. Besides, in the Yun Hai Sect, I have friends who are like brothers to me. How could I ever abandon them for worldly items?”

Lin Feng still had a very calm look on his face. He then added with an indifferent tone: “I, Lin Feng, have my own talents and my loyalty cannot be bought.”

His voice wasn’t loud but everybody heard and understood him clearly.

“Protector Bei cares about me.”

“How could I ever abandon them for worldly items?”

These were sentences that the entire crowd of disciples would never forget just like the sound which came from the drums on the Precipice of Zhangu. This would be something which they would never forget in their lifetime.

Although they sounded like simple words, it was not something that just anyone could have said under these circumstances.

At that moment, many people thought of Protector Bei and realized how important he was to the sect.

Protector Bei was really proud of two things in his life. The first one was that he had accepted Liu Cang Lan as his student and the

second was Lin Feng.

That young disciple's words had profoundly touched him.

“Protector Bei, you don't make mistakes. I have eyes but I did not recognise Mt. Tai and now I realize that we have such a wonderful disciple within the sect.”

Nan Gong Ling could not help but praise Protector Bei and scold himself.

The old woman was also looking at Protector Bei and said: “You have a much better eye than I do. I'll remember our agreement.”

“Don't worry.” said Protector Bei while nodding which made a bunch of people curious. They were all wondering what these two protectors were talking about. People could hear about their agreement but still didn't know what they were talking about.

At that moment, Duan Tian Lang had a furious look on his face.

Chapter 87: Cold Blooded

“Hehe, to be honest, I am surprised by your decision.”

Duan Tian Lang had a cold smile on the corner of his mouth as he stared at Lin Feng.

“You are a genius. I really appreciate your talent and battle ability. I offered you a great opportunity but you are not willing to seize it. It is very important for you to understand that because you are a genius, you will not be treated like other people who refuse this opportunity, if you refuse, I will have no choice but to act rashly. I will not let you off and I will not be able to let you continue living.”

“If you refuse, you are doomed.”

Duan Tian Lang suddenly filled with killing intent as a strong Qi was released and shot towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng's expression didn't change from his usual calm expression. He obviously understood what Duan Tian Lang meant but he had already understood the consequences of his choices. Some decisions in life needed to be chosen carefully as it could lead a person to their own death.

“Duan Tian Lang, I will not allow you to touch him.”

At that moment, Liu Fei suddenly jumped in front of Lin Feng to

prevent Duan Tian Lang from attacking Lin Feng. She looked extremely furious at his actions.

She had always thought that Lin Feng was a pervert with hidden intentions. She hadn't thought that Lin Feng could say such touching and moving things while his life was at stake. He had now shown his true character. Everything he had said so far had deeply moved Liu Fei. She had discovered a new aspect of his personality that she had never noticed before.

Lin Feng was such a great talent that he couldn't die. It would be such a pity if he died here under these circumstances.

At that moment, the situation was critical for the Yun Hai Sect. Liu Fei was using her own life to stand up for the sect and protect it. She had hope that she could avoid the worst possible outcome.

“Fei Fei, he must die.”

Duan Tian Lang sounded really firm in his resolution.

“I will not allow you to touch him.” said Liu Fei as she grew more and more furious. She stared at Duan Tian Lang with evil eyes.

“Fei Fei, why do you care so much about him? What does he mean to you?” Duan Tian Lang's son, Duan Han, was staring at Lin Feng. He had recognized him from their earlier encounter. On the day which he came to the Yun Hai Sect with Chi Xie armored cavalry, they had stopped because Liu Fei knew him. However she

had said they were only fellow disciples of the same sect and nothing more.

But at that moment, Liu Fei was protecting Lin Feng with her life. Duan Han was troubled. He was a genius and had always hoped that Liu Fei would become his wife.

“Our relationship is none of your business.” Liu Fei said while intensely staring at Duan Han. Then she glanced at all the Chi Xie armored cavalry and sighed: “You should all listen to me, I don’t care about who you are, your status, or even whose orders you are acting upon. I will not allow you to touch him, otherwise I will inform my father and his army will come to take care of you.”

Duan Han’s face looked extremely ugly at that moment. He then said in an extremely cold tone: “Fei Fei, do you like this young man?”

“It’s none of your business.” said Liu Fei furiously. Whom she liked was none of Duan Han’s business.

Duan Han was stupefied. His expression changed from shock to a face which resembled an evil demon. He then said in an ice cold tone: “Alright. Alright... Now there is a second reason for him to die”

“Lin Feng, you’re always saying long and righteous words, what the hell are you doing now hiding behind that girl?”

Lin Feng was smiling wryly... Liu Fei was always protecting him.

Lin Feng moved in front of Liu Fei, took her hand and whispered: "You're my girlfriend, how could I let you protect me?"

"Hmphh..."

Liu Fei looked embarrassed but a smile had appeared on her face. That bastard, when had he learnt to be a gentleman?

But Duan Han's face became even uglier as he shouted: "Your girlfriend?! What gives you the right to say that Liu Fei is your girlfriend? Lin Feng, do you dare to come and fight with me!"

"Lin Feng, don't!" Said Liu Fei with a hint of worry.

Liu Fei pulled on Lin Feng's sleeve to stop him. She clearly know how strong Duan Han was. His power was even more frightening than that of Wen Ren Yan. His sword was infinitely more powerful than what Lin Feng had displayed earlier.

But... How could Lin Feng retreat now?"

"Don't you dare?" Laughed Duan Han.

Lin Feng moved towards Duan Han. Duan Han was about eighteen years old. Even if he was extremely strong, there was no reason for Lin Feng not to be able to fight against him.

“Hmph, alright.” Snorted Duan Han.

He had an evil covering his face. As he held his sword a great quantity of sword Qi emerged and was released in the atmosphere.

That sword Qi was getting more and more intense while it violently whistled through the atmosphere. Slowly it started to gather another power.

“Sword force.”

The entire crowd was stupefied. That was sword force which he was using. Duan Tian Lang’s son, Duan Han, was using the same force as Lin Feng. The sword force he was releasing was cutting through the atmosphere and filling the entire arena. The Qi from his sword was even stronger than that of Lin Feng but Lin Feng’s sword force was much more powerful than that of Duan Han.

Lin Feng was surprised. He unsheathed his sword and just like Duan Han, he released his sword force.

“Tsk, a sword master doesn’t necessarily need to use his sword, pay attention.” Said Duan Han.

Suddenly, Duan Han moved his hand and it seemed like his sword Qi was suddenly mixing with the Qi contained within the earth and the heavens. His sword was glowing as Qi could circulate in and out of his sword.

The crowd was stupefied. It looked like pure Qi was being released from his sword. How could Duan Han be so monstrously powerful?

It had to be a skill, an extremely strong and powerful skill.

“Sword.”

Duan Han shouted loudly. An extremely powerful yet pure Qi was emerging out from the palm of his hand while emitting a radiant light.

The sword Qi in the air took the shape of a sword and looked like it was aiming directly at Lin Feng.

At that moment, all the sword Qi and Sword force had combined, and was starting to pressure Lin Feng's body.

The energy sword thrust itself towards Lin Feng at incredible speed.

Lin Feng could dodge but had to be careful as by dodging the sword created from energy he would be open to other attacks.

Duan Han was a genius sword master. He had learnt and practiced many sword skills. Lin Feng had no choice but to recognize that Duan Han was a sword master. Lin Feng didn't

think that way about all the sword users he had met before, even if they had a sword spirit, however Duan Han was different.

“Deadly sword.”

When Lin Feng saw all the combined sword energy, he grabbed his long sword and released an incredible amount of Qi to block the incoming energy sword.

An incredibly huge amount of sword Qi started to cover the entire arena. However, it seemed like Lin Feng’s sword Qi was unable to compete with the sword energy which was released by Duan Han.

“How powerful!” His pupils started to dilate. At that moment, he could already feel the sword energy released by Duan Han growing closer which suddenly made Lin Feng feel imminent danger. He could not help but groan as he was in a dangerous situation.

But the most terrifying thing was the sword energy which continued to thrust at Lin Feng.

“BOOOM!!”

Lin Feng was projected back several steps and blood started to drip from the corner of his mouth. A bright red blood was dripping down his chin.

Lin Feng’s robes were ragged and his body was riddled with

wounds.

Liu Fei who wasn't far behind him ran straight towards him and offered her hand to help him stand.

"I'm alright." said Lin Feng indifferently while shaking his head. All the sword Qi and sword force started to combine into another energy sword. Even though Lin Feng was defeated, he would still remain brave until the end.

"How Powerful!"

"He's not that much older than Wen Ren Yan but he's much stronger!"

"That's another genius, a genius sword master!"

The crowd was thinking all sorts of things. A sword master was extremely powerful, much more than expected.

"Do you see now? You cannot even withstand a single attack. We have nothing in common. You will forever be chasing my footprints."

Duan Han was staring at Lin Feng and looked extremely cold. He then raised his hand and shouted: "RAISE YOUR BOWS!"

"Hahhhhh!!!"

The loud shout spread throughout the entire atmosphere of the gorge and then all the cavalry mounted on their Chi Xie armored horses raised their bows. They had filled the cliff at the top of the gorge completely.

A terrifying Qi filled the air above the Life and Death Arena.

“I just have to speak once and everybody will fire their bows. They will kill anyone with just a single word from me. How could you even think that you can compete with me?”

“You may lower your bows” Duan Han had told them to lower their bows and all the cavalry instantly lowered their bows.

“Your strength and my strength are not even comparable. You cannot master forces to the same level as me. What makes you think that you can be intimate with Liu Fei when I cannot?”

Duan Han said with an ice cold tone.

“Duan Han, you are a shameless asshole!” shouted Liu Fei furiously cursing at Duan Han.

“If you are so strong now, it is because of the clan in which you grew up, which descends from the Imperial family. You don’t know what it is to lack great teachers and resources. Why are you doing this to Lin Feng? Besides, Lin Feng is an expert at learning martial skills and agility techniques. Haven’t you noticed that his

skills have the power of highest quality Xuan Level skills? He has gained everything by relying on his own power. Are you not ashamed to show off the power you gained from your clan in front of Lin Feng?”

“All you have learnt and all the power you have is because your family and because you have a high status. You have never had to rely on your talent, do you even have any?”

“You cannot deny, however, that I perfectly master all of these skills. You cannot deny that I am now an extremely strong cultivator. Lin Feng and I really have nothing in common.” said Duan Han disagreeing with Liu Fei.

“Even if that’s the case, what’s your problem? Don’t forget that you are older than Lin Feng as well. In two years, he will be much stronger than you. You are pathetic and shameless.”

Liu Fei was shouting and everyone was nodding in agreement with what she was saying.

That’s right. Everything that Liu Fei said to Duan Han was actually justified.

Because Duan Han came from such a powerful family and had such a high status that didn’t mean he wasn’t gifted or couldn’t use forces properly. However was he more gifted than Lin Feng?

Lin Feng’s background wasn’t as good as Duan Han’s. Lin Feng

could only rely on himself to gain his power. If Lin Feng switched places with Duan Han, he would probably be many times stronger than him. Besides, Lin Feng was still very young. He was two years younger than Duan Han. Two years was enough for Lin Feng to exceed Duan Han even without the same resources. Lin Feng was much more talented than Duan Han.

“No matter what you say, strength is strength, weakness is weakness. Today, he will die.” Said Duan Han furiously.

“Alright, we don’t need you to get involved, Fei Fei. Sooner or later, you will become a member of my family so come and stand next to me.”

Duan Tian Lang had said that while looking at Liu Fei. It sounded like he was convinced that Liu Fei would someday become the wife to his son.

“In your dreams! I, Liu Fei, will never be a member of your family!” Screamed Liu Fei in disgust.

“Hmph, Liu Fei, don’t say such things in front of me. That’s a great offense. Don’t forget that the Duan family is also a part of the Imperial Clan.”

Duan Tian Lang moved his arm. Immediately after, all the cavalry on their Chi Xie armored horses once again raised the bows that they had just put down.

Chapter 88: Extermination

“Alright. That’s enough for today. I am offering you a great opportunity but you don’t know how to appreciate it. Since you have decided to act this way, then.....”

Duan Tian Lang suddenly stopped speaking and then raised his hand.

He waved his hand down as a signal and then a storm of arrows began whistling through the air while releasing a strong Qi.

“They’re attacking!”

The whole crowd had now realized that they were in danger. After that they saw Duan Tian Lang wave his hand again and say the following words; “Total extermination!”

These two words resonated in everybody’s mind as if the words were said by a terrifyingly evil god.

“Whoosh...Whoosh...Whoosh...”

Whistling sounds filled the entire atmosphere. What seemed like an endless shower of arrows was piercing through the atmosphere above the Stormy Gorge. However no arrows were aimed at the stage of the Life and Death Arena where Duan Tian Lang was standing, this was the only location which was not a target for arrows.

The whole crowd was looking at the arrows flying above their heads and were terrified. Most of them had already given up all hope of escaping alive.

There were so many arrows and each of them was as swift and powerful as a meteor crashing down from the heavens. The cavalry on the Chi Xie armored horses were definitely incredibly powerful.

Horrible shrieks could be heard and resonated through the entire gorge. Some of the Yun Hai Sect's disciples had been hit by arrows in the head, shoulders, chest and arms... Bright red blood was filling the gorge like an ocean.

Only the strongest cultivators within the gorge had managed to avoid the arrows. It was already difficult to dodge the arrows and this was also only the first wave of arrows.

Nan Gong Ling was looking at the arrows flying above his head. He was still standing on the bleachers. Some arrows flew above his head but he managed to disintegrate them into dust which then continued flying past him. An immense sorrow could be seen in Nan Gong Ling's eyes while he was looking around at the current scene. He then closed his eyes because he couldn't stand seeing all his precious disciples being killed before his eyes. All these disciples admired him and worshipped him as the Patriarch. In front of that spectacle, he felt absolutely powerless.

The Elders of the sect were feeling the same as they watched the bloody spectacle before them. They would have never expected

that the Yun Hai Sect would ever go through such horrible hardships. This truly felt like a nightmare. They would never have expected the total extermination of the Yun Hai Sect would occur on this day.

The first wave of arrows had finally come to an end. The blood from all the dead disciples created a small river of blood which was flowing through the gorge which was drowned in silence.

Lin Feng, who was standing inside the Life and Death Arena, was calmly looking at the blood flowing through the gorge. The sunlight was shining down on his skin yet he didn't feel any warmth at all. He just felt an endless coldness running through his veins.

In the Stormy Gorge, some people had entered death's embrace while some others were still struggling against death even in their last moments. Those who were about to die were crying tears of regret while staring at the heavens and screaming in pain.

If this was the previous world, there were many disciples who were still very young and would have still been going to school.

They had parents, brothers and sisters... Their future was still filled with endless possibilities.

They had come to the Yun Hai Sect to become stronger and to receive an education in cultivation. They had come hoping to improve their lives and allow their families to have better living conditions.

But after Duan Tian Lang's voice resonated in the atmosphere, their future of endless possibilities had turned to dust. Death was already here for them and their bodies were already floating within a sea of blood.

Lin Feng's heart had never felt so cold. He felt so cold that he had the feeling his heart was losing blood through stab wounds. These young disciples were just like him: made of blood and flesh. They still had a long life before them. Many of these young disciples had done nothing wrong and were just trying to improve their families well being.

“Pssshhhhhhhhh.....”

Lin Feng took a long and deep breath of the desolation before him. He then looked closely at a thicker artery of that bright red river of blood with his eyes wide open and had the feeling that he was drowning in an endless pit of sorrow.

The strong cultivators could steal the future which belonged to the weaker people of this world... They could slaughter them and exterminate them as they would do to bugs.

That was the cruel and sad reality of this world. Those who were not powerful were like insects to be crushed by those stronger cultivators.

“Fire.....”

Duan Tian Lang's voice spread throughout the atmosphere again making the stones of the gorge tremble. Sharp and deadly arrows started piercing through the air again like evil spirits falling from the sky.

Horrible shrieks spread throughout the atmosphere. There was nothing to be done though. The ordinary disciples who were particularly vulnerable could only stare on in despair.

“AHHHHH.....”

A horrible shout filled with pain and agony filled the gorge.

Liu Fei was kneeling down on the ground looking at the corpses while grabbing her beautiful long hair with such power that it ripped some from her head. Her delicate cheeks no longer had a rosy complexion and she stared on lifelessly.

The ones killing these people were the cavalry on the Chi Xie armored horses... her father's own army.

Those who were being killed were the Yun Hai Sect's disciples... they were her fellow disciples... but also her father's fellow disciples.

She like many others could only stand there and watch the slaughter with broken hearts while unable to prevent the massacre from happening.

“Duan Han, bring her over here.” Duan Tian Lang had said with a cold tone while looking at Liu Fei.

Duan Han slightly nodded and moved towards Liu Fei.

But at that moment, an extremely quick and agile silhouette quickly landed in front of Liu Fei. It was Lin Feng.

“Get lost. If you want to die, don’t worry, it’s only a matter of time.” Duan Han said while looking expressionless.

But Lin Feng seemed like he hadn’t heard Duan Han’s words. He was only staring at him with his pitch black eyes. He was looking at Duan Han with a cold and calm expression.

How ruthless would someone need to be to remain calm while thousands of people had been and were being slaughtered?

“Huh?” Duan Han frowned and look at Lin Feng’s eyes which looked incredibly evil.

These cold and evil eyes suddenly made Duan Han shiver.

“Since you want to die right now, I will finish you off.”

Duan Han shouted while his face twisted in anger. He was furious because he had shivered from fear while in front of Lin Feng and

Duan Han felt humiliated.

Even though he didn't deny the fact that Lin Feng was a genius with incredible talent, he still thought that Lin Feng had no right to humiliate him because he was just a nobody from no name clan.

The sight of Lin Feng and Liu Fei caring for each other made him especially furious. He wanted Lin Feng to kneel down at his feet. He wanted to show Liu Fei that Lin Feng was a weakling and a nobody. He could never compare with the majestic blood which ran through his veins.

Duan Han's sword started to glow. He had a Sword Spirit and had been learning sword skills since he was a child. Swords had almost no secrets from him. His sword skills were so advanced that he didn't even need a sword in order to use his sword skills. In his hands, almost anything could become a sword.

An extremely powerful sword Qi emerged from the palm of his hand and created a strong wind moving towards Lin Feng.

Duan Han wasn't using any specific skill. He wanted to show Liu Fei that he was extremely powerful and could kill Lin Feng with a simple wave of his palm.

“Pierce.”

Lin Feng's body moved gracefully towards the attack. He grabbed his sword and pierced towards Duan Han's sword Qi aiming

exactly at its weakest point.

Duan Han immediately understood. He perfectly understood that the Qi that he was using had taken form. It was very clear to him which part of it was stronger and which part was weaker.

“Pssshhh!”

Duan Han’s sword Qi vanished in an instant.

Lin Feng’s sword which was filled with a deadly Qi was still moving towards Duan Han at an incredible speed.

Duan Han was surprised but reacted quickly. He raised his right hand and released a strong Qi which shot towards Lin Feng’s sword with a whistling sound.

However this Qi still wasn’t enough to stop the attack. The sword which was rushing toward him did not even slightly slow down. The sword was still filled with a deadly Qi which smelt like death and destruction.

Duan Han frowned. He was a cultivator of the fourth Ling Qi layer. He was much stronger than Lin Feng, but why did Lin Feng’s sword give him such a bad premonition.

Duan Han raised both his hands to stop the extremely powerful deadly Qi but it didn’t work. His body was projected backwards by Lin Feng’s powerful attack.

“Die!”

Lin Feng said with a calm and ruthless tone. The Qi from his long sword was giving the feeling that death itself was contained within the sword.

His sword force was also emerging endlessly from his long sword. The Qi and force emerging out of Lin Feng’s sword looked so natural as if it was absorbed directly from the power of heaven and earth.

“How is that possible?”

Duan Han stared onwards and could not believe his eyes. The sword force, that sword, everything had merged into perfect harmony. Even with his years of training he was unable to perform such a feat.

That sword was as fast as lightning and its power was incredible. Duan Han had absolutely no time to counter an attack with such power. He had no choice but to dodge.

“He’s probably using his Sword of Nirvana. Being able to keep up that power even during a second attack is really incredible. Lin Feng is a genius when it comes to learning skills. His power is really terrifying. He will definitely not die today.”

Protector Bei’s attention had been on Lin Feng from the

beginning. Everybody in the Yun Hai Sect could die except for Lin Feng.

Protector Bei wasn't being cruel or merciless when thinking that everybody could die except for Lin Feng. He just thought that if only one person survived, it had to be Lin Feng because he was the only hope of a future that the sect had. Protector Bei even thought that if he had to die, it wouldn't be a problem as long as Lin Feng stayed alive.

“Shadow Steps”

Duan Han started moving at full speed. His entire body looked like a shadow while it tried to escape Lin Feng's deadly sword.

He then stopped and looked at his clothes. They were torn and ragged from almost taking that previous attack. When he saw that, his face changed and he looked hideously evil.

Lin Feng had surprisingly almost injured him and had managed to tear his clothes.

If he had been a single step slower then that deadly sword would have directly pierced into his chest.

Duan Han could only feel extraordinary shame and humiliation. He, who had broken through to the fourth Ling Qi layer, had suddenly almost been injured by Lin Feng, who had only broken through to the second Ling Qi layer. Just like a moment ago, he

had been humiliated by Lin Feng again.

“You are very lucky but now I will have to get serious.”

Duan Han was trying to hide his anger and remain calm. He was, of course, not going to admit that he had almost been injured by Lin Feng because of his own arrogance. He would rather attribute it to Lin Feng's luck.

“You have broken through to the fourth Ling Qi layer. I have broken through to the second Ling Qi layer. You are apparently extremely strong and apparently I'm not even worth the effort of fighting. Yet I almost injured you and then you attribute it to luck. I see you must not have been serious when you just ran away with your tail between your legs. Duan Han, don't you think that you are shameless pretending to this extent?”

Lin Feng had a smile on the corner of his mouth. His pitch black eyes were radiating killing intent. His words were ridiculing Duan Han.

Chapter 89: A Lonely Sword

“How can you be so shameless here?!”

Liu Fei had moved closer to Lin Feng. She was looking at Duan Han with an icy stare, her eyes were filled with hatred and contempt.

Duan Tian Lang and his son had destroyed the Yun Hai Sect. She would make sure that these two disgusting people were going to regret it for their entire life.

When Duan Han heard that Liu Fei was insulting him, his face looked really ugly. Duan Han had always thought that Liu Fei would become his wife and seeing his future wife insult him and protect another man had made him furious.

“I am shameless? That piece of trash is not even able to defeat me and I am shameless?” said Duan Han while coldly looking at Lin Feng and then said: “Fei Fei, I will show you the gigantic gap that exists between him and me. The difference is way too big.”

“I am at the second Ling Qi layer and you are the fourth Ling Qi layer. You are obviously very strong but bragging in front of me can definitely be described as being shameless.” Said Lin Feng who wasn’t scared of Duan Han in the slightest. He then added: “If you are brave enough then try and attack me.”

“Hmph, I will just show you that I don’t even need to move from where I stand to defeat you.” Shouted Duan Han.

Duan Han was furious because of Lin Feng's sharp tongue. He stood in the same position while waiting for Lin Feng to make the first move.

Lin Feng's dark eyes revealed a slightly happy expression for a second.

Lin Feng suddenly closed his eyes and had a feeling of absolute peace and serenity. He felt at peace in this world made of darkness.

The loudest noise would not have been able to disturb Lin Feng at that moment. In Lin Feng's mind, there was only a dark world filled with coldness and the smell of death.

Lin Feng had the feeling that there was no sword Qi existing in this world and the Life and Death Arena was absolutely calm inside this world of darkness.

At that moment, a grayish black shadow emerged out of Lin Feng's sword slowly filling the atmosphere. It looked like the shadow of death which had come to claim the dead.

Death is cold. Death is dark. Death is here.

Lin Feng opened his eyes and they were filled with an indescribable darkness which made him look even more heartless than before.

Lin Feng started moving and the grayish black Qi which was emerging out from his long sword started to follow him.

His sword looked like it could annihilate all of the ten thousand things within creation.

He then began another strike using the skill Sword of Nirvana.

“Lonely sword.”

The force diffused by the sword was much weaker than before. The Qi didn’t make whistling sounds as it pierced through the air. The sword this time seemed lonely and silent.

The sword carried the smell of death as if it was going to annihilate everything within the world to make itself the only thing remaining; a lonely sword.

Duan Han’s face drastically changed. It was as if he understood the danger of the sword which was in Lin Feng’s hand. He was surrounded by such a terrifying energy which smelt like death and battle, he could not help but tremble in fear.

“Celestial Propulsion!”

Duan Han used a high quality skill of the Xuan Level. An extremely powerful essence appeared in front Duan Han’s body while he started to retreat.

“Crrrr....”

A small sound was heard. The lonely sword had the power to annihilate all things within creation. Even Duan Han's high quality Xuan level technique had vanished when it touched the energy emitted by Lin Feng's sword.

“Get lost.”

At that moment, a loud shout spread throughout the atmosphere. A dazzling sword broke the Qi from the lonely sword. Lin Feng's body was projected back like a leaf in the wind but the attack eventually reached its destination and Lin Feng coughed out several mouthfuls of blood.

The one who had attacked was Duan Tian Lang. His face had grown extremely cold. He looked like he was ready to murder Lin Feng on the spot.

Sword masters were in perfect fusion with their swords to the extent that they could exchange energy with each other.

This was called unity force. Unity force enabled sword masters to move but powered by the sword force granted by their swords. It also enabled them to carry out even stronger and more powerful attacks which no longer relied on Qi.

Only real geniuses could learn to master their force to such an

extent. They would need to be at a minimum of the Ling Qi layer to use unity force. However the force was much more efficient and powerful when cultivators had broken through to the fifth or sixth Ling Qi layer before using it.

Duan Han, Duan Tian Lang's son, at the moment when he had broken through to the third Ling Qi layer had learnt how to use unity forces. He was a real genius.

The sword Qi and sword force released when using unity force is not easily dispersed. Unity force was thickly condensed with power and several times stronger than normal forces. Only sword masters who were geniuses could comprehend the power behind unity force before having reached the Xuan Qi layer.

Lin Feng who had only broken through to the second Ling Qi layer had managed to trick Duan Han. Lin Feng had started using unity force a moment ago but he couldn't control it which is why Duan Tian Lang had time to interrupt his attack.

At that moment, Lin Feng had blood spilling out of the corner of his mouth but his dark eyes were still revealing a happy expression.

“Father and son fighting together against a single disciple. We really do have nothing in common. I could never be that shameless.”

Lin Feng's words were so sharp that Duan Han had the feeling he was being stabbed through the heart.

“You shut the hell up!” said Duan Han extremely furious which made him look like a demon. He hated Lin Feng from the bottom of his heart.

“Duan Han, what’s the point in arguing with someone who is already dead?” Duan Tian Lang had said that in a loud yet indifferent voice and then started moving straight towards Lin Feng.

“Duan Tian Lang, attacking junior disciples is really the worst thing a wise senior cultivator could do. You are a worthless person.”

Nan Gong Ling and a few elders fell from the sky and landed in the Life and Death Arena just in front of Lin Feng.

Duan Tian Lang stepped forward however when he saw all the elders who were accompanying Nan Gong Ling he hesitated. Suddenly, an extremely powerful Qi filled with the atmosphere and the sky looked like it was going to collapse under the pressure.

“We will slowly kill these old guys over time but first we must kill Lin Feng.”

Duan Tian Lang had said this with a neutral tone as if he had said nothing special. He had brought along some outstanding cultivators to support him and did not fear the power of the Yun Hai Sect: the Patriarch of the Hao Yue Sect, the Patriarch of the Ice and Snow Village Mountain as well as the one of the Mo Shou Sect.

They were all monstrously powerful cultivators in their own right. They had also brought along their elders and disciples as support. They were a much stronger fighting force than the Yun Hai Sect.

At this time, their goal was to annihilate the Yun Hai Sect, take everything that belonged to them and then share it equally between them.

That was actually one of the reasons why Duan Tian Lang had managed to convince all these Patriarchs to join him and help him get outstanding disciples to send them to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue.

There were many things to take from the Yun Hai Sect: amazing treasures, profound skills and agility techniques, as well as these outstanding young disciples.

“Chi Xie armored cavalry troops, slaughter them all.”

Duan Tian Lang made a wave of his hand. Immediately the cavalry on the Chi Xie armored horses started galloping towards the inside of the gorge.

“Duan Tian Lang, I am the Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect, if you want to destroy it then you will need to fight against me.”

Nan Gong Ling started moving with extreme speed and a gigantic Qi which contained elements of force shot straight towards Duan Tian Lang.

“Why would I be scared?” said Duan Tian Lang while smiling coldly and then, his body immediately rose into the air.

Nan Gong Ling followed him into the air. High up in the air, Duan Tian Lang’s sword started glowing and he tried to attack Nan Gong Ling with an extremely powerful sneak attack.

“BOOM!!”

The gigantic Python Fish had its wings wide open and the Patriarch of the Mo Shou Sect was sitting atop it looking evil. The eyes of the beast were extremely terrifying.

“How evil.”

Protector Bei released his crane spirit then it flew up at the speed of lightning and threw itself at the flying Python Fish. Everybody else was choosing an opponent and a large scale battle began to take place.

It was a huge battle field filled with blood and power. It was like a hurricane was moving from place to place and leaving behind destruction and bodies.

On the ground, in the air, no matter where it was within the stormy gorge there were battles taking place.

The fighting stage of the Life and Death Arena was shaking so much that it looked like it was going to collapse under the pressure.

Lin Feng's pitch black eyes were looking around at the huge battle. Lin Feng had the feeling that the Patriarch, Protector Bei and these elders of the sect were fighting for him. Lin Feng would have never thought that these people would try to annihilate the Yun Hai Sect. He especially never thought that so many people would fight for him.

An extremely cold feeling invaded his heart like a waterfall of ice. Lin Feng felt a sudden sense of belonging within the Yun Hai Sect, people were fighting for him. They were risking their lives to protect him.

Nan Gong Ling, Protector Bei as well as other elders were very powerful. They might have the power to win this battle or scare the opponent from the fight without risking their lives. Nothing was certain but at least there was still some hope to be found. However they were all fighting with their life on the line because of him, a disciple of the Yun Hai Sect.

“The Yun Hai Sect.”

Lin Feng whispered the name of the sect while looking at the sun light that was shining down on the river of blood.

“Lin Feng.”

At that moment, a voice spread throughout the atmosphere. Lin Feng turned around and was surprised.

He only saw someone with a cold look who was moving towards the fighting stage. The eyes of this person looked like they were ready to murder.

It was Mo Xie!

“Filthy Animal.”

Lin Feng saw Mo Xie’s cold smile getting clearer and clearer as Mo Xie was approaching him.

In such a horrible and desperate situation, Mo Xie who was an Elder wasn’t fighting for the Yun Hai Sect but was moving towards Lin Feng to settle personal grudges. In that chaotic and apocalyptic situation, Mo Xie had decided he would use the opportunity to kill Lin Feng.

“Why would you kill me now? What’s the point? Wouldn’t it be better to try surviving now?!”

Lin Feng was looking at Mo Xie who was moving towards him with a cold murderous look.

“Well, do you think that if I hand you over to Duan Tian Lang, he will still want to kill me? In such circumstances, I will not need to struggle to survive and can live comfortably.”

Mo Xie had a particularly evil smile on the corner of his mouth. Lin Feng was astonished to hear such shameless words leave the mouth of an elder. It was already impossible to be more shameless and despicable than Mo Xie.

“I really admire you. Being so incredibly shameless and on top of that being able to smile with happiness while you watch your sect be destroyed.” said Lin Feng.

“Why? Why not just consider winners to be great and losers to be trash? Losers in my eyes are always in the wrong. Duan Tian Lang is powerful and if he wants to annihilate the Yun Hai Sect, then it is useless to go against his will. Those risking their lives for the Yun Hai Sect right now are stupid and ignorant losers.”

Not only was Mo Xie cruel and heartless but he also sounded extremely arrogant. It really seemed like he had no values at all.

“Since it’s like that, come, I will end your pitiful life.”

These words had come directly from Lin Feng’s heart. It seemed easier said than done but Lin Feng already looked like he was ready to kill Mo Xie.

Mo Xie frowned and suspiciously stared at Lin Feng.

A second later, Mo Xie looked relaxed again as if he was worrying for no reason. Even though Lin Feng was a genius, it was

impossible for him to kill Mo Xie.

“Such a pity... I will kill you like an insect between my two fingers. I will make you die slowly and painfully.”

Mo Xie released his Boa Vine Spirit and immediately vines emerged beneath Lin Feng's feet.

Mo Xie was attacking Lin Feng with a surprise attack even though they greatly differed in power. Lin Feng was suddenly wrapped up in the vines from the sudden attack. Surprisingly, Lin Feng was not attempting to resist.

Mo Xie hadn't noticed that Lin Feng had a smile on his face.

“It looks like you have already given up. Don't worry, I will kill you very slowly and use your head as a trophy.” said Mo Xie while looking extremely cruel.

At that moment, a shadow was climbing up Mo Xie's body.

That shadow was intangible. It was almost invisible and did not look like something that should exist within this world.

“Is that so?”

Suddenly, Mo Xie stopped moving. His body was no longer under his control. He shivered from head to toe in fear.

It's him!!!

Mo Xie would never forget that day when that black shadow had completely oppressed him.

At that moment, there was a shadow that was preventing him from moving.

Chapter 90: Sorrow and Tragedy

“Lin Feng, you already knew about this, right?”

Mo Xie had the feeling that his body was completely frozen. He was unable to move. Lin Feng, a moment before, hadn't dodged his attack but he had allowed himself to be attacked willingly.

But that shadow hadn't appeared since the last time so how could Lin Feng have any idea that it would appear?

“Elder.”

Mo Xie said that to the shadow but didn't dare try to move. He was scared because his life could end in a single moment.

“The sect has such degenerate Elders like you remaining, this is such a disgrace.”

The voice came out of nowhere. Suddenly, a dark green light flashed through the air with incredible speed. No silhouette was seen, only a light as it flashed through the air. When the light vanished, the silhouette had finally appeared. This person was wearing a black cloak which seemed to hide part of his face. Suddenly, the silhouette took out a dagger which had bright red blood dripping from the tip.

That blood was obviously Mo Xie's.

Mo Xie was still standing at the same place as a moment before and was still completely motionless.

His eyes were wide open as if he couldn't believe his eyes, he still could not believe that within that split second that elder had ended all his chances of life in this world.

Blood suddenly started spilling out from his throat and his body collapsed heavily onto the ground.

"I would have never thought that, someday, I would use this dagger against an Elder of the sect. How lamentable."

The old man's voice sounded desolate.

"Protector Kong." said Lin Feng to the old man in the black cloak.

So that's how it was. That shadow belonged to the old man who protected the Precipice of the Abyss.

"How did you know that I was here?"

Protector Kong looked at Lin Feng while nodding. When he used his Shadow Spirit, there was only a shadow. A moment ago, Protector Kong hadn't revealed that he had arrived and yet Lin Feng had willingly lured Mo Xie into attacking him.

"Perception."

Lin Feng replied calmly. His spirit enabled him to sense the world. He didn't need his eyes to observe it. He could sense and perceive all things and their movements.

In Lin Feng's brain, that world of darkness was actually extremely clear as if he was the creator of the darkness. Everything that surrounded him was known to him and appeared with total clarity.

Even though Protector Kong had been using his shadow, Lin Feng had surprisingly been able to sense his presence. Lin Feng then understood that the shadow was the one that had protected him last time he had been attacked by Mo Xie.

Protector Kong then nodded.

"Lin Feng, you are the most extraordinary young man that I have ever met. You are a true genius. Leave this place and go far away. Go as far as you can and let's hope that someday, the Yun Hai Sect will be reborn again." Protector Kong's voice was filled with sadness. He was a protector of the Yun Hai Sect and on that day, the sect which he was protecting, was being exterminated.

"If I am alive, I will definitely bring the Yun Hai Sect into the future."

Lin Feng solemnly nodded as a sign that he was making a promise to the old man. However he still had to get out of that massacre alive.

Duan Tian Lang would never let him off.

“Aaaaahhh!”

In the sky, blood was raining down. Someone wearing dark clothes had been killed. It looked like an Elder of the Yun Hai Sect.

“Kong Ming, I’ve been waiting for you for a while.”

Then a silhouette fell from the sky and landed in front of Protector Kong.

Protector Kong was speechless and he was shaking in anger. His facial expression suddenly drastically changed and he vanished in the blink of an eye. There was only his shadow remaining on the ground.

At that moment, a silhouette in the sky was looking at the blood and then at Mo Xie’s cadaver on the ground. That person’s face was filled with hatred.

“Yun Hai Sect, I have done so much for you and in the end, you end up killing my only son. How could you!”

Mo Cang Lan had gone insane. He turned around and looked at Duan Tian Lang and Nan Gong Ling who were fighting.

“Die!” thought Mo Cang Lan evilly. His silhouette then flashed through the atmosphere and landed next to Nan Gong Ling and he wholeheartedly started fighting on Duan Tian Lang’s side against Nan Gong Ling.

Nan Gong Ling didn’t know that Mo Xie was dead so he didn’t understand what was happening. Mo Cang Lan’s attack projected Nan Gong Ling straight towards Duan Tian Lang’s sword.

Suddenly, blood gushed out of Nan Gong Ling’s left arm and mixed with the bright light released by the sword. Nan Gong Ling’s left hand had been completely cut off by the sword.

“Mo.... Cang... Lan!”

Nan Gong Ling fell down onto the ground but didn’t even look at his hand which had been cut off. Instead, he was staring at Mo Cang Lan who had pushed him into the attack... Mo Cang Lan, his friend and a Great Elder of the Yun Hai Sect.

“This is my revenge.” said Mo Cang Lan coldly while looking at Mo Xie’s corpse lying on the ground.

Nan Gong Ling then noticed Mo Xie’s corpse, and his own wound... then at Protector Kong in the middle of a fight.

Mo Xie had been killed by Protector Kong.

Nan Gong Ling was obviously able to understand what had

happened.

“It is good that he finally got what he deserved.”

Nan Gong Ling said while sounding indifferent. He then looked around him. He saw that many Elders were in weak positions and that the opponents still had many people who hadn't even gotten involved in the fights yet. They were just there to prevent people from escaping.

“All the members of the Yun Hai Sect, gather around me immediately.”

Nan Gong Ling had shouted these words very loudly and suddenly, a multitude of people were coming from all sides towards the fighting stage of the Life and Death Arena.

More and more people stopped fighting against their current opponents; they left them behind and joined Nan Gong Ling on the highest fighting stage.

Apart from Nan Gong Ling who had had his hand cut off, many other people were injured and covered with blood. Lin Feng was standing behind the crowd. He looked calm but his eyes were filled with sorrow in front such a tragedy.

“Do you know what to do now?”

While blood was unceasingly spilling out of Nan Gong Ling's

arm, he was fixedly staring at Duan Tian Lang.

Everybody in the crowd didn't need explanations. They all nodded as a sign that they had understood what Nan Gong Ling meant.

“Protector Bei, Take him.”

Nan Gong Ling had said that to Protector Bei in a solemn tone.

Protector Bei nodded solemnly. His Crane Spirit, amongst all the people who were present, was the strongest and the quickest of spirits. Immediately after, Protector Bei landed on Lin Feng's side. He released his spirit, spread his wings and grabbed Lin Feng.

Lin Feng had finally understood what Nan Gong Ling meant. They wanted.....

Everybody, including all of the Elders were staring at Lin Feng. All sorts of expressions could be seen on their faces but a few of them revealed... hope!

Everybody was looking at Lin Feng with hope. Lin Feng was their only hope.

Lin Feng had a big headache. He had the feeling that he had just received a mountain of pressure on his shoulders. These strong people wanted to give up their lives to make sure that Lin Feng escaped alive. They wanted to sacrifice themselves for him. All

these lives... to save a single life. Many of these people were strong enough that they might be able to survive if they attempted to escape alone.

While there was no bond between Lin Feng and many of these people, they had all chosen to entrust the future to him. Because Lin Feng did not have strong ties to the sect, they did not know what he would do if he escaped alive, but they all still had relieved expressions as if they had done all that they could.

The only one who wasn't looking at Lin Feng was Nan Gong Ling. He was observing the opponents.

"I, Lin Feng, have my own talents and my loyalty cannot be bought."

How could he not have faith in the person who said these words? Nan Gong Ling had only thing in mind, let Lin Feng escape while they cleared a path for him.

"Go!"

Nan Gong Ling shouted extremely loudly, he then immediately jumped into the air again and prepared for battle.

Everybody started moving at the same time as Nan Gong Ling.

"The sect is being destroyed under my reign... Yun Hai Sect, please forgive me! I'm so sorry!"

An extremely powerful Qi was released from Nan Gong Ling's body and he threw himself into battle to clear a path without hesitation. This was the greatest regret of his life, that in his time the Yun Hai Sect had been reduced to such a sorry state.

“You will die!”

A loud shout filled the air and suddenly a glowing sword whistled in the air accompanied by multiple different attacks.

“BOOOM!”

Nan Gong Ling's body turned into nothing but ashes.

The youngest Patriarch in the history of the Yun Hai Sect.... had perished!

Nobody seemed to feel sorry for him or was crying loudly, all the Elders of the Yun Hai Sect were calmly looking at his dead body. They were being attacked from all sides as well as they distracted the enemies from chasing Lin Feng. This was not how things were supposed to be.

Some elders were still trying to dodge the incoming attacks and to fight against the enemies of the sect. They didn't care about dying for the sect but they were still hoping to survive long enough to kill their opponent.

“Die!”

“Die, die, die....”

A strong wind was blowing over the arena. Each and every Elder tried to survive as long as they could and fight sparing no effort while using their full strength. The opponents were only attacking and didn't even need to defend themselves.

Each and every single of these Elders was falling down under the various attacks. This was the last chance that they had to show their will and determination. Lin Feng was looking at them and didn't blink even once. All these people who were fighting to the death would turn their head around and have one last look at Lin Feng before they died.

“Let's go...”

Protector Bei finally started moving at full speed like a comet moving towards the horizon.

The wings of the crane were creating whirlwinds as they flapped through the air. The power of these whirlwinds was painful to Lin Feng like blades striking his skin, but at this moment his heart was in even more pain. His fellow disciples, his friends and even those elders that owed him nothing, but they still gave their lives for him. They were all going to die while he would have to live on.

“Where do you think you are going?”

A loud voice spread throughout the atmosphere. It was just as incisive as ever. A dazzling sword appeared. It was the old man which was stood next to Duan Tian Lang.

“Piercing shadow, die!”

A loud voice spread throughout the atmosphere but seemed to come from nowhere. Only a dark green light flashed but that light, everybody saw it.

The possessor of a Shadow Spirit could kill without moving. He could pull out other people’s souls out of their body and take their lives.

“How dare you!” shouted a voice extremely loudly. The shadow and the gigantic dazzling sword collided into each other. For a second, it seemed like they were both attempting to swallow the other. The old man was injured and blood started to flow from his chest.

At that moment, the shadow appeared while the arm and the dagger had disappeared from sight.

Protector Bei hadn’t even seen what had just happened and continued flying towards the horizon.

Chapter 91: The Ancient Temple

“You cannot leave.”

Another voice spread throughout the air behind Lin Feng and Protector Bei. The Python Fish was spitting in and out a thick smoke. It suddenly opened its gigantic mouth and took a deep whistling breath which resonated in the atmosphere while releasing a strong Qi.

At the same time, a Legendary Roc spread its gigantic wings and flew towards Lin Feng and Protector Bei.

The strong Qi and the air currents in the atmosphere slowed Lin Feng and Protector Bei's escape. Lin Feng had the impression that his body was going to be swallowed by the beasts chasing him.

If Protector Bei wasn't firmly controlling the situation, Lin Feng would have already been eaten by The Python Fish.

The Legendary Roc was a Xuan level beast. It was extremely powerful. Only cultivators of the Xuan Qi layer could control them. A single breath could release an incredible amount of energy and Lin Feng, at that moment, would be unable to withstand even half of a breath.

“Suppress them!”

Teng Wu Shan was on the body of the Legendary Roc and was

shouting. He took out some pitch-black chains and threw himself at Lin Feng while attempting a surprise attack.

“Get lost!”

A loud shout was heard. The pitch-black chains had been intercepted by someone and that person was the old woman.

“Go! I will kill this evil animal!”

The old woman’s voice was calm but Protector Bei solemnly nodded. There were only two people who were strong enough to catch up with him: one of them was the old man carrying a huge sword and the other was Ten Wu Shan who was riding the Legendary Roc. These two people had both attempted to intercept him with their attacks.

The old man had been injured by Protector Kong so if they managed to kill the Legendary Roc, nobody would be able to catch up with Lin Feng.

Concerning what the old woman had said, Protector Bei had doubts and suspected she wouldn’t have the power to kill the roc.

“I still remember our agreement. Please remember to tell Liu Cang Lan, that little bastard, that I forgive him. As far as Wen Ren Yan and Liu Fei’s wedding is concerned, let’s forget about it, Lin Feng is suitable for this position.”

The old woman said calmly. Protector Bei laughed but didn't reply.

“Hmph, you are not allowed to brag until you have actually killed my legendary roc.”

Teng Wu Shan said that while smiling coldly. He then made the pitch-black chains shake so much that the old woman almost lost balance. As she looked like she was about to fall, the legendary roc was ready to swallow her whole.

Xuan level beasts were extremely intelligent, thus when the old woman said that she wanted to kill it, she had earned the hatred from the beast.

“An animal is animal!”

The old woman shouted extremely loudly in a cold tone. Her long hair was floating in the air. Then, a viper shadow appeared behind her back. It then seemed like her entire body had transformed into a snake. Immediately after, she threw herself straight towards the open mouth of the legendary roc.

That's right. She didn't resist and instead she hurled herself straight into the mouth of the legendary roc. At that moment, she was inside its body.

When Lin Feng saw that, he was extremely moved.

“Let’s go.” Protector Bei said indifferently. They looked behind them one last time and flew away at the speed of light.

They only heard a tremendous roar fill the air from a distance away as they continued to move into the horizon. Lin Feng had already guessed what had happened to the legendary roc.

As far as the tensions between Lin Feng and Wen Ren Yan were concerned, Lin Feng didn’t hate the old woman at all for having saved Wen Ren Yan. He could understand her and why she had saved her only student. The old woman didn’t care about losing face to save her only disciples life.

In the Yun Hai Sect, she was a protector. She was also ready to sacrifice her life for the sect.

That old woman was really ugly and had terrible judge of character but was definitely worthy of respect.

At that moment, nobody was able to catch up with Protector Bei. The wings of his crane spirit were flashing through the air at the speed of light and in the blink of an eye, they had disappeared from the Stormy Gorge without a trace.

Protector Bei and Lin Feng finally escaped from the Yun Hai Sect alive but they didn’t have any happy emotions from surviving the catastrophe. They knew that their lives had been saved because of all the blood that was flowing down the Stormy Gorge.

At the Precipice of the Abyss, there were only cliffs and precipices, nothing else. Apart from the passageway leading to these precipices, the only other possibility to access or leave the place was by flying there.

At that moment, the silhouette of a crane was flying towards the Precipice of Zhangu and was about to land by the square room filled with drums.

Lin Feng recognized this place, he was surprised. Actually, he even had doubts. Protector Bei hadn't brought him far away from the Yun Hai Sect, rather he had brought him to the precipice of Zhangu.

“We’re going down.”

Protector Bei looked at the Precipice of Zhangu and immediately after they landed there. They were surrounded by a dense fog.

“Do you remember this place?” asked Protector Bei to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng didn't really understand why the Protector Bei was asking him that but he nodded and said: “I remember this very well.”

“Yes, walking from passageway to passageway and precipice to precipice, you just end up here.”

While talking, Protector Bei tapped a stone three times and

suddenly a stone wall started moving and a door appeared.

These cliffs and precipices really constituted another world but also offered a scenery of exceptional charm.

“Let’s go inside.” said Protector Bei while bringing Lin Feng in. Then, the door closed itself making a loud slamming noise.

The place that they entered looked like a temple. It looked like an extremely temple within a palace. It was filled with an antique type of Qi.

In the middle of that temple, there was a painting of a dragon and a phoenix. There were a multitude of pillars as well which were supporting the walls of the ancient temple. On these pillars, there were a myriad of carvings representing different ferocious beasts. Surprisingly, Lin Feng had never seen many of these ferocious beasts. He was shocked that he did not know of the beasts on the carvings.

“The Yun Hai Sect didn’t build and established itself here for its physical features. It actually established itself here because they had discovered this temple.

Protector Bei’s voice was resonating in the temple and he then continue to introduce the place to Lin Feng: “Extremely strong cultivators in the past must have regularly come here in the ancient times to practice cultivation. Of course, this place may have also been an ancient sect. Some of the most powerful and mysterious skills and techniques that you can find in the Xing

Chen Pavilion were actually brought from here. Before we found these skills and techniques, the Xing Chen Pavilion didn't have that many extremely powerful skills. But because news spreads quickly and there are many people with bad intentions, this place is kept secret from everyone within the sect. Only protectors of the Yun Hai Sect know about this place. Even the Patriarch does not know that this temple exists.

Extremely strong cultivators of the ancient times came to practice here? Even the Patriarch didn't know that place?

Lin Feng was touched by the fact he had been told this secret. Surprisingly, only protectors of the sect were allowed to come here.

Lin Feng was observing the temple with all of his attention. It was imposing, gigantic and the Qi flowing in the air was extremely powerful. The temple was filled with all sorts of treasures, skills, techniques and weapons. Even though they were covered in dust, they were all very old and probably extremely powerful.

“Lin Feng, come with me.”

Protector Bei started walking and brought Lin Feng into the depths of the temple. A short instant later, they found themselves in front of the entrance of a small room. In the middle of that room, there was a brown wood carving. There was also a bookshelf in which there were many books. Even though they were covered with dust, they were perfectly arranged and sorted which meant that someone had tidied this place recently.

“We’re going to take all of the skills and techniques of the Xing Chen Pavilion. They are all handwritten copies. The lowest skills and techniques are of the Xuan level. The highest skills and techniques are of low quality Di level ones. There is an incredible amount of books but they are extremely hard to learn and many cannot be practised. Even the protectors found them difficult to learn. Practicing them even a little bit already enables us to carry out extremely powerful attacks. You can choose an appropriate skill for yourself to learn.”

If Lin Feng had come to this place before, he would certainly have been overjoyed but at that moment, he couldn’t express the slightest sign of happiness. All the events that had occurred were uninterruptedly appearing in his mind. He couldn’t get rid of these horrible images.

“Let’s go and check another room.”

Protector Bei wasn’t done showing things to Lin Feng. He then brought him to another antique room.

“Weapons.”

The floor made of stone was diffusing an extremely old yet strong Qi which made Lin Feng feel shivers.

These weapons all had spirits.

These weapons had spirits, they were spiritual weapons.

“You can call them weapons but it would be more precise to call them spiritual weapons.”

Protector Bei, continued his explanations while sounding solemn: “Weapon is a word used to describe ordinary weapons but these weapons here have spirits. They are extremely powerful and unique.”

Protector Bei walked towards an ancient sword and grabbed it. He then said to Lin Feng: “Give me the sword that you’re carrying on your back.”

Lin Feng slightly nodded and handed his long sword to Protector Bei.

Protector Bei didn’t use any skill or technique but Lin Feng’s long sword flew into the air towards Protector Bei and collided into the other sword.

“CLANG!”

An incredibly clear and melodious sound resonated in the room. A sword then moved straight into Lin Feng’s hand. That sword was extremely sharp and looked beautiful and shiny.

“All of these weapons are not ordinary weapons. They are all spiritual weapons... an ignorant man can quickly become a

criminal... but treasuring a jade ring is also a crime. We have never let the weapons see the real world but from today, all of them will belong to you.”

“Belong to me?!” Lin Feng was astonished. Protector Bei was still there alive but he was giving everything to Lin Feng?!

“Indeed, everything that is here now belongs to you.” stated Protector Bei solemnly while nodding. He then took a stone which was laying amongst all the weapons. It looked ordinary.

“This is an ancient Na stone. It is empty inside. If you put a drop of blood on the top, the space which is inside that stone will open itself for you.”

Protector Bei explained the things to Lin Feng while handing the stone over to him.

Lin Feng used his sword to cut the tip of his finger. He then let a drop of blood fall onto the stone. His blood was slowly flowing on the stone and then something strange happened.

The Na stone diffused a bright and dazzling light. Lin Feng’s blood became extremely red and slowly started spreading through the stone.

At that moment, a wonderful sensation and emotion welled up in Lin Feng’s heart. It was as if Lin Feng and that stone had created an indescribable and unbreakable connection.

Lin Feng had the feeling that his entire consciousness had connected with the stone. Inside of that stone, there was an incredibly huge space which was full of items.

A strangely familiar smell invaded Lin Feng's nostrils which suddenly made him shiver.

“Is it...?”

Lin Feng's pupils were dilated and staring at Protector Bei.

“You are right. This is Nan Gong Ling's Qi. When he was still alive, everything that belonged to him, everything that belonged to the sect was stored in that stone. Now, you are the owner of that stone.” declared Protector Bei solemnly. Then, he fixedly stared at Lin Feng and said: “Lin Feng, from today, you are the new Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect.”

Chapter 92: Deadly Cross Shadow

“Lin Feng, from today, you are the new Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect.”

Protector Bei was speaking in a solemn and quiet tone. Lin Feng was trembling from head to toe while staring blankly at Protector Bei.

“Lin Feng, even though the Yun Hai Sect probably has nobody left, I don’t want it to let it disappear forever. That was Nan Gong Ling’s wish as well. In the future, if you have the chance then I hope that you can rebuild it and revive the Yun Hai Sect.”

While looking at the myriad of wrinkles present on the old man’s face, Lin Feng nodded solemnly and respectfully.

“If I, Lin Feng, don’t die, I will definitely revive the Yun Hai Sect.”

“Alright.”

Protector Bei smiled and tapped on Lin Feng’s shoulder with his right hand.

“Lin Feng, there is something else I have to tell you.”

“Protector Bei, please tell me.”

“In the past, Fei Fei’s father, Liu Cang Lan and Nan Gong Ling were the most outstanding disciples of the Yun Hai Sect which gave endless hope to everybody within the sect. Before Nan Gong Ling became the Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect there was Nan Gong Ling’s teacher and former Patriarch. Actually, he would have preferred to make Liu Cang Lan become the Patriarch. He also wanted to give him his only daughter for marriage.”

“But after that, Liu Cang Lan decided to leave the sect abandoning everything behind him. He wanted to let Nan Gong Ling become the Patriarch but what Liu Cang Lan didn’t know is that the Patriarch’s daughter had already fallen in love with him. Because she had been abandoned by Liu Cang Lan, she was feeling so desperate that.... she committed suicide. Because of the death of his daughter, the Patriarch at the time suffered so much. One day he left the Yun Hai Sect and never came back. Nobody knows whether he was dead or alive.”

“Since that moment, Nan Gong Ling became the Patriarch of the sect. Besides, Liu Cang Lan had completely lost face so he couldn’t come back to the Yun Hai Sect. As an apology, he made Fei Fei join the Yun Hai Sect... He wanted to apologise to the former Patriarch and to his daughter, even more to the former Patriarch’s wife. Her beloved daughter had passed away and her husband had disappeared without leaving trace. Therefore, the old woman had a deep and bitter hatred for Liu Cang Lan. She became Wen Ren Yan’s teacher and dreamed of seeing her student getting married with Liu Cang Lan’s daughter, Fei Fei. That is why Wen Ren Yan had dared to act such a way in the Yun Hai Sect.”

When Lin Feng heard all of these things, his heart was pounding.

He was astonished. He wouldn't have thought that the Yun Hai Sect had such secrets. No wonder Wen Ren Yan was so arrogant and dared say that Liu Fei was his. No wonder that the old woman had seemed so eccentric. That explained everything.

“Lin Feng, did you hear the old woman when she told me to tell Liu Cang Lan that she forgave him? She also said that she had no objections to you getting married with Fei Fei. However, this is your private life and I'll let you arrange the things yourself.” Protector Bei was speaking honestly, pouring out the content that was locked away in his heart and then continued: “Liu Cang Lan should be in Duan Ren City now. You can go and look for him. He is an honest man. He is afraid of fighting with Duan Tian Lang though. If something happened to Liu Cang Lan, please take good care of Liu Fei.”

“Protector Bei, there is nothing happening between Liu Fei and me.” said Lin Feng while smiling wryly. The old woman had only said that Lin Feng was better suited for Liu Fei than Wen Ran Yan, did that mean that he had to marry Liu Fei?

“What the old woman said was a suggestion. You have to go tell Liu Cang Lan that Liu Fei is still in the Yun Hai Sect. Duan Tian Lang, considering Liu Fei's status, would never dare kill her... but if Liu Cang Lan fell from power or died, things would be different. Therefore you must take good care of Liu Fei. Besides, Liu Fei is also an outstanding young woman. You two are a perfect match.”

“Alright, we have talked enough for now. The temple is yours. Dispose of it as you wish. Don't forget to go and find Liu Cang Lan.”

“Protector Bei.” Lin Feng’s voice was firm. Protector Bei’s tone of speech made Lin Feng have an ominous premonition.

“On that side, there is an exit... It leads to the Black Wind Mountain. Please be careful. Of course, you can also practice in the temple. You can wait to become a little bit stronger and then go out.” said Protector Bei while scratching his ear. When he finished talking, he turned around and headed to the exit.

“Protector Bei, you.....” Lin Feng’s facial expression drastically changed. He ran after Protector Bei and wanted to shout and ask him to stay.

“Lin Feng, I am a Protector of the Yun Hai Sect. While the Yun Hai Sect still exists then I can live, however if it were to be destroyed then how can I continue living without protecting it?!”

When he finished talking, Protector Bei was already leaving. The large stone door opened making a rumbling noise. Protector Bei didn’t turn around and left Lin Feng alone within the temple. Lin Feng stared at Protector Bei’s back as he left.

Lin Feng had the feeling that lightning was surging in his heart. He was standing there while gazing blankly into the distance. While the stone door was closing itself, Protector Bei’s silhouette was gradually vanishing. This would probably be the last time he saw Protector Bei.

Lin Feng understood clearly that this temple didn’t only separate

him from the rest of the world... It was a spiritual separation like the Yin and the Yang. It was the key to eternal life.

Lin Feng stood there alone at the same place for a long time while staring blankly into the distance and then finally started moving again. He closed his eyes and took a deep sorrowful breath which resonated throughout the temple.

“Patriarch, Protector Bei, Protector Kong, Old Woman... these noble elders... they sacrificed themselves to save my life. They fearlessly handed themselves over to those despicable people to protect me...”

“They are not here anymore... but I am still here... and I have so many things to do.”

Lin Feng was talking to himself. His sad expression had turned into a determined expression full of willpower.

It required an extraordinary strength to change destiny. Lin Feng wanted to make these people who had given their lives for him a chance to find peace in death. He would make them proud and they would not die in vain.

“Hao Yue Sect, Ice and Snow Mountain Village, Mo Shou Sect, Duan Clan, Han Xue Tian, Teng Wu Shan, Duan Tian Lang, Duan Han, Mo Cang Lan, Wen Ren Yan.”

All these names, all these treacherous people. They were deeply

engraved in Lin Feng's memories. He would never forget about them. He would one day get revenge for the events which had happened today.

Lin Feng turned around and walked towards the first room he had visited.

In that room, there was a huge bookshelf full of agility techniques and martial skills. It was divided into sections. One section was dedicated to agility techniques and one section was dedicated to martial skills.

“Blade Cadence, low Di level agility technique, produces pure and sharp energy to propel oneself.”

Lin Feng looked at an agility technique but it didn't suit him at all. The best was to possess a Blade Spirit when using that agility technique. Of course, Lin Feng was too weak at the moment to use the energy required. He couldn't learn and practice such agility techniques. After getting stronger and after breaking through to the Xuan Qi layer, he would be able to control pure energy which was extremely powerful.

Lin Feng put the book back into the bookshelf and checked two martial skill books.

“Swift Leaves... skill of the low Di level. Leaves emerge out of the palm of the user. These leaves are faintly discernible and extremely quick. It seems like they have no power, but they can actually penetrate directly into the opponent's body causing

internal damage. These leaves are extremely powerful and can go almost unnoticed.”

That looked like a skill suited to a female cultivator. It didn't look that strong but if the opponent underestimated that skill, they would probably die in horrible conditions. A female could easily get close and kill her opponent without anyone seeing an attack.

Besides, that attack was faintly discernible which made it almost impossible for opponents to block it.

Lin Feng put it down and looked at another skill.

Deadly Cross Shadow... low Di level skill. Suitable for people whose spirits enable them to become invisible. It is divided into three movements: Vanishing Shadow, Dark Shadow and Deadly Cross Shadow.

“This is similar to Protector Kong's skill!” thought Lin Feng. His heart bounced for a second. It seemed like Protector Kong had only learnt the first part of the skill and had combined it with other skills. Besides, it was a perfect skill for his Shadow Spirit. It was extremely strong.

Too bad that Protector Kong hadn't been able to practice until Dark Shadow Pierce, otherwise, he could have been really invisible.

As far as the last part of the skill was concerned, Deadly Cross

Shadow, it was indeed extremely powerful making you almost undetectable by the enemy.

“My Celestial Spirit enables me to release a special cloaking Qi and the illusionary demon makes my opponents suffer of hallucinations. Combined with my spirit, that Deadly Cross Shadow should be perfect.”

Lin Feng's heart was racing. That skill had no strength requirement. A cultivator of any Qi layer could learn and practice it as long as they could understand the complexity of the skill.

That skill was only a tool though, a way to complement one's other skills. Bringing Deadly Cross Shadow into play could strongly enhance a person's other abilities.

Lin Feng then continued looking at other skills. He didn't find any other skill which was appropriate for him. He then put all the skills on the bookshelf into the Na stone.

Apart from Lin Feng, the Protectors hadn't told anybody else about that place. These things should be safe in the bookshelf but if Lin Feng had a problem, it was probably better to have them near him, especially in case of emergency.

Lin Feng then went to the other room where there were the spiritual weapons. He also began putting them inside the Na stone.

There were a lot of purity stones in the temple, Lin Feng also put

them all in the Na stone.

Purity stones contained pure Qi like that of heaven and earth. Any cultivator who had at least, broken through to the Ling Qi layer, could use these to enhance their cultivation. It was a very valuable item.

How could Lin Feng not take these precious items with him?

Lin Feng walked around in that vast temple, he made a few rounds and noticed that on the pillar situated at the both ends of the temple, the ferocious beasts engraved into the stone were exactly the same.

Only by looking at the drawings of the ferocious beasts, Lin Feng could feel an extremely strong and powerful Qi. It was much stronger than that Xuan level Python Fish.

But Lin Feng was more concerned with something else. There was a greenish door made from carved jade which was emanating a strong Qi. Lin Feng tried to push it in vain. No matter what strength he put into it, it wouldn't move. Furthermore, there also seemed to be no hidden lever or switch to open the door.

“What is the secret of that door? Maybe the one who built this temple has left hints behind. Too bad that I can't open it.”

Lin Feng frowned. Protector Bei hadn't opened the door for him. Maybe none of the Protectors of the Yun Hai Sect had ever opened

this door before.

“Never mind. If I have the opportunity and I am strong enough, I will come back and try again.”

Lin Feng said these few words while finally giving up. In the history of the Yun Hai Sect which dated back to a thousand years, nobody had ever opened that jade door. It was obviously very hard to open and it would be a waste of time to stay there for too long trying to open it.

These days, the most important thing was to become stronger. Strong enough to protect himself and strong enough to protect those who are close to him.

Lin Feng had broken through to the second Ling Qi layer which was extremely rare for his age but if he had to face cultivators who had cultivated for a few years longer then he would be in a critical situation, no matter their talent. He needed to become strong.

Chapter 93: Girl Inside The Illusion

There was a bed made of stone which was appropriate for the practicing of cultivation techniques. Lin Feng sat cross-legged on that bed and entered into a state of meditation. He was absorbing pure Qi from the purity stone. However he quickly opened his eyes with a perplexed look.

On the path of cultivation, sitting and meditating wasn't enough to advance to the next Qi layer. Knowledge was also necessary as well as enlightenment on the path of cultivation.

Lin Feng had the feeling that he had absorbed enough pure Qi in order to break through to the third Ling Qi layer. It was enough Qi at that moment to condense into the next layer but he had yet to breakthrough. He would break through to the next Ling Qi layer at the right moment. When the water comes, a channel is formed.

“It feels like a week has passed since I entered the temple.”

Lin Feng tried to estimate the time he had spent in the temple. He then immediately stood up and walked towards the exit.

Considering Lin Feng's strength, it was impossible for him to leave the same way he had arrived, he could not fly. He had no choice but to walk through the long and narrow passageway towards Black Wind Mountain.

Lin Feng was convinced that this passageway had been constructed by the previous generations of the Yun Hai Sect. It was

impossible for the ancient cultivators who owned the temple to spend so much time digging in the rock to create such a long passageway to go to the Black Wind Mountain. Why would they need to do something so hidden?

The ancestors of the Yun Hai Sect had created that place for the members of the sect to take refuge. They would have never thought that the Yun Hai Sect would never get the chance to escape from an attack and that they would be slaughtered leaving behind a river of blood.

Lin Feng had walked for a while when he arrived at the end of the passageway. At that point, the passage was so narrow that he had to crouch down to exit.

It was really extremely dark and Lin Feng observed the sky for the first time in over a week. It was night and the full moon was brightly lighting the sky. The air was chilly and Lin Feng could sense the cold in his lungs and throat.

This place was the summit of a chain of mountains.

“Surprisingly, this is where the passageway leads to. It’s a very safe route.” thought Lin Feng filled with admiration for those who had created the passageway. This place was a part of the Black Wind Mountain and it seemed like no humans had ever been there. This place was mainly occupied by ferocious beasts. Ferocious beasts in that part of the Black Wind Mountain were much larger than average so even if they found the entrance of the passageway, they’d never be able to gain access because the passageway was very small and narrow.

Apart from ferocious beasts, even if human beings found the entrance of the passageway, who would be willing to crawl through the dark passageway for such a long time without knowing where it led?

A small rock which was hanging above of the entrance of the passageway fell down and rolled across the floor.

Lin Feng sat on that rock and stared at the full moon. His eyes revealed disappointment...

Lin Feng felt extremely lonely.

Back in the days, he had been riding his horse from Yangzhou City towards the Yun Hai Sect crossing a wide range of landscapes including lakes and rivers. Back then, he would have never thought that the Yun Hai Sect would give birth to lakes and rivers... of blood. Lin Feng was thinking about that bloodbath and replaying the massacre over and over in his head.

He had no choice but to hope for a better future.

It was a cold and windy evening. Lin Feng's robes were flowing in the wind but Lin Feng remained motionless like a statue.

At that moment, the Qi of heaven and earth had started fluctuating in a strange way. It suddenly started rushing towards Lin Feng as if it was going to pierce into his bones and flesh. It was

both marvellous and intriguing at the same time.

Lin Feng wasn't really paying any attention to the events happening before him. He just kept looking at the moon with a look of sorrow on his face. At that moment, Lin Feng wanted to forget everything. He had really lost too much.

“Huh?”

Lin Feng had just been sitting on that rock for a little while and something incredibly strange happened. Lin Feng was astonished.

A milky pure energy was floating around his hands. It was more condensed than what Lin Feng had ever experienced before.

“I broke through to the third Ling Qi layer?!”

Lin Feng was dumbfounded. He wouldn't have thought that sitting on that rock for a little while would make him break through to the next Ling Qi layer. He attributed the event to his previous meditation but mostly to his own luck.

“Third Ling Qi layer... that coupled with all the cards I now hold, if I meet Duan Han now, I should definitely be able to defeat him.”

When Lin Feng remembered Han Man, his eyes formed into an icy glare. Duan Han and his father all had to die... for having exterminated the Yun Hai Sect. They had exterminated his closest friends...

“WHO DARES??” shouted Lin Feng extremely loudly. He turned around and his pupils shrank.

At that moment, a silhouette appeared in front of him but Lin Feng had the impression it was a hallucination.

It was an extremely beautiful silhouette. The moon was shining upon that exquisite silhouette allowing Lin Feng to clearly see some of her physical features.

What a beauty. Lin Feng had the impression that he was dreaming. She was wearing thin white robes. Anyone who saw her would feel like protecting and hugging her but would certainly not feel enchanted.

“Such perfection!”

Lin Feng was stupefied. Even if he felt determined and had a lot of willpower, when seeing this young girl, he could only be amazed at the beauty of the women in this world. They all looked so beautiful and delicate, much more than in the previous world. Many of them even looked like goddesses.

Liu Fei was extremely beautiful and she was incredibly strong. Lin Feng had realised that beauties of this world were on another level.

The girl who was standing in front of Lin Feng looked like an

illusion. She actually looked like... a painting!

“Who are you? What are you doing here?”

The incredibly beautiful girl opened her mouth and her voice sounded out, breaking the illusion. She wasn't an illusion but she was so beautiful that she didn't look real.

“My name is Lin Feng. How did you find your way to this place?”

Lin Feng was too perplexed and intrigued when looking at this young girl. It was at night in a lost corner of the Black Wind Mountain and suddenly a beautiful girl had appeared from out of nowhere. Lin Feng was utterly confused at how this had happened.

Lin Feng moved towards the girl to see her better and as expected, that girl didn't look weak. She even looked remarkably strong.

“Lin Feng...”

The girl whispered Lin Feng's name again for herself and then immediately said: “I've always lived here. Suddenly, you come here and ask me what I am doing here?”

“I also don't know how I found this place.” Lin Feng shrugged and replied but it was unlikely that she would believe him.

“Since it’s like that, please leave.” said the girl giving a cold stare.

“But I don’t know where I am or how to leave.” said Lin Feng smiling wryly. He only knew where the entrance of the passage way was but he didn’t know where he was at that moment and where to go from there. He didn’t know where he was exactly.

“Are we in the Black Wind Mountain?” asked Lin Feng.

The girl stared at Lin Feng. He surprisingly didn’t even whether it was the Black Wind Mountain or not.

“Indeed, this is the hinterland of the Black Wind Mountain.”

“.....” Lin Feng was stupefied. This was the hinterland of the Black Wind Mountain?

“Protector Bei probably never walked here before.”

Lin Feng was smiling wryly. On the outskirts of the Black Wind Mountain, there were strong ferocious beasts but inside the Black Wind Mountain, there were even more powerful ferocious beasts and they were constantly running wild. If Lin Feng wanted to get out of here then it wasn’t going to be easy.

If Protector Bei had known this before then he probably would have never left Lin Feng alone in the temple and would have never shown him the passage way.

“You just said that you’ve always been living here?”

Lin Feng just realized what the girl had said. He was stupefied. There were people living in the Black Wind Mountain?

“Indeed. I’ve been living here with my mother since I was a child.”

The girl was nodding her head confidently.

“Have you never been out of here?” asked Lin Feng.

“Never.”

“.....” Lin Feng didn’t know what to say but he was thinking that it was better for such a beautiful and delicate woman to never venture outside. She was so beautiful that she would cause great trouble wherever she went. She looked lovely enough that she might just cause the downfall of the country.

“Maybe her mother is as beautiful as her and this is why they enjoyed living in seclusion.” thought Lin Feng.

He then asked her: “Are there no ferocious beasts in the area?”

“No, there aren’t any.” said the girl shaking her delicate head.

Lin Feng slightly nodded. No wonder that she could live here all of her life, if there were no ferocious beasts in that area it wouldn't be very dangerous.

“Do you want to leave here?”

The girl suddenly asked Lin Feng while staring at him. Her eyes were sparkling.

“Of course, I want to leave tomorrow morning.” Said Lin Feng.

“I'll help you leave here and I'll come with you.”

The girl opened her mouth again but this time Lin Feng had a weird feeling. She would bring Lin Feng out of this place on her own?

In the Black Wind Mountain there were many dangerous ferocious beasts. That girl didn't seem to be a weak cultivator but she also seemed to be about as young as Lin Feng which meant she couldn't be that strong. How could she walk through the Black Wind Mountain so easily?

Lin Feng's spirit smelt like that of the Imaginary Demon so that made things easier for him in the Black Wind Mountain. He could disguise himself as one of the ferocious beasts and walk freely around the mountain.

“You don’t trust in my strength?” asked the girl as if she could read Lin Feng’s thoughts?

“Of course I don’t. The Black Wind Mountain is extremely dangerous, do you think that it is easy? Besides, you said that you have never left here before.”

“Even though I have never left here, I know the Black Wind Mountain better than anyone. I even know where to go in order to avoid ferocious beasts. It is very easy for me come and go as I please.”

The girl said while sounding indifferent and also looked at Lin Feng expressionless.

Better than anyone? She knew how to avoid ferocious beasts?

Lin Feng was stupefied. He was looking suspiciously at that beautiful young girl. If she could really avoid fighting while navigating the mountain then it would indeed be safer.

“Do you agree to help me leave?” asked Lin Feng.

“Yes, I have never left here but I would like to see how it is on the outside. If I get out of the Black Wind Mountain, I will also need your help.” said the young girl very honestly.

“Well, your mother.....”

“She went out. I still don’t know when she’s coming back. No need to worry about her.”

Lin Feng was a bit confused but it would be very hard alone in the Black Mountain Forest with all these extremely powerful wild beasts.

Lin Feng nodded and asked: “Then when should we leave?”

“Now.” replied the young girl.

“Alright, I want to go to the Yun Hai Sect. Do you know it?” said Lin Feng as he stood up.

“I know. I know everything in the Black Wind Mountain... but if I leave the Black Wind Mountain, I’ll be lost.”

The young girl replied honestly showing that she was extremely naïve.

Chapter 94: I will just show you

The tops of the trees was still covered with early morning fog. Some people could already be seen walking past the gate leading into the territory of the Yun Hai Sect at the foot of its mountain. Most of them were going to the Yun Hai Sect. Very few people were walking away from the sect.

At that moment, a young man and a young woman were walking towards the Yun Hai Sect. They were looking at the mountain where the Yun Hai Sect was and they both smiled.

“Girl, this is the Yun Hai Sect. Duan Tian Lang really is an incredibly powerful man. He completely destroyed the Yun Hai Sect within one day... that’s why everybody admires him in the Xue Yue Country. Nobody will ever dare provoke him or his family in the future. Besides, I heard that he has an enemy in Duan Ren City. His enemy has a Divine Arrow Spirit. When he heard what happened to the Yun Hai Sect, he started coughing blood. It seems like he is seriously ill.”

When the young man wearing luxurious clothes told the young and beautiful girl these things, they both laughed wholeheartedly.

“Besides, now that the Yun Hai Sect has disappeared our Qing Yi Sect has expanded faster. Nobody in the surrounding area will dare to attack us.”

“Indeed. If the big sects of the country don’t come attack us, this entire area is ours.”

The young girl laughed and said: “Every day is different. The Yun Hai Sect used to be extremely powerful and now it is nothing but dust. Over time everything would eventually fall. The sect became so strong that many people are now frightened of you. Core disciples could maybe compete with you but elite disciples are worthless. Besides, you’re only seventeen years old and you’re already so powerful. You’re a genius. Your future is filled with endless opportunities.”

“Haha, our Qing Yi Sect is much stronger now. It can’t be compared with the Yun Hai Sect of the past. We have so many geniuses. They only had a few good skills and techniques, that’s all. The Yun Hai Sect was a bunch of crappy cultivators. If we keep improving our stock of skills and techniques, we’ll become much stronger than they ever were.”

When the young man wearing the luxurious clothes heard the young girl praise him, he felt extremely proud of himself and laughed arrogantly.

“Is that so?”

At that moment, a voice came from behind. The young girl and boy turned around and saw two people.

But the young boy and girl didn’t even look at one of them. They directly stared at the young girl wearing white robes. They were fascinated by her beauty.

They had the impression that nothing else existed in the world other than her beauty. They could only see that beautiful girl wearing white robes. She made all the material attractions of that world utterly unimportant. One only wanted to look at her forever. She didn't look like any other person in the world.

The boy wearing the luxurious clothes and his fellow disciple were staring at the beautiful girl and had the feeling they were looking at a spirit.

In the world, there were surprisingly people who could be that beautiful.

The girl who was standing next to Lin Feng, when she noticed that these people were staring at her, couldn't help but smile wryly and shake her head.

The girl had done exactly as she had promised Lin Feng. They had left the Black Wind Mountain and what surprised Lin Feng the most is that they really had encountered no ferocious beast at all. They had managed to avoid fighting all together.

Lin Feng had started to think that the Black Wind Mountain wasn't actually as terrifying as the rumours described. There were certain paths that were incredibly safe, it was just that very few people knew of these paths.

“Of course, the Yun Hai Sect is a crappy sect. Otherwise, how could they have been annihilated so easily?” Said the arrogant young man.

The girl who was with the young man couldn't help but dully stare at the other girl. She didn't feel at ease because that other girl was much more beautiful than her.

She had a lot of self-confidence when it came to her appearance and believed that she was extremely beautiful but at that moment, she had the feeling that she didn't exist when standing next to that other beautiful girl. That girl was infinitely more beautiful than her.

“Since the Yun Hai Sect is a crappy sect then why are the disciples of the Qing Yi Sect, so afraid of going near the Yun Hai Sect disciples? Why do you all keep a distance of a few hundred meters from the sect even now? Why do you all look at the Yun Hai Sect's disciples with such reverence and respect?”

Lin Feng said that while smiling coldly. The Qing Yi Sect was an extremely small sect. They suddenly dared criticize the Yun Hai Sect because it had been annihilated. It seemed like they had forgotten that they used to bow down before the Yun Hai Sect's disciples. They were really a bunch of shameless people.

“That's because there are rumours which say that the Yun Hai Sect has a great multitude of great skills and techniques, that's all. I am happy that they are all dead. Besides, we are proud of our sect. We've never bowed in front of Yun Hai Sect's disciples. They're just a bunch of trash.”

That young arrogant disciple suddenly regained his composure

and stopped staring at the girl. His eyes suddenly looked incredibly evil.

Lin Feng was accompanied by an extremely beautiful girl who looked like a goddess. How was it possible not to be jealous of him? Such a beautiful girl should be given to the Patriarch of the small Qing Yi Sect as a wife.

Suddenly, the young arrogant disciple paused and started looking at Lin Feng with eyes filled with killing intent.

“Huh?”

Lin Feng frowned. His heart felt cold. That young man was suddenly looking at Lin Feng as if he wanted to kill him.

The weak are the prey of the strong... the law of the jungle was the law of this world. If someone wanted to kill someone else, he would have no compassion and do it without hesitation.

“If I understand you properly, the Qing Yi Sect’s disciples are much stronger than those of the Yun Hai Sect, is that right?” asked Lin Feng coldly.

“Definitely. How could the trash of the Yun Hai Sect compare themselves with the great disciples of the Qing Yi Sect?”

The young man becoming more and more aggressive. He wanted to make the beautiful girl accompanying Lin Feng impressed by his

confidence and strength.

“Hehe, I challenged an elite disciple of the Yun Hai Sect one day and I lost. You seem to be even stronger though considering what you are saying. Shall we have a look!”

Lin Feng had a naive smile on the corner of his mouth making him look harmless and weak.

“Hehe, elite disciples of the Yun Hai Sect are so crappy. They can’t even be compared with me. But since you are curious, I will show you what a strong cultivator is and how weak you are in comparison.”

The young man wouldn’t have thought that Lin Feng would take the initiative to challenge him. He couldn’t help but be overjoyed. Lin Feng was going to die in such a pitiful way.

“Besides, what is a piece of trash like you doing with such an amazingly beautiful girl. When you die, she will stay with me and I will take care of her.”

While saying these words, the young man in luxurious clothes took out a long sword and waved it through the air. He released his Sword Spirit and started moving towards Lin Feng looking extremely over confident.

“Second Ling Qi layer... and you think you are going to kill me. That’s surprising.” said Lin Feng on a cold and indifferent tone.

Lin Feng raised his right hand and an extremely powerful and strong sword Qi suddenly emerged from his palm and invaded the atmosphere. The young man almost immediately collapsed when he was hit by the pressure. His face turned deathly pale with fright.

“The fact that you use a sword is a humiliation to all swords.”

Lin Feng said in a cold tone. The young man was already frozen by the pressure of the Qi which Lin Feng released. A thin mark of blood appeared on his throat and with his eyes looking immensely frightened, he collapsed heavily onto the ground.

The girl who was accompanying him also looked terrified... How had her fellow disciple been killed?

How strong! How powerful! There was a gigantic gap between Lin Feng and her fellow disciple.

When the girl saw that Lin Feng was staring at her, she could not help but start shaking with fear.

“I don’t even need to use a single skill to kill trash from the Qing Yi Sect.”

Lin Feng’s cold expression made him look evil, like a ferocious beast.

“Tell me your purpose for coming to the Yun Hai Sect.”

“The Yun Hai Sect was completely annihilated. We came here to test our luck and see if we could find a few good skills and techniques. We are not the only ones, many other people want to come here for the same purpose.”

The young man hadn't died yet and hastily replied to Lin Feng.

“What about those who exterminated the Yun Hai Sect? Haven't they stolen everything already?”

“Those who exterminated the Yun Hai Sect stayed here for three days after the battle. They stole almost everything but maybe they didn't care about some skills and techniques which might prove very useful to us. Besides....” the boy who had just been defeated by Lin Feng looked ashamed. He was being humiliated.

“Besides what?”

“Besides, in the Stormy Gorge, there are many corpses... maybe they were carrying things which we could take no that they have died.”

....

Lin Feng was shaking in anger from head to toe. These animals wanted to violate the dead bodies of his fellow disciples and elders.

An extremely strong and sharp sword Qi invaded the atmosphere.

The young man suddenly looked deathly pale again. That sword Qi was so powerful. How strong was Lin Feng?!

“Cripple your own cultivation and then piss off.”

Lin Feng sounded extremely cold blooded. He was initially thinking of letting these people off but when he heard that they wanted to steal things from the dead of the Yun Hai Sect, he didn't feel like being merciful anymore.

These two disciples were shaking in terror.

“I will let you take three breaths from now, if you don't cripple your own cultivation, you will not breathe a fourth.”

Lin Feng had said he would kill them with a commanding tone.

“If I cripple my own cultivation, isn't it like dying?”

“Alright, I'll finish you off now then.”

Lin Feng released an extremely strong sword Qi which oppressed them so much that they could feel the pressure was ready to crush them. The two young disciples were stunned.

“Alright, alright, I’ll cripple my own cultivation.” said the two young people while gnashing their teeth. They raised their hand and stabbed their dantian. They became so weak that they could not even stand, they fell helplessly onto the ground.

“Meng Qing, let’s go.”

Lin Feng said that to the girl who was accompanying him. Lin Feng had helped her find a name because she had told him she didn’t have one.

That was the only name that had come into Lin Feng’s mind because Meng meant dream and Qing meant lover and any man would have dreamt of having that girl as a lover. That was the only name which Lin Feng could come up with that would match her.

Of course, the girl didn’t know why Lin Feng had chosen that name for her. Actually, the outside world was completely unknown to her.

“Why don’t you kill them?”

Meng Qing suddenly asked Lin Feng that question which surprised Lin Feng. He was blankly staring at her.

“When I look at their eyes, I feel like vomiting.”

Meng Qing had replied to her own question. Her face revealed that she wasn't used to speaking with other people.

“When you look into my eyes, what do you feel? I will just show you.”

Lin Feng was stupefied. Meng Qing's expression seemed like she suddenly had a great idea and she ran forward.

Meng Qing didn't really understand Lin Feng's feelings but Lin Feng found her to be cute and charming. Unknown warmth filled his heart.

Lin Feng was observing Meng Qing. He was in admiration of her beauty. She looked so delicate and so cute. There was absolutely nothing detestable about her. Her thoughts were also pure and innocent. Lin Feng found it easy to get close to her.

Chapter 95: Each Step Brings Death

Life and Death Arena, Stormy Gorge, Yun Hai Sect.

A bright red river of blood was flowing through the Stormy Gorge. Even though seven days had passed, the river of blood was still flowing.

There was a legion of corpses lying on the ground. The corpses hadn't started decomposing yet due to the cold temperature.

The strangest thing was that many people were walking around the corpses and didn't look disgusted by all the blood. They did not seem disturbed by the scene before them and on the contrary looked overjoyed. Each of these people had eyes filled with greed.

"The Yun Hai Sect deserved the title of a great sect. Even if these corpses only belonged to disciples of the sect, they still have a great deal of items on them."

A male cultivator was kneeling down next to a corpse and took a high quality Yellow Level skill from it. He then looked around him carefully, as if he was scared to be noticed by someone before he picked it up.

He wasn't the only one, there was a multitude of other people just like him stealing things from the corpses within the gorge. They were all disciples of the smaller sects. When they heard that the Yun Hai Sect had been completely annihilated, they had rushed here to see if they would be lucky and could find some

treasures hidden on the corpses.

At that moment, there were two silhouettes stood at the top of the Stormy Gorge and were about to throw themselves into the gorge.

One of them looked fascinatingly beautiful. The other was wearing a mask which had a bronze look. This mask had the capacity to increase Qi.

These two people were obviously Lin Feng and Meng Qing.

Lin Feng was too famous. All the great sects of the country were looking to kill him. He obviously had to be careful. Therefore, he had taken that mask from inside the temple.

When she saw all the blood and smelt the putrid odor released by the corpses, Meng Qing started feeling dizzy. She felt like vomiting when she saw the scene.

“Why did we come here?” asked Meng Qing looking at Lin Feng but she noticed that Lin Feng was absolutely motionless. An extremely cold aura was surrounding his body.

“These animals... not even letting the dead rest in peace.”

Lin Feng saw someone who was searching a dead body and when he finished, he kicked it which made the body roll away. Lin Feng was indescribably disgusted at the actions of these cultivators.

When she saw Lin Feng's change in aura, Meng Qing stopped talking. She didn't want to disturb Lin Feng.

Lin Feng spread his arms looking like a bird spreading its wings and jumped down into the gorge.

Down in the Stormy Gorge the cultivators who were looting the dead bodies of the Yun Hai Sect members could feel a bad premonition. Something was about to happen. They all started to look around and then looked at Lin Feng who was jumping down into the gorge.

“Here comes somebody again...”

Everybody then stopped looking at Lin Feng and continued what they were doing.

“Help yourself but let's not bother each other.”

The cultivator who had just kicked one of the corpses away said to Lin Feng who had just landed next to him. His manner of speech was indifferent.

Nobody replied. An incredibly powerful sword Qi emanated from Lin Feng's body which stupefied the cultivator who had just spoke to Lin Feng. He started to shake from head to toe with fear.

“What are you doing? There are many people here. Could it be that you refuse to share the items with anyone else?”

When that person sensed the Qi released by Lin Feng, he shouted that really loud trying to draw the attention of everyone in the area.

Obviously, when the crowd heard that somebody had arrived and wanted all the items for himself, they all turned around and stared at Lin Feng with angry expressions.

But they only saw the glow from a sword. It was a bright and resplendent light but it looked deadly. That glow appeared and disappeared in the blink of an eye.

Then the cultivator who had spoken loudly was immediately beheaded by Lin Feng. Lin Feng hadn't pronounced a single word. When everybody saw that, their eyes began to fill with indignation.

Because he was an extremely powerful cultivator, that guy wanted to take all the treasures here for himself?!

“Your Excellency, everybody has come here with the same purpose. There is no need to be cruel and merciless, otherwise, it would make a powerful man such as yourself look rude rather than your usual elegant self.”

A cultivator who wasn't far from Lin Feng had said with a cold

tone.

Lin Feng turned around. Lin Feng's eyes, hidden inside the mask were extremely evil to behold. He didn't feel like showing mercy to anyone any longer.

Lin Feng's silhouette vanished in the blink of an eye and appeared as quickly in front of the man who had just spoke to him. He then activated his deadly sword.

Cruel? Merciless? Rude?

This despicable cultivator was stealing various treasures from dead bodies and suddenly talked about cruelty, mercy and rudeness?

Lin Feng's sword started to glow again. The other man's face turned deathly pale. He was terrified when he saw the display of such power.

“Surprisingly, you are the type of person to enjoy spending time with the corpses here, so I will help you become one of them.”

This was the first time that Lin Feng had spoken during the whole event. His voice was filled with cold and merciless killing intent. His mask hid his face which made people even more scared of him.

Lin Feng made one step and with a single strike he sent another

head toppling to the ground.

It was clear that Lin Feng was not playing around. However, it seemed like he was killing these fellow cultivators without any reason.

“What does he think he is doing? Could it be that he wants to kill everybody within the Stormy Gorge?”

When the crowd saw that another person had just died, they were all terrified.

“Stop!! What are you?” said a cultivator who saw Lin Feng walk past him.

“I am the one that will take your soul.”

Lin Feng’s sword started to glow again and as his final word was heard a dazzling light filled the air. The cultivators stared in shock as another headless body hit the floor.

All the people who were in the gorge looting from the corpses suddenly stopped and started staring at the strange cultivator wearing the bronze mask. Each time he took a step, another cultivators head would be separated from their body.

At that moment, Lin Feng had already killed more than a dozen of the grave robbers already. They didn’t even know what they had done to make Lin Feng so angry.

“This does not look good, we have to find a way to stop him. Otherwise, he’ll end up killing us as well.”

Some of the cultivators had understood that the situation was getting more dangerous. When that person finished talking, those surrounding him were all nodding in agreement.

“Let’s fight him together as a group. We shouldn’t give him a single opportunity to attack.”

The whole crowd started moving towards Lin Feng as a group and were getting ready to attack him. His sword was too dreadful. It seemed like Lin Feng would behead anyone he encountered on his way.

Lin Feng was still moving from place to place and beheading people when he noticed the crowd moving towards him. These people sensed the Qi emanating from Lin Feng’s body and it was growing stronger and stronger.

“Don’t be afraid of him. He cannot deal with this many of us. Even if he is quite strong, there is no way he can defeat this many people at once.”

The closer they got the better they could sense Lin Feng’s Qi, many cultivators had tried to reassure the others. Although it looked like these words were said to reassure themselves before the others.

Lin Feng slowly started walking towards the approaching group. The sword Qi was growing stronger and stronger which gradually destroyed the confidence of the cultivators in the crowd.

“I don’t want any of the treasures here.”

Finally, one of the cultivators who was in the middle of the crowd gave up because he could sense the strong Qi which Lin Feng was emitting. He then turned around and tried to escape. He had the feeling that even this many people couldn’t defeat Lin Feng.

“Deadly Sword.”

Lin Feng took a few steps forward and brandished his long sword. At that moment, a deadly sword Qi invaded the atmosphere and created a hurricane-like wind annihilating everything in its way.

“Pfff, pfff, pfff.....”

The people in the crowd were breathing heavily. The nearer they were getting to Lin Feng, the more scared they were becoming. They had almost stopped moving and were looking at Lin Feng in terror.

At this moment every single cultivator within the group looked down at their chest and saw a small hole which had been pierced.

“Why?”

Each and every single one of them started to collapse on the ground one after the other. Even while dying, they still didn't understand what was going on. Lin Feng was extremely strong, why was he attacking them?

“Because you all deserve death.”

Lin Feng was holding his sword and turned around and looked at the horizon. There was nobody left. The last remaining grave robbers were running away.

Lin Feng had become extremely strong. A moment before, whether it had been a dozen or a hundred cultivators, nobody would have been able to avoid his sword. The only solution would have been to run far away.

“What cruel behaviour.”

Suddenly on the top of the Stormy Gorge, a loud voice could be heard. Three cultivators were jumping down into the gorge.

“Who are you?” asked the one who seemed to be the leader of the group of three. He was a handsome young man who looked arrogant.

Chen Xing was an elite disciple but his name wasn't carved into the ranking list. He had been very scared of being killed by Duan

Tian Lang.

Fortunately, Wen Ren Yan had been there to protect him. After having been tested by Duan Tian Lang, he had been recognized as a talented cultivator and he had been assigned to guard the Yun Hai Sect.

Wen Ren Yan was extremely strong and Duan Tian Lang attached great importance to him. Duan Tian Lang had thus sent Wen Ren Yan to the Imperial City to join the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. At that moment, Wen Ren Yan was in the Imperial City and everybody respected him, many had started to worship him.

When Wen Ren Yan left the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue, he would become a very important person within the country. Chen Xing didn't dare provoke Wen Ren Yan and wanted to gain his favour.

Wen Ren Yan was extremely strong, he was a genius. Since Duan Tian Lang had also started taking care of him, Wen Ren Yan's destiny could only be extraordinary.

“Well, Lin Feng's power is even scarier than that of Wen Ren Yan. If he had agreed to leave with Duan Tian Lang, I probably wouldn't even be alive now.”

When thinking about Wen Ren Yan, Chen Xing remembered Lin Feng and how scary he was. Even when Lin Feng spoke, it was terrifying.

When Lin Feng saw Chen Xing, a light flashed through his eyes under the mask. His eyes looked even more ruthless and evil than before.

How shameless. Chen Xing had betrayed the Yun Hai Sect and was acting arrogantly again. He was again treating others like they were beneath him and had obviously not learnt his lesson. How quickly he returned to his old ways.

“Since the Holy Courtyard has been created, Duan Tian Lang is extremely busy and has no time to come here and take care of everything. I am here to handle things on his behalf. Everything here belongs to me. If you want to take things from these corpses, do as you please, but don’t make trouble... otherwise, I will kill you like a worthless dog.”

Chen Xing was shouting loudly at Lin Feng. His voice was resonating throughout entire gorge. He was still using the same arrogant tone he had before when he spoke to Lin Feng. His voice carried a clear killing intent. Chen Xing thought that he was stronger than anyone from the smaller sects who would come here to loot. He thought that everyone was beneath him and even dared to look down on Lin Feng.

Chapter 96: A Dreadful Night

When Lin Feng heard what Chen Xing had said, he was even more furious.

Before, he was a disciple of the Yun Hai Sect and was respected by everyone. These days, he despised the Yun Hai Sect.

Because he was only interested in saving his neck, he had betrayed the Yun Hai Sect. So he had gone and sought refuge with Duan Tian Lang and to make thing worse he let anyone violate the bodies of his former fellow disciples.

Chen Xing was a beast, an animal. He did not deserve to live.

“Duan Tian Lang is not worried about letting a piece of trash like you manage the Yun Hai Sect?”

When Chen Xing heard the evil and cold voice that came from behind the mask, he was stupefied. He stared at Lin Feng and asked: “Who are you calling a piece of trash?”

“Chen Xing, you used to be the best of all the ordinary disciples. however you betrayed the Yun Hai Sect and allowed others to humiliate and violate the bodies of your former sect member. What gives you the right to look so proud and arrogant?”

Lin Feng had spoken with an ice-cold tone which made Chen Xing shrink back. He was fixedly staring at Lin Feng.

“Who are you?”

Because of the bronze mask, Lin Feng’s voice sounded a little different. Lin Feng’s body gestures were a bit different as well. Therefore, Chen Xing was unable to recognize Lin Feng even though he was standing before him.

“You betrayed the Yun Hai Sect and now you’re trying to act like a little boss here. Do you even have a sense of shame?”

Lin Feng questioned him yet again. His sword started to glow while releasing a strong Qi which created a whirlwind.

When that Qi reached Chen Xing’s body, he started shaking violently. His pupils shrank and he was breathing heavily and very quickly.

“Lin Feng. That’s Lin Feng and he surprisingly still dares to come back to the Yun Hai Sect.”

Chen Xing was stupefied. Almost all the elders and Nan Gong Ling had died in the battle in order to save Lin Feng’s life. Chen Xing would have never thought that Lin Feng would dare to come back. Duan Tian Lang was looking for Lin Feng everywhere, if he found him, he would make him die in the most horrible conditions.

But because everybody thought that Lin Feng would never dare

come back to the Yun Hai Sect, Duan Tian Lang hadn't bothered staying there. He had just asked Chen Xing and two other cultivators of the first Ling Qi layer to stay there and guard the territory of the Yun Hai Sect.

These days, all the strongest cultivators had gone to the Imperial City to join the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. Duan Tian Lang was excited by that major event.

Lin Feng was strong enough to walk freely within the territory of the Yun Hai Sect.

A horrifyingly strong Qi crashed onto Chen Xing's body. His back was soaked with cold sweat.

“It seems that you want to know who I am.”

When Lin Feng saw Chen Xing's reaction, he laughed evilly. It seemed like he was becoming more and more evil. The two people standing next to Chen Xing were oppressed by Lin Feng's sword Qi as well but were not brave enough to retaliate in any way.

“Let me off. I do not have the power to do anything.”

Chen Xing was begging Lin Feng. He was terrified by the idea that he would die here after escaping the massacre.

“You can't do anything? But you did manage to betray the Yun Hai Sect. You also managed to let the smaller sects come to

humiliate and disrespect the corpses of your former sect. You had the power to stop them but you didn't. How can I tolerate such disgrace?"

Lin Feng took a step forward while his sword started glowing with a magnificent sword force.

"I don't want to..."

Chen Xing's weak voice spread in the atmosphere. Suddenly, Lin Feng's sword disappeared from sight and three different trails of blood gushed up in the air.

Nobody had been able to resist to Lin Feng's sword.

"Sigh....."

When Lin Feng looked at the three corpses, he exhaled a deep breath.

All of those who had come to steal items and treasures from the corpses of the sect had left or were among the corpses. Only Lin Feng was left alive while surrounded by the endless corpses.

Lin Feng looked around at all the corpses of his former sect members. He was looking at these corpses lying on the ground with eyes filled with sorrow. Some of them had had their heads split in two, some had been attacked multiple times in the back as they retreated... the more Lin Feng looked, the more his

determination increased.

Lin Feng had decided to take the risk to come to the Yun Hai Sect to see these corpses for one last time... and to see the setting sun refracting on that river of blood.

He never wanted to forget that the blood was flowing because of hatred, jealousy and other evil intentions.

He wanted to remember that the weak were bullied and killed and that the strong ruled in the world. Lin Feng was furious and anger welled up within his heart.

Lin Feng definitely wanted to avenge all the deaths of his former sect members. He would never forget that these people had sacrificed themselves to save his life. He was bearing the weight of too many people on his shoulders. All these dead people had put endless faith in Lin Feng.

“Broom vroom, broom vroom vroom....”

At that moment, the ground started to shake. It was even shaking more and more intensely. The sound of the shaking ground was also getting louder and louder.

“Chi Xie armored cavalry!”

Lin Feng’s pupils shrank. Without hesitating, he quickly moved towards the edge of the gorge. He could hear the sound of the

incoming heavy cavalry.

“Moonlight Feather Agility.”

Lin Feng stabbed his sword into the cliff in order to propel himself to the top faster. In the space of a few deep breaths he reached the top.

“Let’s go quickly.”

When Lin Feng sensed the ground shake even more, he was stunned. These Chi Xie armored horses were so quick. It seemed like they needed only one breath to gallop over a dozen meters.

Lin Feng couldn’t afford to think too much. He grabbed Meng Qing’s little hand and left at full speed.

When she felt Lin Feng’s hand holding her hand, she had a strange sensation but considering Lin Feng was anxious and in a hurry, she let him take her hand.

Lin Feng had reacted quickly. However there was no way to escape. At that moment, Chi Xie armored horses were arriving at full speed. Lin Feng stopped in his tracks.

The cavalry on the Chi Xie armored horses were also wearing armor which looked imposing.

When Lin Feng saw the Chi Xie armored horses move nearer, he held Meng Qing's little hand even tighter. She also held Lin Feng's hand tighter. But Lin Feng didn't pay attention to that, he didn't even notice it. What troubled him the most is that he hadn't expected the Chi Xie armored horses to come to the Yun Hai Sect and especially at full speed like this.

“Could it be that they know that I have returned?” thought Lin Feng.

The Chi Xie armored horses were moving closer and closer. They hadn't stopped galloping at full speed.

“How handsome.”

When Lin Feng looked at one of the riders, he couldn't help but be amazed.

It was a middle aged man. He looked handsome and had the most dashing eyebrows. However, he looked extremely sad like something sorrowful was haunting his heart.

He was wearing a beautiful armor plate which looked quite spectacular. His grey hair was floating in the wind. He looked slightly strange though.

The Chi Xie armored horses galloped past Lin Feng and surprisingly didn't even look at him. Lin Feng couldn't help but be a bit scared. Maybe he was wrong after all and they were not here

for him. They possibly didn't know that he was Lin Feng.

When he thought about it, Lin Feng relaxed a little. When he turned around and saw the Chi Xie armored horse neigh and then jump straight down from the top of the gorge. That looked extremely dangerous.

“Amazing...”

Lin Feng was impressed by the Chi Xie horse's power. He then turned around and went back to the edge of the gorge and looked down at the scene.

At that moment, Lin Feng saw the man with the grey hair stand on the highest fighting stage of the Life and Death Arena. He looked like a statue. He was calmly looking at all the corpses.

His gray hair was still floating in the wind. He looked lonely and sad.

“Crash.”

Lin Feng was stupefied. The gray-haired man suddenly kneeled down on the fighting stage of the Life and Death Arena and while kneeling down, his knees had made a loud crashing sound when they slammed into the arena floor.

“General!”

A loud voice had interrupting him, the voice was spreading through the air and making the atmosphere shake.

Immediately after, the other cavalry all got off their Chi Xie armored horses and stared at their General. Some of them kneeled down. He looked like he was injured and his eyes revealed an immense sadness.

Lin Feng's heart was pounding.

Lin Feng found it amazing that the other cavalry seemed to care about their General so much.

Lin Feng suddenly thought about a name. If the rumors were true, he really looked like that.

“Divine Arrow, Liu Cang Lan!”

Lin Feng was sure that it was Liu Cang Lan. Except for him, who would kneel down in front of the dead disciples of the Yun Hai Sect. Besides, wasn't he one of the generals within the army?

No wonder Protector Bei felt proud each time he mentioned Liu Cang Lan's name. Such an outstanding student definitely deserved such recognition.

“This is my own business. Stand up everyone.”

Liu Cang Lan's voice was loud and resonated in the gorge. His voice didn't sound imposing or bossy. On the contrary, it sounded friendly and clear so that everyone could hear properly.

“General, please take good care of yourself.”

When Liu Cang Lan had learnt that his army had been ordered to exterminate the Yun Hai Sect, he had disregarded everything and headed to the Yun Hai Sect. He had immediately put the harness on his horse and had ridden it for three days and three nights without sleep to arrive at the Yun Hai Sect as soon as possible.

All the other cavalry wanted to follow him on their own free will.

“I order you to stand up.”

Liu Cang Lan's voice was still calm. When they heard him, the cavalry stood up.

They would never disobey Liu Cang Lan.

“When I was seven years old, I joined the Yun Hai Sect. I received a teacher and was respected but then I left and abandoned them for the sake of the Xue Yue Country. I will never forget the affection I received from other Yun Hai Sect members. I will never forget my dear teacher either. But now, the Yun Hai Sect has been destroyed and my army has played a big role in that massacre. I will never forgive myself for that.”

When Liu Cang Lan finished talking, he started kowtowing in front of all the corpses and hitting his head against the ground of the fighting stage. Suddenly, a noise emerged.

“General, Duan Tian Lang had been premeditating this event for a long time. We have all been fooled!”

One of the cavalry troops said that to Liu Cang Lan.

“I know that Duan Tian Lang is a monster. He even ordered Fei Fei to convince the best disciples of the Yun Hai Sect to go to the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. But it is useless to try and find excuses, I have played a big role in this affair as well. I have been unfair to the Yun Hai Sect and played a part in it’s destruction.”

Chapter 97: The Imperial City of Xue Yue

Liu Cang Lan kept kowtowing and his head hit the ground of the fighting stage over and over again.

All of the troops watching this scene felt for their general. They felt powerless and hopeless in front of their General who was suffering so much.

The cavalry troops all felt very close to their general. If a soldier was attacked even if he was low ranked, Liu Cang Lan wouldn't hesitate to protect them...

Liu Cang Lan didn't kneel down in front of anything or anyone. He didn't even bow in front of the Emperor but at this moment, he kowtowed more than he ever had in his entire life.

“The Yun Hai Sect has given everything to me but I escaped. How shameless can I be?”

Liu Cang Lan looked desperate which filled all the soldiers with emotion. They shouted in unison: “General!”

A strong Qi was released into the atmosphere and he raised his arm in preparation to cripple his own cultivation. The soldiers were staring at him and suddenly, there was no movement. Liu Cang Lan was as motionless as the corpses surrounding him and there was complete silence in the gorge.

“Coward!”

A cold and indifferent voice filled the entire gorge. When everybody heard the voice, they looked stupefied.

Coward? Was Liu Cang Lan a coward?

“Since you abandoned the Yun Hai Sect, you also played a role in its destruction. You must pay with your life.”

These words made the soldiers extremely furious. Lin Feng was the person who had said those words to Liu Cang Lan. Since he had insulted Liu Cang Lan, he had to die.

“Pssshhhhh....”

At that moment, an incredible force and Qi moved straight towards Lin Feng’s body.

The soldiers on the Chi Xie armored horses were releasing such a strong and powerful energy. Lin Feng felt completely oppressed and had the sensation his bones were going to explode. Only these cavalry troops were able to release such a strong Qi.

Lin Feng was almost collapsing under the weight of that Qi but he remained calm as before looking at Liu Cang Lan on the fighting stage of the Life and Death Arena.

“You are already a walking corpse. Duan Tian Lang achieved his aim long ago. No need to try and escape again. He just used you and doesn’t need you anymore.”

All the soldiers were furious but Liu Cang Lan raised his head and looked up at the top of the gorge.

“You are ready to die and your daughter, Liu Fei, can now become a member of the Duan family. You don’t need to worry about her.”

Lin Feng’s words were like a sharp sword that cut into Liu Cang Lan. Liu Cang Lan was stunned. Was his daughter Liu Fei going to marry Duan Han?!

“When you die, maybe all those that have died for the Yun Hai Sect will be able to rest in peace because they will know that they have died for nothing. There was no hope for you.”

Each and every single word that Lin Feng said was like a sharp sword. Liu Cang Lan closed his eyes and slowly put his hand down.

That’s right. Liu Cang Lan had abandoned everything and everyone. Could it be that Liu Fei was really going to become one of the Duan’s though? What was to be done if she married Duan Han? They had exterminated the Yun Hai Sect... So who was left to protect Liu Fei?

When they saw that Liu Cang Lan had put his hand down, the

soldiers didn't feel angry at Lin Feng anymore. They were grateful because they understood that Lin Feng had been using these harsh words to stimulate Liu Cang Lan to prevent him from crippling his own cultivation or even ending his own life.

Good that Lin Feng was here, otherwise Liu Cang Lan would have probably killed himself here.

But Lin Feng's words had been really harsh. Each time, they had resonated in Liu Cang Lan's heart and only increased his sorrow.

“Take care of your General. The Yun Hai Sect doesn't hate or blame him. Protector Bei was always worried about him. The wife of the former Patriarch also respected and admired him. She also forgave him for everything that happened in the past. Make sure that he remembers this.”

Lin Feng had stopped looking at Liu Cang Lan and had walked towards the cavalry seated on the Chi Xie armored horses and while still holding Meng Qing's hand, he said these words to the soldiers.

A while after Lin Feng left, Liu Cang Lan opened his eyes and a sharp and determined light flashed through them which made his army delighted. Their General was back.

“Everybody help me bury my fellow sect members. Let's allow the dead to rest in peace. This is an order.”

Liu Cang Lan's voice was calm but still firm.

“From today onwards, you have to guard the territory of the Yun Hai Sect. Without my permission, don't let anybody into its territory. If they try to enter by force, kill them without mercy.”

Liu Cang Lan was strict with his commands. When he finished talking, everybody shouted in unison: “At your command!”

Liu Cang Lan looked expressionless. He climbed back up onto the top of the gorge and gazed into the distance as if he was looking for Lin Feng.

“General.”

At that moment, a soldier walked towards Liu Cang Lan and stopped in front of him.

“What is it?” asked Liu Cang Lan.

“General, that young man earlier told me to tell you that the Yun Hai Sect doesn't blame or hate you. Protector Bei was worried about you every day and that the wife of the former Patriarch forgave you for everything. She also admired and respected you at the end.”

Liu Cang Lan was standing while speechless and motionless.

He raised his hand and looked at the sky. That powerful and battle hardened man... had tears flowing from his eyes.

“Forgive this unworthy disciple...”

.....

After a while Liu Cang Lan took a deep breath and stopped crying. He could see a silhouette on the horizon.

“Lin Feng!”

Liu Cang Lan had never seen Lin Feng but Liu Fei had told him a lot about him. He wanted to know what kind of young man had inspired so many people in the Yun Hai Sect... and also why he had just saved him from ending his own life.

At that moment, Liu Cang Lan gradually started to understand that Lin Feng was probably not an ordinary person.

If Lin Feng was an ordinary person then could he have used such words when talking to Liu Cang Lan?

If Lin Feng was an ordinary sixteen year old teenager, could he have resisted the Qi of the cavalry on the Chi Xie armored horses without collapsing?

If Lin Feng was an ordinary teenager, he wouldn't have come

back to the Yun Hai Sect, rather, he would have left and never come back. After all, Duan Tian Lang and many others wanted to kill him.

Lin Feng didn't leave the Yun Hai Sect even though Protector Bei had told him to go to Duan Ren City to look for Liu Cang Lan. He was never planning to leave the corpses of his sect to be defiled; he would stay and protect them so that the dead could rest easy. However now that he had seen Liu Cang Lan arrive with his troops, he had decided to leave because Liu Cang Lan's army would be more capable of protecting the Yun Hai Sect territory than him. They were all extremely powerful and there were such a large number of them.

Lin Feng, knew that the Imperial Clan was the strongest within the Xue Yue Country. But in the Continent of the Nine Clouds, there were people who were even stronger than the Emperor.

There were people in the continent that could destroy the entire Xue Yue Country if they wished to.

Lin Feng wanted to reach such heights.

At that moment, Lin Feng and Meng Qing were standing on a huge rock. Lin Feng saw Liu Cang Lan's silhouette descending the mountain at full speed.

"Let's go." They jumped from the big rock and took a small road. They starting moving farther away from the approaching Liu Cang Lan.

“Aren’t there many questions that you would like to ask me?”

Lin Feng asked Meng Qing in a low voice.

“If you don’t tell me, I will not ask.” replied Meng Qing in an indifferent tone. It seemed like her heart had never been moved before. Lin Feng wanted to know if she ever smiled or laughed.

“My mother says that when a man is sad, the best is to let him keep his thoughts to himself and not to ask anything.”

Lin Feng wasn’t expecting her to continue speaking. She was staring at Lin Feng. It seemed like she wanted to verify her mother’s statement and check its authenticity.

“Everything that you know of the outside world is what your mother has told you?”

“Indeed.” said Meng Qing while nodding.

“What else has your mother told you about men?” asked Lin Feng. Lin Feng had the feeling that he knew nothing about the world even though he had memories from two different worlds and Meng Qing, she only memories of the Black Wind Mountain.

“My mother also said that... well, none of these things are good.” replied Meng Qing.

“.....” Lin Feng was surprised. He looked at Meng Qing, his eyes filled with curiosity. It seemed like Meng Qing was about to tell him some private things. Could it be that her mother had decided to live in seclusion in the hinterland of the Black Wind Mountain because she had been emotionally hurt in the past?

“She told me how horrible and disgusting men were but you seem to be a really good man. What my mother told me doesn’t apply to you.”

Her beautiful face looked so cute as if she didn’t understand what she was talking about. She was definitely very curious to discover the world, which is why she secretly escaped with Lin Feng.

Lin Feng could not help but let out a laugh. It really felt good to laugh after everything that happened.

“Are there other things? What else did your mother tell you?”

“She told me a lot of things.” said Meng Qing while nodding. She then looked at Lin Feng and said: “but I’m not telling you these things.”

“.....”

The Imperial City, the Xue Yue Country... both were extremely vast.

Billions of people were living in the Imperial City but it never looked overcrowded.

The Imperial City had huge roads. Several Hundreds of people could walk side by side on some of its large roads

In the Imperial City, there were mostly pedestrians. Even those who had horses often didn't ride them in the city but led them by hand.

In the Imperial City, there were multiple incredibly strong cultivators who had become rich. They could gather many items by killing extremely strong ferocious beasts and had slowly gathered a fortune. Many of them had extremely expensive horses.

A few days later, it would be the inauguration of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. All the strongest disciples of the biggest sects of the country would be there. The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was greedy and was always longing for more geniuses.

Many young cultivators, from the age of six to the age of eighteen were hoping to be able to join the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue. In such conditions, they probably would be able to become a great cultivator in the future. The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was going to be the best cultivation academy in the history of the country.

At that moment, some silhouettes were walking on the main road. They attracted everybody's attention. Amongst the group of people, there was a girl who was wearing red robed. She looked very beautiful. An ice and fire Qi was emerging endlessly from her

body.

“These people all want to become members of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue... but what they don’t know is that it is extremely hard to join it. Only geniuses can gain entry. How many people have what is required to join?”

A teenager said in a low voice. It made the girl in the red robes smile coldly. That girl wearing red robes was Lin Qian.

“I heard that Na Lan Feng has returned to the Imperial City too. I heard that the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue is really interested in her. I don’t know if it’s true or not.”

Lin Hong who was standing next to Lin Qian said this which had stupefied Lin Qian. The last time they had seen other, they hadn’t been able to battle properly to find out which of them was stronger.

Lin Qian remembered the annual tournament in Yangzhou City. She couldn’t help but recall that piece of trash that had been expelled from the Lin Clan.

He had surprised everybody at the annual tournament. He had even scared everyone with the power he held. He was truly a terrifying genius.

But in Yangzhou City, a myriad of people still didn’t even know Lin Feng’s name.

She remembered how Lin Feng had been able to leave Yangzhou City by simply taking Na Lan Feng as a hostage in front of everybody.

“Now that the Yun Hai Sect doesn’t exist anymore, he is probably dead.”

Lin Qian didn’t know if that was a good thing though. She did not understand why she had mixed feeling after hearing of his death.

Chapter 98: Duan Feng

Yun Yang was a small town quite far from the Yun Hai Sect. It only had about a few thousand inhabitants.

It was said that in that small town, there was a noble in decline whose family name was Duan. He apparently belonged to the Imperial Clan but had been expelled because of internal conflicts. After having been expelled, he moved to his small town.

Of course, the people that lived in the small town did not believe the rumours. How could a member of the Duan clan end up in such a small town?

That noble had a large courtyard in front of his house in the small town in front of which there were two huge carriages. It looked like they were getting ready to go on a long journey.

“Sister, let’s go.”

A young boy, who was about fourteen, said to a gorgeous girl who was stood in front of him.

That gorgeous girl looked as if she was going to cry. She was gazing at the horizon. She was staring in the direction of the Yun Hai Sect and her eyes had revealed a great sorrow.

She would have never thought that when she left the Yun Hai Sect, it would get annihilated. Everybody had died... everybody.

“Alright.”

When the girl heard the boy, she tried to smile and slightly nodded. She then said: “I’m getting into the carriage now, let’s leave.”

“Sister, don’t worry. Wait until we arrive in the Imperial City. Our brother will introduce you to some handsome and talented boys.”

The girl shook her head and nearly laughed at the idea.

“Everybody is waiting, we should make our way.”

“Ok.” said the young boy while nodding and walked over to the gate.

“Jing Yun, you and the young master should take this carriage.” said a young guard hastily while looking at Jing Yun. He was thinking that Jing Yun was growing more beautiful. He wished she could become his wife, but knew that he could only dream.

“Indeed, Jing Yun, you need to have a rest. Old Wang and I are outside.” said another young man while smiling.

“Sister, they are right. Let’s sit.” said the young master whose family name was Duan while pushing Jing Yun inside the carriage.

Even though Jing Yun had been a servant in their family since she was a child, the young master was like a sibling to her.

Jing Yun didn't refuse and went into the spacious carriage.

At the same time, Lin Feng and Meng Qing arrived in Yun Yang.

"I hope that we'll find a horse or a carriage which we can use." said Lin Feng.

He felt desperate since it would be unlikely for him to find a horse or carriage for sale in such a small town. He couldn't help but force a wry smile. His goal was to go to the Imperial City which was a great distance from that small town. Travelling there by foot wasn't a realistic option. Lin Feng had completely neglected that aspect when leaving the Yun Hai Sect. He did not plan ahead and instead started to travel towards the capital on foot.

"Is that a carriage over there?"

Meng Qing was pointing to a place in the horizon and asked Lin Feng with her usual indifferent tone. Lin Feng raised his hand and looked to where she was pointing. He saw a few carriages coming towards them.

"What a coincidence."

Lin Feng smiled and started walking towards the carriages. When they saw the youth approaching the carriages, the carriages were

brought to a stop.

“Who are you? Let us pass.” shouted a young man furiously at Lin Feng who was blocking the way.

“My friend, you are only using one carriage and you still have others. Could we borrow one of them? I would happily give you a huge sum of money in exchange.”

Lin Feng was smiling at the young man and remained very polite.

Inside the carriage, Jing Yun anxiously opened the curtains when she heard the familiar voice. When she saw Lin Feng, she couldn't but feel overjoyed.

“I'm sorry, we will need them later, we cannot let you use them.” replied Old Wang while pulling on the reins.

“Exactly. Get out of our way this instant. We don't need your money.” shouted a young man wearing black robes which surprised Lin Feng a little. There was no need to get that angry over something like this, after all Lin Feng had remained polite. It wasn't a problem if they couldn't give him a positive answer, but they had no need to be rude.

“Lin Feng.”

A voice came from inside the carriage. Jing Yun rushed out of her carriage to speak with Lin Feng. She had a big warm smile on her

face. He hadn't died. The Yun Hai Sect had been annihilated but Lin Feng had surprisingly survived.

“Jing Yun!”

Lin Feng was stupefied when he saw Jing Yun. She looked as resplendent and beautiful as she did before. She looked as fresh as a spring breeze.

“Jing Yun, who is that?”

At that moment, the young man in black robes moved down from his horse and stood in front Lin Feng. He then arrogantly looked at Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng, you're really alive! What happened to the Yun Hai Sect?” said Jing Yun as if she couldn't believe her eyes. She quickly moved next to Lin Feng which made the young boy in black robes grow terribly angry. His expression became extremely cold.

Lin Feng was looking at her in a very strange way and then said: “Jing Yun, you really don't know?”

“I really don't know. When the second round of the Elite Disciple Exam took place, I had to leave because the young master wanted me to come back and go to the Imperial City. I had to accompany him as it is my duty. I thought that I would go back to the sect a few days later but... but...” Jing Yun was unable to keep speaking. She had been worried to death at the event, it was like a nightmare

for her.

“I see.” Lin Feng was happy that Jing Yun hadn’t been there on that day, otherwise.....

“Jing Yun, who is that?”

At that moment, the coach driver, Old Wang, asked Jing Yun again.

“Uncle Wang, this is my friend, Lin Feng. He is also a disciple of the Yun Hai Sect.”

Jing Yun pulled Lin Feng and introduced him to Uncle Wang.

“I see.” replied Uncle Wang while slightly nodding his head.

“Pfff, the Yun Hai Sect has been destroyed. How can he still be alive?” said the arrogant young man in black when he noticed how enthusiastic Jing Yun and Lin Feng were. Jing Yun was surprised at his response.

“Wan Qing Shan, what’s the problem?”

Jing Yun said with an ice-cold tone. She was actually angry that he was acting this way.

“You should know what I mean.” continued Wan Qing Shan angrily while staring at Lin Feng.

Jing Yun was just an ordinary disciple of the Yun Hai Sect. Since Lin Feng was Jing Yun’s acquaintance, he was probably an ordinary disciple as well. He had probably reached the eighth or ninth Qi layer. Of course, Wan Qing Shan wasn’t going to pay attention to someone as weak as Lin Feng.

Besides, the Yun Hai Sect had been destroyed so Lin Feng was probably drifting and living without purpose like a beggar.

Lin Feng shook his head and decided to ignore Wan Qing Shan.

“Jing Yun, are you going to the Imperial City?”

“Yes.” said Jing Yun while nodding her head.

“Very good. I am heading there as well. Can you lend me a carriage? We can travel together.”

“Really? Let me ask the young master. There should be no problem with you joining us.” When Jing Yun heard that Lin Feng was going to the Imperial City as well, she felt delighted.

“Jing Yun, it doesn’t look too good.”

Uncle Wang said that to Jing Yun on a cold and detached tone.

“Uncle Wang, Lin Feng is also a disciple of the Yun Hai Sect. He is quite strong. He can also help the guards.”

“Exactly, I could help the guards.” nodded Lin Feng.

“The Yun Hai Sect has been exterminated and even if he’s strong, we don’t need more guards.” said Wan Qing Shan coldly.

“Jing Yun, you know what our purpose is. It’s not very convenient to have him with us but letting him accompany us on a part of the journey is no problem.” said Uncle Wang after considering the situation. The other carriages were ready to use anyway. Besides, if there was a problem, Lin Feng could indeed be useful.

He eventually accepted Lin Feng into to escort party.

“Uncle Wang, it’s alright, let him come with me.”

At that moment, the young master came out of the carriage and said while smiling at Lin Feng: “My name is Duan Feng.”

“Lin Feng.” replied Lin Feng while slightly nodding his head and smiling. His name was similar to Lin Feng’s but it had a different meaning.

“Young master.....” said uncle Wang while looking at Duan Feng

who wanted to say something but Duan Feng interrupted him and said: “Uncle Wang, I am with Jing Yun in the carriage, there will be no problem. Of course, our new fellow Lin Feng can sit with us so that we can all speak together.”

“Young Master, how can you accept such a thing?” asked Wan Qing Shan surprised to see that Duan Feng allowed Lin Feng to sit with them. At that moment, he didn’t seem very happy. The other guard also pulled a long face.

“Young Master... your status... how can you sit with such people?” said the other young man who also didn’t agree.

“What’s the relation between my status and...? Ah, never mind. Stop talking now. If I say he can, then he can, is that clear?” said Duan Feng strictly and then added: “Lin Feng, big brother, please come into the carriage.

“Wait, wait, I still have a friend.”

Lin Feng turned around and saw that Meng Qing was still standing behind. He then called her loudly: “Meng Qing!”

When she heard him, Meng Qing slowly came to Lin Feng and then stayed behind him.

When these guards saw the extraordinarily beautiful Meng Qing, they were stupefied. They found her absolutely gorgeous. They thought that her beauty was infinite.

“What a beautiful young girl!”

A moment before, nobody had paid attention to Meng Qing. The old man Wang was also astonished.

Jing Yun was also a beautiful girl but next to Meng Qing, she was obviously invisible. Meng Qing could make most men lose their soul to her beauty. She was infinitely beautiful.

At that moment, Jing Yun noticed Meng Qing. When she saw Meng Qing standing behind Lin Feng, she couldn't help but pull a long face.

“That girl is very beautiful. Lin Feng, big brother, since she is your friend, she can obviously join us.”

Duan Feng was a very warm and enthusiastic person.

“Indeed, Lin Feng, let's sit down inside the carriage.” said Jing Yun while smiling and nodding.

“Let's go inside.” said Lin Feng to Meng Qing. Then, they immediately went into the carriage.

Wan Qing Shan was extremely jealous when he saw that beautiful girl.

“That little boy... I have to show him... Pfff, a disciple of the Yun Hai Sect... is that a joke?”

Wan Qing Shan envied Lin Feng who was sitting inside the carriage with two amazingly beautiful girls.

Chapter 99: The Celestial Academy

The three Qian Li Xue horses were galloping at full speed down the large road.

Inside the carriage, Duan Feng and Jing Yun were sitting next to each while Lin Feng and Meng Qing were sitting next to each. Both pairs were sat face to face.

“Lin Feng, how did Meng Qing and you get to know each other?”

Jing Yun was staring at Meng Qing but Meng Qing remained expressionless since the beginning. It seemed like the muscles on her face hadn't moved at all. The fact that she was expressionless though actually made her even more beautiful. Her beauty was truly breathtaking.

Jing Yun didn't ask Lin Feng how he had survived the massacre of the Yun Hai Sect because she was scared to touch on Lin Feng's fresh wound. It was obvious that he was still greatly wounded in his heart. It was strange though, Lin Feng had survived and all the others had died.

Of course, Jing Yun wasn't going to blame Lin Feng for that. On the contrary, she was very happy that Lin Feng had survived. The fact that he was alive was the most important thing to her right now.

“We met in the mountains.”

Lin Feng vaguely replied to Jing Yun because Meng Qing might not have appreciated if Lin Feng shared her past with others.

“Oh, well, why are you heading to the Imperial City then?” asked Jing Yun

The Imperial City was full of extremely strong cultivators. It was the place which held the best cultivators of the Xue Yue Country. There were also a great deal of them looking for Lin Feng.

“Because there are a great many people in the Imperial City.” replied Lin Feng but Jing Yun didn’t hear him.

“And you, Jing Yun? Why are you going to the Imperial City?” asked Lin Feng while looking at Jing Yun and Duan Feng. From what Jing Yun had told Lin Feng before, it seemed that Duan Feng had asked for her to accompany him to the Imperial City and that he was going there because he had people to meet. Duan Feng had to leave immediately and travel all the way from his small town without stop which meant the people he had to meet were most likely not ordinary people.

Jing Yun glanced at Duan Feng who was sitting next to her. Duan Feng was laughing and said: “Lin Feng, big brother, Jing Yun is accompanying me to the Imperial City because my big brother wants me to go there to practice cultivation at a cultivation academy.”

“Academy?” said Lin Feng looking perplexed and then asked:

“The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue?”

“No.” said Duan Feng while shaking his head: “The Celestial Academy.”

“The Celestial Academy?” Lin Feng was surprised. He had never heard of the Celestial Academy.

“Indeed, the Celestial Academy.” Duan Feng said while nodding and then added: “The Celestial Academy is not very famous. Not many people know about it. Actually, it doesn’t accept external applicants. Someone who is already there has to recommend you which is why my big brother recommended me.”

“Recommend? Not external applicants?” Lin Feng was surprised. Were academies like sects but with a slight difference?

In a sect, like the Yun Hai Sect, there was a countless number of disciples. They were then separated into different classes: ordinary, elite and core disciples. Then, there were the ordinary and the elite elders. The hierarchy was extremely strict and disciples had to rely almost exclusively on their own abilities to climb up in the hierarchy and to receive consideration from the sect.

Academies were something new in the Xue Yue Country. They only accepted young people who were extremely talented. They had cultivation teachers and received the best weapons and other resources. Teachers helped the juniors to become strong cultivators.

Before, in the Xue Yue Country, there were no academies. It was a concept which had come from another land. Therefore, there were very few academies in the country and they were not famous at all. They couldn't be compared with the foundation of the large sects.

The establishment of the Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue enabled some of the most outstanding and talented young cultivators to receive instruction. The Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue was being established to counterbalance the importance of sects and less popular academies within the country.

“Lin Feng, brother, you are a Yun Hai Sect disciple. You're probably just as strong as Jing Yun. When the right moment comes, I'll talk to my big brother and see if there's a way for you to join the Celestial Academy.”

Duan Feng was smiling sincerely. Even though he was still very young, he was already very mature. Besides, he had a strong personality considering the way he had talked to these arrogant guards.

“Oh yes! Lin Feng, you should come to the Celestial Academy.”

Jing Yun's expression started to brighten. The Yun Hai Sect had been annihilated so if Lin Feng joined the Celestial Academy then it wouldn't be treason against the sect. Besides, Jing Yun didn't even ask herself if Lin Feng was strong enough.

During the first round of the Elite Disciple Exam, Jing Yun had seen with her own eyes how strong Lin Feng was. He had killed an elite disciple with a single strike from his sword and had then become an elite disciple.

Lin Feng was laughing but didn't reply. Even though the Yun Hai Sect had been annihilated, Lin Feng was the new Patriarch of the Yun Hai Sect!

.....

The carriage was already far away from the small town. The evening sun was shining down on the earth. Inside of the carriage, Lin Feng, Duan Feng and Jing Yun were unceasingly chatting while Meng Qing was quiet and had closed her eyes. She looked like she had fallen asleep. She looked extremely peaceful and serene as she rocked back and forth with the carriage.

Lin Feng took off his top and wrapped it around Meng Qing's shoulder. The temperature was quite low and Meng Qing had put on such light weight robes.

At that moment, Jing Yun made a weird face.

A short while after, Meng Qing opened her eyes, looked around her and noticed Lin Feng's top wrapped around her shoulder. She looked very surprised. She had never experienced such a thing before so she found it quite strange.

“Broom vroom vroom....” the carriage suddenly started shaking.

At that moment, Uncle Wang pulled on the reins and stopped the carriage. The ground was still shaking. It was getting more and more intense.

“Uncle Wang, what’s wrong?” asked Duan Feng from inside.

“Young master, there are thieves. Don’t come out. I will negotiate with them.” said Uncle Wang strictly.

Uncle Wang then went towards the thieves to negotiate with them.

“Ahhh.....”

A short moment after, a horrible shriek was heard which scared those inside the carriage.

“Send me someone who knows how to talk!” shouted an extremely aggressive voice.

“I’m going to see.” said Duan Feng hastily. He then immediately went out of the carriage followed closely by Lin Feng and Jing Yun. Meng Qing didn’t follow them and stayed inside the carriage.

Not far from the carriage there were a few dozens of thieves who didn’t look very friendly.

“I’m going to see .” said one of the guards as he walked towards the thieves.

“Everybody, we.....” said the young guard.

These thieves were riding horses. One of them, who was holding a dagger in his hand, jumped off his horse and threw himself at the young guard.

The young man was extremely surprised, he suddenly grabbed his spear and thrust it towards the dagger.

But at that moment, the thief had already reached the young guard and slit his throat with the dagger. Blood was gushing from the young guard’s throat as he fell lifelessly onto the ground.

Jing Yun was stupefied. Because of all the blood which was so close to her, she was overcome with nausea. Her face turned deathly pale.

“I said, send me someone who knows how to speak! That girl doesn’t seem too bad!”

The thief was pointing at Jing Yun with his dagger. At that moment, all the other thieves laughed evilly.

“Indeed! Yes! We want to talk to that pretty girl!” said the thieves

in unison while thinking of other obscene things.

When Jing Yun heard what these thieves were saying, her face looked even more livid.

“Jing Yun, get into the carriage.” said Lin Feng to Jing Yun while pushing her towards the carriage.

“Little boy, you surprisingly dare hide the girl, you want to die...”

Every single thief was looking at Lin Feng furiously.

“Indeed, we have to kill that guy and take the girl to make us happy!”

“What the hell are you doing?”

Wan Qing Shan was furiously shouting at Lin Feng. He was furious.

Lin Feng was stupefied and coldly looking at Wan Qing Shan. What was he doing? It sounded like Wan Qing Shan wanted him to hand over Jing Yun to the thieves.

“You little piece of trash. You’re causing trouble. Now, this is your problem and if you want to escape, don’t count on us to rescue you. We won’t help you.”

Wang Qing Shan was expressionless. He was curious to see what kind of disciples the Yun Hai Sect had.

“I don’t need your kind of help.” replied Lin Feng coldly before running towards the thieves.

“I’ll talk to you guys for a while.”

Lin Feng was standing close to the leader of the bandits as he spoke with a cold tone.

“You want to die!”

A thief with a long dagger jumped towards Lin Feng while stabbing with his dagger, which emitted a whistling sound as it pierced through the air.

Suddenly there was a dazzling light which filled the air. Lin Feng had unsheathed his soft sword.

No one had seen his movement and he slowly began to sheath his sword. Suddenly blood splashed everywhere from the thieves throat. The thief was dead.

Lin Feng’s speed had greatly increased and his speed alone proved that Lin Feng was an extremely powerful cultivator. Therefore, he could carry out attacks very quickly. His sword skills

were extremely high and he would often kill people with a single strike from his sword.

How was this possible? How had that thief been killed with a single movement?

“He was no good, Give me someone else to talk too, alright?” said Lin Feng indifferently towards the thieves. Lin Feng had noticed how young some of them were.

It seemed like only one sword strike had been enough to scare the majority of them.

Wan Qing Shan was stupefied. He wasn't happy because Lin Feng had killed a thief, on the contrary, he was unpleasantly surprised to see that Lin Feng was so strong.

They were unable to guess what Lin Feng's cultivation level was as he had only used a single quick strike. They only knew that he could use his sword extremely quickly to deal lethal strikes.

“My friend, this thing has nothing to do with you. You don't need to get involved.” said the leader of the thieves in a low voice to Lin Feng which showed how terrified he was. Lin Feng was stupefied.

Lin Feng was suspicious though and said: “Didn't you want to kill me a moment ago? I'm waiting for you.”

“Hmph, since you are being like this then don’t blame us for being impolite.”

The leader of the thieves looked at all the other thieves and said: “Kill him.”

Three thieves headed towards Lin Feng at full speed. Lin Feng was surrounded by the attacks from three different people.

“Die.”

A thief had thrust his long dagger which was diffusing an extremely strong Qi towards Lin Feng’s body. It was the same sensation as in the Stormy Gorge when he faced the soldiers Qi. However the difference between their strengths was like heaven and earth.

“Die.”

Another voice filled the air. A long dagger was spinning in the air which looked incredibly dangerous.

All the thieves on their horses were simultaneously moving towards Lin Feng to kill him.

Lin Feng suddenly jumped up in the air. While it looked like he was seemingly floating in the air, he adopted a strange position. At that moment, he was at the same height as the thieves sitting on their horses.

“Deadly sword.”

Lin Feng’s sword was glowing and releasing a dazzling light into the atmosphere. It released an incredible amount of deadly Qi which created a vortex in the air. In the blink of an eye, the thieves were surrounded by an incredible amount of Qi.

Lin Feng’s deadly sword Qi suddenly had the shape of a magnificent arc as it slashed through the air. The horses were going insane and neighing. All the thieves were falling down lifelessly from the back of their horses one after the other.

With a single sword strike, all of them had been killed!

Chapter 100: Traitor or not?

A strong smell of blood invaded the atmosphere. Everybody was calmly staring at the horses that were running around with nobody on their back.

The leader of the thieves was looking at all these horses without anyone riding them with complete shock. He then looked at all the corpses that were spread across the floor and could not believe it. Only one sword strike and they had all died. That powerful attack was a masterpiece that killed everyone who stood in Lin Feng's path.

“Ling Qi layer.” Wan Qing Shan and the other young guard were stupefied. Lin Feng was way too strong. Provoking him was a mistake. No wonder that Jing Yun was particularly friendly to him. He was an extraordinary young man with amazing strength.

Wan Qing Shan's back was covered with a cold sweat. He was provoking Lin Feng earlier. If Lin Feng had attacked him the same way as he attacked these few thieves, he would probably be.....

Uncle Wang still sitting at the front of the carriage was stunned. He was blankly staring at Lin Feng's back.

“Friend, aren't your methods a bit cruel?” said the leader of the thieves looking furious.

“When you kill people and rob them on the roadside, do you care about the fact that you might be cruel?”

Lin Feng's tone was ice-cold. Thieves were the kind of people who never felt bad when they killed other people but became furious if one of them was killed. They thought that killing was like a game but they didn't like losing.

Lin Feng started walking forwards. A strong energy enveloped the leader of the thieves which made him shiver from head to toe.

"Friend, take one more step and you'll die." said the chief of the thieves threatening Lin Feng.

"One more step? But there are still more steps between us." said Lin Feng while running towards him releasing an incredible amount of sword Qi.

The leader of the thieves did not expect him to not even hesitate and started to grind his teeth in anger. He took out his long dagger and suddenly the strong and violent Qi invaded the atmosphere.

"He is also at the Ling Qi layer." thought Wan Qing Shan who was stupefied. A thief had surprisingly reached the Ling Qi layer. But none of them would be able to defeat Lin Feng anyway.

Lin Feng groaned. It seemed like thief's long dagger was shaking in fear because of the energy of Lin Feng's sword. Lin Feng's sword was moving towards the thief at full speed. Even though it wasn't diffusing any light, his sword contained an incredible amount of energy. There was no light because Lin Feng was condensing the energy of his deadly sword skill back into his sword.

“Pssshhhh....”

A whistling sound spread in the atmosphere. Lin Feng's sword was moving towards the thief's throat at full speed. His long dagger hadn't blocked the attack at all.

Lin Feng was getting more and more familiar with his sword each day. He was becoming more and more agile as well as quicker and quicker. The thief heavily fell on the ground with a look of shock covering his face.

“Even a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer can't stop Lin Feng. How incredibly strong!”

Everybody was astonished by Lin Feng's strength. He was way too strong. Lin Feng had killed that thief, who had broken through to the Ling Qi layer with a single stroke of his sword. It had looked like it had taken no effort from him.

Lin Feng didn't even look at the corpses, he just turned around and walked back towards his group.

“Lin Feng, big brother, you are very strong.”

Duan Feng was smiling at Lin Feng with admiration.

“It is perfectly understandable why Lin Feng was in one of the

largest sects. We wouldn't ever be able to achieve such a thing. He is so strong"

Wan Qing Shan was walking towards Lin Feng while flattering him.

If someone was only slightly stronger than him, he would envy them and bully them with his status, but if somebody was much stronger than him, he was either scared or filled with admiration.

"Someone who survived the extermination of a great sect has to be strong." replied Lin Feng with a detached tone. He looked a little disdainful as well.

Lin Feng had never considered himself as merciful. When Wan Qing Shan still thought that he was weak, he didn't hesitate and humiliate Lin Feng. It is not out of mercy that Lin Feng hadn't attacked him but because Jing Yun, Duan Feng and the others were there. After all, he was the guest.

Now that he had shown that he was strong, Wan Qing Shan wanted to make friends with him but Lin Feng didn't feel like it.

When Wan Qing Shan heard Lin Feng's cold tone of speech, he became angry again but kept it to himself this time. Provoking Lin Feng again would be a reckless act. Lin Feng was able to easily kill cultivators of the Ling Qi layer. Provoking him would be too dangerous. If he made Lin Feng angry, Wan Qing Shan might not take another breath.

Wan Qing Shan moved away in a bad mood.

“Lin Feng, let’s go.” said Duan Feng ready to get back into the carriage.

“Young master.”

At that moment, Uncle Wang was in front of the carriage and called Duan Feng which surprised him. Duan Feng asked: “Uncle Wang, what’s wrong?”

“Young Master, it is not appropriate to travel with Lin Feng. Give him a carriage for him and his friend.” said Uncle Wang which surprised everybody.

He suddenly wanted to get rid of Lin Feng? ...but having a cultivator of the Ling Qi layer with them was perfect protection from most bandits and thieves. It would make their journey much safer. After all the greatest threat they would meet on the road would be Ling Qi Layer thieves and bandits.

Lin Feng’s eyes were wide open in shock. He didn’t understand what the old man meant.

“Uncle Wang, what’s wrong? Lin Feng and I making friends. It is a stroke of luck as well as a pleasure to be able to travel with Lin Feng.” replied Duan Feng who didn’t understand.

“Young master, don’t be naive. There are dangerous things.

There are things which you cannot understand because you are too young.”

Uncle Wang was shaking his head and sighing.

“Lin Feng, let’s do it this way. You can have one of these carriages... you can even have both of them if you feel like it. This is a present to thank you for saving us. What do you think?” said Uncle Wang while looking at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng frowned and asked Uncle Wang: “What are you implying?”

Dangerous things? What was he talking about?

“Young Lin Feng asks many questions but understands what I mean deep in his heart.” said Uncle Wang while shaking his head.

“I understand nothing of what you’re saying. Give me a hint.”

“Young man, since you are insisting, I will tell you. Don’t blame me.”

Uncle Wang paused and then continued while staring at Lin Feng: “Young man, these thieves were not weak. If they had attacked us, they would have easily defeated us but they were looking for someone to talk. Maybe it would have worked but you immediately killed them.”

“You would want to talk to these thieves.” Lin Feng was puzzled.

“This is only my opinion but it is wrong that Lin Feng killed all of these thieves without trying even a single time to negotiate with them.” added Uncle Wang aggressively.

Not even trying to negotiate?

That time, Lin Feng understood what Uncle Wang meant. He could help but smile coldly and say to Uncle Wang: “What you are trying to say is that I am just like these thieves, that I kill for pleasure? and maybe that I’m a thief too?”

“A moment ago, the leader of these thieves was calmly talking to Lin Feng but we didn’t hear what he was saying.”

Uncle Wang didn’t immediately reply to Lin Feng and carefully replied. Lin Feng was stunned. He dared to say that the leader of the thieves had talked calmly!

“Well, are there other things you would like to blame me for?” said Lin Feng while smiling coldly.

“Exactly! Lin Feng is right! Uncle Wang, you’re way too heartless. Treating Lin Feng as if he hadn’t risked himself to help us. Thanks be to him, we are still alive and still have all of our things. How can you criticize Lin Feng like that?”

Duan Feng said while coming down of the carriage.

“Young master, you are only a child. You cannot distinguish good and bad.” said Uncle Wang while shaking his head and sighing.

“Young Master, if I am talking to you like this, it is because I want you to understand who you are and how people will attempt to use your status. You are going to the Imperial City which in some ways is your heritage. You are not just anybody.”

“Of course, I know!” replied Duan Feng while nodding.

“Since it is like that, young master, I want to ask you, does your family have anything to do with Duan Tian Lang?”

Duan Feng was surprised. Why would Uncle Wang suddenly talk about Duan Tian Lang? What did he have to do with that whole story?

“I know that he is also part of my Duan clan. I also know that our relations are not harmonious.” replied Duan Feng.

“Young master, since you know that, think again. Isn't it Duan Tian Lang who annihilated the Yun Hai Sect? Then shortly after, Lin Feng arrives in our small town of Yun Yang when he suddenly comes across us. Wasn't it too much to be a coincidence?”

Lin Feng was speechless when he heard Uncle Wang's words. Uncle Wang thought that Duan Tian Lang had made Lin Feng

betray his sect and then sent him to the small town to find Duan Feng.

“Uncle Wang, you think too much. Lin Feng could have already easily killed us.”

“Alright... but young master, remember that your big brother asked you to come to the Imperial City and then, suddenly Lin Feng appears from nowhere and then kills an army of thieves to save us... doesn't he want us to return the favour in some way?”

“That's enough.” said Lin Feng coldly to Uncle Wang who kept talking over and over again. Uncle Wang's goal was obvious. He wanted Lin Feng to leave. He could talk as much nonsense as he wished, all of his words served one single purpose.

Lin Feng looked inside the carriage and said to Meng Qing: “Meng Qing, we are leaving.”

“Alright.” replied Meng Qing while nodding and coming out of the carriage.

“Lin Feng, let me convince Uncle Wang!” said Jing Yun hastily.

“Lin Feng, you and Meng Qing get back into the carriage. I trust you!” begged Duan Feng.

“No need. I would be humiliating myself.” said Lin Feng while glancing at Uncle Wang. He then looked at Duan Feng and Jing

Yun and said: “Let’s meet in the Imperial City.”

When Lin Feng finished talking, he pulled Meng Qing sleeve and started leaving.

“Lin Feng, maybe that it is only a coincidence and I have misunderstood you. What I said a moment ago is still valid, you can choose any of these carriages, as you please.” said Uncle Wang.

“No need. Thank you.”

Lin Feng refused the old man’s proposition. Lin Feng wasn’t shameless. He wasn’t going to use the carriages of people who had just humiliated him and suggested that he might be a traitor to his sect.

He had just killed all these thieves, weren’t there enough horses to use?

“Can you ride a horse?” asked Lin Feng to Meng Qing.

“No, I can’t.” said Meng Qing while shaking her head.

“But do you want to teach me how to ride?” asked Meng Qing to Lin Feng

“Me, teach you how to ride a horse?” said Lin Feng surprised: “you want me to teach you how to ride a horse?”

Meng Qing was staring blankly at Lin Feng which made Lin Feng smile.

Anything Meng Qing would ask, Lin Feng would agree. At that moment, he said: "Alright."

When Lin Feng finished talking, another surprising thing happened!

Table of Contents

[Peerless Martial God](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 1: Spirit Awakening](#)

[Chapter 2: Continuous Breakthrough](#)

[Chapter 3: Overbearing Violence](#)

[Chapter 4: Wielding A Sword](#)

[Chapter 5: Unsheathing the sword](#)

[Chapter 6: the arrow spirit](#)

[Chapter 7: Black Wind Mountain](#)

[Chapter 8: Hell Wolf](#)

[Chapter 9: Throat Slitting Sword](#)

[Chapter 10: Life or Death arena](#)

[Chapter 11: Revenge](#)

[Chapter 12: Lin Feng's spirit](#)

[Chapter 13: Battle in the Life or Death Arena \(Part 1\)](#)

[Chapter 14: Battle in the Life or Death Arena \(Part 2\)](#)

[Chapter 15: Battle in the Life or Death Arena \(Part 3\)](#)

[Chapter 16: The way of the world](#)

[Chapter 17: The Precipice of Zhangu](#)

[Chapter 18: Emerging Power](#)

[Chapter 19: Three hundred years](#)

[Chapter 20: The Unknown Force](#)

[Chapter 21: Questioning an Elder](#)

[Chapter 22: An Arm For an Arm](#)

[Chapter 23: The Terrifying Shadow](#)

[Chapter 24: A Strong Heart](#)

[Chapter 25: The Power Within The Ling Qi Layer](#)

[Chapter 26: You Again!](#)

[Chapter 27: Self Confidence](#)

[Chapter 28: The Whistle Wind Restaurant](#)

[Chapter 29: Teasing](#)

[Chapter 30: The Annual Meeting](#)

[Chapter 31: Let The Fun Begin!](#)

[Chapter 32: The First Blow](#)

[Chapter 33: The Final Eight \(Part 1\)](#)
[Chapter 34: The Final Eight \(Part 2\)](#)
[Chapter 35: To The Death! - Lin Feng Vs Lin Qian](#)
[Chapter 36: Easy Battle?](#)
[Chapter 37: Lin Hai's Fury](#)
[Chapter 38: The Honorable Elder](#)
[Chapter 39: Na Lan Feng](#)
[Chapter 40: Rumors](#)
[Chapter 41: Assassins](#)
[Chapter 42: Darkness of the Night](#)
[Chapter 43: Spirit Awakening](#)
[Chapter 44: Audacious!](#)
[Chapter 45: Arriving at the arena](#)
[Chapter 46: The Tournament Begins](#)
[Chapter 47: Duo Ming's Sword](#)
[Chapter 48: A Single Strike](#)
[Chapter 49: Get The Hell Down!](#)
[Chapter 50: Infinitely Powerful](#)
[Chapter 51: Lin Feng's Fury](#)
[Chapter 52: Who Dares?!](#)
[Chapter 53: A Fierce Tiger](#)
[Chapter 54: Chi Xue Cavalry](#)
[Chapter 55: Sword of Nirvana](#)
[Chapter 56: The Top Ordinary Disciple](#)
[Chapter 57: Liu Cang Lan](#)
[Chapter 58: Holy Courtyard of Xue Yue](#)
[Chapter 59: Lin Feng, That Bastard!](#)
[Chapter 60: Mo Xie is Evil](#)
[Chapter 61: Imaginary Demon](#)
[Chapter 62: The Strange Metamorphosis](#)
[Chapter 63: The Trash Spirit?!?](#)
[Chapter 64: Deadly Sword](#)
[Chapter 65: Po Jun](#)
[Chapter 66: Asking for Trouble](#)
[Chapter 67: Attracting Attention](#)
[Chapter 68: The Sword Master](#)
[Chapter 69: Fury](#)
[Chapter 70: Lin Feng's State of Mind](#)
[Chapter 71: Liu Fei's strange behavior](#)

[Chapter 72: Provocation](#)
[Chapter 73: The Punishment](#)
[Chapter 74: Confrontation](#)
[Chapter 75: The Yun Hai Sect Has Abandoned Me](#)
[Chapter 76: Brutality](#)
[Chapter 77: The Yun Hai Sect is Polluted!](#)
[Chapter 78: The Patriarch's Mistakes](#)
[Chapter 79: No Compromise](#)
[Chapter 80: The Sword Force](#)
[Chapter 81: Pure Insanity](#)
[Chapter 82: The Rise of a Genius](#)
[Chapter 83: Confrontation of Geniuses](#)
[Chapter 84: The Real Threat](#)
[Chapter 85: Selected Geniuses](#)
[Chapter 86: Only Option!](#)
[Chapter 87: Cold Blooded](#)
[Chapter 88: Extermination](#)
[Chapter 89: A Lonely Sword](#)
[Chapter 90: Sorrow and Tragedy](#)
[Chapter 91: The Ancient Temple](#)
[Chapter 92: Deadly Cross Shadow](#)
[Chapter 93: Girl Inside The Illusion](#)
[Chapter 94: I will just show you](#)
[Chapter 95: Each Step Brings Death](#)
[Chapter 96: A Dreadful Night](#)
[Chapter 97: The Imperial City of Xue Yue](#)
[Chapter 98: Duan Feng](#)
[Chapter 99: The Celestial Academy](#)
[Chapter 100: Traitor or not?](#)